SMT. HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY
The Maharaja Sayajirao University
of Baroda
Call No. DS
69.5
.M6-4 94162

[Crown Copyright Reserved.]

SMT. HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY
CITY OF BARODA

HISTORY OF THE GREAT WAR

BASED ON OFFICIAL DOCUMENTS.

THE CAMPAIGN IN MESOPOTAMIA

1914-1918.

SMT. HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY
RARE BOOK COLLECTION
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Compiled, at the request of the Government of India,
under the direction of the Historical Section
of the Committee of Imperial Defence,

BY

BRIG.-GEN. F. J. MOBERLY, C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., p.s.c.

VOLUME IV.

LONDON:
PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE
To be purchased directly from H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE at the following addresses
Adastral House, Kingsway, London, W.C.2; 120, George Street, Edinburgh;
York Street, Manchester; 1, St. Andrew's Crescent, Cardiff;
15, Donegall Square West, Belfast;
or through any Bookseller.

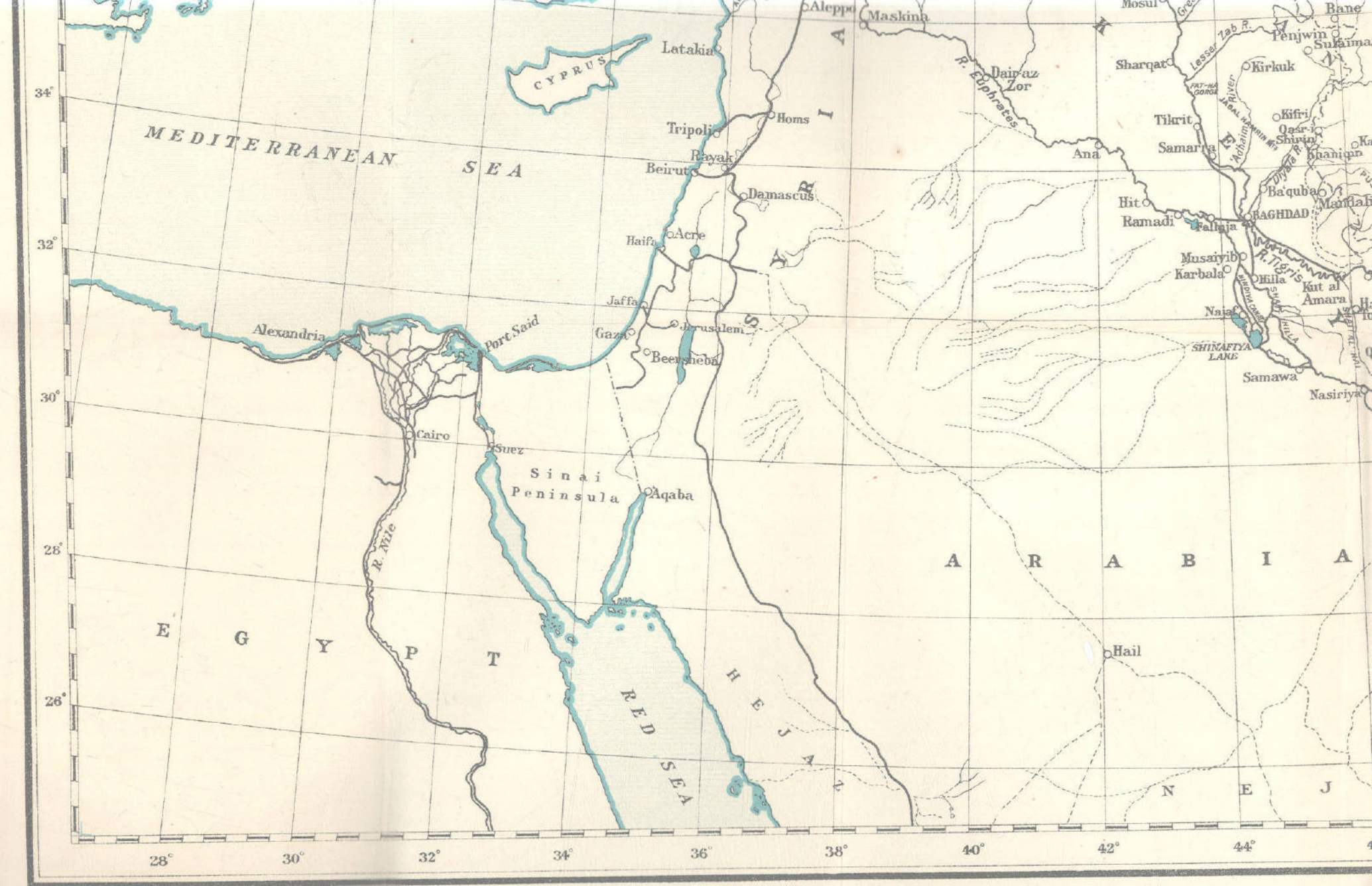
1927.

Price 15s. 0d. Net.

THE MIDDLE EAST.
Scale of Miles.
100 50 0 100 200 300
42° 44° 46° 48° 50° 52° 54° 56° 58° 60°
40° 38° 36° 34° 32°
CAUCASUS MTS.
CAUCASIA
CASPIAN SEA
Tiflis
Kars
Sarikamish
Erivan
Baku
Erzerum
Julfa
Astara
Mush
Bitlis
Van
AZERBAIJAN
Tabriz
Sairt
Urmia
Enzeli
Resht
Asterabad
Meshed
Saiij Bulag
Zenjan
Kazvin
Ruwandiz
Saqqiz
Mosul
Greater Zab R.
Bane
Tehran
Penjwin
Sulaimaniya
Bijar
Lesser Zab R.
Sharqat
Kirkuk
Sehneh
Hamadan
Kangavar
Qum
Tikrit
Kifri
Daulatabad
Samarra
Karind
Kermanshah
Burujird
Khurramabad
Birjand
Ba'quba
Mandali
Hit
Ramadi
Falluja
BAGHDAD
Isfahan
Musaiyib
Karbala
Shaikh Saad
Ali Gharbi
R. Tigris
Hilla
Kut al Amara
Dizful
Shushtar
Shush
Yezd
Maidan-i-Naftun (Tembeh)
Najaf
Hai

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

24°
26°
28°
30°
32°
34°
36°
38°
40°
42°
44°
46°
40°
38°
36°
34°
32°
BLACK SEA
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
CONSTANTINOPLE
Chatalja
Gallipoli
Haidar Pasha
Izmid
Dardanelles
Brusa
Sinope
Batum
Tiflis
CAUCASUS
CAUCASIA
Trebizond
Atna
Kars
Sarikamish
Erivan
Bajburt
Erzerum
Erzinjan
Sivas
Angora
ANATOLIA
ASIA MINOR
Afiun Qarahisar
Smyrna
Aidin
Konia
Karapunar
Bulgurlu
Eregli
Dorak
Adana
Tarsus
Mersina
Ayas
Alexandretta
Cilician Gates
Marash
Hassan Begli
Islahiya
Birejik
Jerablus
Raja
Aleppo
Maskina
Latakia
CYPRUS
CILICIA
ANTI TAURUS
TAURUS
ARMENIA
ARMENIAN TAURUS
Oghnat
Mush
Bitlis
Van
Diarbekr
Sairt
Julfa
AZERBAIJAN
Tabriz
Urmia
Nisibin
Ras al'Ain
Sinjar
Mosul
Ruwandiz
Greater Zab R.
Lesser Zab R.
Penjwin
Sulaimaniya
Kirkuk
Sharqat
Dair az Zor
R. Euphrates
Tikrit
Samarra
Ana
Hit
Ramadi
Falluja
BAGHDAD
Musaiyib
Karbala
Hilla
R. Tigris
Kut al Amara
Ba'quba
Mandali
Kifri
Qasr-i-Shirin
Khaniqin
Karind
Tikrit
Jaffa
Jerusalem
Gaza
Haifa
Acre
Beirut
Damascus
Tripoli
Homs
Rayak
Alexandria
Port Said
SYRIA
PALESTINE
ARABIA
IRAK
PUSHT-I-KUH


MEDITERRANEAN SEA
CYPRUS
Latakia
Aleppo
Maskina
Mosul
Bane
Penjwin
Sulaima
Sharqat
Lesser Zab R.
Kirkuk
Dair az Zor
R. Euphrates
Tikrit
Kifri
Qasr-i-Shirin
Samarra
Ana
Tripoli
Homs
Rayak
Beirut
Damascus
Hit
Ramadi
Falluja
BAGHDAD
Ba'quba
Haifa
Acre
Musaiyib
Karbala
Hilla
R. Tigris
Kut al Amara
Jaffa
Alexandria
Port Said
Gaza
Jerusalem
Beersheba
Najaf
SHINAFIYA LAKE
Samawa
Nasiriya
Cairo
Suez
Sinai Peninsula
Aqaba
R. Nile
Hail
RED SEA
EGYPT
HEJAZ
NEJ
34°
32°
30°
28°
26°
28°
30°
32°
34°
36°
38°
40°
42°
44°

Govt. of India
Publications
PURCHASED
Date 31-7-64
Initial
94162.
Rs 9 = 50 nP.
7DS
69.5
MG-4

PREFACE

DURING the four years* of warfare we utilised in Mesopotamia, from first to last, the services of 889,702 officers and men, while against us the enemy would appear to have employed only about half that number. Our action destroyed German dreams of dominance which constituted a real menace to the security of our Indian Empire and to our sea communications east of the Red Sea; it brought about the defeat of Pan-Turkish ambitions in Caucasia, Persia and Central Asia; it assured the independence of Persia and Afghanistan; and it opened to Mesopotamia a prospect of prosperity which she had not known for hundreds of years. Despite these achievements, there has been much controversy regarding the justification of so great an effort on our part in what was admittedly a subsidiary military operation, generally on the grounds that the same results could have been attained by action elsewhere with less expenditure of men and material.

In the course of the first year, our small force, ill-equipped as it was for warfare in a land of roadless swamp and desert, attained considerable success. The faulty initial Turkish dispositions by which Mesopotamia was denuded of adequate means of defence, the heavy losses which their Third Army suffered in its attempt to invade the Caucasus and the effort Turkey had to make in defence of the Dardanelles, all contributed to facilitate this success. But it led to our underestimating the enemy's capacity and to our overlooking or disregarding our own insufficient means. As a result, in the next six months, we found ourselves involved in misfortune, attended by heavy loss of life and by much misery and suffering for thousands of our men. For the lack of foresight and the inadequate preparation which were responsible for this disaster several individuals have been held more or less responsible. But there were also other contributory reasons which exemplify the disadvantages under which a democratic government labours

* i.e., from 31st October, 1914, when the Admiralty and the India Office issued their "War" telegrams, to the Armistice on 31st October, 1918.

(19465) Wt. 11511/875 1,750 4/27 Harrow G. 45

in the direction of war, and it is now generally admitted that, as a nation, we cannot acquit ourselves of blame in the matter.

After the surrender of Kut, it was of advantage to us that instead of pressing his good fortune, the enemy despatched an army corps to invade Persia and left us unmolested on the Tigris to rest and reorganise. This Persian project was a manifestation of the Pan-Turkish aims of the enemy which, throughout the war, dominated his policy to the ultimate detriment of his military operations. The Italian war of 1911 resulted in the loss of Turkey's last African possessions and of islands in the Ægean. The Balkan war of 1912 followed with disastrous military defeat and the Bulgarian attack on Constantinople itself, and the loss of European *vilayets* and of yet other Ægean islands. These humiliating events had given an impetus to the Pan-Turkism which was then beginning to replace in the minds of influential and literate Turks their Pan-Islamic and Pan-Turanian ideals. During the war, whether acquiesced in by Germany or not on the grounds that its action would embarrass both us and Russia, this policy led the enemy time and again to ignore the requirements of his southern fronts in favour of projects which aimed at territorial expansion in Persia and the Caucasus. At the present day the same Pan-Turkism is evident in the uncompromising nationalism of the Turkish State.

We went to Mesopotamia primarily to defend our essential interests at the head of the Persian Gulf and to counter Turco-German designs to embarrass us in the Middle East. As the operations progressed, however, it became increasingly apparent that—owing to the Turco-German attempts to exploit the weakness of Persia, the latent hostility to us in Afghanistan and the unreliability of the tribes on the north-west frontier of India—the presence of our force on the Tigris was of material assistance to the security of India, at a period when the greater part of her army was serving overseas. We were thus presented with an additional incentive to capture Baghdad, a success which we followed up by taking heavy toll of the dispersed Turkish forces. From this period onward the Turks were never able to stop any of our advances, and the close of the campaign found us operating simultaneously on the Caspian, within a few miles of Mosul and near Ana on the Euphrates, i.e., on a frontage of about 600 miles. The extent of this frontage and the great length of our lines of communication in advance of Baghdad are sufficient testimony to the efficiency of our reorganisation.

During the last phase of the campaign, dealt with in the present volume, our operations in Mesopotamia contributed only indirectly to the final downfall of the enemy. But the action we took in Persia and on the Caspian prevented the Turco-German eastward thrust from reaching a really dangerous stage. The detachment of large Turkish forces to the Caucasus at a period when their Syrian and Mesopotamian fronts were in urgent need of reinforcement is difficult to understand from a purely military point of view. It can only be explained satisfactorily if it is regarded as an attempt to vindicate their national ideal by building up a new state which would include the ancient home of their race.

In 1914, the inner group of Turkish leaders saw in the war, which they were convinced would be won by Germany, an opportunity of attaining the fulfilment of their territorial ambitions; and it is said that the governing consideration which secured Turkish support for Germany was her pledge ensuring Turkey possession of Russian Armenia, North-West Persia, the Moslem provinces of Caucasia and the Trans-Caspian region. Neither Egypt nor the Arab provinces of Turkey—with the possible exception of Mosul and the area connecting it with North-West Persia—contained a Turkish population. Indeed, both regions, from geographical, ethnical and political causes, had in the past proved themselves a heavy liability and a source of danger and weakness rather than of strength to the Ottoman Empire. They were therefore of little value in Pan-Turkish eyes. But, in German eyes, Syria and Palestine offered the outstanding military advantage of enabling the Turks to carry out operations against the Suez Canal and Egypt, and Mesopotamia had always been essential for the fulfilment of German eastern ambitions. This conflict of aims was evident throughout the war. It was apparently largely owing to German influence that the Turks undertook operations against the Suez Canal; and in 1917, when Enver insisted on the project for the recapture of Baghdad, he was serving German interests and at the same time appealing to the Pan-Turks through the recovery of the control of the main route into Persia.

By the beginning of 1918 Mustapha Kemal Pasha is said to have attained such a strong position in the Pan-Turkish party that he was able to dictate the policy to be followed. The Brest-Litovsk negotiations were in progress, any Russian military recovery was improbable, and the Tartar tribes of the Caucasus offered a great intact military reserve as a suitable

Turkish instrument. Mustapha Kemal accordingly insisted that immediate steps should be taken to realise Pan-Turkish aspirations in the East. He considered that Germany was certain to lose the war and that if, by its conclusion, Turkey could place 100,000 troops in Trans-Caucasia, the exhausted Entente Powers would find it impossible to eject them. With this number of men available, Mustapha Kemal saw no limit to the possibilities of Turkish expansion eastward; and he considered that Turkey would thus obtain territorial gains far outweighing any losses which might occur elsewhere.

The failure of the Turkish plans was due, in Mustapha Kemal's opinion, to the facts that the policy he advocated was not adopted in time and that the Turks were unable to concentrate sufficient numbers in the Caucasus.

In concluding this history, the Author desires once again to express his most grateful acknowledgments to all the officers, officials and other individuals who have been so good as to assist him in various ways. The able and invaluable aid given him by his personal assistant Colonel F. E. G. Talbot has much facilitated his task and the utility of all four volumes has been enhanced by the excellent indexes prepared by Captain G. S. Oxburgh, M.B.E., and Mr. C. V. Owen of the Historical Section. He is indebted to the Imperial War Museum, the Headquarters, Royal Air Force, Mesopotamia, Lieutenant-Colonel C. L. Matthews, D.S.O., and Lieutenant-Colonel R. Kennion, C.I.E., for the photographs reproduced in this volume.

A list of the principal events of the campaign is given on pages v–vii and Appendix XLVIII contains a statement of the units of the Indian army showing their present titles as compared with those they bore during the operations.

CHRONOLOGICAL SUMMARY OF THE CAMPAIGN IN MESOPOTAMIA, 1914–1918.

I.—THE CAMPAIGN IN LOWER MESOPOTAMIA.

1914.

British force under Brig.-Gen. W. S. Delamain arrives at Bahrein	23rd October.
Turco-German naval raid in Black Sea	29th October.
British Admiralty and India Office issue their "War" Telegrams	31st October.
Russia declares war on Turkey	2nd November.
Great Britain formally declares war on Turkey	5th November.
British landing at Fao	6th November.
Lieut.-Gen. Sir A. A. Barrett reaches the Shatt al Arab and assumes command of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (Force "D")	14th November.

OPERATIONS FOR CAPTURE OF BASRA.

Affair of Saihan	15th November.
Affair of Sahil	17th November.
Occupation of Basra	22nd November.

OPERATIONS NEAR BASRA.

First action of Qurna	4th–8th December.
Occupation of Qurna	9th December.

1915.

Affair of Shaiba	3rd March.

OPERATIONS IN PERSIAN ARABISTAN.

Affair of Ahwaz	3rd March.

General Sir J. E. Nixon succeeds Lieut.-Gen. Sir A. A. Barrett in command	9th April.

OPERATIONS NEAR BASRA.

Battle of Shaiba	12th–14th April.

OPERATIONS IN PERSIAN ARABISTAN	21st April–16th June.
Affair of Khafajiya	14th–16th May.

ADVANCE UP THE TIGRIS.

Second action of Qurna	31st May.
Occupation of Amara	3rd June.

ADVANCE UP THE EUPHRATES.

Actions for Nasiriya	5th, 13th–14th, 24th July.
Occupation of Nasiriya	25th July.

OPERATIONS ABOUT BUSHIRE.

Destruction of Dilwar	13th–16th August.
Affair at Bushire.	9th September.

ADVANCE UP THE TIGRIS.

Battle of Kut al Amara, 1915	28th September.
Pursuit arrested at Aziziya	5th October.

II.—THE FIRST CAMPAIGN FOR BAGHDAD.

	1915.
Advance from Aziziya starts	11th November
Battle of Ctesiphon	22nd–24th November.
Affair of Umm at Tubul	1st December.
Defence of Kut al Amara.	
Repulse of Turkish assault	24th December.
First Attempt to Relieve Kut al Amara.	**1916.**
Action of Shaikh Saad	6th–8th January.
Action of the Wadi	13th January.
First attack on Hanna	21st January.
Operations near Nasiriya.	
Affair of Butaniya	14th January.
Lieut.-Gen. Sir P. H. N. Lake succeeds General Sir J. E. Nixon in command	19th January.
War Office takes over control of operations in Mesopotamia from India Office	10th February.
Second Attempt to Relieve Kut al Amara.	
Attack on the Dujaila Redoubt	8th March.
Third Attempt to Relieve Kut al Amara.	
Capture of Hanna Position	5th April.
First attack on Sannaiyat	6th April.
Second attack on Sannaiyat	9th April.
Action of Bait Isa	17th–18th April.
Third attack on Sannaiyat	22nd April.
Capitulation of Kut al Amara	29th April.

III.—THE CAPTURE AND CONSOLIDATION OF BAGHDAD.

War Office assumes administrative control, in addition to control of operations, of Mesopotamia Force	18th July.
Lieut.-Gen. F. S. Maude succeeds Lieut.-Gen. Sir P. H. N. Lake in command	28th August.
Operations near Nasiriya.	
Action of As Sahilan	11th September.
Battle of Kut al Amara, 1917.	
Advance to the Hai and capture of the Khudhaira Bend	14th December, 1916–19th January, 1917.
	1917.
Capture of the Hai Salient	25th January–5th February.
Capture of the Dahra Bend	9th–16th February.
Capture of Sannaiyat	17th–24th February.
Passage of the Tigris at the Shumran Bend	23rd–24th February.
Pursuit to Baghdad.	
Operations against Turkish rear guard	25th–26th February.
Affair of Lajj	5th March.
Passage of the Diyala	7th–10th March.
Operations on Tigris right bank	9th–10th March.
Occupation of Baghdad	11th March.

Operations for the Consolidation of the British Position at Baghdad.	**1917.**
Action of Mushahida	14th March.
Occupation of Falluja	19th March.
First action of the Jabal Hamrin	25th March.
Cavalry operations about Delli Abbas	25th–28th March.
Affair of Duqma	29th March.
Affair of Balad	8th April.
Affairs on the Khalis Canal	9th–15th April.
Passage of the Adhaim	18th April.
Action of Istabulat	21st–22nd April.
Occupation of Samarra	24th April.
Action of Adhaim	30th April.

IV.—THE CAMPAIGN IN UPPER MESOPOTAMIA, 1917–18—NORTH - WEST PERSIA AND THE CASPIAN, 1918.

Euphrates Operations.	
Attack on Ramadi	11th July.
Capture of Ramadi	28th–29th September.
Operations North-East of Baghdad.	
Second action of the Jabal Hamrin	16th–20th October.
Tigris Operations.	
Action of Daur	2nd November.
Action of Tikrit	5th November.
Death of Lieut.-Gen. Sir F. S. Maude	18th November.
Lieut.-Gen. Sir W. R. Marshall succeeds to command	18th November.
Operations North-East of Baghdad.	
Third action of the Jabal Hamrin	3rd–6th December.
North-West Persia.	**1918.**
Major-Gen. L. C. Dunsterville and Mission start from Baghdad	27th January.
Euphrates Operations.	
Occupation of Hit	9th March.
Action of Khan Baghdadi	26th–27th March.
Operations in Kurdistan.	
Affair of Kulawand	27th April.
Action of Tuz Khurmatli	29th April.
Occupation of Kirkuk	7th May.
North-West Persia.	
Affair of Resht	20th July.
Caspian.	
Occupation of Baku	4th August.
Occupation of Krasnovodsk	27th August.
Defence of Baku	4th August—14th September.
North-West Persia.	
Affairs near Mianeh	5th–14th September.
Advance on Mosul.	
Actions of the Fat-ha Gorge and on the Little Zab	23rd–26th October.
Battle of Sharqat	28th–30th October.
Affair of Qaiyara	30th October.
Armistice with Turkey comes into force	31st October.

CONTENTS

PART V.

THE CAMPAIGN IN UPPER MESOPOTAMIA, 1917–18—NORTH-WEST PERSIA AND THE CASPIAN, 1918.

Chapter XXXVII.

MAY, JUNE AND JULY 1917. PAGE

Situation at beginning of May—Plans in view of possible Russian collapse—Turco-German plans for an offensive in Mesopotamia; formation of "Yilderim" Army—Situation in India in May; Waziristan expedition—Question of utilising Arab assistance in Mesopotamia—British dispositions at end of May—Turco-German preparations for offensive; British information thereof—Situation in Russia in mid-June—Russian withdrawal on British right flank; British occupy Balad Ruz—Discussion regarding possible Russian offensive on Mosul—Question of reinforcements for Mesopotamia—Question of Arab co-operation—Advance on Ramadi; attack on Ramadi on 11th July fails; British return to Falluja—Development of railway communications and of Basra port—Civil administration—Irrigation—Air activity—Report of the Mesopotamia Commission 1–31

Chapter XXXVIII.

AUGUST AND SEPTEMBER 1917: THE CAPTURE OF RAMADI.

Discussion regarding a British advance up the Tigris in co-operation with a Russian offensive against Mosul—General Maude discounts idea of further effective Russian assistance and asks for reinforcements—New 17th Division to be formed—Further discussion regarding Russian co-operation—Information as to projected Turkish offensive; importance of Ramadi—Forthcoming British offensive in Palestine—Increase of cavalry in Mesopotamia; also of mechanical transport—Arrangements for despatch to Mesopotamia of a new 18th Division—Reinforcements to Mesopotamia between May and September 1917—Progress of railway construction—Operations for the capture of Ramadi: preparatory work by General Brooking; action of Ramadi, 28th–29th September; complete British victory—Turkish account of loss of Ramadi—Mandali occupied 29th September—Enemy plans and intentions during August and September; abandonment of projected "Yilderim" offensive in Mesopotamia 32–65

PAGE

Chapter XXXIX.

OCTOBER TO DECEMBER 1917—OCCUPATION OF THE JABAL HAMRIN, ACTION OF TIKRIT AND DEATH OF GENERAL MAUDE.

Situation at beginning of October—General Maude decides to occupy the Jabal Hamrin—Operations by IIIrd Corps for occupation of the Jabal Hamrin, 16th to 20th October—Ineffective Turkish diversion on the Tigris—Enemy's main energies directed towards Palestine front—Offensive by Ist Corps up the Tigris; action of Daur, 2nd November; advance up the Tigris continued; action of Tikrit, 5th November; return of Ist Corps to Samarra—Bolshevik counter-revolution in Russia, 8th November—Death of General Maude, 18th November: General Marshall succeeds to command—Distribution of British force in Mesopotamia on 18th November—Instructions to General Marshall from C.I.G.S.—Chaos in Russia—Operations by British IIIrd Corps against Turkish XIII Corps in Qara Tepe area: preliminary preparations: British forward movements and action, 3rd to 6th December—General war situation, 3rd December: question of India's assistance—7th Division transferred from Mesopotamia to Egypt—Russian Bolshevik Government opens peace negotiations at Brest-Litovsk, 22nd December—Inception of "Dunsterforce"—Effect of Russian collapse—Situation in Mesopotamia at end of December 66–101

Chapter XL.

JANUARY TO MARCH 1918: DUNSTERVILLE'S MISSION AND THE ACTION OF KHAN BAGHDADI.

General situation in the Near East at beginning of 1918—Threat of enemy penetration into North-West Persia—Bridges' Column moves into Persia—Instructions to General Dunsterville as Chief of British Mission to the Caucasus—Conditions on the road through Persia to the Caspian—General Dunsterville starts from Baghdad on 27th January—General distribution of British Mesopotamian forces on 15th January—Turkish dispositions—State of Russians in Persia—Discussion as to British policy in Persia—Progress of General Dunsterville: he reaches Enzeli, but is forced to return to Hamadan: situation in Trans-Caucasia changes for the worse—Discussion of future British policy in Mesopotamia and Palestine: decision to act on defensive generally in Mesopotamia, but to support General Dunsterville in Persia: an offensive to be carried out in Palestine—3rd Division transferred from Mesopotamia to Egypt—General Marshall decides to capture Hit, on the Euphrates—Action of Dunsterforce in Persia—Situation in Trans-Caucasia at beginning of March—On 12th March General Marshall's responsibilities extended to cover all military measures necessary to check enemy penetration through North-West Persia—Progress of British troops into Persia: road and

PAGE

climatic difficulties—Operations on the Euphrates: General Brooking occupies Hit, 9th March: preparations to attack Turks at Khan Baghdadi: action of Khan Baghdadi, 26th–27th March: complete British success: pursuit to Ana—Murder of British political officer at Najaf, 19th March: punitive measures—C.I.G.S.' appreciation of situation in the Near East, 14th March—Events in France at end of March cause change of British policy in Palestine—Distribution of Mesopotamia Force at end of March—Reduction of naval strength in Mesopotamia—Progress of railway construction.. 102–141

CHAPTER XLI.

APRIL AND MAY 1918: OPERATIONS IN KURDISTAN AND ARRANGEMENTS TO COUNTER THE TURCO-GERMAN THREAT BEYOND OUR NORTHERN FLANK.

Situation in Persia and Trans-Caucasia: effect in Persia of German successes in France—Activities of Dunsterforce—Turkish plans—Complicated political situation—Turkish dispositions in Mesopotamia—Operations by IIIrd Corps: concentration and preliminary movements: affair of Kulawand, 27th April: Kifri occupied, 28th April: action of Tuz Khurmatli, 29th April: action against Sinjabi tribe, 25th April: causes leading to British advance on Kirkuk: Turkish dispositions on 2nd May: occupation of Kirkuk, 7th May—Discussion regarding policy: General Marshall's scheme for securing Persian road to the Caspian approved on 28th May—Withdrawal from Kirkuk to Tuz Khurmatli—Turkish progress in Trans-Caucasia during May—Situation at Baku: General Dunsterville's proposal to go there with Bicharakoff negatived by War Office in view of Persian situation—Increase of Dunsterforce in Persia—Progress of railway construction in Mesopotamia—Changes in organisation 142–175

CHAPTER XLII.

BRITISH PLANS TO STOP THE ENEMY'S ADVANCE INTO PERSIA AND TO OBTAIN CONTROL OF THE CASPIAN.

Turkish distribution and movements, June 1918.—British distribution—Discussion on British policy in Persia and Caucasia: General Marshall's appreciation of 9th June: C.I.G.S. on 13th June deprecates despatch of British troops to Baku—Bicharakoff reaches Enzeli—Turks occupy Tabriz, 14th June—General Dunsterville secures whole road to Enzeli by end of June—Turco-German differences in the Caucasus—Situation east of the Caspian: despatch of General Malleson to Meshed from India—Situation in South Persia—On 28th June War Office instruct General Marshall to direct his main attention to Persia and the Caspian—British Mission for Krasnovodsk—Bicharakoff sails from Enzeli, 3rd July—General Dunsterville's views on 5th July—Views on general situation by India and War Office, 4th–12th July—In early July, Turks advance on Baku and contemplate advance into North-West Persia: they practically surround

PAGE

Jelus about Urmia—Bicharakoff at Baku—On 15th July War Office suggest despatch of small British force to Baku—Discussion of plans—Situation at Baku and on Caspian—Affair of Resht, 20th July—Progress of British reinforcements into Persia: Commodore Norris, R.N., placed in charge of naval operations on Caspian—Baku *coup d'état*, 26th July: new Centro-Caspian Government request British aid—Bicharakoff withdraws northward from Baku—Colonel Stokes, with small British party, arrives Baku on 4th August: British strength gradually reinforced—Disaster to Jelus at Urmia: flight of Jelu population to Hamadan—Enemy views and plans—Improved situation in Persia generally—Trans-Caspia: complicated situation: activities of General Malleson—Situation in Baku, mid-August—War Office on 14th August define British policy regarding Baku, Krasnovodsk and the Caspian—Railway construction progress in Mesopotamia 176–214

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE FALL OF BAKU.

Situation at Baku, 15th August—General Dunsterville arrives there, 17th—Dispositions for defence—Local difficulties—Turks advance south-east from Tabriz—Appreciation of situation on 29th August—Turkish threat in Persia retards reinforcement of Baku—Turks capture Dirty Volcano, 26th August—Turkish offensive of 31st August—Further enemy offensive on 1st September—Ineptitude of local Baku authorities—General Marshall orders British evacuation of Baku—Action at Kaakha, Trans-Caspia, 28th August—General Dunsterville unable to withdraw from Baku—Turkish advance on Tabriz-Zenjan road early in September: gradual British retirement—British discussion of policy and plans regarding N.W. Persia and the Caucasus—General Dunsterville deprecates abandonment of Baku—War Office, on 11th September, directs temporary retention of Baku—Defensive dispositions at Baku, 13th September—Turkish attack, 14th September: British withdrawal and evacuation of Baku in evening—Break-up of Dunsterforce: General Thomson takes command in North Persia—Commodore Norris takes measures to secure control of the Caspian—Turkish movements, after capture of Baku—Distribution of British troops in Persia, 16th September—General military situation at end of September.. 215–257

CHAPTER XLIV.

BRITISH ADVANCE UP THE TIGRIS: ACTIONS OF FAT-HA GORGE AND ON THE LITTLE ZAB.

Turkish dispositions, 30th September 1918—War Office on 2nd October order an advance up the Tigris—General Marshall prepares accordingly: advance up the Tigris to be carried out by Ist Corps, with 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades, under

PAGE

General Cobbe; IIIrd Corps detachment to co-operate on right flank—Negotiations by Turkey for peace—Turkish positions at Fat-ha and in rear: dispositions on 21st October—General Cobbe's plans and preparations—His operation order of 18th October: later modifications—Forward concentration complete by 23rd October: commencement of British advance—Turks abandon Fat-ha position, night 23rd/24th—*24th October*: British pursuit up both banks of the Tigris, difficulties of terrain: 11th Cavalry Brigade secures crossing of the Little Zab at Zarariya—*25th October*: Lewin's Column on extreme right occupies Kirkuk: on Tigris left bank 18th Division gain Little Zab and cavalry operate to north of it: on right bank 17th Division gain touch with Turkish position south of Mushak—*26th October*: on Tigris right bank, morning attack by advanced troops of 17th Division checked with heavy loss: on left bank 7th Cavalry Brigade sweep country up to Sharqat and 18th Division closes forward on Little Zab: 11th Cavalry Brigade crosses the Tigris at Hadraniya and takes up position on right bank at Huwaish, intercepting Turkish retreat. General Cobbe's operation order of 7.30 p.m. —Turks evacuate Mushak position night 26th/27th October.. 258–292

CHAPTER XLV.

THE BATTLE OF SHARQAT AND THE ARMISTICE.

27th October: British follow up retiring Turks. General Cobbe's orders at 8 a.m. Operations of 11th Cavalry Brigade near Huwaish: attack by 23rd Cavalry. Progress of General Sanders on the Tigris left bank. Progress by 17th Division on right bank. General Cassels' action in the afternoon. Fine march by General Sanders. General Cobbe's orders at 8 p.m. *28th October*: Situation of General Cassels at dawn: Turkish advance against him: attack by 7th Hussars: situation at 1 p.m.: arrival of 7th Cavalry Brigade in evening: situation at nightfall. Action of 17th Division: successful attack on Turkish rear guard. General situation at nightfall. *29th October*: Situation in morning. Progress of 17th Division: contact gained with Turkish main position north of Sharqat. Action by and reinforcement of General Cassels: operations near Hadraniya of 7th Cavalry Brigade: charge of 13th Hussars: complete success. British movements up left bank. Operations in afternoon of 17th Division: British attack: Turkish counter-attack: confused fighting: situation at nightfall.—*30th October*: Turks between General Cassels and 17th Division surrender at daybreak. Pursuit to north by 7th Cavalry Brigade—Successful results of General Cobbe's operations—Information obtained from Turkish commander—Fanshawe's Column formed and directed to push on to Mosul—*31st October*: news of Armistice with Turkey, to take effect from noon 293–321

PAGE

CHAPTER XLVI.

CONCLUSION.

Terms of the Armistice—General Cassels ordered to push on to Mosul—Negotiations with Ali Ihsan—Cassels' troops reach outskirts of Mosul on 3rd November—Arrangements made with the Turks for compliance with terms of Armistice—British take over entire occupation of Mosul on 10th November—Events in Persia and on the Caspian—British re-occupy Baku on 17th November—Action of Dushak, in Trans-Caspia—Events in South Persia—British strength in Mesopotamia on 19th October 1918—Total British casualties during the campaign—Conclusion 322–332

APPENDICES

APPENDIX XL—Distribution of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on 27th May 1917 .. 333–44

" XLI.—Estimate of strength of Turkish Sixth Army on 15th August 1917 345–7

" XLII.—Letter from Mustapha Kemal to Enver Pasha, dated 30th September 1917 .. 348–51

" XLIII.—Distribution of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on 18th November 1917 .. 352–65

" XLIV.—Principal officers serving with the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on 1st December 1917 366–7

" XLV.—Distribution of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on 30th March 1918 .. 368–83

" XLVI.—Distribution of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on 19th October 1918 .. 384–99

" XLVII.—Principal officers with the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on 1st November 1918 400–1

" XLVIII.—Titles of Indian units in 1918 and 1926 .. 402–4

INDEX 405

MAPS

The Middle East	*Frontispiece*
Mesopotamia	
Map 34.—Operations near Ramadi: July and September 1917	
Map 35.—Operations in the Jabal Hamrin: October and December 1917	
Map 36.—Actions at Daur and Tikrit: 2nd and 5th November 1917	
Map 37.—Operations on the Euphrates line: March 1918	
Map 38.—Action of Khan Baghdadi: 26th March 1918	*In Pocket.*
Map 39.—Operations in the Kifri-Kirkuk area: April and May 1918	
Map 40.—The Cavalry affair of the 27th April 1918, and the action of Tuz Khurmatli, 29th April 1918	
Map 41.—Operations of "Dunsterforce," 1918	
Map 42.—Operations at Baku, August—September 1918	
Map 43.—Operations on the Tigris: 18th–30th October 1918	
Map 44.—Action by 7th Cavalry Brigade near Hadraniya: 29th October 1918	*To face p.* 314.
Map 45.—Battle of Sharqat, 29th October 1918	*In Pocket.*

ILLUSTRATIONS

Turkish prisoners captured at Ramadi	*To face p.*	60
Gorge of the Diyala River through the Jabal Hamrin	,, ,,	70
British transport crossing the Sakaltutan Pass	,, ,,	94
Persian "famine labour" road making near Karind	,, ,,	116
Khan Baghdadi battlefield: Turkish forward position area	,, ,,	124
Khan Baghdadi battlefield: Turkish rear position area	,, ,,	132
On the Pai Taq Pass	,, ,,	142
British Infantry (13th Division) near Tuz Khurmatli	,, ,,	152
British transport entering Kirkuk	,, ,,	165
"John Hampshire"	,, ,,	174
Road between Kazvin and Manjil	,, ,,	181
Manjil Bridge	,, ,,	183
On the road between Manjil and Resht	,, ,,	192
14th Hussars on the march to Sehneh	,, ,,	202
Oil derricks, Binagadi	,, ,,	226
The Fat-ha Gorge	,, ,,	264
The Sharqat battlefield	,, ,,	310

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Official War Diaries and Records of the War Section, Army Headquarters, India.

Official War Diaries and Records, Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (Force "D").

Official Records of the Government of India, India Office, Foreign Office, War Office, Admiralty, Committee of Imperial Defence.

Official Despatches on the Operations.

"The Long Road to Baghdad." Edmund Candler.

"Memories of a Turkish Statesman, 1913–1919." Djemal Pasha.

"A History of Persia." Brigadier-General Sir Percy Sykes.

"With the M.T. in Mesopotamia." Lieutenant-Colonel F. W. Leland.

"In the Clouds above Baghdad." Lieutenant-Colonel J. E. Tennant.

"Life of Sir Stanley Maude." Major-General Sir C. E. Callwell.

"The Thirteenth Hussars in the Great War." Sir H. Mortimer Durand.

"Out of My Life." Marshal von Hindenburg.

"Erich von Falkenhayn." General H. von Zwehl.

"Schlachten des Weltkrieges, 1914–1918: Yilderim." Dr. Steuber.

"Yilderim." Lieutenant-Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey.

"Adventures in Turkey and Russia." Lieutenant-Colonel E. H. Keeling.

"The Adventures of Dunsterforce." Major-General L. C. Dunsterville.

"East Persia." Brigadier-General W. E. R. Dickson.

"War in the Garden of Eden." Kermit Roosevelt.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

MAY, JUNE AND JULY, 1917.

(MAPS MESOPOTAMIA AND 34.)

AFTER a series of hard-fought actions extending over three months, General Maude had captured Baghdad on the 11th March. But it had taken his troops another seven weeks' hard and almost continuous fighting to clear his front and flanks sufficiently to secure his hold of that city and to give him room for manoeuvre in its defence. During this period the disappointing inactivity of the Russians on his right had not only added to the opposition he had encountered but had prevented his obtaining as decisive success as he had hoped. The Turkish XIII Corps, reduced to an estimated strength, at the beginning of May, of 900 sabres, 7,800 rifles and 69 guns, had, however, been forced back into the area south of Kifri bounded by the Diyala and the Jabal Hamrin; their XVIII Corps, reduced to an estimated strength of 450 sabres, 7,250 rifles and 34 guns, had been driven up the Tigris to a point about thirteen miles above Samarra*; and their Euphrates detachment had been obliged to retire to Ramadi, some thirty miles westward of Falluja.

With one cavalry and four infantry divisions at the front and with a fifth infantry division beginning to concentrate at Baghdad, General Maude felt that his situation was, for the time being, satisfactory. Although various reports indicated Turkish intentions of reinforcing their Sixth Army, there was little chance of its attempting a serious offensive in the near future. Not to mention the great difficulty of undertaking any important operations during the hot weather, its *moral* was bound to have been weakened by the heavy losses and the series of defeats it had recently sustained. Moreover, it was reported to be short of food, ammunition and other supplies; and its long lines of communication were known to be still but imperfectly organised. Consequently General Maude concluded that he would have some four months in which to rest and reorganise his force and to prepare for further hostilities.

Ever since his capture of Baghdad he had been thinking out his plans, and preparing for the hot weather. His first consideration was naturally the general security of his force, and

* At this point the Turks had an advanced detachment covering their main body at Tikrit.

his dispositions for this will be given hereafter. But he paid great attention to the arrangements for the health and welfare of his officers and men, to help them through a very trying and monotonous period, during which he realised how essential it would be to keep bodies and minds as well exercised as the exigencies of the climate would permit. Only a small part of his force could proceed on leave, and another part would have to hold our advanced positions. But for the remainder camps were laid out on selected sites along the river banks, and were furnished with well organised hospitals, canteens and all possible means of recreation.

In a memorandum which he issued to his chief subordinate commanders on the 7th May, General Maude, after warning them that it was essential to be at all times prepared for an enemy offensive, trusted that the next few months might be a period of well-earned rest for those who had done so magnificently and fought so gallantly. The first step was to make certain points secure defensively, improving the defences week by week, so as to free the bulk of his troops for offensive action as necessary. Simultaneously arrangements were to be made to give the troops the maximum of comfort possible in regard to accommodation and water. The memorandum went on to emphasise the importance of maintaining a high standard of discipline and training, the necessary exercises being carried out, as the heat increased, in the early morning and late evening. Steps were to be taken at once to complete the war equipment of units in every particular; and when granting leave* commanders were to bear in mind, not only the necessity for keeping up the discipline and training of units at a high standard, but also the possibility of their having to take the field at short notice.

A portion of General Pavloff's Russian force was still holding the line of the Diyala in the vicinity of Qizil Ribat; but there seemed little prospect that the Russians would display greater military activity than they had done during the past six weeks. It consequently came as a complete surprise to General Maude to receive, on the night 7th/8th May, a message from General Raddatz, commanding the advanced Russian force on the Diyala, saying that he was crossing that river on the 8th, with the object of capturing Kifri, and asking for British co-operation in the Delli Abbas and Band-i-Adhaim directions. In spite of difficulty, owing to the short notice, in making the necessary transport arrangements, General Maude managed to despatch two small columns on the 8th to divert the enemy's

* By the end of June well over 20,000 officers and men had been sent on leave out of the country to recuperate.

attention and prevent him from reinforcing his front opposite General Raddatz. One of these columns advanced from Diltawa and the other from Barura, and both gained contact with the enemy on the 12th near Delli Abbas and Band-i-Adhaim respectively. In the meantime little news had been received from the Russians; but on the 12th reports were received that they had been driven back again across the Diyala, and this was confirmed next day. Consequently, the two British columns were recalled on the 14th.

On the 8th May the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Maude with regard to future plans. He said that, although unlikely to be able to do much during the hot weather, the Turks might make a determined attempt to retake Baghdad as soon as they could, unless the Russian situation developed more favourably than then seemed probable. If the Turks made such an attempt, General Maude should act on the principles he had adopted since his occupation of Baghdad, and should make his force as mobile as possible, increasing its mobility and power of manoeuvre by preparing beforehand suitable defensive positions. He might thus get time and opportunity to strike the Turks quickly and hard before they could concentrate to strike him. It was essential to avoid any danger of being locked up in Baghdad or elsewhere, and General Maude was to telegraph his intentions when he had considered his plans.

When this telegram was sent, the General Staff at the War Office were considering the possible effect of a Russian secession from the *Entente* as a contingency that might have to be faced.* They arrived at the conclusion that, although on the Western and Italian fronts such an event would add considerably to our difficulties and render a withdrawal from Salonika all the more desirable, a Russian collapse would be felt most acutely in the East. Two months previously the hope of establishing the Russians at Mosul, thus securing our hold on Mesopotamia and enabling us to reduce our force there, had seemed to offer us the opportunity of concentrating in Palestine to defeat the Turks. But the latter would be able to make a much more effective resistance if freed from danger from the Russians in Armenia and Kurdistan; and in such a contingency it seemed doubtful if we could even reach Jerusalem without an undue expenditure of force, while we should have to abandon all idea of conquering Palestine and advancing on Aleppo. Until, therefore, we knew definitely if the Russians would continue to contain large Turkish forces with their

* Nivelle's offensive in France had failed, the unrestricted submarine warfare was taking a heavy toll of our shipping and effective military assistance by America was not to be expected till 1918.

Caucasus Armies, we ought to confine ourselves primarily to the defence of Egypt. In the Mosul–Kifri–Tikrit area in Mesopotamia the Turks could probably supply 200,000 men, three-quarters of them combatants, though it was doubtful if they could maintain that number south of Tikrit to attack General Maude, and it would in any case take them a long time to obtain the necessary transport. General Maude, able to supply 70,000 to 80,000 men at and north of Baghdad and in a central position between the Turkish lines of advance, should be able to deny Baghdad to the enemy. But to prevent the Turks from penetrating into Persia via Kermanshah we might have to send reinforcements to General Maude and provide the additional river and railway transport required to maintain his increased force. Thus, in order to hold Baghdad, no reduction of General Maude's force was possible and it might have to be reinforced.

As regards the East generally, the main conclusion come to was that if Russia made a separate peace the war might be prolonged and we should have to economise more than ever in our shipping. Consequently, in the meantime, we ought to follow a watching policy and limit our forces in the East to the minimum required for the defence of our essential interests.

General Maude replied to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff's telegram on the 22nd May, having delayed his answer to ascertain more clearly the extent to which Russian support might be expected. It appeared increasingly evident, he said, that such support would not be vigorous. Continuing, General Maude said that the Turks might advance towards Baghdad by three lines, i.e., through the Jabal Hamrin and Shahraban, down the Tigris or down the Euphrates; and they could utilise one or more of these lines according to their numbers.

General Maude intended to hold the line Baquba–Sindiya, which was being strongly entrenched, till such time as the Russians occupied Kifri. On the Tigris he had selected a strong position covering Samarra station and another level with it on the left bank of that river. This latter position was not being held for the time being, but it could be occupied and entrenched at short notice.* The position covering Samarra station and a second one, two to three miles in rear of it on the right bank, were being entrenched; while a third position about Istabulat had been selected and would be entrenched should it seem desirable to do so later. On the Euphrates he would hold Falluja. The remainder of his force would ultimately be disposed in the first instance about Sumaika–

* Samarra town was held as a bridgehead, but there were then insufficient troops to hold more; and the desirability of holding the left bank as well as the right bank position would depend on how the military situation developed.

Balad, with a bridgehead on the left bank of the Tigris near its junction with the Adhaim, so as to be in a position to strike rapidly towards Delli Abbas, Band-i-Adhaim or Samarra as occasion demanded.

These preliminary dispositions seemed to General Maude to be the most suitable to deal promptly and effectively with any reasonable numbers brought against him.

In future operations, mobile bridging trains and transport would form important factors. India had been asked to supply suitable vehicles for a second mobile bridging train; the existing land transport was being reorganised, and the Baghdad –Samarra railway line developed.* General Maude trusted that the despatch of the remainder of the mechanical transport from England, approved in November 1916, might be expedited, and he asked for some motor lorries to facilitate the rapid movement of infantry. He did not like to ask for extra troops, but if India could spare him two infantry brigades and four artillery batteries, he could free a cavalry and five infantry divisions entirely for action on the Diyala and Tigris fronts.†

In the middle of April General Maude had already asked for another air squadron. During the operations in April his one squadron had proved insufficient and none of its aeroplanes were such effective fighting machines as some of those possessed by the enemy. The number of these enemy machines, moreover, was reliably reported as about to be increased.

On the 24th May, the Director of Military Intelligence at the War Office telegraphed to General Maude that a Turkish offensive against Egypt was not expected during the summer; that probably the Turks would reinforce their Palestine army; while they might be expected to transfer troops from their Caucasus front to Mesopotamia or Palestine in case of need, as they considered a Russian offensive there would be impossible for some months to come. On the 26th the Director of Military Intelligence sent another telegram, saying it was reported that in April Mackensen attended a conference at Constantinople at which a Turkish offensive in Mesopotamia via the Diyala line was decided on, and that 10,000 men from the 1st, 11th and 19th Divisions had been sent to Mosul. Vehib Pasha was to command in Mesopotamia and was to be relieved in the Caucasus by Mustapha Kemal. On the 29th, the Chief of the Imperial

* A railway line to Baquba was also being constructed.

† In a letter to General Whigham, General Maude said that he hated asking for reinforcements, as he realised that Mesopotamia was not a decisive front; but he felt that he ought to represent his views, when the Chief of the Imperial Staff could decide. He was quite prepared for a refusal.

General Staff informed General Maude that he could make no definite engagement to send additional troops to Mesopotamia, as this would depend on the termination of the campaign in East Africa, the progress made in raising new units in India, and the situation in that country.

A few words are here necessary regarding the situation in India. On the 13th May, the Commander-in-Chief in India had telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that the North-West Frontier situation was less favourable than it had been for a year past. This was due mainly to three reasons—a continuous series of outrages by the Mahsud Wazirs, culminating in three recent incidents in which our somewhat inexperienced troops then garrisoning the border had been rather severely handled; the disturbed conditions in North Persia and Russian Turkestan arising from the military weakness of Russia; and the activities of the Persian Republican Party. All these factors were likely to affect not only the situation in Afghanistan, but also, unless we took prompt steps to show them that we were able to hold our own and exact punishment for misdeeds, the tribes on our North-West Frontier. The Commander-in-Chief estimated that five infantry brigades altogether would be required to punish the Mahsuds; and, as he would have to hold other forces in readiness to watch the rest of the frontier, he found it necessary to detain in India for the time being seven British Territorial and three Indian battalions under orders for Egypt and East Africa respectively.

While realising the undesirability of locking up troops in this manner, H.M. Government left the decision as to the proposed punitive expedition against the Mahsuds to the Government of India, as being in the better position to decide on the course in which lay the least risk. In India it was felt that the military weakness of Russia was having such an effect in Persia that there was every chance of an early revival of the Turco-German plans for an extension of the war eastward through Persia. It was considered that prompt action was necessary to prevent a conflagration on the Indian frontier, the results of which could not be foreseen. The extent and nature of the Mahsud border rendered an effective blockade impossible. The Amir of Afghanistan, thoroughly understanding our situation, was doing his best to intervene on our behalf. The hot weather period of inactivity in Mesopotamia seemed a propitious time for a diversion in Waziristan. Consequently—although it was felt to be unfortunate, both in India and in England, that we should have to undertake such operations before we were in a position to deal permanently, by opening up their country and bringing them under better control, with the menace to the peace of our frontier which the Mahsuds had exercised for many years—the punitive expedition was decided on.

On the 29th May, in view of the probability of a serious attempt by the Turks to retake Baghdad and the possibility of Russian inaction, General Maude asked for nine more six-gun 18-pounder batteries if they could be spared. These would enable him to give each of his five infantry divisions two mixed field artillery brigades, each of three six-gun 18-pounder batteries and one four-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.*

At this time the news of the situation in Russia was generally depressing. Lawlessness and disorganisation were increasing; there were anti-war demonstrations in Moscow, where German officers were said to be living in perfect freedom; the country was overrun by German agents who, with Jews and the Socialist Press, were conducting propaganda against the Allies in general, and Great Britain in particular; railway traffic was much disorganised, and discipline in the army was very bad. At the end of May a slight improvement was reported, due to the formation of a Coalition Government, which was said to be taking steps to restore the discipline and *moral* of the army. But the number of desertions was still large, enemy propaganda continued actively and there were persistent attempts to start negotiations for peace. The Russian Caucasus Armies had been forced by the Turks to evacuate the provinces of Bitlis and Mush, thus reducing greatly the danger of a Russian advance against the Turkish lines of communication with Mesopotamia; and on the 26th May General Maude heard from General Raddatz that, leaving only 16 squadrons, 4¾ battalions and 6 guns in the Qasr-i-Shirin area, he was withdrawing the the remainder of his force to Harunabad. His reasons were: depredations by Kurds on his line of communications, the total absence of local supplies, and sickness in his force due to the climate.

Little definite information regarding the intended Turkish offensive was obtained during May; and it appears from German and Turkish accounts that the enemy's plans were

* Except one division, whose howitzer batteries would have six guns each.

then still in an elementary stage. The following brief summary of events is taken from those accounts.*

The German Supreme Command, yielding to Turkish pressure and the ambitious plans of politicians, had agreed in April to accept the responsibility for operations to re-capture Baghdad and to drive the British back to their base on the Persian Gulf. It had been arranged that the control of the operations should be vested in General von Falkenhayn, who should have under his command a Turco-German force, entitled "Yilderim" (i.e., thunderbolt). It is not clear when the exact composition of this force was settled, but it was to consist of the Turkish Sixth and Seventh Armies, the latter to be formed of the III Corps (24th, 50th and 59th Divisions), the XV Corps (19th and 20th Divisions), and the German "Asiatic Corps."

The formation of this last corps from experienced officers, under-officers and men selected mainly from the Western front was apparently begun in April or May at Neuhammer in Silesia, under the title of "Pasha II." It consisted of three mixed battalions (701st, 702nd and 703rd), each including three infantry companies, a machine gun company and cavalry, mountain artillery and trench mortar detachments (thus giving each battalion a total of 26 heavy and light machine guns, 2 mountain guns and howitzers and 4 trench mortars); a machine gun detachment; an artillery detachment with 4 field guns and 8 field howitzers (three batteries); a battery with 2 heavy guns; a pioneer company with a bridging train; four flying detachments (8 aeroplanes each); a communication company with several signalling and wireless detachments; medical and other administrative units; and a large number of mechanical transport columns. The German Supreme Command recognised that there would be great technical difficulties in carrying out the Mesopotamian enterprise and took great pains to equip this corps, regardless of expense, with everything that could contribute to its fighting efficiency and to its health and comfort under the trying and varying climatic conditions it would encounter in an area served by an unusually long and difficult line of communications.

The Turks proposed that the main advance should be down the Euphrates; and, although some doubts were expressed as

* "Schlachten des Weltkrieges 1914–18: Yilderim," by Doctor Steuber; "Memories of a Turkish Statesman," by Djemal Pasha; "Yilderim," by Lieut.-Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey (translated for the Historical Section, under direction of the General Staff, India, by Captain G. de R. Channer); "Out of My Life," by Marshal von Hindenburg; and "Erich von Falkenhayn," by General H. von. Zwehl.

to its advisability, this general plan was accepted by the German Command, subject to a personal inspection by General von Falkenhayn, who proceeded in May on a short visit to the headquarters of the Turkish Sixth Army.

The recovery of Baghdad from the British would not only be a great personal triumph for Enver Pasha and productive of much effect upon the Turkish people; it would also mean the recovery of the main route into Western Persia. There was also a German interest in encouraging an offensive against Baghdad, for Germany had not yet surrendered her ambitions towards the East as embodied in the Baghdad railway project. As a result of the Russian revolution, the Turks probably thought it safe to ignore the chance of a Russian offensive on the Caucasus front; though the Russian strength still in that area gave little encouragement to any idea of a Turkish offensive there. Turkey in Europe was for the time being secure from enemy attack. The Turks might utilise their available troops for an offensive against the British either from Palestine or in Mesopotamia. But Pan-Turkish ideas saw little to be gained from an offensive on the Palestine front. Egypt—non-Turkish in population, remote from Anatolia, easily accessible to the great maritime Powers—could never be a satisfactory integral part of the compact, ethnically Turkish state that the Pan-Turks had before them as their goal. Hence the Palestine front had, it appears, come to be regarded by the Turks as a purely defensive front. On the other hand, Pan-Turkish ambitions included an extension of the Ottoman Empire eastward into Trans-Caucasia and North-West Persia.

On the 16th May the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had telegraphed to General Maude that the Foreign Office deemed the moment opportune for exploiting our Arab policy and fostering a general movement to embarrass the Turks; and he went on to say that it was considered unsound not to continue to encourage the Arab movement, which had been of distinct military advantage to us in the past.* General Maude was accordingly, after discussion with Sir Percy Cox, to send an outline of the action which his political officers could take to enlist the sympathy of Arab tribes north of and adjacent to the Euphrates and to extend in a general way the scope of the whole movement. On the 29th May, in his telegram already referred to in which he said that he could not definitely engage to send reinforcements to Mesopotamia, Sir William Robertson suggested the possibility of subsidising tribal levies about

* This evidently referred to the Egyptian front.

Mandali and of strengthening our relations with the *Vali* of Pusht-i-Kuh, so as to add to the security of the Tigris line of communications if the Russians fell back, as seemed possible

General Maude replied on the 1st June that Sir Percy Cox thought it might be possible to raise some levies about Mandali as, though unreliable, their chief was mercenary. Sir Percy also considered that the *Vali* of Pusht-i-Kuh might be induced to maintain benevolent neutrality and to refuse passage to Turkish troops, though, having regard to this chief's character, it was doubtful if he would support us actively. On the same date General Maude sent the Chief of the Imperial General Staff a much fuller telegram, saying that he was not clear as to the policy which the Chief of the Imperial General Staff wished to be followed on the general question, and explaining his own views, which, as they expressed generally those held by most military officers in Mesopotamia in what was and is a controversial matter, are given here rather fully.

He had hitherto resisted constant political demands for detachments from his force, feeling they were militarily unsound and likely to involve him in operations outside his main objective. Similarly he had endeavoured to keep the Arab population quiet, treating them well so long as they took no part in the operations, trading with them and making friends with them, but repressing instantly and vigorously by force any attempt at hostility. When there was no fighting in their vicinity the tribesmen soon settled down, but became restless and disturbed if drawn into the vortex of war. It appeared that our policy was tending towards enlisting the tribes under our banner, though it was not clear exactly how it was proposed to use them. They were quite unreliable and though they might fight for us one day, they were quite likely to take up arms against us the next. They had, moreover, little or no fighting value; because—while, as expert marauders, they would take full toll from a demoralised retreating army—they were quite ineffective, though tiresome, against unbroken regular troops.

General Maude went on to enquire if it was the wish to employ Arabs for fighting purposes. He was already paying considerable sums of money and had given arms to certain individuals who gave little return for it save passive friendship, and it seemed open to question whether this could not be obtained on lower terms. Guerilla warfare by tribesmen was worrying, but had no real bearing on operations as long as

regular troops were intact, and it had a disquieting effect on the population. He was not, therefore, in favour of its encouragement broadcast, though special agents could occasionally be employed usefully on such missions as cutting telegraph lines. If, however, the general principle of employing tribesmen to fight was to be adopted, they should be carefully organised under officers who possessed suitable knowledge and wide military experience and they should be used as part of the general plan of campaign under one direction. Otherwise we might only disturb the country needlessly, extend the area of unrest and find ourselves involved in operations which had no bearing on the main issue. General Maude concluded:

> "Even if these forces are systematically organised, I am inclined to think that, owing to lack of time and the inadequacy of means for training them, their influence for good will at best be small, whilst they will always represent potential danger in the area of operations."

Sir Percy Cox was, however, he said, investigating the question.

During May punitive operations had to be undertaken against Arabs in the Falluja area, in the neighbourhood of the Baghdad–Samarra railway and to the eastward of Baquba.

The distribution of the British forces in Mesopotamia at the end of May 1917 is given in detail in Appendix XL. Briefly stated, the IIIrd Corps was on the left bank of the Tigris with its advanced line extending from Baquba to Sindiya; the Ist Corps was on the Tigris right bank from Baghdad to Samarra with detachments on the Euphrates from the Hindiya Barrage to Falluja; and a portion of the 15th Division was near Baghdad. Riverhead on the Tigris was at Sadiya, where a bridge had been constructed, and communication with the Ist Corps about Samarra was by railway. Reinforcements of four batteries of artillery had recently arrived; and of these, at the end of May, the 527th Howitzer Battery was at Amara and the 246th, 257th and 269th Siege Batteries were at Basra. The annual floods had been below the average and the Tigris had begun to fall rapidly as early as the 6th May, causing General Maude some anxiety regarding the working of his river transport service during the hot months. But General Grey, Director of Inland Water Transport, before leaving at the end of May* for England, where he was required by the War Office, reported that the arrangements for the low water season were well in hand. The river transport service, which was by this

* He was succeeded as Director of Inland Water Transport by Lieut.-Colonel R. H. W. Hughes.

time in a very efficient state and was meeting all requirements, was still receiving additional craft from overseas.*

The German and Turkish accounts show that on the 3rd June, General von Falkenhayn, as a result of a personal inspection of the Mesopotamian front and of discussions with Enver Pasha, reported to the German Supreme Command that an offensive against Baghdad was feasible; and he recommended that the German and Turkish forces for this undertaking should be formed into two armies under his command. He considered a British offensive likely in the autumn or winter, both in Palestine and in Mesopotamia, and that the Turks might have to divert a part of the force destined for Mesopotamia to the Palestine front. The German Emperor approved this recommendation and General von Falkenhayn with a large staff of German and a few Turkish officers at once started his preparations, which were thenceforward pushed on continuously. They were largely directed to improving the long and imperfect lines of communication from the Bosphorus to Aleppo and thence to Mosul on the one hand and down the Euphrates on the other. The difficulties were considerable. The capacity of the railway to Aleppo from Haidar Pasha was strictly limited by the still incomplete tunnels through the Taurus and Amanus ranges; the Baghdad railway had only reached the vicinity of Nisibin, whence the indifferent roads and inadequate transport were barely capable of maintaining even the reduced numbers of the Turkish Sixth Army; the only craft it was possible to use on the Euphrates were small launches and the native *shakturs*, besides the *keleks* (rafts) which had to be broken up for transport by land for the return journey up stream; and the desert route from Aleppo to and down the Euphrates valley would require much work to fit it for mechanical transport traffic. Supplies were, however, said to be procurable locally in sufficient quantities.

General von Falkenhayn and his staff took their task in hand with characteristic energy and thoroughness. Arrangements were made for hundreds of motor lorries, for the extension of the Baghdad railway to Mosul, for the improvement of roads leading to the front in this direction, for the construction of thousands of *shakturs* at Jerablus on the Euphrates, for the organisation of a good land line of communications down the

* The records do not contain a statement of the number and nature of river craft in Mesopotamia at this period; but in a telegram to the War Office of the 18th May, 1917, the Commander-in-Chief in India gave 918 as the total number of river craft in Mesopotamia, with 148 more under order from India.

Euphrates valley and for refitting and reorganising the Turkish Sixth Army. Considerable sums of money were also given for the purchase of local supplies, as well as to gain the active co-operation against the British of the Arab tribes in the Euphrates, Tigris and Diyala valleys.

The Germans found, however, that they had not only the natural physical difficulties of the country to overcome. They and the Turks did not work well together; and the friction between the two races increased considerably as the Germans began to take executive control of the great undertaking for which they had now assumed direct responsibility. There seem to have been faults on both sides. The Germans complained of Turkish obstruction, apathy and inefficiency, while the Turks resented German interference which they misunderstood and distrusted and they also disliked German methods which they regarded as unnecessarily arbitrary and arrogant.

At the beginning of June, Enver Pasha moved Turkish General Headquarters to Aleppo and on the 24th of that month he held a conference there, attended by Izzet, Djemal, Mustapha Kemal and Halil Pashas, commanding the Caucasus, Fourth, Second and Sixth Armies respectively. Enver explained to the commanders the role of the "Yilderim" Group of Armies and said that the Seventh Army would march down the Euphrates, concentrate about Hit and then move so as to threaten the rear of the British forces round Baghdad. Djemal Pasha, it is said, did not approve and urged the danger on the Palestine front, but without effect.

It was not long before reports of the Turco-German intentions began to reach the British. On the 6th June the War Office telegraphed to General Maude that they had reliable information that Falkenhayn and staff had left Constantinople on the 13th May for Palestine and Mesopotamia*; that it was uncertain on which of these fronts the enemy intended an offensive, though it would probably be in Palestine, and that the Turks were going to move troops from their Caucasus front to Mesopotamia. Later in the month the War Office sent reports indicating that Falkenhayn had arrived at Jerablus (on his way to Mosul) on the 21st May, that he had urged on Djemal Pasha the advisability of giving precedence to an offensive in Mesopotamia over one in Palestine and that Turkish General Headquarters had been established at Aleppo at the beginning of June. Throughout July General Maude received a series of reports from the War Office and other sources giving further information on the subject. These referred, but only in general terms, to the enemy conference

* General Maude received other reports that it was Mackensen who was visiting Mesopotamia.

at Aleppo in June, mentioned the constant passage through Constantinople since mid-June of Turkish troops from Europe and a large concentration in progress towards Mesopotamia, and repeated the information that Falkenhayn was to control an offensive by a Turco-German force in Mesopotamia. Turkish reconnaissances from Hit and Ramadi towards Karbala were said to have been carried out; considerable reinforcements were reported to have reached, and to be on their way to, Mosul; and agents spoke of great activity on the railway towards Mosul. In connection with this, a message was mentioned as having been signed "Yilderim," a term which General Maude had hitherto not heard and the application of which he did not understand. There were many other reports contradicting the information summarised above.

The general conclusion come to at the end of July by General Maude was that, though there was nothing really definite on the subject and though an offensive in Palestine appeared to promise the Turks better and more decisive results than one in Mesopotamia, it seemed fairly clear that an enemy offensive in Mesopotamia under German control was intended. The only reinforcements that had really reached Mosul appeared to belong to the Turkish 46th and 50th Divisions. It would be wise not to overlook the chance of an enemy advance by the Euphrates, but General Maude thought an advance against his right, thereby cutting him off from the Russians and opening the way for the enemy into Persia, to be more probable. It seemed certain that some German troops would take part in the offensive, but it was considered improbable that the Central Powers would divert any considerable body so far from the main theatre of operations.

In reply to a query as to future Russian intentions in the Asiatic theatre of war, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Maude on the 14th and 16th June a summary of the situation in Russia, where Kerensky's influence and Brusiloff's appointment as Commander-in-Chief seemed to hold out chances of improvement. Brusiloff was about to take the offensive in Europe, and had ordered that no ground was to be yielded on the Caucasus front, where steps were to be taken to improve the bad conditions. There was, however, little chance of Pavloff's force taking the offensive on the Persian front, where communication and other difficulties might even preclude the maintenance of a fighting force of any value on General Maude's right. To prevent this waste of Pavloff's force, Sir William Robertson proposed the following plan

which he would endeavour to arrange with Brusiloff if General Maude considered it practicable:—The Russian Caucasus Armies to maintain the greatest possible pressure, from their existing bases, on Mosul and to garrison adequately Saqqiz, Sehneh, Hamadan, etc., while the bulk of Pavloff's force was transferred to the Diyala to come there under General Maude's direct orders and to be supplied under arrangements made by him by a branch line of communication from the Tigris.* It seemed possible that in this way the fighting value and *moral* of Pavloff's force might be restored.

General Maude replied on the 18th June welcoming the idea. He said that he could supply a Russian force of 14,000 men and 6,000 horses, which, he suggested, should hold the line of the Diyala from Qasr-i-Shirin to Shahraban. Even if they were incapable of taking the offensive, their presence would give increased liberty of action to his own troops and would make it more difficult for the enemy to strike at his communications below Baghdad. If this plan was agreed to, it was important that Pavloff's force should cease its retrograde movement. The bulk of his force on the Diyala had withdrawn to Pai Taq, leaving only eight squadrons in the Qasr-i-Shirin area, and a Turkish brigade had occupied Qizil Ribat.

Three days later General Maude reported that Pavloff had continued his retrograde movement and that the Turks now occupied both Qizil Ribat and Qasr-i-Shirin. General Maude at once made arrangements to meet this situation by sending a detachment from the IIIrd Corps to occupy Balad Ruz, half way between Baquba and Mandali, both to cover his own right flank and as a step towards the occupation of Mandali if necessary.† Beyond hostilities by Arabs, the occupation of Balad Ruz was completed without incident.

At the end of June small Russian columns occupied Penjwin, but were forced to evacuate it again by the Turks on the 6th July. Consequently, whatever the reason for it, this small local offensive had little effect.

On the 12th July, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Maude that at a conference of the Entente Powers, shortly assembling in Paris to consider future military operations, he proposed to press for Russian co-operation on the Persian and Caucasus fronts; and it was

* The Chief of the Imperial General Staff pointed out that it might be necessary to ship gun and rifle ammunition as well as drafts for Pavloff's force from Vladivostok to Basra and thence up the Tigris.

† It looked as if the Turks meant to occupy Shahraban and Mandali.

probable that he would be asked to what extent General Maude was prepared to assist the Russians in offensive operations. It seemed possible that, owing to the recent Russian successes in Europe, the *moral* of their troops in Asia might improve and that we might get some assistance from them in the winter. In that case and if the Turks did not attack General Maude in force, how far would it be possible for the latter, having due regard to the efficient maintenance of his force, to extend his operations northwards so as to help the Russians to capture Mosul? General Maude was to understand that the question was purely hypothetical and that the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had no desire to press him to undertake more than he thought he could safely perform, particularly in view of the length of his communications and the undesirability of diverting more troops to Mesopotamia than had already been arranged.*

This telegram did not reach General Maude till the 15th and he replied at some length the next day. The two main considerations governing the extent to which he could extend his operations up the Tigris to assist the Russians were, firstly, the numbers which the Turks could withdraw from the Russian and other fronts to concentrate against him and which they could supply on the Euphrates and Tigris lines and, secondly, his own service of maintenance. As regards the latter, his river fleet could not work above Baghdad—except possibly a part of it for a few weeks—owing to shallows in the channel and difficult navigation. But by using the railway to Samarra, and provided he received all the mechanical transport already promised him, he would be able to maintain one cavalry and at least four infantry divisions at Tikrit by the beginning of September. He could make no advance beyond Tikrit till he was able to extend the Samarra railway northwards; and this should present no difficulty if he were sent the necessary men and material. But, as the character, vigour and extent of the Russian co-operation would be far more important than the question of maintenance, his further advance must be dependent on the Russian movements. For instance, he would be prepared to take Tikrit as soon as the Russians had rendered his right flank secure by occupying Kifri and pushing forward towards Tuz Khurmatli; and he emphasised the necessity of a vigorous Russian offensive everywhere to prevent the Turks detaching large forces, either to oppose him on the Tigris or, by an advance down the Euphrates, to oblige him to retain a portion of his army near Baghdad.

* This question of reinforcement is dealt with separately hereafter.

General Maude concluded by giving his opinion that the true course to adopt was a vigorous and carefully concerted offensive by the Russians and by his own force. It should be undertaken with the least possible delay, so as to break up the enemy's concentration before he was ready and to obviate the chances of the Russians being stopped by snow before they could make sufficient progress. Owing to the numerical superiority of their left wing as compared with the enemy, the Russians, if they acted with vigour and determination, should be able to ensure the occupation of Kifri and Kirkuk before the enemy could bring up reinforcements.

On the 22nd July, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff repeated to General Maude a telegram from the British Mission with Russian General Headquarters which gave a plan for an offensive against Mosul on a considerable scale to begin at the end of October. General Pavloff had been relieved by General Baratoff, whose troops numbering 14,000 men and 6,000 horses were to re-occupy the line of the Diyala as soon as the climate permitted and were to come under General Maude for operations and supply. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff asked if General Maude could supply them and also said that he had made clear to the Russians the conditions under which General Maude could advance up the Tigris and the extent of such an advance. Here the question of Russian co-operation can be left for a time.

At the beginning of June the War Office agreed to send to Mesopotamia by August another squadron (No. 63) of aeroplanes and twelve additional batteries*; and on the 26th June the Chief of the Imperial General Staff asked, in view of the Russian withdrawal from the Diyala and a probable Turkish attempt to retake Baghdad, what battalions India could spare to reinforce General Maude early in August. Replying on the 28th, the Commander-in-Chief in India said he could despatch six battalions† (some only partly trained) by that date. The formation of nineteen of the twenty-four new battalions‡ had begun, but progress was retarded by the lack of British officers with experience of Indian troops and he asked the Chief of the Imperial General Staff to hasten the return to India of some then serving under the War Office whose services had already been applied for. The operations against the Mahsuds had been

* Nine 6-gun 18-pounder batteries, one 4-gun 60-pounder battery and two 4-gun motor drawn 6-inch howitzer batteries.

† 13th Rajputs, 49th Bengalis, 83rd Infantry, 85th Burma Infantry, 104th Rifles and 126th Baluchistan Infantry. They all reached Basra in August.

‡ See Volume III, Chapter XXXV.

effective; and the resources of India would be available for reinforcing Mesopotamia, subject to preparations for complications in East Persia and Afghanistan. In regard to these complications, the Viceroy, in a telegram of the 29th June to the Secretary of State for India, stated that the whole political and strategical position had been altered by recent events in Russia. These, the unstable political conditions in Persia and the reported nomination of Mackensen and Falkenhayn to commands in Asia Minor and Mesopotamia, led the Government of India to apprehend a renewal of a Turco-German move on Tehran and the progress eastwards towards Afghanistan of organised hostile bodies of troops. Such a project was likely to be more formidable than the previous attempts and India might not only have to guard the Perso-Afghan border single-handed but might have to provide support for Sir Percy Sykes in South Persia. Consequently the extension of the railway from Dalbandin (in Baluchistan) to the Persian frontier was recommended.

On the 2nd July, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff asked General Maude if, with the squadron of aeroplanes and twelve artillery batteries from England and the six battalions from India, he was satisfied of his ability to meet any attack that might reasonably be expected. General Maude replied on the 4th. After explaining how by rearrangement he could garrison Baghdad and certain posts on the Tigris, Diyala and Euphrates with line of communication troops and so release more men of his divisions at the front for active operations, he said that he felt no anxiety as to his ability to meet successfully considerably superior numbers of Turks. He concluded: "In fact, it should not be impracticable to clear the Tigris of Turkish troops by the close of this year if the Russians will co-operate vigorously."

Between the 12th and 18th July further correspondence on the subject of reinforcements took place between the Chief of the Imperial General Staff and the Commander-in-Chief in India. It was arranged that India should send two battalions to relieve two worn out by the operations in East Africa.* The remaining sixteen battalions of the twenty-four under formation, with other divisional units, would not be ready for

* Owing to the excessive wastage in the Indian units in East Africa and to other reasons, it appeared to the Indian authorities that Indian troops were unsuited for service in East Africa and could be more profitably employed elsewhere. But, to further the policy of H.M. Government to terminate the campaign in East Africa as soon as possible, as the readiest means of effecting economy of force, the Government of India agreed to send these two battalions.

service till January 1918 and it was still too early to say where they could be most suitably employed. For the time being, General Maude seemed to have sufficient troops and it was undesirable to send him more than he required to secure his hold on the Baghdad *vilayet*, which was still the object of His Majesty's Government. These new troops might possibly be required in Egypt, but that depended on what happened in Palestine, where General Allenby had recently assumed command and where the policy to be adopted had not yet been settled. It was finally decided that these Indian troops should for the time being be regarded as a reserve for the East ready to relieve or reinforce other troops. Owing to an improved flow of recruits,* resulting from recently organised and energetic arrangements the Government of India, were able to suggest that another twenty-one battalions should be raised to provide a reserve for unforeseen future demands; and owing to the improvement in the frontier situation and the reorganisation of the British volunteer corps in India,† the Commander-in-Chief was able to inform the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that the seven British Territorial battalions temporarily detained in India could be despatched to Egypt in August and September.

On the 21st July Sir William Robertson informed General Maude that the war policy of His Majesty's Government in Mesopotamia remained unaltered, but that the War Cabinet was considering a proposal to reinforce General Allenby for an offensive through Southern Palestine commencing about October, which should materially, though indirectly, assist General Maude. The increase of General Allenby's force depended on the withdrawal of troops from Salonika as well as on shipping; and the former question was to be discussed at an Allied conference to be held the next week. At this conference, however, nothing was settled and the question was postponed for consideration at another conference to be held a few days later. In view of the general situation the Allied military authorities agreed that it was necessary to reduce all commitments in secondary theatres of operations to a minimum and to strengthen the Western Front as much as possible. To carry out their part of this agreement the British

* In spite of recruiting difficulties India had by this time raised about 500,000 men since the outbreak of war and had made arrangements to recruit about 400,000 annually until the war was over; and this in a country where compulsion was impossible and where the annual quota of recruits before the war was about 15,000.

† The Indian Defence Force was created.

General Staff wished to relieve British by Indian troops in Palestine, Mesopotamia and Salonika.

As regards Arab co-operation, General Maude reported to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff on the 24th June, as a result of investigation by Sir Percy Cox, that some of the leading Shaikhs of the Anaiza, one of the largest groups of Arab tribes between the Euphrates and Syria, were prepared, if given sufficient backing, to assist us by action against the Turkish railways in Syria, by stopping supplies from reaching the enemy* and, if we occupied Ramadi, by bringing in the Dulaim Arabs to make good the country from Ramadi to Sinjar. It would be necessary to consult our Commander-in-Chief in Egypt in regard to action against the Syrian railways; the blockade to keep supplies from the enemy would be expensive and probably only partially effective; the occupation of Ramadi was not yet desirable from a military point of view; and the Dulaim Arabs were causing us no inconvenience for the time being. Though Sir Percy Cox thought that the assistance of the Anaiza would achieve a wide and important effect apart from its precise military value, General Maude was doubtful as to the benefit we should derive; but he admitted that anything they could do in the Euphrates valley towards Karbala and Najaf, where the country was open to enemy agents and influence, would be of service.

Steps would be taken to get into touch with the Chief of the Yezidis at Sinjar to gain assistance for organising raids against the enemy communications under British officers when we were able to send them. But, as regards the tribes along the Persian frontier, the Kurds, instead of co-operating with us as we had hoped, were displaying hostility to the Russians; and little could be done with them unless we occupied Khaniqin, which he regarded as impracticable. We could only expect benevolent neutrality from the *Vali* of Pusht-i-Kuh.

In concluding, General Maude said that he was in favour of small raids at opportune moments against definite objectives on the enemy's communications; but he was not in favour of encouraging guerilla warfare or promiscuous acts of hostility, as he considered they would do little good and might be productive of harm. Moreover, he thought that the raising of levies would not be worth the expense involved. Apart from this it should be, in his opinion, our primary aim to pacify the country and keep on friendly terms with its inhabitants, thus enabling us to concentrate our energies against the enemy.

* There was still a considerable leakage of supplies to the Turks from the Euphrates area, at too great a distance from the centres held by the British to be effectively controlled by them.

It was found that the authorities in Egypt considered that any action by the Anaiza controlled from Mesopotamia should be exclusively directed against the Euphrates line of communication to Mesopotamia; and General Maude concurred in their reasons for this opinion, though he pointed out that there were no railways nor railway bridges there offering definite objectives. The recent Arab successes near the Egyptian front, however, led the Chief of the Imperial General Staff to express the hope that effective Arab action against the Euphrates line might force the Turks to retain approximately the same number of men there as General Maude was obliged to keep on his own line of communication; and he pointed out that *shakturs* floating downstream offered tangible objectives for Arab irregulars.

During June investigations were carried out with a view to reconstructing the Sakhlawiya dam* and thus averting the danger from floods†; and it was found that, to cover parties working on this dam, it would be necessary to occupy Dhibban. This locality was within twenty miles of Ramadi and on the 5th July General Maude told General Cobbe that the time seemed opportune for combining the occupation of Dhibban with a stroke against Ramadi, which was said to be occupied by a Turkish force of about 120 sabres, 700 rifles and 6 guns.

As requested, General Cobbe at once submitted his proposals for the operation, including arrangements for the mitigation of the effect of the great midday heat on the troops to be employed. General Maude had no intention of occupying Ramadi permanently, but meant to surprise and drive away its garrison, taking as many prisoners and as much booty as possible.

Since the beginning of June the usual daily high temperatures had prevailed, but on the 8th July the heat suddenly increased, the midday temperature rising in Baghdad to over 122° Fahrenheit in the shade and to several degrees higher in tents and dug-outs.‡ General Maude at once raised the

* It had been breached by the Turks in March 1917, *see* Chapter XXXIV, Volume III.

† For *tactical* reasons General Maude would have liked to leave it alone, as from it water flooded the whole area west of Baghdad; but it might prove impossible to control these floods, in which case they would threaten the Samarra and Musaiyib railways and cut off Falluja.

‡ Candler in "The Long Road to Baghdad" says: "According to the Baghdadis it was the hottest season in the memory of man. Most things were too hot to touch. The rim of a tumbler burnt one's hand in a tent. The dust and sand burnt the soles of one's feet through one's boots. Even the hardy Arab and Kurd made such an outcry that one had to water the ground where they worked."

question of postponing the operations against Ramadi on this account. But, acting on the advice of the local commander at Falluja, General Cobbe said he did not recommend postponement. The weather was unlikely to get appreciably cooler for a considerable time, and General Cobbe was taking all possible precautions to minimise the effect of the inevitable heat.

The force which concentrated at Falluja for the operation consisted of two squadrons of cavalry, fourteen guns, four armoured cars, half a Sapper and Miner company and the 7th Infantry Brigade,* all under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Haldane, then commanding the 7th Brigade. Three aeroplanes were to co-operate with the column; and the 127 motor vans and lorries could assist the infantry by transporting about six hundred men at a time. Among the other special arrangements made to mitigate the effects of the heat the following are worthy of note: all marches were to be carried out at night, tents were to be carried for use by day when the troops were not actually engaged and ice was to be provided for the immediate treatment of any cases of heat stroke.

Dhibban was occupied without incident by an advanced detachment on the night 7th/8th, and the whole force concentrated there on the 10th July. Careful reconnaissances had been made previously of the approaches to Ramadi, where the Turkish garrison, now estimated at 150 sabres, 1000 rifles and 6 guns, was reported to be holding an entrenched line half a mile short of the town and protecting it from the east and south-east. Intelligence received indicated that the enemy's intention was to evacuate Ramadi if the British attacked it.

Half the 93rd Infantry and half a section 133rd Machine Gun Company were left to hold Dhibban. The cavalry and

* The Column consisted of:—

7th Infantry Brigade:
- 1st Connaught Rangers
- 91st Punjabis
- 2/7th Gurkhas
- 93rd Infantry
- 131st Machine Gun Company
- One section 133rd Machine Gun Company.

One squadron each, 10th and 32nd Lancers.
215th Brigade, R.F.A. (A and B batteries).
66th Battery, R.F.A. (less one section).
One section, 524th Howitzer Battery, R.F.A.
14th Light Armoured Motor Battery (four cars).
Two sections, 21st Company Sappers and Miners.
729th M.T. Company with "Star" vans and "Fiat" lorries attached, i.e., 100 Ford and 15 Star vans and 12 Fiat lorries.
111th Combined Field Ambulance.
One pack wireless set.

armoured cars, followed by the remaining half of the 93rd Infantry and section 133rd Machine Gun Company, moved out from there at 5.30 p.m. and secured the Madhij defile, seven miles to the westward,* without opposition, though soon after its occupation hostile rifle fire was opened on the cavalry. By midnight the whole force had concentrated at Madhij and, after resting and watering there, recommenced its advance at 1 a.m. on the 11th July, the half battalion 93rd and half section 133rd Machine Gun Company being left to hold Madhij. No opposition was encountered till 3.15 a.m., when the leading troops were fired on by an enemy piquet on Mushaid Point, but this was quickly driven off and the point occupied. Owing, however, to the heavy sand along the route it was not till 4.45 a.m. that the whole column concentrated there.

After a personal reconnaissance by Colonel Haldane and his artillery commander from Mushaid Point, whence a good view was obtainable, the armoured cars moved forward at 5.15 a.m. to reconnoitre, with three companies 91st Punjabis, who had been covering the advance, following them; and the cavalry pushed out to the right through the gardens along the river bank. The armoured cars were stopped by fire from the banks of the recently constructed Euphrates Valley Canal, which connected the Euphrates with Lake Habbaniya, and by the soft ground. But they brought back information to Colonel Haldane that the Turkish left in the vicinity of the Regulator House was strongly held and that the canal was impassable for cars.† The advance of the 91st Punjabis was also stopped by artillery fire about 5.25 a.m.; and soon afterwards the 2/7th Gurkhas, with half the 131st Machine Gun Company to guard their left flank, were sent forward, supported by the 215th Field Artillery Brigade, to attack south of the left of the 91st. Of three aeroplanes, which had left Baghdad at 4.30 a.m. to co-operate, two had already been forced down by the heat and only one remained in action till about 10 a.m.

The enemy now disclosed six guns, two machine guns and a considerable strength in rifles. His shell fire was very accurate, putting our wireless out of action no less than three times and thus preventing effective counter-battery work by the 66th and 524th Batteries. The Gurkha advance, with nearly two miles to traverse, progressed steadily with only slight loss and about 6.30 a.m. the Turks evacuated the canal banks. The Gurkhas, reaching the canal some twenty minutes later, crossed it and, changing direction to the north-west, took up a line along the Ramadi ridge with their right on the canal. Here they came

* See Map 34.

† It was some 150 feet wide, the water in places being three or four feet deep, and the embankments on both sides of it were about 60 feet wide.

under considerable gun and rifle fire from the south-eastern portion of the Turkish entrenchments about 1,000 yards distant. These entrenchments, consisting of a first line connected with a strong second line of redoubts, were much stronger than had been anticipated and both lines seemed to be held in strength.* The intervening ground was devoid of cover and it was clear that close artillery support would have to be provided before an assault could be undertaken successfully. In the meantime, on the Gurkha right, three companies 91st Punjabis† had crossed the canal under considerable fire from the Turkish left and had advanced a little west of the canal.

At 6.45 a.m. two companies Connaught Rangers were sent forward to reinforce the Gurkhas; and fifteen minutes later our artillery shelled the Aziziya bridge to prevent the Turks withdrawing, as all reports from our artillery observing officers showed indications of an enemy retirement. About 8 a.m., a heavy dust storm came on rendering all observation very difficult; and this kept on almost continuously throughout the day. At 8.15 a.m., when the Connaught Rangers companies joined the Gurkhas, preparations were begun for an assault. At this hour the armoured cars, still east of the canal, were engaged on the right of the 91st within about five hundred yards of the Turkish left, and a section of sappers was sent forward to make a crossing for them over the canal.

A series of misfortunes now occurred and combined with the heat and dust-storm to prevent the operations being carried to a conclusion. Telephonic communication with the 91st Punjabis was cut by shell-fire and linesmen sent to repair it were killed; two artillery forward observing officers became casualties in succession, their telephonic communication was cut and efforts to regain touch by heliograph were frustrated by casualties; and B/215th Battery had two guns temporarily put out of action by direct hits. Consequently, an intense artillery bombardment to cover the assault could not be arranged to commence before 9.30 a.m. But active operations after 10 a.m. would be very risky owing to the intense heat; and Colonel Haldane at 9.20 a.m. felt that he had no option but to cancel his orders for bombardment and assault.

A withdrawal of the advanced infantry during daylight seemed out of the question and all that could be done was to leave them where they were to endure the heat as best they might and to keep them as well supplied with water as possible. By the use of the Ford vans of the 729th Mechanical Transport Company and the untiring efforts of many individuals, a water

* These facts were confirmed soon after 6 a.m. by an airman's report.
† One company held Mushaid Point.

supply from the river* near Mushaid was soon organised. The first supply of water reached the firing line about 10 a.m. and supply was maintained unceasingly till 4 p.m., by which time a total of some 2,000 gallons had been sent forward, the vans bringing back wounded and exhausted men. At 4 p.m., when the Ford vans had to be used to evacuate casualties to Dhibban, the supply of water was continued by units' first line transport.

Our advanced troops had, however, suffered greatly from the terrific heat and from thirst much intensified by the burning wind and the clouds of dust; and their casualties from heat-stroke had been very heavy. Though their guns continued to shell our advanced troops, the Turks made no attempt at an offensive movement, but there were several unsuccessful attacks by Arabs against our flanks.

Towards evening, reports from the front indicated that the enemy contemplated a retirement and in view of such a contingency our troops endured and held on to their forward positions. The night began to pass quietly, but our patrols still reported the enemy as occupying his trenches in strength; and at 3.15 a.m., as his men were in no condition to carry out an assault, Colonel Haldane decided on a withdrawal. This was successfully effected without interference by the enemy and by daybreak our advanced troops had all reached the palm groves on the river bank north of Mushaid Point. Here, covered by an outpost line of troops who had not been actively engaged, they rested throughout the 12th July, operations being limited to an artillery duel and patrol activities in the morning and evening.

Colonel Haldane came to the conclusion that, owing to its strength, the capture of the enemy's position would necessitate prolonged operations which the great heat rendered prohibitive; and he reported his intention of withdrawing to Madhij early next day. This retirement commenced at 2 a.m. on the 13th July, our rear guard being followed and attacked by about 1,500 Arabs, who were beaten off and severely punished as soon as it got light. Madhij proved to be particularly vulnerable to Arab sniping and in the evening of the 13th the force retired to Dhibban, which was reached by our rear guard about 9.30 p.m.† after further hostilities by Arabs.

In this abortive operation against Ramadi our total casualties amounted to 566. Of these 321 were due directly to the heat, which thus caused us greater loss than the enemy. Both Generals Maude and Cobbe agreed that the force had been handled with ability and judgment and that all ranks had

* The water in the canal was salt and quite undrinkable.
† Sunset was about 7.5 p.m.

displayed great gallantry and magnificent endurance. The Turks were reported to have sustained about 250 casualties, including about 100 desertions on the day after the fight.

From May to July there was considerable progress in the development of British railway communications. By the end of July the lines from Kut to Baghdad (metre gauge), from Baghdad to Baquba (2 ft. 6 in. gauge) and Sumaika to Sadiya (2 ft. 6 in. gauge) had been completed; a metre-gauge line from Basra to Qurna was under construction; and the future programme included the extension of the Baghdad–Samarra railway and the construction of lines from Baghdad to Falluja and Musaiyib respectively, all on the standard (4 ft. 8½ in.) gauge. In addition to work on railways and roads, preparations had been made to combat in the coming winter the effect of floods, which would probably be higher than those experienced in the exceptionally dry winter months of 1916–1917.

The German unrestricted submarine campaign was at this period taking such a toll of British shipping that attention was directed to the question of the capacity of the port at Basra, where in July, owing to the heat and the *Ramazan*,* there were considerable delays in unloading steamers and where, as it seemed to the authorities in India and London, development had not kept sufficient pace with the improvement of the inland communications and the growing size of the force. On the 31st July the Inspector-General of Communications in Mesopotamia answered a query from India, as to what improvements were in prospect, by summarising the situation. The port consisted of three portions. At Basra proper there was only a timber wharf and all engineer stores were unloaded by lighter. At Maqil, three miles higher up, were ten "alongside" berths and also some ten berths in the stream at which ships were unloaded by lighters. At Nahr Umar, twelve miles above Basra and a station on the railway then being constructed to Qurna, three ships (shortly to be increased to six) were being worked on the open bank aided by short jetties or floating pontoons. Improvements were in progress, chiefly at Nahr Umar. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff also drew attention to the matter at the beginning of August and the question was at once taken up by General Maude in consultation with the authorities in India, with the result that there was soon a considerable improvement, mainly by the development of unloading facilities at Nahr Umar.

During April, May and June considerable discussion and correspondence concerning the civil administration of the

* A period of fasting for Mahomedans.

country took place between London, India and Mesopotamia, where General Maude, with Sir Percy Cox as his Chief Political Officer, was still responsible for the military and civil government of the occupied territory. His Majesty's Government realised that in view of the military situation it was impossible to set up a civil administration independent of the military authority, but, in order to satisfy themselves of the progress made in carrying out the civil policy they had adopted, they felt it necessary to make some change in procedure. Accordingly at the beginning of July it was proposed that the Chief Political Officer should be given the rank of Civil Commissioner and should submit his reports, giving his own opinion and advice freely, to the Secretary of State for India through General Maude, who would forward them with any observations he wished to make. General Maude gave his opinion on this proposal at some length in a telegram to the Commander-in-Chief in India (repeated to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff). Briefly stated, he asked that he should be given every opportunity to concentrate his whole energies on preparing for future military operations and that his attention should not be distracted by having to justify his opinion when he felt that civil considerations which were being urged upon him conflicted with military interests. It was his duty and his wish that the development of civil administration should be pushed forward as far as could conveniently be done without conflicting with military interest; and as a proof of this he pointed out that such development was already taking place in many directions. But he was afraid that other measures if adopted might militate against obtaining success against the enemy.

Further correspondence ensued and in August it was decided by general agreement that Sir Percy Cox should assume the title of Chief Commissioner, sending reports direct to His Majesty's Government and submitting a copy of them before despatch to General Maude to give his opinion if he thought it necessary. It was laid down that the ultimate responsibility of the General Officer Commanding was to remain unimpaired; that only the minimum of administrative efficiency necessary to preserve order and to meet the needs of the occupying force should be aimed at; that the amendment of laws and introduction of reforms were to be kept within the narrowest possible limits; and that no large or controversial administrative questions were to be raised.

In July General Maude started work in connection with the Hindiya barrage, near Musaiyib on the Euphrates. After

our occupation of Baghdad, inspection showed that the weir, although intact, was in urgent need of repairs; and, as the irrigation scheme dependent on the barrage had not been completed, the costly work of the barrage was in a great measure ineffective. The local tribesmen were clamouring for distribution of water; and to keep them tranquil, as well as to provide supplies for his force, General Maude decided to proceed with the development of the Willcocks' scheme of irrigation.

As regards the Air Force, the heat had considerably restricted the activities of No. 30 Squadron, R.F.C.; but it carried out a large programme of photography, for the compilation of maps, covering several hundred square miles. During the heat wave in July it was found impossible to send the Martinsyde machines into the air even slightly before dawn.* Throughout June the enemy's aircraft were more than usually active, his machines being seen on various occasions on all three fronts; and on the 15th of that month, in view of the approaching arrival of No. 63 Squadron, the Air Force in Mesopotamia was organised as the 31st Wing, still under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Tennant.

A short digression is here necessary to refer to the Report of the Mesopotamia Commission, which was published in June 1917 and which dealt with the operations up to the fall of Kut in April 1916.† The rumours of the sufferings of the wounded in Mesopotamia and of the inadequacy of the medical and other arrangements there, in 1915 and early 1916, had given rise to considerable alarm, anxiety and indignation; and with the surrender of Kut came a growing volume of criticism against the whole inception and conduct of the campaign. For these reasons His Majesty's Government appointed in August 1916 a Commission to enquire into the origin, inception and conduct of the operations in Mesopotamia and into the responsibility of the departments of Government concerned in ministering to the wants of the forces employed there.

* Early on the 10th July two German aviators, arriving much exhausted on foot at Samarra, gave themselves up. Two enemy aeroplanes had been forced to descend between Ramadi and Tikrit and had been burnt, two of the four airmen who attempted to walk towards Samarra having dropped from exhaustion. Guided by one of the German survivors, British armoured cars and cavalry went out at once from Samarra but failed to find any trace of men or machines.

† Nothing said here is intended to apply to the portion of the Report which dealt with the medical arrangements, as with these this history is not directly concerned.

As it was known that most of the shortcomings complained of were in the course of being remedied, the utility and expediency of such an enquiry at that stage seemed doubtful, among those holding this view being Lord George Hamilton, the Chairman of the Commission, who, in a letter published in "The Times" on the 16th July, 1917, explained that he had only undertaken that duty to avert, as he was informed, a political crisis. The other members of the Commission, which was only intended to enquire into a question of administrative efficiency and was in no sense a judicial tribunal, included the Chairman of Committees of the House of Lords, four Members of Parliament, an Admiral and a General. The General had served in India as a young officer many years previously, but none of the others had any practical experience in that country of military or civil administration. Although it took evidence on oath and called before it such verbal or documentary evidence as it required, the Commission in its proceedings did not generally observe the usual rules of evidence; nor, apparently owing to the need for haste, did it give individuals, whose conduct it impugned, opportunity to hear the whole case against them.

Feeling that its primary duty was to adjudicate upon the conduct of the higher authorities responsible for the campaign, and that it was neither intended nor well-fitted to undertake the functions of a number of courts-martial or military courts of enquiry, the Commission decided that it was undesirable to enquire into minor complaints against subordinate officers. It ascertained that the chief persons connected with the campaign were either in England or could be brought there, that a great number of officers who had returned wounded or sick from Mesopotamia were also at home and that the large amount of evidence collected in Bombay and Mesopotamia by the Vincent-Bingley Commission* was at its disposal. Consequently the Commissioners decided that they would not be justified in incurring the great delay and expense involved by proceeding to India and Mesopotamia. This decision was unfortunate, for it seems clear that in no other way could all the relevant facts have been ascertained or the difficulties and disadvantages, under which the operations were carried out, have been weighed in their true relation to the failures. As it was, between August 1916 and April 1917, the Commission examined altogether a hundred witnesses; but neither the Quartermaster-General in India nor any of the officers of his branch, which was directly responsible for all transport arrangements, were called

* Appointed by the Government of India in March 1916, to enquire into the medical arrangements in Mesopotamia.

to give evidence. This omission and other signs from the evidence that the Commission did not always appreciate the true significance of what it learnt, lends force to the criticism, often made, that, generally speaking, the members of the Commission were lacking in the technical and up-to-date knowledge of military operations and military war organisation required in an enquiry of this nature. It is undoubtedly true that, in a military sense, its report was incomplete and in a few cases inaccurate.

The publication of the Report, with its account of the pitiable sufferings of the wounded, aroused a storm of passionate indignation in the United Kingdom, in which a considerable section of the press and the public, overlooking the fact that the Commission's conclusions could not be accepted as well-founded until legally proved, demanded immediate disciplinary action against those whose conduct had been impugned. The Government at first decided to hold a Judicial Enquiry into the conduct of all persons, soldiers and civilians, affected by the Report. But, soon after the debate on the Report in the House of Commons (12th July 1917), it became clear that the country had little desire for any further protracted enquiry. Consequently this idea was abandoned, and the Government issued orders for executive action in certain cases.

During the debate Mr. Chamberlain, whom the Commission held partly responsible for the untoward advance on Baghdad, announced his resignation of the post of Secretary of State for India. His responsibility in the matter was admittedly little more than technical, and the Prime Minister and the Cabinet pressed him to reconsider his decision ; but he declined. Explaining his position in the House of Commons, he said : " It is not possible that I who am named in the Report apart from my colleagues, with whom I acted in common in certain matters, and whose responsibility is sole and undivided in other matters where the Commission administers rebuke or censure, should continue as the head of that office in which my conduct has been censured while such conduct might at any moment be called in question by the judicial tribunal to which you are going to refer these matters." This resignation, which was held to be scrupulously proper and honourable to Mr. Chamberlain, was universally regretted and nowhere more so than in India. Lord Hardinge, who, as Viceroy of India, was also blamed by the Commission, demanded a judicial enquiry and tendered his resignation of the post of Permanent Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs no less than three times ;

but His Majesty's Government decided that to accept it would be detrimental to the public interest.

The Report apportioned blame, in different degrees of responsibility, to the Home and Indian Governments, the Secretary of State for India, the India Office, the Viceroy and several military officers, including Generals Duff, Barrow and Nixon. In the light of the fuller evidence available since then, it is now generally admitted that the Commission's apportionment of blame was not altogether justified, more especially perhaps as regards the authorities in India and in its failure to give full recognition to the way in which they were handicapped, largely owing to the assistance which India rendered to the Empire immediately after the outbreak of war.

In criticising its unpreparedness in 1914, judged by European standards, the Commission appear to have overlooked the constitutional limitations of the Army in India to the defence of India's frontiers and to the maintenance of internal order. For the first time in her history, India, on the insistence of her Viceroy and people, was invited to bear her share of a world war against the greatest military power in Europe ; and, as already related, besides other assistance, she sent many troops to Europe, Egypt, East Africa, Mesopotamia and Aden. The strain on her resources was very great, but, in spite of her military limitations, she was able at the outbreak of war to make good several deficiencies in the armament and equipment of the home forces.

The preparations of European armies for a war on which they had been concentrating their attention for many years proved inadequate in many ways. It is not surprising, therefore, that India—to whom the problem was new—forced to improvise at the eleventh hour with reduced or insufficient resources, should have been found lacking in some respects.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

AUGUST AND SEPTEMBER 1917; THE CAPTURE OF RAMADI.

(MAPS MESOPOTAMIA AND 34.)

THE proposal that General Maude should advance up the Tigris in co-operation with an advance on Mosul by the Russians did not commend itself to the Commander-in-Chief in India, where a close consideration of the project by his General Staff led to the following conclusions. The only remaining objective of any value in Mesopotamia was Mosul and its distance from our own front in that theatre and from the Turks in Syria militated against effective co-operation between General Maude's and General Allenby's forces; while the value of Mosul itself depended mainly on sustained Russian action to the north of Lake Van. Reports showed that at the best any Russian action there would be delayed, and the recent failure of Brusiloff's offensive in Europe strengthened the feeling that we could place no reliance on Russian co-operation. Consequently an advance by us up the Tigris might place us in a dangerous situation, especially if, as appeared possible from recent reports, Falkenhayn was planning an advance down the Euphrates. Moreover, it seemed that General Maude's estimate of his ability to supply a Russian force, practically equivalent to a division, in addition to his own force was too optimistic, having regard to the increasing distance by road of the Russians from railhead, the time it would take to extend the railway northward from Samarra and the receptive capacity of the port of Basra.

The Commander-in-Chief telegraphed briefly to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff in the above terms on the 1st August and concluded by saying that he considered that our proper course for the time being was to secure our hold on the Baghdad *vilayet*, and improve our port facilities at Basra and our transport and communications, so as to be in a position to demonstrate in support of a British offensive in Palestine, or to take advantage of any Turkish mistakes or a real revival on the part of the Russians.

The Chief of the Imperial General Staff replied on the 2nd August. He agreed that effective co-operation by the Russians could not be relied upon, but he could not say this to Brusiloff,

whom he was encouraging in every way to take drastic action to restore discipline in the Russian armies. Sir William Robertson then quoted a telegram he had sent that day, giving his views of possible developments in Mesopotamia, to General Maude. In this he estimated that by the end of September the Turks might assemble, at and south of Mosul, a force of 96,000 rifles, 320 field and 64 heavy guns, but that if the Russians on the Persian front were reasonably active the Turks could hardly bring more than 72,000 rifles and 288 field and heavy guns against General Maude, though their strength would vary up to the maximum number as the Russians made their weight felt or not. He also estimated that by the end of September General Maude would have on the Tigris front 75,000 rifles and 284 field and heavy guns, with well over twice the amount of artillery ammunition that the Turks would have; and it appeared that, even if Russian co-operation had no effect, General Maude should be well able to hold his own. The enemy might be able to get small bodies through the gap on General Maude's right into Persia to make trouble there and to raid our communications, assisted by local tribes, but he presumed that General Maude's communications were guarded sufficiently to prevent any serious interruption by such attack.

Referring to this telegram, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff continued that his object was to get the Russians on the Persian front to do something; and, as he had already discounted their assistance, anything we could get out of them would be so much to the good. He had asked how far General Maude could extend his operations northwards to help the Russians to capture Mosul in anticipation that the Russian representatives at the Paris conference in the previous week would press for some activity on General Maude's part in response to the British demands from them for an offensive. In his reply General Maude had made it quite clear that he had no intention of advancing unless the Russians on his right made substantial progress; and of this the Chief of the Imperial General Staff quite approved. There was no prospect of any Russian advance on the Caucasus front, but anything they could undertake on the Persian front would draw away enemy forces which might otherwise be sent against General Maude. Our policy in Mesopotamia had not been changed and all that Sir William Robertson had in view was to anticipate the enemy's attack if possible, as being the best means of defence.

General Maude also telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial

General Staff on this matter on the 2nd August, giving his views pending a reply from Baratoff, whom he had asked to give certain details as to when he would reoccupy the Diyala line and as to his supply and transport requirements. General Maude still stipulated for a vigorous Russian offensive everywhere and that his own advance should be conditional on the Russian movements; but he might possibly have to cut down the number of his infantry divisions for the advance from four to three. After going into some factors affecting the maintenance question he said that he realised the governing factor in the problem was what the Russians could do. The advantages of a combined British and Russian offensive if it could be arranged were manifest, for it would give us the initiative, a valuable asset. The Turkish concentration seemed to be behindhand so that, granted an early Allied move, there was a good prospect of breaking up that concentration piecemeal; while the moral effect of our advance would be substantial both in Mesopotamia and in neighbouring countries. A passive attitude by us would allow the enemy to complete his concentration and deliver his main stroke as he thought fit; and though this attitude might be forced on us by Russian inaction, we should not adopt it till it was clear that there was no other alternative open to us. The fact of having unreliable allies need not necessarily paralyse us in the pursuance of war. Should a continued offensive by the whole Russian forces and ourselves be decided on after the receipt of the Russian reply, it must be carried out, said General Maude, on the principles outlined previously with due caution and coinciding, step by step, with Russian progress.

On the 5th August General Maude replied to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff's telegram of the 2nd regarding possible developments in Mesopotamia. Assuming that rumours of movements were accurate and that these had already begun, he calculated that eleven Turkish divisions, numbering approximately 67,000 rifles with 308 field and heavy guns* could be concentrated south of Mosul by the end of September. This number added to the Sixth Army troops in Mesopotamia would give a total of 96,500 rifles and 452 field and heavy guns. The Russian force on the Persian front, consisting of some 22,000 sabres, 31,000 rifles and 102 guns, was being held in check by 10,000 Turks with 36 guns; and as the latter seemed unlikely to detach more than another 5,000 men with 48 guns for this purpose, this would mean that they could bring 81,500 rifles and 370 guns against General Maude. The enemy

* i.e., 24 field and 4 heavy guns per division.

could probably find supplies for this force,* but it was doubtful if they could get sufficient transport; and, while anxious not to underestimate what the enemy could do, General Maude felt that we were allowing liberally for the numbers that could be brought against him. It was important to bear in mind the usually large numbers of enemy deserters, while their power to expand their force in Mesopotamia after September would depend mainly on Russian action on the Caucasus front, on the progress made by us in Syria and on their own transport difficulties.

The numbers which the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had estimated that General Maude would have available by the end of September were substantially correct, provided that the Baghdad garrison was included and that all reinforcements, drafts, etc., arrived in time. General Maude considered, therefore, that he should be able to deal satisfactorily with the enemy even if his numbers reached the estimate given. As regards the British communications in Mesopotamia it was difficult to say definitely, in view of their length and the immense number of tribesmen living along them, that they were adequately guarded, but General Maude was not anxious on that score.

Next day General Maude telegraphed that news received from the War Office that Russian troops were being withdrawn to Europe from the Caucasus front, combined with absence of news of definite plans by the Russians and the continued and apparently increasing demoralisation of their army, drove him reluctantly to the conclusion, which he had delayed as long as it was safe to do so, that there was no probability of a sustained offensive of any weight by the Russians in that theatre during the winter. This would necessitate increased activity by his force on the three lines of the Diyala, Tigris and Euphrates; and he had, therefore, to review his plans and recast his organisation. Increased mobility would be essential and, although there was no definite information so far of such intention in any strength, he must be prepared for a hostile movement down the Euphrates. He had all along realised the undesirability of asking for additional troops in view of the magnitude of calls elsewhere, but it seemed to him that the moment had come when, owing to the distance he was situated from England and India, further delay would be wrong.

He submitted, therefore, that the best and most economical way of improvement would be to form another division, thus giving him, apart from the cavalry division and two corps,

* Allowing that their ration strength was double their rifle strength.

two divisions available to reinforce either corps, to hold the Diyala or Euphrates line or to act as a general reserve. To form this division he would require the following additional troops; three British infantry battalions, two field artillery brigades (each of three 6-gun 18-pounder and two 4-gun 4·5-inch howitzer batteries), three small-arms ammunition sections, one horsed cable and one motor airline section, three brigade machine gun companies, one veterinary section and one sanitary section. "In conclusion," he said, "I should like to make it clear that, as regards immediate future, I am quite satisfied with my position and that I am merely looking well ahead in view of possible developments."

Both the Commander-in-Chief in India and the Chief of the Imperial General Staff agreed as to the necessity for the formation of another division, to be numbered the 17th, and steps were at once taken to provide the additional units required.

There was considerable further correspondence in August and September regarding Russian co-operation. General Korniloff, who succeeded General Brusiloff in chief command of all the Russian armies on the 1st August, sent imperative orders for a Russian force under General Vadbolski to undertake an offensive towards Mosul via Ruwandiz and for General Baratoff's force to re-occupy the Diyala line, where he was to come under General Maude's orders and be supplied by him. Owing to the chaotic state of affairs in Russia and General Korniloff's pre-occupation, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, however, considered it doubtful if Russian General Headquarters could make reliable arrangements for operations on the Persian front, and he instructed General Maude to arrange for any possible co-operation direct with General Baratoff. He himself would continue to press for Russian co-operation, though he had little hope of getting it. Any assistance that we could obtain, therefore, would be so much to the good unless General Maude had to take undue risks in return. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff also said that it was improbable that the Russians would attempt anything on their main Caucasus front. Owing to this last opinion, which was confirmed by other information received by him, General Maude telegraphed on the 17th August that any offensive action by him up the Tigris must be restricted, though he hoped that opportunities might still occur for a limited offensive, thus obviating the relegation of his force to a passive attitude, which would give the enemy his best opportunity and at the same time damp the fighting spirit of his own men.

From further correspondence between Generals Maude, Prjevalski (commanding the Russian Caucasus Armies) and Baratoff, it transpired that these Russian generals considered it impossible to re-occupy the Diyala line and commence the offensive against Ruwandiz till the third week and end, of October, respectively; while the British *liaison* officers with these Russian forces did not conceal their opinion that it would be dangerous for General Maude to rely on any effective Russian co-operation. After the failure of Korniloff's *coup d' état* and the ensuing proclamation of a Russian Republic,* the condition of the Russian armies deteriorated rapidly. The British *liaison* officers with the Russians reported their opinion that not only would an offensive against Ruwandiz not be possible till 1918, but that General Baratoff also was unlikely to be able to re-occupy the Diyala as and when arranged. The former opinion was shortly confirmed by General Prjevalski's application to Russian General Headquarters for leave to postpone the Ruwandiz offensive till April 1918.

In consequence of this, General Maude telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff asking whether in the circumstances we should not withdraw our undertaking to maintain on the Diyala General Baratoff's column, as its presence there with its low fighting efficiency seemed likely to encumber rather than assist us. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff replied that, as he had not placed any dependence on Russian co-operation, recent developments did not appear to alter our plans materially. He still considered it desirable to attempt to obtain as much Russian assistance as possible and General Maude was to continue his efforts to get General Baratoff's force on to the Diyala; for, as long as this force remained in being, it must exert a certain amount of influence on the Turks. Suggestions were made about this time that we and the Americans should finance the Russian forces on the Persian front. But, as the British *liaison* officer with Caucasus Headquarters telegraphed on the 30th September—when he said he was convinced that neither Baratoff nor Vadbolski would advance—

> "British gold may keep the Russian troops in Persia, but it will not make them fight. The old Russian army is dead, quite dead. Our efforts, therefore, to resuscitate it stand useless."

Information pointing to enemy preparations for a winter campaign in Mesopotamia continued to accumulate in August; but it was all very vague and incomplete, and consequently it

* It is also noteworthy that on the 20th September the Council of Trans-Caucasian peoples (Armenia, Georgia, Azerbaijan and Daghestan) proclaimed Trans-Caucasia a Federal Republic.

was impossible to arrive at any definite conclusions in regard to the probable Turco-German intentions. At the beginning of the month it appeared to General Maude that there was no indication of a Turkish move down the Euphrates and that at that time the enemy seemed to attach more importance to his Nisibin-Mosul line of communications. Reports continued to come in of reinforcements being on their way to Mesopotamia and included persistent rumours of the participation in the offensive by German, Austrian and even Bulgarian troops; and by the middle of August it seemed clear that large numbers of motor lorries were reaching Constantinople from Central Europe, some of them said to be for use below Mosul, as well as motor ambulances, many aeroplanes and locomotives and much other military material. The Taurus tunnel was not expected to be ready to take standard gauge rails till the spring of 1918; but General von Falkenhayn was said to have ordered that the railway must be extended to Mosul by the end of October 1917.

On the 15th August General Maude estimated that the total strength in Mesopotamia of the Turkish Sixth Army amounted to 2,280 sabres and 31,280 rifles*; and two days later, in a telegram to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, he expressed the opinion that the enemy's plan would include an enveloping movement, in which he would push forward through the Jabal Hamrin and down the Euphrates. Among the reasons which led him to this conclusion were the reports of great activity in road-making between Mosul, Kirkuk and Kifri and the fact that the Turks, who had previously occupied Qizil Ribat and Qasr-i-Shirin on the evacuation of these places by the Russians, were also holding Shahraban and Mandali with small detachments, which might be the advanced portions of a large force or might be with a view to obtaining supplies from those areas.† There had, hitherto, been little definite mention in the reports received of preparations on the Euphrates line, but in the latter half of August these tended to increase and from a captured document it was ascertained that, in June, the Germans had carried out a reconnaissance of routes between Hit and Karbala.

Referring to this and to other information recently received, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Maude on the 30th August that it was probable that the Turks might be planning operations on the Euphrates on a larger

* Appendix XLI gives a comparison of his detailed estimate with an order of battle of this army taken from the Turkish account.

† From Turkish accounts it appears that they were in special need of the supplies from the Mandali area.

scale than we had hitherto supposed. Consequently, Ramadi appeared to have an increased value, for its occupation would bar the best route described in the German report, and would also threaten an alternative route to the westward. In reply, General Maude said that throughout the summer the possibility of Turkish operations down the Euphrates had occupied his attention constantly, even when the indications of any such Turkish intention were slender. There would be both advantages and disadvantages in the occupation of Ramadi, but he was watching developments and he would not hesitate to act if its occupation seemed practicable and desirable.

There was some doubt, at this time, whether Turkish railhead had yet reached Nisibin or not, but in either case it seemed unlikely that it could reach Mosul by the end of October. Consequently the enemy's attack was unlikely to develop on the scale anticipated before that time, whereas General Maude hoped to have all his own preparations ready by the end of September. To this end he had been working very hard all through the hot weather; and during August the pressure of work increased considerably. He realised that the enemy's difficulties would be as great if not greater than his own, the chief one being transport which the Turks could only hope to remedy by an unlimited amount of motor transport. Moreover, the enemy's three main lines of advance, down the Euphrates, Tigris and Diyala, were separated from each other by areas in which water was generally very scarce, while he himself would have the benefit of interior lines. But the distances involved were very great and to locate the enemy's movements in time he must have excellent intelligence, while to admit of his own troops moving rapidly his internal communications must be as good as possible. In addition, therefore, to strengthening his defensive positions so as to release as many troops as possible for mobile action, he had much to do in making roads and especially bridges. Of the latter he had made seven permanent ones over the Diyala, one over the lower Adhaim, five (including mobile bridges) across the Tigris and three across the Euphrates.* The motor transport promised him had practically all reached Mesopotamia by the end of August and although the Tigris was very low his Inland Water Transport was working excellently. His stores, etc., were consequently coming up satisfactorily and he had tapped the local resources so well that, without having to draw on the area round Baghdad where his main force was, he had been able to establish large reserves of supplies at Balad Ruz and on the Euphrates.

* *On the Diyala*—four below Baquba, two at Baquba and one above Baquba. *On the Tigris*—two at Samarra, two at Sadiya and one at Baghdad. *On the Euphrates*—one at Falluja and two to the south.

On the 20th August a brigade group, composed mainly of units from the 14th Division, under General Thomson, occupied Shahraban, the Turkish garrison offering little resistance and withdrawing rapidly to the Jabal Hamrin. General Maude's intention was to hold Shahraban and a line westward from it to the Diyala, thus covering his right and taking a step towards re-establishing communication with the Russians if and when they advanced to re-occupy the Diyala line.

During August, the first of the infantry brigades, the 50th, for the new 17th Division, was formed and was attached to the Ist Corps, relieving the 7th Brigade of the 3rd Division in the Falluja area.

During the first half of September news of the enemy intentions was still indefinite. The numbers of eleven different divisions were given at different times, and from various sources, as coming to Mesopotamia; and mention was several times made of a Seventh Army which was coming to the Euphrates, but it was not clear whether this army was yet formed. One report said that during the first fortnight of August a continual stream of men totalling over 8,000 Turkish and 600 German and Austrian troops with heavy guns, in addition to a daily average of seven train loads of ammunition, had left Haidar Pasha station for Aleppo; while later news was received that a total of two army corps had left Constantinople for Mesopotamia. Other reports said that all drafts were being sent to Palestine or Mesopotamia, that picked men on the Caucasus front were being formed into attack battalions for Mesopotamia and that a large force from this front accompanied by German officers had already left for the Baghdad front.

Regarding movements from Aleppo towards Mesopotamia there were only vague rumours and it appeared that these had not yet commenced on a large scale and were probably awaiting completion of roads and other line of communication arrangements, as well as cooler weather. General von Falkenhayn was said to have been at Jerusalem at the end of August or beginning of September; and Djemal Pasha was said to have been recalled from Palestine and to be on his way to Berlin, which was taken to signify that Falkenhayn was to assume complete control of both fronts and was to take the offensive in Mesopotamia.

As regards the actual plan of campaign in Mesopotamia, there was nothing definite to guide us.

The Turks had reinforced their garrison at Ramadi and were strengthening the position there; and it was said that wireless installations with German personnel were to be established

along the Euphrates route, and that the Turco-German forces were to concentrate near Jerablus for the main advance down the Euphrates with Falluja as their objective, while the Sixth Turkish Army was to confine itself to raids and minor operations. Against such a plan, however, were the great difficulties which, it was known, would attend the use of the Euphrates route by a force of any considerable size; and there was the feeling, intensified perhaps by our anxiety regarding India, that an advance from Mosul via Kirkuk would not only be easier for the enemy from a supply and transport point of view but promised him better results. The Turks had recently re-transferred a part of their Sixth Army to the Kifri area and had been displaying considerable reconnoitring activity towards Balad Ruz and in the Mandali area; and there had been reliable information that about the beginning of September the Persian Government had received information from enemy sources that the Turco-German offensive would begin within a month, and that they intended to enter Persia, occupy Azerbaijan and move towards Turkestan.* It was, of course, possible that this last information might have been given out by the enemy purposely to mislead us, but, having regard to all the factors of the case, this possibility was not convincing.

During the last two weeks of September it was said that a considerable concentration of troops at Aleppo was taking place, but there was no sign of any onward movement in strength down the Euphrates, though some troops were said to have moved to Ras-al-Ain. There had been a big explosion at Haidar Pasha station on the 6th September, when large quantities of ammunition and other stores had been completely destroyed. The standard gauge railway had been completed through the Amanus tunnel, but the Taurus tunnel was not expected to be finished till 1918; and railhead on the Mosul railway had only reached Nisibin at the beginning of September. Taking all these facts into consideration it seemed clear that the enemy's preparations were still much behindhand, if he contemplated an early offensive. Among other information received, illuminating now though not considered reliable at the time until confirmed, was a telegram of the 20th September from the War Office saying that a report received stated that the Germans and Turks were now doubtful if they would be able to deal with the British forces in Mesopotamia with any certainty of success and felt that they dare not risk a failure.

* Information was also received that the Turks had recently disbanded 2,000 Persian levies in the Sulaimaniya area and were sending them to further Turkish aims into Persia, where the Persians were showing an increasing dislike to the South Persia Rifles, a Persian force organised by Sir Percy Sykes. Other German and Turkish attempts to give trouble there were also clear.

As regards the policy we should ourselves pursue, our own General Staff would have preferred from a purely military point of view to carry out an active defensive rather than an offensive policy in Palestine and Mesopotamia, enabling them to concentrate more British troops against the chief enemy on the Western Front. His Majesty's Government on the other hand, doubtful of obtaining a decision owing to the apparent deadlock in the west, considered that the moral and political advantages of an advance in Palestine and Syria offered tangible compensation; while in Mesopotamia one of our main guiding factors was our anxiety for the security of India. In this connection it is worthy of note that by this time Turkey, by containing on both these fronts numerically superior British forces, was conferring a considerable benefit on her European Allies.

On the 9th August the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had informed General Maude that General Allenby was being reinforced by another division and additional artillery, which, it was hoped, would enable him to strike an effective blow in Palestine in September, thus adding to the dissatisfaction and discouragement of the Turks as well as indirectly assisting General Maude. Having heard nothing more of this Palestine offensive, General Maude asked on the 9th September if there had been any modification in the plan. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff replied next day, saying that there had been no modification, that a division from Salonika was on its way to join General Allenby and that additional artillery was being sent him. The actual date for the commencement of operations had not yet been decided, but General Allenby had been warned to be ready to move in September if required and was working to that end. But owing to various difficulties, of which the chief one was water, he would not be fully ready that month. He was anxious not to begin till he was ready and it seemed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, judging by available information, that it would be sufficient if General Allenby commenced in the first fortnight of October. General Maude was asked if he had contrary views, but he must realise that only very special circumstances would justify General Allenby in beginning before he was fully ready. General Maude replied on the 11th September saying that he had only wanted to keep touch with the broad outline of General Allenby's plan and quite appreciated the inadvisability of a premature advance. From the Mesopotamian aspect it would appear sufficient if the Palestine operations commenced in the first week of October.

On the 6th September the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, thinking it desirable to increase the cavalry in Mesopotamia, asked if India could spare a brigade.* In view of the feeling, both in London and India, that the enemy would make as great an effort as possible during the winter to retake Northern Mesopotamia and to stir up trouble in Persia, Afghanistan and Turkestan by the incursion of small parties of Germans and Turks, it was realised that India would not find it easy to spare a brigade†; but the Commander-in-Chief there said that, if after full consideration Sir William Robertson wished it to be sent and the Government of India conesnted, it would be provided. The chief of the Imperial General Staff then referred the question to General Maude, mentioning the difficulties and asking if there was any real necessity for it. General Maude said that in any case it could be usefully employed and would be invaluable if the Russians failed to regain the Diyala line and subsequently occupy Kifri. Consequently, bearing in mind the decreasing reliance on Russian co-operation and the fact that security in Mesopotamia would be the best guarantee for the security of India, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff said that he wished the brigade to be sent. The Commander-in-Chief in India in reply said that he would despatch three Indian cavalry regiments to Mesopotamia in October, but had not a horse artillery battery, machine gun squadron, a field troop or a signal troop which he could make available. It was finally arranged to send from France a horse artillery battery and a British cavalry regiment, which with two Indian cavalry regiments from India and the remaining units to be found in Mesopotamia would compose the 11th Cavalry Brigade.

As at Baghdad he had practically reached the limit within which he could use his river fleet, and in view of the reports that the Turks would rely largely on motor transport, General Maude suggested on the 16th September that his mule transport columns should be gradually replaced by a total of ten Ford van companies. These would increase his radius of action and obviate the necessity for obtaining and transporting large quantities of forage. Moreover, petrol was obtainable locally and mules were becoming increasingly difficult to provide. This suggestion was approved and arrangements were made

* It would take a very long time and much shipping—which was getting short—to send one from France.

† There was also a shortage of horses in India and a difficulty in procuring more.

to send the Ford vans so as to reach Basra in January and February 1918.

On the 21st September General Maude sent a long telegram to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff describing his constant efforts to encourage the Russians to take the offensive and their then evident intention of adopting instead a passive defensive. This action on their part would limit considerably his offensive action, said General Maude, though he would arrange to lose no opportunity of striking as it offered. But it was for consideration whether for this purpose the force at his disposal would be adequate, owing to the probability of the ultimate offensive by the enemy in superior numbers which he would have to meet on his three fronts, possibly simultaneously. He would endeavour to keep reserves in hand ready to move at short notice to any threatened point, but this might not ultimately be possible when the enemy closed, as his own lateral communications, though improving rapidly, were still unsuited for the speedy movement of troops from one front to another. The time had come, he said, when we should cease to depend on the Russians* and, in order to replace the deficiency caused by their defection, he would ask that such of the additional troops, being prepared in India for despatch to Mesopotamia if necessary, as might be available, complete with artillery and other arms, should be placed at his disposal. He was still reluctant to ask for them and had deferred doing so as long as he could.

In replying on the 24th September, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff said that he had for some time recognised that General Maude might require reinforcement. At the same time Sir William Robertson reminded General Maude that as his rôle was a defensive one it was undesirable to lock up in Mesopotamia more troops than were necessary to make him absolutely secure against all conceivable eventualities, especially as his ration strength was already about 340,000, of whom some 200,000 were fighting troops.†

* It is clear from private correspondence between General Maude and General Kirkpatrick, Chief of the General Staff in India, that up to this time General Maude had consistently hoped and planned for Russian co-operation and had refused to accept General Kirkpatrick's view, gathered from what he had learnt on a visit to Baghdad in April 1917 and from subsequent information, that it was inadvisable to base our plans on such a contingency.

† On the 29th September General Maude informed the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that his own estimate of fighting troops in Mesopotamia was lower than this: and he gave the following figures, which included A.S.C. and R.A.M.C. personnel but not their Indian counterparts classified as followers.

[*continued on next page.*]

The telegram continued that, as General Maude knew, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had for some time past been corresponding with India regarding new divisions, and he had just arranged for another cavalry brigade to be sent to Mesopotamia, while he had recently arranged for a reserve of shipping in the Mediterranean for conveyance of troops if urgently required. He could send more 6-inch howitzer batteries and would continue to endeavour to meet all other demands General Maude might make; but he could do no more in the way of sending additional troops than assist India to provide them, as he could only find troops by taking them from France, where the chief enemy was being attacked continuously and successfully. He wished General Maude to state his views after considering the above points. General Maude must, of course, look ahead, but would probably agree that, until his communications had improved greatly, the enemy had a very difficult problem in trying to throw a formidable force against General Maude, especially considering the influence that General Allenby's operations would exert.

On the same day the Chief of the Imperial General Staff informed the Commander-in-Chief in India that it was necessary to ensure the completion, as early as possible, of the new formations which India was getting ready, and he entered into some details concerning the composition of a new division, for which he would provide the artillery and four machine gun companies. He also told General Maude that he was prepared

[*continued from previous page.*]

Formation.	*British all ranks.*	*Indian all ranks.*
Ist Corps	11,792	26,018
IIIrd Corps	19,940	14,746
Army Troops	2,778	3,228
15th Division	6,128	11,079
17th Division	5,024	12,795
Cavalry Division	2,248	4,380
Baghdad Garrison	36	2,838
Euphrates Front	1,456	4,311
Karun Front	165	2,234
Tigris Defences	2,501	8,346
Euphrates Defences	1,185	2,380
Administrative Infantry, Lines of Communication	284	5,688
Base, reinforcements	5,350	9,520
	58,887	107,563

Of the above, the Baghdad Garrison and the Administrative Infantry could scarcely, General Maude considered, be reckoned as fighting troops.

to provide from Europe a fourth machine gun company for each of the six infantry divisions in Mesopotamia.

On the 26th, General Maude explained, in reply, that he had been considering the future rather than the present, as owing to the distances involved and the time required to organise and move troops it seemed advisable to look well ahead. Except for the Russian lapse he was absolutely satisfied with his position. The enemy's concentration was evidently being much delayed. His railhead had only reached Nisibin at the beginning of September, his river communications were insufficient for a large force and his land transport would have to contend with long distances and indifferent roads. Moreover, the *moral* of the Turkish troops was generally low, and there was evidence that our blockade was making it difficult for them to obtain local supplies. On the other hand, our own communications, in spite of obvious difficulties, were working smoothly and satisfactorily; rail, river and land transport were well organised, while supplies, stores and munitions were ample; the fighting spirit of our troops was very high; and the development of Basra port facilities promised well. The additional cavalry brigade would be most useful and he would be glad of four 6-inch howitzer batteries if available. In conclusion he said that he realised fully the undesirability of stinting France to fulfil his requirements; and he only wished to represent his views as regards the future in sufficient time.

On the 27th and 28th September the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, saying that he could send practically all the troops required for a new division, except artillery, to reach Mesopotamia early in 1918. It did not appear as if Falkenhayn could develop superior strength against General Maude in 1917, but as soon as railhead reached Mosul he might be able to do so and restrict General Maude's area of manœuvre by pinning him to the positions covering Baghdad. To counter this, General Maude would certainly require reinforcements in 1918. Recruiting in India was so good that they would shortly begin there the formation of nine of the twenty-one new infantry battalions which he had mentioned in July; and by the greater development of mechanical appliances he might be able to free a few more units from India for overseas. He also hoped that the Chief of the Imperial General Staff would soon see his way to withdrawing the Indian troops from East Africa and thus enable India to devote her resources to the increasing

demands from Egypt and Mesopotamia. It was finally decided that arrangements should be made for a new 18th Division (53rd, 54th and 55th Infantry Brigades) to be sent to Mesopotamia early in 1918.

Besides the reinforcements already mentioned, there were other additions, during the period May to September, to General Maude's force. The arrival of the 6th and 15th Light Armoured Motor Batteries brought the total number of these batteries up to four, and another from France was expected in November. Two Indian machine gun companies and five more light (i.e., Stokes) trench mortar batteries* were formed in Mesopotamia; and, No. 118 Anti-aircraft Section, and ten mechanical transport companies had reached the country.†

By the end of September the 15th Division had practically completed its concentration in the Baghdad area; the 17th Division was in process of formation‡; and reorganisation had effected a reduction of troops on the Tigris line of communication and on the Nasiriya and Karun fronts, thus allowing of concentration of greater numbers in the Baghdad area, where the garrison of the city [208th Anti-aircraft Section, 49th Bengalis (still under training), 116th Mahrattas and 119th Infantry] formed a separate body under the direct orders of General Headquarters.

* The total number of these was now 15, lettered A to O, each with eight 3-inch Stokes mortars.

† Nos. 815, 818, 953, 954 and 971 (Ford Van) Companies, No. 976 (Packards) Company, No. 968 and 969 (Caterpillar tractors for 6-inch howitzers) Companies, and Nos. 911 and 970 (39th and 40th Motor Ambulance Convoys) Companies.

‡ 15TH DIVISION (GENERAL BROOKING).

Cavalry and Signals.	*Artillery.*	*Engineers and Pioneers.*	*Infantry.*	*Medical.*	*S. & T. & Veterinary.*
"D" Squadron 1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry, 15th Divisional Signal Coy.	8th Brigade R.F.A. (372, 373, 374 and 72 Batteries). 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (375, 1070, 1072 and 77 Batteries) =44 guns and howitzers. Three S.A.A. sections.	448th, 450th 451st Field Companies, R. E. 48th Pioneers.	*12th Brigade* (1/5th Queens, 2/39th Gahrwal Rifles, 1/43rd Erinpura Regt., 90th Punjabis, 128th M.G. Coy.). *42nd Brigade* (1/4th Dorsets, 1/5th, 2/5th and 2/6th Gurkhas, 130th M.G. Coy.). *52nd Brigade* (1/6th Hampshire, 45th Sikhs, 84th Punjabis, 113th Inf., 258th M.G. Coy.†).	19, 23, 105 and 108 C.F.A. 16th Sanitary Section.	12th, 42nd and 52nd† Bde. Coys. 15th Divisional Troops Coy. No. 6 Mobile Section.

† Still to be formed or not yet reached the country.

(*For particulars of formation of 17th Division*, see *footnote on page 48*)

The Ist and IIIrd Corps had now each a whole cavalry regiment (32nd Lancers and 12th Cavalry respectively) as Corps cavalry. All the artillery in the force had been reorganised, in which process some batteries had been broken up and others strengthened. One horse, nine field, one sixty-pounder and two 6-inch howitzer batteries had come as reinforcements; two mountain batteries were forming in the country; four 18-pounder and two 4·5-inch howitzer batteries for the 17th Division were due to arrive at the end of October; and four more 6-inch howitzer batteries had also been promised. With the above exceptions and some other slight variations, the reorganisation was complete. When all those *en route* and promised had arrived, General Maude would have a total on the Baghdad front of 324 guns and howitzers.

The 63rd Squadron, Royal Flying Corps, reached Basra in the middle of August. But the unacclimatised personnel succumbed quickly to sickness; and at one time practically the whole squadron was in hospital, with the result that the disembarkation of planes, transport and stores was entirely stopped for a time. An advanced party of the squadron reached Baghdad on the 8th September; but misfortune still pursued it, for on the 25th two of its R.E.8 aeroplanes, which left Baghdad on their first reconnaissance, were lost in an engagement with an enemy machine near Tikrit owing to engine trouble. On the 5th October a third aeroplane was lost and it was not till near the end of that month that the whole squadron was concentrated at Samarra.

17TH DIVISION (GENERAL GILLMAN).

Cavalry and Signals.	*Artillery.*	*Engineers and Pioneers.*	*Infantry.*	*Medical.*	*S. & T. & Veterinary.*
Squadron 10th Lancers. 17th Divisional Signal Coy.	220th Brigade R.F.A.† (1064, 1066 and a six-gun howitzer batteries). 221st Brigade, R.F.A.† (1067, 1068 and a six-gun howitzer batteries). =36 guns and howitzers. Three S.A.A.† sections.	Sirmur, Malerkotla and Tehri-Gahrwa S. & M. Coys. 1/32nd Sikh Pioneers.	*34th Brigade* (2nd West Kent, 31st Punjabis, 1/112th Infantry, 114th Mahrattas, 129th M.G. Coy.). *50th Brigade* (1st Oxford and Bucks L.I., 6th Jats, 14th Sikhs, 1/97th Infantry, 256th M.G. Coy.†). *51st Brigade* (1st H.L.I., 1/2nd Rajputs, 24th Punjabis, 1/10th Gurkhas, 257th M.G. Coy.†).	3, 111 and two other† C.F.A. 1st Sanitary Section.†	34th, 50th† and 51st†Bde. Coys. 17th Divisional Troops Coy. No. 7 Mobile Section.†

† Still to be formed or not yet reached the country.

The main work of the Royal Flying Corps during August and the first three weeks of September was photography, amongst others detailed pictures being taken of the enemy's positions at Ramadi, Daur (on the Tigris about twenty miles north of Samarra), Band-i-Adhaim, Delli Abbas and the Jabal Hamrin. Enemy aircraft were seen occasionally over our lines, but there were few actual encounters.

During September information was received which seemed to show that under German pressure the Turks might begin to use gas against us. Hitherto both sides in Mesopotamia had refrained from its use and although General Maude had a reserve of gas shells, he only kept them for use in retaliation if this became necessary.

Railway progress was good. On the 28th September General Maude reported to the War Office that it was anticipated that the section of the Basra—Qurna railway from the new port at Nahr Umar to Qurna would be open by the 20th October and that the section from Basra to Nahr Umar by the middle of November, though this depended mainly on the floating bridge at Kurmat Ali, regarding which there was some difficulty. An extension of the Baquba line to Shahraban was in progress* and a line on the metre gauge to Baquba following a different alignment had been commenced, while orders had been issued to push on with the standard gauge railway from Baghdad to Falluja.

The heat wave which had set in in the first week of July lasted till the end of the month, after which the normal high temperatures prevailed, the nights getting gradually cooler as the autumn approached. Thanks to the better conditions under which the force was serving and the great improvement which had taken place in all the medical arrangements, the cases of sickness among officers and men averaged generally less than half what they had been in 1916.

In the second week in September, General Maude decided that the time had come to occupy Ramadi. The operation was entrusted to General Brooking, commanding the 15th Division, and General Maude had a personal interview with him on the 13th September.

The troops to be placed at General Brooking's disposal consisted of the 50th Brigade Group, already in the Falluja

* It was completed on 15th October.

area*, reinforced by the 6th Cavalry Brigade, the bulk of the 15th Division and certain other units then quartered about Baghdad†.

Orders for the concentration of the additional troops at Falluja and detailed written instructions to General Brooking were issued on the 14th and 15th September respectively. The main difficulty was the question of supply and transport, as the Baghdad—Falluja road was an indifferent one and between Falluja and Ramadi not much assistance could be given by river transport on the Euphrates. For use in advance of Falluja ten Fiat lorries and 350 Ford vans were placed at General Brooking's disposal, as well as fifty cars of the 40th Motor Ambulance Convoy.

The troops from the Baghdad area marched in four echelons at intervals of one day to concentrate at Falluja, the first echelon leaving Baghdad on the 16th September and the last echelon arriving at Falluja on the 22nd. The day temperature was still high, and owing to this and to transport difficulties on the incompletely repaired roads, the concentration was not effected without some inconvenience and hardship to the troops. General Brooking himself reached Falluja on the 18th and, to cover the concentration, moved the first echelon (42nd Infantry Brigade and certain other units) to Madhij and the second echelon (12th Infantry Brigade) to Dhibban, where they arrived on the 20th.

By reducing to a minimum the garrisons there, General Brooking made available from the troops in the Falluja area the 6th Jats, 97th Infantry (less one company) and 100 rifles 14th Sikhs to accompany his striking force; and on the 20th the 97th Infantry crossed the Sakhlawiya Canal‡ and moved up the left bank of the Euphrates, both to protect the right flank

* The troops already in the Falluja area were one squadron 10th Lancers, the 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (1070th, 1072nd and 77th Batteries), one section 21st Company Sappers and Miners, and the 50th Infantry Brigade (6th Jats, 14th Sikhs, 24th Punjabis and 97th Infantry). Of these, the 24th Punjabis were in four detachments between the Hindiya Barrage and Nukhta and the remainder were at Falluja or above that place, on both banks of the Euphrates, as far as Dhibban and the mouth of the Sakhlawiya Canal.

† These reinforcements consisted of "B" Flight 30th Squadron, R.F.C., 6th Cavalry Brigade (with proportion of cavalry divisional troops, including "V" Battery, R.H.A.), 215th Brigade R.F.A. (1086th, 1088th and 524th Batteries), 72nd Battery, 246th Siege Battery (less one section), 448th and 451st Field Companies, R.E., Malerkotla Sapper Company, 32nd Sikh Pioneers (less two companies), bridging train detachment, four armoured cars of the 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery, 12th and 42nd Infantry Brigades, three pack wireless stations and administrative units.

‡ The men by a footbridge, the animals by swimming and stores by boat.

SIR HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY

of the 42nd Brigade Group and to cover the construction of a ferry at Madhij.

There was much preparatory work to be done before operations could commence. Amongst other things, all the roads needed repair as well as arrangements to maintain them; an advanced base had to be organised at Falluja and an advanced depot for supplies and ammunition to be formed at Madhij; and considerable reconnaissance was necessary.* The boat-bridge at Falluja proved incapable of supporting sustained heavy traffic and another bridge had to be constructed by a second Bridging Train detachment from Baghdad. On the 24th September, however, General Brooking, having obtained by aeroplane reconnaissance enough information on which to base his plans, and being satisfied that his supply situation and the state of the roads warranted an advance, issued orders for the concentration of his striking force at Madhij. This force consisted of the troops from the Baghdad area with the addition of a small detachment 10th Lancers, the 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (to which the 72nd Battery was attached), and the infantry from the Falluja garrison already mentioned. By the evening of the 26th, the force was concentrated at Madhij, covered by an outpost line, about four miles to the westward, which extended southward for some three miles from the Euphrates through McCudden's Point (see Map 34).

Reports and reconnaissances up to date indicated that the enemy was holding Mushaid Ridge lightly and that his main position was about a mile to the east and south-east of Ramadi. His eastern front ran along the Euphrates Valley Canal† and his southern front across low bare, sandy undulations from this canal to the Aziziya Canal. Lower Knoll and Habbaniya Hill seemed to be occupied by outposts only.

It appeared to General Brooking that, in making his dispositions, the Turkish commander had been largely influenced by our action during the abortive attack in July, when we had experienced great difficulties from heat and lack of water and from the searching effect of the Turkish shrapnel fired against registered targets among the bare undulations. The Turks apparently considered that the Habbaniya Lake effectively prevented any wide turning movement to the south and that its brackish water rendered its northern shores unsuitable as a first stage in an attack against their right. Consequently, it seemed that they expected us to make good first the Mushaid Ridge and Horse Shoe Lake and then to work along the river and attack the "Regulator" system of

* Reconnaissance, except local, was practically all carried out by aeroplanes, the cavalry not being used for any distant work.

† Called alternatively the Habbaniya Escape or Habbaniya Canal.

trenches at the northern end of the Euphrates Valley Canal. It also seemed probable that if the enemy failed to check our advance he intended to withdraw. The Turkish strength was estimated as about 100 sabres, 3,000 rifles, 10 guns* and 14 machine guns.

General Brooking decided to encourage the enemy's apparent belief that our attack would be carried out along the banks of the Euphrates. To this end he threw a bridge across the river at Madhij and began the construction of a road from it to the north-west along the left bank; he arranged for supplies to be collected by friendly Arabs on the left bank to the west of Ramadi; he camped troops along the river; and he made a display of strength accompanied by active demonstrations by the 6th Cavalry Brigade on the right of his outpost line. Finally, in his Operation order, issued on the evening of the 27th September, his intention was only given as "to seize the Mushaid position with a view to the capture of the Ramadi position."

That night,† at 9.45, the 12th and 42nd Brigades started their advance in line from the vicinity of our outposts. The 12th Brigade (less 43rd Erinpura Infantry and 90th Punjabis on outposts) under General Dunsford was on the right astride the Madhij–Ramadi road; and with the 42nd Brigade under General Lucas were the 448th Company, R.E., and a company 32nd Pioneers. The 12th Brigade halted about two miles west of McCudden's Point, where it established a line of strong posts, but the 42nd Brigade continued to advance till it had established a similar line along First and Lower Knolls. This it had done by 12.30 a.m., when artillery positions for the attack on Mushaid Ridge were selected, prepared and then occupied. A further object of this infantry advance was to secure a crossing over the Euphrates Valley Canal at the dam; and General Lucas, deciding to make this good as soon as possible, pushed forward patrols to occupy Habbaniya and Escape Hills as soon as he had occupied Lower Knoll. This having been effected with but trifling opposition, reinforcements secured the crossing, where the dam, only slightly damaged, was made fit for the passage of all arms by the 448th Company, Royal Engineers by 3.30 a.m.

In the meantime the 43rd Erinpuras and 90th Punjabis, withdrawn from the outposts, were formed with the 6th Jats into a reserve brigade under Colonel Bourne (6th Jats) and

* According to the Turkish commander captured at Ramadi, his strength was 100 cavalry, 500 artillery and 3,500 infantry with 10 guns.

† Copies of the last aeroplane photographs of the Turkish positions were distributed to the troops before they marched off.

were concentrated near Force Headquarters* at McCudden's Point, while the 6th Cavalry Brigade, taking over the line of the bank north of this point, demonstrated north-westward. General Brooking's intention was that, after daybreak on the 28th September, the 42nd Brigade, covered by artillery fire and supported by the fire of the 12th Brigade, should seize Mushaid Ridge. Of the artillery, the 215th Brigade was to act under General Lucas's orders while the remainder was to be controlled from headquarters.

Soon after 5.30 a.m., when all was ready and patrols had reported the ridge to be unoccupied, the artillery opened fire with aeroplane observation; and two companies 2/6th Gurkhas advanced. Although they came under a heavy Turkish shell fire, these companies suffered only a few casualties and by 7 a.m. had occupied Mushaid Ridge and Point, both of which places the enemy continued to shell heavily, as well as the ground east of Horse Shoe Lake, where he evidently believed our main attacking force to be.†

At 6.50 a.m. General Brooking ordered the 6th Cavalry Brigade to move south-west, under cover of the Mushaid Ridge, cross the dam and then move to the west of the Aziziya Canal so as to cut the enemy's line of retreat west of Ramadi and attack his rear. Ten minutes later General Lucas was directed to seize Middle and Double Hills and General Dunsford with the 12th Brigade (joined again by the 43rd Erinpuras and 90th Punjabis) to cross the dam and support General Lucas. The 6th Jats were to remain near McCudden's Point to guard the right flank.

Moving off at 7.30 a.m., accompanied by the four cars 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery, the Cavalry Brigade crossed the dam about an hour later, coming under some hostile artillery fire; and, continuing in a south-westerly direction, reached the Aziziya Canal, whence a small hostile detachment was quickly driven back on Ramadi. The Aziziya Canal was dry except for some pools, but it was about twenty feet deep with steep sides and the bottom was very soft, horses sinking in it up to their hocks. Ramps had to be made and a bridge constructed, but this was completed by 12.30 p.m. The brigade then continued its advance, first moving due west and then north-west; and, encountering a little opposition from two Turkish cavalry squadrons, had taken up a position astride the road to Hit about three miles west of Ramadi and had cut the telegraph line to

* One hundred rifles, 14th Sikhs formed escort to Force Headquarters.

† After the Turks withdrew from Mushaid Ridge they were unable to see British movements east of that ridge.

Hit by about 4 p.m. Soon after this, enemy guns in barges on the Euphrates opened fire on our cavalry, and maintained it till dark.

To return to our infantry. When General Brooking's 7 a.m. order reached General Lucas at 7.30, the battalions of the 42nd Brigade were somewhat scattered. Half the 2/6th Gurkhas were holding Mushaid Ridge and Point and the other half Lower Knoll and Habbaniya Hill; the 1/4th Dorsetshire were between First Knoll and Mushaid Ridge; the 2/5th Gurkhas were near First Knoll; and the 1/5th Gurkhas (brigade reserve) were between Lower Knoll and Lake Knoll. General Lucas directed the 1/5th and 2/5th Gurkhas to cross the dam and seize Middle and Double Hills respectively, the Dorsets to follow them in support and the 2/6th Gurkhas to remain where they were for the time being. But as these movements might take some time, General Lucas sent General Brooking a message saying so and recommending that if the 12th Brigade was fairly near it should push on. General Brooking accordingly issued orders at 8.45 a.m. for the 12th Brigade to seize Middle and Double Hills and for the 42nd Brigade to reform and follow the 12th Brigade in support. The 1/5th and 2/5th Gurkhas, however, made quicker progress than General Lucas had anticipated, as they crossed the dam after the cavalry at about 8.30 and 9 a.m., respectively. By the latter hour the 1/5th Gurkhas had formed up for attack behind the south-western slopes of Escape Hill and at 9.20 a.m., began to advance against Middle Hill. General Lucas informed General Brooking that the 12th Brigade was two miles behind and in rear of most of the artillery, and that consequently he was not complying with the 8.45 order and was advancing on Middle and Double Hills.

The 1/5th Gurkhas came under considerable shell fire from Turkish guns posted near Jackson's House, but, suffering only a few casualties, occupied Middle Hill about 10 a.m. The 2/5th Gurkhas reached Tel al Rayan at 10.30 a.m., and occupied Double Hill half an hour later. The Dorsets, who had reached Tel al Rayan, remained there in support of the 1/5th and 2/5th Gurkhas; and the 2/6th Gurkhas, who at 9.30 a.m. had received orders to withdraw from Mushaid Ridge and their other positions, were concentrated near the dam as brigade reserve. By this hour (11 a.m.) also, the 215th and 222nd Brigades, R.F.A., having crossed the dam, were in action in close support of the two 5th Gurkha battalions. The section 246th Siege Battery was still in its original position near First Knoll and the 12th Infantry Brigade was west of the dam under cover of Escape Hill.

At 11.10 a.m. General Brooking sent orders directing the 42nd Brigade, supported by the 12th Brigade, to capture Ramadi and Aziziya Ridges, but twenty minutes later modified these orders by directing the 42nd Brigade to seize Ramadi Ridge and the 12th Brigade to seize Aziziya Ridge. At the same time he moved his own headquarters to Lake Knoll, taking with him the 6th Jats, less a road piquet left at McCudden's Point.

For the attack on Ramadi Ridge, General Lucas directed the 1/5th and 2/5th Gurkhas to advance in conjunction with one another at 1 p.m., the Dorsets to move in support and the 2/6th Gurkhas to be held in reserve. The 1/5th Gurkhas began their advance from Middle Hill at 1.10 p.m., but, owing to delay in transit of the order to the 2/5th Gurkhas, that battalion did not move forward from Double Hill till about 2 p.m. Under cover of heavy fire from our guns, the 1/5th Gurkhas experienced no difficulty in seizing Ramadi Ridge. But, on nearing the crest* at about 1.35 p.m., they came under very heavy fire from artillery, machine guns and rifles from the enemy's main positions about 1,000 yards distant and at closer range from machine guns in a number of emplacements along the broken banks of the Euphrates Valley Canal. In a very short time this fire caused the Gurkhas over 100 casualties; but they were not to be dislodged and dug themselves in as rapidly as they could under the heavy fire. Two of the Dorsets' companies came up on the left about 2.15 p.m., also receiving severe punishment as they topped the ridge; a little later the 2/5th Gurkhas came up on the left of the Dorset companies; at 3.30 p.m. another Dorset company came up on the left of the 2/5th; and about 4 p.m. the 2/6th Gurkhas also came up and occupied a line on the right between the 1/5th Gurkhas and the Euphrates Valley Canal. This occupation of the Ramadi Ridge, which pinned the enemy to his position, was particularly well-timed, for it was subsequently ascertained that it caused the recall from Aziziya Bridge of about 1,000 Turkish rifles who had been despatched to deal with the advance of the 6th Cavalry Brigade and to lead the way to a Turkish withdrawal.

* In "The Long Road to Baghdad," Candler describes the ridge. "This low pebbly rise is perfectly smooth, a long and gentle gradient, a bare seventeen feet above plain level. It offered no cover of any kind and our infantry became visible to the Turks a full two hundred yards before they reached the top of the rise."

At 2.45 p.m. the two leading battalions (90th Punjabis and 2/39th Gahrwalis) of the 12th Brigade, which had begun its advance westward from Escape Hill at 1.30 p.m., had reached Double Hill, with the remainder of the brigade west of Tel al Rayan; and at 3.30 p.m., supported by the fire of the 222nd Brigade, R.F.A., and of eight machine guns, the Punjabis and Gahrwalis moved forward against Aziziya Ridge, which they secured without much difficulty and without much loss. The occupation of this ridge so hemmed in the Turks that, unless they could break through the 6th Cavalry Brigade, they appeared to have little chance of escape.* But it was considered advisable to withdraw the 42nd Brigade to Middle Hill after dark, both to rest the exhausted troops and to place them in a better position to deal with a possible counter-attack. The Turks, however, made no such attempt and our infantry passed a quiet night.

By nightfall, General Holland-Pryor had made all his dispositions to deal with a Turkish attempt to break through the 6th Cavalry Brigade. From a personal reconnaissance towards Ramadi he had come to the conclusion that, owing to the need for water in the heat, the enemy would probably use the track close to the river. Three squadrons 14th Hussars astride the road had their left near the river; on their right two squadrons 21st Cavalry had their right thrown slightly forward; and on their right again, also thrown slightly forward were the 22nd Cavalry and 15th Machine Gun Squadron. "V" Battery was to the right rear of the 22nd, and rather wide on the right flank were a squadron 14th Hussars and the 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery to watch the approaches in that direction. Two squadrons 21st Cavalry were in support of the 14th Hussars with a strong patrol well to the west on the road to Hit, whence reinforcements were expected.† General Holland-Pryor's machine guns were posted to sweep the approaches, on which all important points were registered, and "V" Battery kept up a continuous fire after dark, both on the Turkish gun-barges on the Euphrates and on the Aziziya Bridge. There was bright moonlight till 3 a.m. and soon after this the enemy in considerable strength, with three or four guns, having crossed the Aziziya Bridge, made a determined attempt, under the cover of the fire of their guns on the Euphrates, to break through.

* The dispositions of General Brooking's troops at 6 p.m. are shown on Map 34.

† The brigade had practically no entrenching tools, was not armed with bayonets, and its led horses had to be left under cover some distance in rear. The position was one therefore of considerable risk.

The first report of the enemy's advance was sent in by a standing patrol of the 14th Hussars under Lieutenant G. G. Moule, who, by keeping close touch with the enemy, was able to send in reports giving the exact dispositions of the enemy's leading troops. The Turks, advancing in column along the track near the river, were allowed to come within 200 or 300 yards of our line, when twelve Vickers and forty-eight Hotchkiss guns and every available rifle opened fire on the head and flank of the enemy column, causing it heavy losses and bringing its advance to a standstill. "V" Battery held in check the fire of all the Turkish guns and eventually sank both their gun-barges. The Turks persisted in their attack and also made attempts to push through some low scrub and cover along the river bank. But they failed. The whole action lasted for about an hour and a half, and by daybreak the main Turkish force had fallen back across the Aziziya Canal. A column consisting of the 21st Cavalry, 15th Machine Gun Squadron and 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery then moved up the Hit road for about ten miles to capture any Turks who might have managed to slip past. None was found, however, and the only Turks seen were some cavalry on the opposite bank, who had swum the river at Ramadi. It had been a fine piece of work, for which in his report General Brooking attributed great credit to General Holland-Pryor and his brigade, of which he specially mentioned "V" Battery, the 14th Hussars and the 21st Cavalry.

General Brooking had issued orders for the 12th Infantry Brigade, supported by the 222nd Brigade, R.F.A., to push forward early on the 29th September, seize the Aziziya Bridge and attack eastward under cover of cross and enfilading fire by the remainder of the force. General Dunsford accordingly arranged for the 90th Punjabis and 2/39th Gahrwalis, supported by two companies 1/5th Queen's, all under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Waring (90th Punjabis), to advance along the Aziziya Ridge and seize the western end of the Shaikh Faraja Ridge, whence it was thought that the Aziziya Bridge could be kept under close and effective fire.

At 6.15 a.m. the 90th Punjabis and 2/39th Gahrwalis, in this order from the right, emerged from their trenches and took up preparatory positions. Besides a trench line at the northern end of Aziziya Ridge the Turks were holding Unjana Hill; and the right flank of the Punjabis with some machine guns was thrown back to face this hill. Colonel Waring also found it advisable to order up the Queen's two companies to prolong

the left of the Gahrwalis and advance along the low ground between the ridge and the canal. After a five minutes' bombardment of the trenches on Aziziya Ridge and of the Shaikh Faraja Ridge, the 90th and 39th began their advance at 6.35 a.m. But, coming under heavy rifle and machine gun fire, both direct and enfilading, they were checked for a few minutes during which time the Queen's came up on the left of the line. They, the Gahrwalis and a small part of the Punjabis, then pushed on, first capturing the Aziziya Ridge trenches and then, soon after 7 a.m., the western end of the Shaikh Faraja Ridge.

It was found, however, that owing to the walled gardens in its vicinity, the Aziziya Bridge could not be seen nor kept under fire from this ridge. Captain Rodgerson (2/39th Gahrwalis), the senior officer present with the firing line, thereupon decided to advance alongside the Aziziya Canal against the bridge, in which vicinity three Turkish field guns were in action. Taking with him a mixed body of Queen's, Gahrwalis and a few Punjabis and during the advance bringing Lewis gun fire to bear on the Turkish guns, Captain Rodgerson moved forward, finally capturing the guns and securing the bridge. This was about 7.30 a.m. Meanwhile the bulk of the Punjabis had gained the Shaikh Faraja Ridge. Two of their platoons had captured Unjana Hill and, though they were driven off again by a counter-attack and did not re-occupy the hill, the Turks were forced finally to leave it by our gun and machine gun fire.

Though this rapid advance had met with complete success, the leading troops of the 12th Brigade had sustained a good many casualties, and were somewhat disorganised and scattered. At 8 a.m. there seem to have been about 500 effective rifles with Captain Rodgerson at the bridge, and about 200 Punjabis on the Shaikh Faraja Ridge; and, as a Turkish counter-attack against the right of the Punjabis was feared, the question of withdrawing from the bridge to Shaikh Faraja was considered. But the necessity did not arise, as at about 9.15 a.m. Turks in large numbers began surrendering to the Gahrwalis at the bridge.

At daybreak the 42nd Brigade had found the enemy still in occupation of his trenches to the north of Ramadi Ridge; and at 9.30 a.m. General Lucas received orders to advance. As his leading troops began to move forward, white flags went up all along the enemy's line. In the meantime orders had also been sent to General Dunsford to attack eastward, as the enemy in front of the 42nd Brigade was still holding out. In

neither case, however, was an attack found to be necessary; and by 11 a.m. Ahmed Bey, the Turkish commander, and his entire force had surrendered.

By the resolute and able manner in which he had handled his force General Brooking had gained a complete victory.* We buried 120 dead Turks and took 3,456 prisoners, including 190 wounded. We captured 13 guns (three being pom-poms), 12 machine guns, 2 armoured launches, 2 barges and large quantities of arms, ammunition, equipment, engineering stores, railway material and supplies. Our own casualties from the 27th to the 29th September totalled 995, to which the 1/4th Dorsetshire contributed 176, the 1/5th Gurkhas 189, the 90th Punjabis 182 and the 2/39th Gahrwalis 166. A feature of the casualties was the large proportion of very slightly wounded, due to the high-bursting Turkish shrapnel.

In their reports Generals Brooking and Maude both paid high tributes to the fighting spirit and endurance of the troops engaged and to the manner in which the operations had testified to the excellence of their training and discipline. The day-heat had been considerable and the operations had been only rendered possible by the excellent arrangements for water supply, organised and controlled by Captain Crawford. On the 28th September alone, over 14,000 gallons of water had been sent up in Ford vans to the fighting troops by the untiring efforts of the officers and men of Nos. 729, 730, 783 and 784 M.T. Companies.

On the afternoon of the 29th, General Maude sent General Brooking a telegram suggesting a raid on Hit, thirty-two miles distant, where there was reported to be a wireless station with a good supply of stores and ammunition, and only a small garrison. General Brooking could not arrange for a raiding column that night, and proposed to send it the next; but, owing to delays in the transmission of telegrams, the raid was not carried out till the night 1st/2nd October. Hit was reported to have a Turkish garrison of 200 to 400 rifles, and the raiding force consisted of 24 R.E. officers and men of the 451st Company, and 365 officers and men of the 1/4th Dorsetshire, all carried in Ford vans, four cars 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery and some motor ambulances. The column, which occupied about four miles of road, started about 8 p.m. on the 1st October, but was so delayed† that it only reached a point about five miles

* In describing the action in a letter to General Whigham, General Maude said that General Brooking had handled his troops splendidly; his preliminary dispositions were methodical and he then moved with vigour and dash.

† In addition to having to make or repair the road in two or three places, encountering heavy sand in other places, and missing the road on three occasions, it had to drive at times without headlights to escape observation and was also delayed by the slower pace of the motor ambulances.

short of Hit at 5 a.m. on the 2nd. All chance of surprise had passed and Colonel J. F. Turner, R.E., commanding the column, had no option but to order a withdrawal. Before doing so, however, he sent forward the armoured cars to reconnoitre and do what damage they could. But they were stopped by soft ground and effected nothing, though exchanging shots with an enemy patrol. The withdrawal was effected without difficulty, though two motor ambulances had to be abandoned.

In " Yilderim," Lieutenant-Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey gives a brief account of the loss of Ramadi, derived from the report of a Turkish staff captain (Tewfik Effendi), one of the few members of the garrison who managed to escape. The British force advancing on the 21st September had been estimated at two cavalry regiments, six batteries and seven infantry battalions and the Turkish commander reported that on the 22nd he had defeated, with the assistance of Arabs, one of these battalions moving along the north bank of the Euphrates.* Till the telegraph line was cut on the 28th the Turkish commander had not fathomed General Brooking's intentions. But, in the absence of news from Ramadi, orders were sent that day by Yilderim Headquarters to the Sixth Army to send a division at once from Tikrit towards Ramadi. Whether this was done or not is not stated; but no news was obtainable of what was happening at Ramadi till towards the evening of the 30th,† when Tewfik Effendi, who had crossed to the north bank of the Euphrates, reached Hit after having been completely stripped by the Arabs.

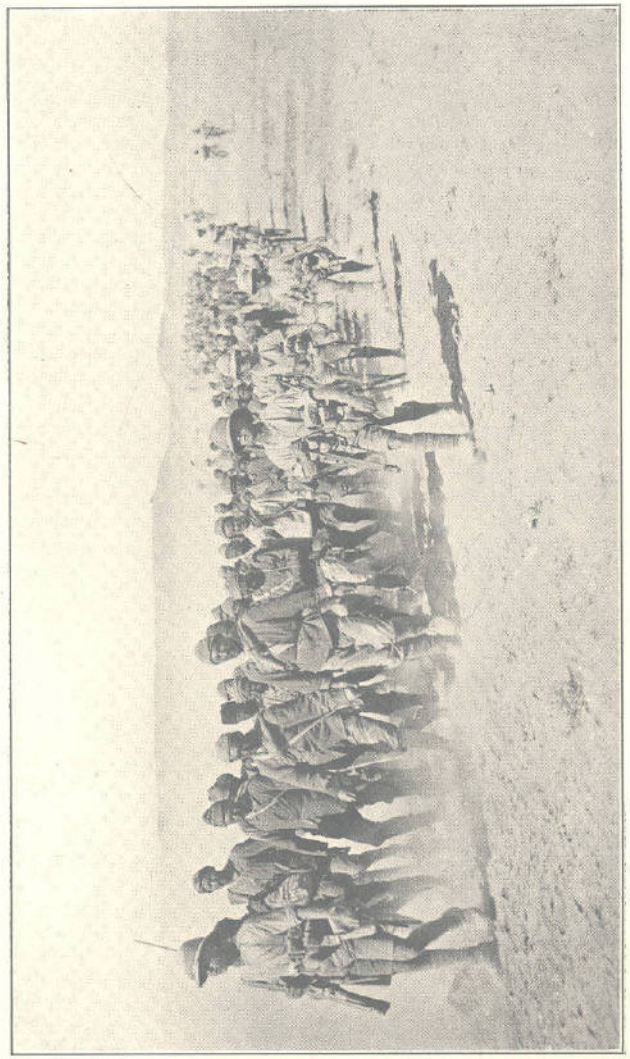
The 3/37th Regiment was at once ordered from Tikrit towards Hit and the 157th Regiment, holding posts along the Euphrates, was directed to concentrate at Hit, whose garrison received instructions to retire if attacked by superior forces. The wireless station at Hit was transferred to Khan Baghdadi and all stores, etc., at Hit were to be evacuated as rapidly as possible. The Turkish account continues :—

> " The disaster to the Euphrates Group had opened the river to the enemy. As the Group had been completely wiped out, he was free to make any move he wished on the other fronts. The Russians too were reappearing on the scene with fresh troops. The supply difficulties in the

* This evidently refers to the surprise of a platoon piquet of the 97th Infantry by about 200 Arabs, who killed or captured the greater part of the platoon.

† Early on the 30th an enemy aeroplane was on the point of alighting at Ramadi, when its pilot, discovering that we and not the Turks were in occupation, flew off again. It escaped, says Colonel Tennant (" In the Clouds above Baghdad ") owing to the vain efforts to start a " Spad " aeroplane.

To face page 60.



Turkish prisoners captured at Ramadi.

zone of the XIII Corps would soon necessitate the withdrawal of our left wing on the Diyala. To secure the Euphrates the 157th Regiment at Hit was insufficient protection. The 50th Division, which was at Aleppo, therefore ordered the 169th Regiment and one battalion of artillery from its attached troops to march to Maskina on the Euphrates and from there to proceed to Hit by *shakturs*. An infantry regiment, a battalion of artillery and various formations of the division remained at Aleppo."*

It is also clear that the orders to the Turkish commander at Ramadi gave him complete latitude to retire from there if necessary, though the position was important as commanding the routes to the Euphrates districts whence supplies could be drawn, and also as a good advanced base for operations against our left flank.

For us its capture had a decisive effect locally. As Candler says : " in the Baghdad *vilayet* Ramadi was recognised as the drop curtain for the Turk."

After the operations against Ramadi had started, General Maude arranged to occupy Mandali (twenty-seven miles east of Balad Ruz), the centre of an area from which the Turkish XIII Corps had been drawing supplies for some time past. The enemy detachment at Mandali was reported to consist of 120 sabres with two machine guns† and the Turks were estimated to have the following other troops on the left bank of the Diyala :—at Qasr-i-Shirin, 60 sabres ; at Khaniqin, 60 sabres and 150 rifles ; and at Qizil Ribat, 360 sabres, 720 rifles, 8 guns and 16 machine guns. British detachments held Shahraban and Balad Ruz.

On the 24th September, General Maude issued orders to General Norton, commanding 7th Cavalry Brigade, to seize and occupy Mandali with his brigade, to which were attached " S " Battery, R.H.A., four cars 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery and other details including two aeroplanes. Leaving Balad Ruz at 9.30 p.m. on the 28th, this column effected its purpose next morning without difficulty, Mandali being occupied by 11 a.m. The enemy garrison offered little resistance and, finding its retreat towards Qizil Ribat and Khaniqin cut off by a detachment diverted by General Norton for that purpose, dispersed north-eastward into the hills.

According to Lieutenant-Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey in " Yilderim," the loss of Mandali so affected the supply situation of the Turkish XIII Corps, that not only had the

* Reports had led General Maude's Intelligence Staff to believe that part at any rate of the 50th Division was at this time in the Mosul area.

† After the capture of Mandali, the garrison was stated to have been composed of 100 sabres, 2 machine guns and 80 men of a local battalion.

1st Infantry Regiment to be withdrawn to Kirkuk from Kifri, but the cavalry brigade had also to retire to the right bank of the Diyala.* He says further that, after the loss of Ramadi and Mandali, and in order to give any assistance required for the fighting that seemed possible on the Tigris, a large part of the 2nd Division was concentrated at Kirkuk and the 46th Division was sent to the Tigris from Altun Kōpri.

The following brief summary, taken from the German and Turkish accounts already referred to, shows generally the enemy plans and intentions during August and September. The fact that by the end of September the enemy had given up for the time being the idea of an offensive in Mesopotamia was not learnt nor realised by us for some time.

The plan of campaign, arranged by General von Falkenhayn by the beginning of August, was that the Seventh Army should concentrate at Aleppo by the beginning of October and that the Turkish portion of it should march down the Euphrates to Hit, where it would be joined by the German Asiatic Corps, moving in motor lorries, so as to start the offensive from there against the British left at the beginning of December. Early in August General von Falkenhayn went to Germany to inspect the Asiatic Corps, and by the middle of August, when he returned to Constantinople, he had doubts as to the advisability of undertaking an offensive in Mesopotamia until the Palestine front was secure.

At that time, according to the Turkish account "Yilderim," the distribution of the Turkish armies was as follows :—

Mediterranean Sea Front	5th Army (eight weak divisions).
Caucasus Front	3rd Army (six divisions), 2nd Army (four divisions, one cavalry brigade and several volunteer detachments).
Mesopotamia Front ..	6th Army (six divisions and several volunteer detachments).
Palestine	4th Army (twelve divisions, one cavalry brigade and Hedjaz column).
Yemen	7th Corps (three divisions).
Rumania	6th Corps (two divisions).
Reserve	7th Army (five divisions).
Total ..	46 divisions and several detachments.

* Actually, however, it does not appear to have all withdrawn until we advanced to the Jabal Hamrin (see next Chapter).

This meant that the whole Turkish reserve was being taken to form the Seventh Army for the Baghdad project.

On the Caucasus front the intentions of the Russians were not clear and information was scarce; but the situation was not dangerous and General Headquarters transferred the 48th Division to the Fourth Army.

In Mesopotamia, the Sixth Army could always be reinforced by troops opposed to the inactive Russians or by the 46th Division, then in reserve on the Great Zab; but any reinforcement to the Sixth Army involved great difficulty in regard to supply. There was no indication that the British force in Mesopotamia was being reinforced to any serious extent, but it was rapidly improving its communications.* No danger was anticipated on this front, as it was held that the British invasion had reached its natural limits.

On the Palestine front the British had been increasing their strength since their failure at Gaza in April, and were evidently preparing for a renewed offensive on a big scale. This offensive seemed likely to begin about the middle of November.

During August General von Falkenhayn represented to Enver Pasha that it would be necessary to make the Palestine front secure before moving against Baghdad; but Enver would not agree. The former held to his ground, however, and at the end of August a conference on the subject took place between General von Falkenhayn and Enver and Djemal Pashas, when the only decision arrived at was to send the 24th Division to the Palestine front. General von Falkenhayn then put his proposals in writing before Enver Pasha, hinting that, if the latter still refused to listen, an appeal would be made to the German Supreme Command. Enver then gave a more favourable reply, and suggested that Falkenhayn should make a personal inspection of the Palestine front. Falkenhayn's German Chief of Staff, who had gone in the meantime to Germany to discuss the situation, returned from there at the beginning of September with permission from German Headquarters to postpone the offensive in Mesopotamia, and to move the Yilderim Army, including the German Asiatic Corps, to the Palestine front. On his arrival General von Falkenhayn left Constantinople and inspected the Palestine front; and by the middle of September Enver Pasha, it is said, realised the danger threatening Palestine.

An additional subject of friction at this time between Falkenhayn and Djemal Pasha was the question of command; and Mustapha Kemal, commanding the Turkish Seventh Army,

* A British mail bag captured on or about 29th July indicated no likelihood of change in their force, i.e., 3rd, 7th, 13th, 14th and 15th Divisions and one cavalry brigade.

was also much dissatisfied. But, on this question also, Enver Pasha did not come to any decision till the end of September when he arrived at the following compromise. The forces in Syria and Arabia* were to form the Fourth Army under Djemal Pasha, with headquarters at Damascus; the forces in Palestine, i.e., up to the northern boundary of the Jerusalem province and on the Jerusalem line of communication, were to be formed into a new Eighth Army, which with the Sixth and Seventh Armies were to come under Falkenhayn's command.

The enemy's main attention was thereafter concentrated on operations on the Palestine front, and though preparations in Mesopotamia continued they were only carried out in a lukewarm fashion.

On the 30th September Mustapha Kemal Pasha, commanding the Turkish Seventh Army, sent a letter to Enver Pasha on the general situation, which, being ill-received by Enver, led to Mustapha Kemal's resignation a few days later. This letter is given in full in Appendix XLII, but for easy reference its main contentions are summarised here. Drawing attention to the chaotic state of the country internally, due to the failure and corruption of the civil administration, he said that if the war continued Turkey's greatest danger was probable internal dissolution. It was likely that the war might continue for a considerable time and the Central Powers did not hold the key to peace, while the forces of Turkey were so weak that even if all her resources were collected they would still be unsufficient. Constantinople might be attacked from the west. On the Caucasus front the Turks could make no headway, and could not stop a Russian offensive if made, though such an offensive seemed impossible. In Mesopotamia the British, having gained their objective, had no political, economic or military reasons for a further advance; and even if they did continue to advance successfully, the loss of Mosul would not be very serious, and would not affect the general situation. On the Hejaz and Sinai fronts the enemy had not yet attained his political and military objectives, and was known to be preparing to achieve his purpose, which was the subjection of Turkey, the formation of a Christian state in Palestine under British influence, the denuding of Turkey of her most prosperous provinces and the destruction of her last religious predominance.

Thus the exigencies of the military situation required Turkey to be ready to meet an attack from the west and to forestall the enemy's advance on Syria. It was useless to ignore the danger to Syria or to think of recapturing Baghdad—a

* i.e., Asir and Yemen.

physically impossible project—with Turkey's last reserves. In his opinion it was essential at once to undertake internal reform and the concentration of all possible resources for a defensive military policy. A Turk responsible to his own Government should continue to hold the chief command in Syria and Hejaz; and Falkenhayn, whose interests were German and not Turkish, should come under this Turk's orders. As regards his own Seventh Army, which should be sent south at once for the defence of Syria, he was prepared to assume the rôle of a spectator if the interests of the country demanded that his army should come under the orders of General von Kress.* He concluded his remarks by emphasising the necessity for Turkey to guard her independence against Germany. He was of the opinion that from the very first Falkenhayn had realised the hopelessness of the Mesopotamian project; and he was generally mistrustful of German intentions.

It appears that Falkenhayn realised from the first that the Baghdad project would at any rate be very difficult. In General von Zwehl's book, "Erich von Falkenhayn," a memorandum dated 9th August, 1917, is quoted wherein Falkenhayn expressed doubts as to the feasibility of the enterprise. But there is no evidence before that date that he considered it hopeless. Mustapha Kemal's letter confirms the opinion that Enver Pasha favoured the idea till the last, and it is noteworthy that his final agreement to its postponement was apparently not given till after the destructive explosion at Haidar Pasha station on the 6th September.

* Commanding on the Palestine front.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

OCTOBER TO DECEMBER, 1917. OCCUPATION OF THE JABAL HAMRIN, ACTION OF TIKRIT AND DEATH OF GENERAL MAUDE.

(Maps 35 and 36.)

BY the capture of Ramadi General Maude had obtained information concerning the enemy's intentions and preparations from which it seemed clear that Falkenhayn meant to carry out his main advance with the Turkish Seventh Army down the Euphrates while the Sixth Army operated on the Tigris and towards Mandali. But, early in October, accumulating evidence showed that General Allenby's preparations for an offensive in Palestine were having a considerable effect on Falkenhayn's intentions and preparations. The Turkish Seventh Army about Aleppo had detached one, if not two, divisions to Palestine, while the enemy preparations on the Euphrates, still in a very backward state, seemed to be progressing very slowly. Moreover, his collection of local supplies, only recently begun to any considerable extent, was evidently being hindered by our occupation of Ramadi. The Turkish Sixth Army also seemed unready for serious operations. The constant desertions showed its *moral* to be indifferent; its divisions were still weak in strength, though part of the 50th Division had joined it and the 46th Division was said to be about Altun Köpri; its railhead was still at Nisibin; and it was very short of supplies. Finally, of the two German divisions reported as being prepared for service with the Turks, the first was said to be only leaving Germany for Constantinople at the end of September.*

Although an army corps of the Turkish Seventh Army was said to be still about Aleppo in readiness to move down the

* The composition of these divisions was uncertain. The 701st, 702nd and 703rd Infantry Battalions, preparing for service with the Turks, were located in September as being at Neuhammer in Lower Silesia and news was received later in October of three other battalions there numbered 708th, 709th and 710th, of which the last was a reserve battalion. It was not till late in December that identification of units on the Palestine front gave us a more correct idea of their strength and formation. A German cyclist brigade (4,000 rifles and 60 machine guns), withdrawn from the Flanders front in September, was also reported as being destined for Asia Minor: but some weeks later it was identified on the Riga front.

Euphrates, it was felt, taking everything into consideration, that a serious enemy offensive in Mesopotamia was not imminent. On the other hand there were several indications that the enemy meant to take advantage of the Russian inactivity to send small parties into Persia.

On the extreme British right, British detachments occupied Mandali and Balad Ruz, while the 14th Division held a line which extended from the neighbourhood of Shahraban to and along the left bank of the Diyala as far south as Windiya, westward of which the 13th Division held a line to a point on the Tigris just north of Sindiya.* Opposite the British IIIrd Corps was the Turkish XIII Corps holding a very extended line in no great strength, with its advanced troops along the western slopes of the Jabal Hamrin. In the area Qizil Ribat-Jabal Hamrin, east of the Diyala, it was estimated that the Turks had about 540 sabres, 1,100 rifles, and 12 guns, with a further 60 sabres about Khaniqin; while between Kifri and the Diyala, and including an advanced detachment at Delli Abbas, their total strength was reckoned as about 50 sabres, 3,200 rifles and 28 guns.

When the Russians withdrew from the Diyala General Maude would have liked to occupy the Jabal Hamrin, both to render his right flank more secure and to deny to the Turks this screen for movements against his flank and into Persia. But transportation difficulties and the great heat stood in the way. A further reason for its occupation was that from it the Turks were able to interfere seriously with the supply of water for irrigating the land along the Diyala. But it was not till the beginning of October, when the weather was cooler, the light railway running to Shahraban, the conversion to metre-gauge of the section from Baghdad to Baquba nearing completion and the Turco-German offensive hanging fire, that General Maude felt in a position to carry out this project. On the 7th October he discussed the outline of the necessary operations with General Marshall, to whom he sent orders next day that the IIIrd Corps, with certain cavalry and army troops attached, was to occupy the Jabal Hamrin on the Diyala left bank so as to control the mouths of the various canals fed by the Diyala downstream of Abu Zenabil. At the same time General Marshall was asked to submit to General Headquarters the broad details of his plan, for which the preliminary movements should be commenced so as to enable the column on the Diyala right bank to begin to make its presence felt by the enemy by the 17th October.

* See Map 35.

General Marshall's plan, which was approved by General Maude, was first to drive the Turks out of their advanced position about Delli Abbas and then to hold them in front while his main attack developed against their left flank. For this purpose, after leaving portions of his Corps to hold the line Mandali–Shahraban–Windiya–Sindiya, General Marshall divided his striking force into three groups. The Right Group, under General Egerton, consisting of the 7th Cavalry Brigade and part of the 14th Division, was composed of three cavalry regiments, four armoured cars, seven infantry battalions and thirty-eight guns. The Centre Group, under General Thomson, was composed of four infantry battalions and twenty guns; and the Left Group, under General Cayley, of two cavalry squadrons, two armoured cars, eight infantry battalions and twenty guns.*

Part of the 30th Squadron, R.F.C., with headquarters at Shahraban, where General Marshall also established his advanced headquarters, co-operated; and nearly 800 Ford vans were detailed for supply and transport purposes.

The forward concentration commenced on the 16th October. On the 18th the Left Group, meeting with little opposition, occupied an east and west line to the northward of Delli Abbas, with its right flank bent back to connect at the Diyala with the line held by the Centre Group to the north of Shahraban. The Right Group was then in three portions: the 36th Infantry Brigade Group at Shahraban, the 37th Infantry Brigade Group on the eastern side of the Ruz canal three miles south of Tel Ibara, and the 7th Cavalry Brigade at Mandali. In the

* The composition of the three groups was as follows:—

Right Group—14th Divisional Headquarters; Headquarters 14th Divisional Artillery; 2nd Battery, R.F.A. (less one section), A/69th Battery, R.F.A., 66th Brigade, R.F.A. (from 13th Division), one section 26th Mountain Battery; 12th Company Sappers and Miners, 15th Company Sappers and Miners (less two sections), detachment No. 1 Bridging Train, 128th Pioneers (less one company); 36th Infantry Brigade (less 26th Punjabis); 37th Infantry Brigade; 7th Cavalry Brigade, with "S" Battery, R.H.A.; 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery (less three sections), one section 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery; and administrative units.

Centre Group—35th Infantry Brigade; 13th Brigade, R.F.A. (8th and 44th Batteries only), 2/104th Battery, R.G.A. (60-pounders), 269th Siege Battery, R.G.A. (6-inch howitzers), No. 80 Anti-aircraft section; 13th Company Sappers and Miners, one company 128th Pioneers, detachment No. 1 Bridging Train; and administrative units.

Left Group—13th Divisional Headquarters; 12th Cavalry (less two squadrons); 13th Divisional Cyclist Company; 55th Brigade, R.F.A. (less one section), No. 92 Anti-aircraft Section (less one gun); two companies 8th Welch Pioneers, 71st and 88th Companies, R.E., detachment No. 1 Bridging Train; 38th Infantry Brigade; 40th Infantry Brigade; one section 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery; and administrative units.

evening, clouds of dust seen rising from the Jabal Hamrin suggested a possible enemy retirement. But the Centre Group, moving forward after dark to occupy the line of the Ruz canal to the north-east of Shahraban, encountered a good deal of opposition from Turkish piquets. During the night the Right Group concentrated about Chahriz–Tel Ibara with a view to attacking the enemy's left flank next morning and cutting him off from Qizil Ribat. The Centre Group was to engage the enemy to its front but was not to advance from the Ruz canal till the Right Group attack had developed; and the Left Group was to drive the enemy from the right bank of the Diyala up to the intake of the Mansuriya watercut.

On the 19th October the 36th Brigade Group remained in the Chahriz–Tel Ibara area as a reserve. The 37th Brigade Group, with the 7th Cavalry Brigade on its right, moved off at 5.45 a.m. in a north-easterly direction and, passing round the south-eastern end of the Jabal Hamrin, emerged on to the Qizil Ribat plateau without incident. Leaving the 13th Lancers with two Horse Artillery guns to cover the flank of the 37th Brigade, the remainder of the 7th Cavalry Brigade then pushed forward rapidly to the north-west and reached the Qizil Ribat road near its crossing over the Kurdarra river about 7.30 a.m. Some of the Turks from the Jabal Hamrin had already retired to Qizil Ribat, but others were seen withdrawing; and these, cut off from Qizil Ribat, only managed to escape by fording the Diyala near Abu Zenabil. The cavalry took altogether about a dozen prisoners.

The 37th Brigade had also advanced north-westward along the north-eastern slopes of the Jabal Hamrin with a left flank guard moving along the crest. Meeting no opposition, it reached the road crossing over the Kurdarra river about midday; and not long after this got into heliograph communication with the 35th Brigade of the Centre Group which had, in the meantime, advanced from the line of the Ruz canal and had gained the crest of the Jabal Hamrin near the Diyala without encountering any of the enemy.

West of the Diyala, the 38th Infantry and 55th Artillery Brigades had occupied Mansuriya village and a line to its north-west by 11 a.m. They had come under some hostile shell fire and in front of them the enemy was still occupying trenches in the foothills, to attack which our infantry would have to advance over about seven hundred yards of flat ground devoid of cover. Consequently, to avoid the risk of heavy

casualties, it was decided to postpone the attack, at first till after dark and finally till early next morning.

At nightfall the 37th Brigade, with the 7th Cavalry Brigade bivouacking close in rear, was facing north, astride the Shahraban–Qizil Ribat road just north of the Kurdarra river; two miles south of the cavalry bivouac, the 35th Brigade outposts held an east and west line on the Jabal Hamrin from the Qizil Ribat road to close to the Diyala; and the 38th Brigade occupied a line extending some three miles to the north-west from Mansuriya. At 8.30 p.m. General Marshall issued orders for General Cayley to establish himself during the night across the river loop east of Mansuriya; while next morning General Thomson was to extend and swing forward his right flank. General Egerton was to use his cavalry to reconnoitre and threaten Qizil Ribat; and all available technical troops were to improve the communications.

Early on the 20th October, General Cayley's troops advanced to attack the enemy's trenches. But the enemy had retired during the night and by midday the 38th Brigade had occupied an east and west line astride the Jabal Hamrin with its right on the Diyala, about one and a half miles northward of Mansuriya, and its left about Mujariyin. The 7th Cavalry Brigade entered Qizil Ribat between 8 and 9 a.m., finding that the Turks had retired across the Diyala and had destroyed their bridge. The armoured cars reconnoitred for six miles towards Khaniqin but saw no signs of the enemy; and in the evening they and the cavalry withdrew to the southward.

General Marshall had gained his objective with the loss of only thirty-seven casualties. During the next few days some sixteen more casualties were incurred in reconnaissance work; and our position in the Jabal Hamrin was consolidated. Work was then commenced in this area to ensure a good system of road communication, with the result that the tangle of hills was gradually traversed by a number of roads suitable for wheeled traffic.*

Lieutenant-Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey in "Yilderim" says that Falkenhayn and Halil Pasha, commanding the Turkish Sixth Army, met on the 5th October half way between Mosul and Ras-al-Ain and arrived at the following decisions. The Diyala front was to be reinforced by the Sulaimaniya group. The cavalry brigade was to remain south of the Diyala and the Sixth Army to continue to hold the Jabal Hamrin, unless difficulties of supply or serious pressure from the enemy necessitated withdrawal,

* This involved much hard work including the construction of some seventy-five bridges over the various canals and watercourses.

To face page 70.

The Gorge of the Diyala River through the Jabal Hamrin.

when a gradual retirement towards Tuz Khurmatli would be carried out, all food being removed from the area traversed and all bridges and roads destroyed. To gain as much information as possible of the enemy's intentions, the Sixth Army was to demonstrate against his flanks, communications and isolated detachments.

It was apparently not till the 6th October that the Turkish aeroplanes observed the construction of the light railway from Baquba to Shahraban ; and from the 14th to the 17th October they reported some movement in the neighbourhood of Shahraban and Delli Abbas, though they seem to have had little idea of the real size of the force we were concentrating. The account gives no indication of the strength or dispositions of the Turkish force on the 18th and 19th October, but makes it clear that the Jabal Hamrin and Qizil Ribat were evacuated by order. On the morning of the 20th their cavalry brigade and one infantry regiment of their 6th Division are said to have been distributed between the source of the Narin river and the upper reaches of the Diyala, while the two other infantry regiments of the division were on the Jabal Hamrin and guarding the bridge at Narin Köpri respectively.

British attention was now directed to the Tigris. At daybreak on the 22nd October a patrol from the British position to the north-west of Samarra encountered some hostile infantry about eight miles to the north, and further reconnaissances showed that some 4,000 to 6,000 men of the Turkish XVIII Corps were advancing southward on the Tigris right bank. On that bank the advanced Turkish troops reached the vicinity of Huwaislat by the evening, while an enemy detachment of all arms was also reported to have reached the neighbourhood of Eski Baghdad on the left bank. During the day, to aid in clearing up the situation, the 63rd Squadron, R.F.C., was placed under General Cobbe's orders ; while General Maude directed the Cavalry Division to concentrate on the Tigris right bank opposite Sindiya and a brigade of the 17th Division to be ready to move from Baghdad to Balad. General Cobbe had also ordered the 8th Infantry and the 4th Field Artillery Brigades to move forward to Samarra ; and that night General Maude suggested to him that he should attack the Turks on the morning of the 23rd before they had time to establish themselves in a position. General Cobbe, however, preferred to await the arrival of the reinforcements from the 3rd Division as well as clearer and more definite indications of the enemy's strength and dispositions. From information obtained on the 23rd it

was estimated that the enemy's 51st and 52nd Divisions on the Tigris right bank were closing up on Huwaislat and that his 14th Division was moving down the left bank.

General Cobbe issued orders for the enemy at Huwaislat to be attacked on the morning of the 24th October by the 7th Division, which was to be reinforced for the occasion by the 32nd Lancers, 8th Infantry and 4th Field Artillery Brigades, and four armoured cars. General Fane, commanding 7th Division, made arrangements for this force to move forward after dark and attack early on the 24th, one infantry brigade holding the enemy in front while the main force struck at his right flank and rear. But during the night the Turks hastily retired northward and in the morning the 7th Division found that Huwaislat had been evacuated. Part of the division pushed on for a further three miles northward without encountering opposition; and Eski Baghdad on the Tigris left bank was also found to be clear of the enemy by our cavalry patrols. In the afternoon our troops, most of whom had covered many miles in the previous twenty-four hours, returned to Samarra.

The Turkish account "Yilderim" says that, under orders from Falkenhayn, the XVIII Corps attacked on the 22nd and 23rd October towards Samarra, with the intention of easing the situation on the Diyala front; and that Sixth Army Headquarters disliked the project. The 51st Division, the account says, advanced on the right bank and the 52nd Division on the left bank, while the 14th Division closed up on Tikrit from the northward. The account speaks of more fighting and of larger British forces being engaged on these two days than can be reconciled with the entries in our own war diaries and concludes by saying that the XVIII Corps fell back on the 24th, according to order, to its old position. The general situation in Mesopotamia at the end of October is described as follows: "All these events which occurred during the month showed that the enemy aimed at consolidating his front on the Tigris while pushing forward his wings on the Euphrates and Diyala. Except for the disaster at Ramadi our own position was little changed. There was no clear indication yet to show whether the enemy intended to make a serious attempt on Mosul. The Sixth Army received instructions to avoid any serious fighting south of the Jabal Hamrin and thus maintain the *status quo* in Iraq."

During the latter half of October all the information received by General Maude confirmed the opinion that for the time

being the enemy's main energies were directed towards the Palestine front. A considerable number of German troops, including probably the 701st, 702nd and 703rd Battalions, after inspection by the Kaiser at Constantinople at the beginning of October, had left for Palestine, where a third, and possibly a fourth, division from the Seventh Army concentration at Aleppo had also gone. All reports agreed that all troop movement towards Mesopotamia had practically ceased and was proceeding towards Palestine instead. It was also reported at the same time that the Turks were mobilising all men up to 52 years of age, irrespective of race and creed. This would certainly increase the already large number of desertions from the Turkish army, and the fact that it was found necessary brought out clearly the straits to which the enemy was reduced for man-power. It also lessened the importance of the news that the Aleppo–Hit road would soon be fit for motor lorries.

The Turks and Germans were still engaged, however, in trying to push forward agents on both General Maude's flanks to create trouble in Persia and among the Arabs to the west of the British lines of communication. It was reported that German officers intended to utilise a large body of Persian gendarmerie, whom the Turks had disbanded and were sending back to Persia,* for anti-British activities there; and General Maude made arrangements with Baratoff to intercept them. The German propaganda amongst the Arabs showed little signs of success. For instance, the Muntafik Shaikh Ajaimi, who had always been prepared to sell his services to the highest bidder, had to our knowledge been receiving a handsome monthly subsidy from the Germans, ostensibly for the purpose of raising forces against us. But it was clear that he had little influence remaining and had been quite unsuccessful in his recent efforts to raise tribal forces.

Early in October, General Prjevalski, commanding the Russian Caucasus Armies, intimated that his troops would be unable to co-operate with General Maude's force. But, as he wished to do what he could, he suggested that a force of 15,000 Cossacks should be sent to act under General Maude's orders. As it was thought that their *moral* and efficiency had been less affected by the events of the Revolution than those of the Russian infantry, this offer was at first accepted. But it became doubtful if they could reach Mesopotamia in time to be of use or if their co-operation, all things considered, would be of any practical value; and it was decided that it would

* They had accompanied the Turkish XIII Corps in its retreat from Hamadan in March, but had been found useless by the Turks.

be preferable that, if available, they should be utilised in replacing the unreliable troops with Baratoff to guard the routes into Persia. Moreover, while it was clear that there was no longer any hope of finishing off the war against Turkey by a combined movement by the Russian forces in Armenia and Kurdistan and by ourselves in Mesopotamia and Palestine, the news of the capture by General Allenby of Beersheba and 1,800 Turkish prisoners on the 31st October lessened the necessity for obtaining Russian co-operation in the defence of our positions in Mesopotamia.

Considering that he had a chance of striking a blow at the Turkish force on the Tigris, General Maude in an operation order of the 28th October directed General Cobbe to attack the Turkish position about Daur.* It was estimated that the Turks had 200 sabres, 4,000 rifles, 20 guns and 36 machine guns on the Tigris right bank opposite Daur, with a detachment of 200 sabres and 4 machine guns at Daur; at Auja, 1,100 rifles and 12 machine guns; at Tikrit, 60 sabres, 1,300 rifles, 19 guns and 14 machine guns; and about Fat-ha, some thirty miles north of Tikrit, 40 sabres, 5,000 rifles, 16 guns and 60 machine guns. There was also reason to believe that, if the British attacked, the enemy intended to retire to a prepared position about Fat-ha.

The position opposite Daur was to be attacked at daybreak on the 2nd November by the Ist Corps, reinforced by the Cavalry Division and ten armoured cars, with the object of destroying the 51st Turkish Division, in occupation of this position, before it could be reinforced.

As it was important that the operation should be in the nature of a surprise, all preliminary movements were to be carried out under cover of night and the troops were to be concealed from hostile aeroplane observation as much as possible by day.

Part of No. 63 Squadron, R.F.C., would be attached to the Ist Corps, as well as 500 Ford vans and 10 motor lorries.

The whole force (except the Ford vans and motor lorries) was to be concentrated near the British position north-west of Samarra by daybreak on the 1st November and the forward movement to the points of assembly was to be made during the night 1st/2nd, the troops moving as light as possible.

The Cavalry Division, moving wide round the enemy's right flank so as not to betray its movement, was to reach a point approximately nine miles due west of Daur in time to move forward from there at 4 a.m.† and shell the enemy's

* See Map 36.

† Sunrise was about 6.15 a.m.

camps about five miles to the north-westward of Daur. The mission of the Cavalry Division was to surprise the enemy and press vigorously any success which it might achieve; but it was to be careful to guard its northern flank against the advance of hostile reinforcements from that direction.

The advanced troops of the main column with adequate artillery were to be deployed on a line about seven miles south-west of Daur in time to move forward from there at 4.30 a.m. The mission of this column was to avoid an advance so early as to give the alarm prematurely, but to arrive on the scene in sufficient time to exploit to the full any surprise success that the cavalry might achieve and to prevent the enemy from turning his whole attention to the cavalry.

The necessity of careful guiding, extreme secrecy and exact timings during the night march was emphasised; and during the hours of daylight after 4 p.m. on the 1st November reports were to be sent to General Headquarters at least hourly and at other times as necessary.

The Turkish first line of trenches extended in a large southerly salient to a point about five miles west of the Tigris, with a second line in rear whose right flank overlapped the right flank of the first line. For the few days preceding the attack No. 63 Squadron, R.F.C., carried out many special reconnaissances of, and photographed, this position.

The country on the Tigris right bank between the Turkish first line and the British position near Samarra was of a varying nature. Generally speaking, the area adjoining the river for a width of about two miles was a flat low-lying plain; while west of this, also for a width of about two miles, was a strip of broken ground bounded on the west by a low plateau of bare, open and undulating country.

General Cobbe's operation order of the 31st October followed the lines of that issued by General Maude on the 28th.* His striking force was divided into three groups—the Cavalry Division under General Jones, the 7th Division under General Fane and the 21st Infantry Brigade under General Leslie.†

* As usual, General Maude's order had been drawn up as a result of previous discussion with General Cobbe.

† *Cavalry Division Group*—The Cavalry Division, C/56th Battery, R.F.A., and eight armoured cars of the 13th, 14th and 15th Light Armoured Motor Batteries.

7th Division Group—7th Division (less 21st Infantry Brigade and three batteries 56th Brigade, R.F.A.), 8th Infantry Brigade, 32nd Lancers (less two squadrons), 4th Brigade, R.F.A. and a Heavy Artillery Group (2/86th Battery less one section, 157th Battery and 257th Battery) of six 60-pounders, and four 6-inch howitzers.

21st Brigade Group—One squadron 32nd Lancers, 21st Infantry Brigade, two armoured cars 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery, 56th Brigade, R.F.A. (less two batteries), one section 2/86th Battery (60-pounders), and 4th Company Sappers and Miners.

The position of deployment for the Cavalry Division was as given by General Maude, but that for the 7th Division was about two miles west of the line given by General Maude, and from that point its advanced guard was to advance two miles northward at 4.30 a.m. and then, at 5.30 a.m., followed by the whole division, north-eastward against the western side of the Turkish salient. The 21st Brigade Group, moving up the Tigris left bank to co-operate with the attack on the right bank by shell fire and to protect our watering parties on that bank, was to reach a point five miles due south of Daur not earlier than 6 a.m., in readiness to push on to Daur. Further, the 9th Infantry Brigade of the 3rd Division was to be in readiness at Samarra to move forward as a reserve if required.

About 4 p.m. on the 1st November, an enemy aeroplane flew over the British concentration area, but it is not known if its occupants observed anything unusual.* The moon rose at 6.49 p.m. on the 1st November and facilitated the long night march. The Cavalry Division had about twenty-four miles to cover to reach its point of deployment, and at about 4.15 a.m. on the 2nd the leading brigade (6th) saw camp fires to the north and north-east which appeared to mark the right flank of the enemy position. Considering that his division was too far to the east General Jones ordered a change of direction to the north-west, and the division, believing it had reached the vicinity of its allotted position, halted about 4.30 a.m. Actually, however, it had halted to the south-west of it. General Fane's troops, one brigade of which had a march of nineteen miles to make, began moving at 5.30 p.m., and reached their position of deployment by 4.30 a.m. without a hitch.

In a personal reconnaissance to the east, carried out shortly before dawn, the commander of the 6th Cavalry Brigade could not find the enemy's camps which he had been directed to shell; and at 6.15 a.m. he moved off in a north-easterly direction with his brigade and "V" Battery, R.H.A., to try and turn the enemy's right flank so as to assist our infantry attack. But, being soon checked by fire from the enemy's second line, the brigade moved further westward so as to threaten the enemy's rear, only to be held off again by considerable hostile artillery fire. At 6.15 a.m. also, the 13th Lancers of the 7th Cavalry Brigade had been ordered to advance towards Auja to guard against any hostile movement from there against the left flank of the Cavalry Division. Mistaking its direction, however, the regiment found itself in front of the enemy second line and was forced to take cover

* Strict orders had been issued for the troops to remain under cover during the hours of daylight; but as the area could be seen by enemy patrols from the neighbourhood of Eski Baghdad it is possible that they may have had reason to suspect a large concentration at this time.

in broken ground until the infantry of the 7th Division came up. General Cobbe apparently received no definite information of the whereabouts of the cavalry till 7.30 a.m., when he received a report from an airman saying that the division was a mile west of its allotted position of deployment.*

At 5.30 a.m., the 7th Division started to attack the western side of the Turkish salient, the 28th Brigade (advanced guard) leading, followed by the 19th Brigade in support. The 8th Brigade was held back in divisional reserve on the right flank; and all the artillery was sent forward to support the 28th Brigade, whose flanks were covered by two squadrons 32nd Lancers. Coming under hostile infantry and artillery fire about 6 a.m., the 28th Brigade pushed on vigorously and about an hour and a quarter later its leading battalion (56th Rifles) carried the trenches in its front without difficulty. From here the brigade continued its advance with very little delay, the 2nd Leicestershire moving up on the right and the 51st Sikhs on the left of the 56th Rifles. The Turkish second line was more strongly held than their first line had been and there was more opposition to our advance. But by 9.30 a.m. its left centre was in the hands of the 51st and 56th, the Leicestershire were advancing to the eastern edge of the plateau and the enemy was everywhere falling back hastily on Tikrit. While this infantry attack was in progress the enemy had been able to hold off our Cavalry Division, evidently by the use of reinforcements which advanced from Auja; and when the cavalry was able to advance towards Tikrit about 10 a.m., its patrols were checked by the rifle and artillery fire of the Turkish rear guard in a naturally strong position near Auja.†

The 7th Division, whose men had in some cases marched about thirty miles since 5.30 p.m. the previous day, was ordered not to advance any farther after capturing the enemy's second line. But the Cavalry Division, after watering in the Tigris, started early in the afternoon to move northward against the Turkish rear guard at Auja, only to find, however, that it had already retired; and at 4.30 p.m. the division withdrew to bivouac opposite Daur. On the Tigris left bank, the 21st Brigade Group, meeting with very little opposition, had reached a position about a mile south of Daur.

During the day our total casualties amounted to 224, of which, except for 15 in the Cavalry Division, practically the

* Through a mistake the aeroplanes on contact patrol had not previously recognised the cavalry ground signals.

† Enemy aircraft showed considerable bombing activity, directed mainly against our Cavalry Division, but fortunately without much effect.

whole had occurred in the 28th Brigade.* Including 82 prisoners captured, the Turkish casualties were estimated at about 260.

At 2.20 p.m., after the Cavalry Division had started to turn the Turkish rear guard out of Auja, General Cobbe telegraphed to General Maude proposing to withdraw his force next day to Samarra. But General Maude replied that, as it was probable that the Turks would evacuate Tikrit, General Cobbe's force should not withdraw till this was verified, in which case Tikrit should be visited and the enemy stores there destroyed. General Cobbe accordingly issued orders for the Cavalry Division to push forward into Tikrit next morning and destroy the stores there. Aeroplanes were to reconnoitre Auja and Tikrit as soon as it was light enough to see; the 7th Division was to advance as far as Auja, pushing forward its heavy artillery to shell Tikrit; and the 21st Brigade Group on the Tigris left bank was to be held ready to co-operate in the movement.

On the 3rd November, before it was light, General Cobbe received orders from General Maude that if it was found that Tikrit had not been abandoned the force was to return to Samarra. Auja was occupied at an early hour by the 19th Infantry Brigade, which came under considerable shell fire; and our aeroplanes and cavalry found Tikrit to be held in strength. Consequently, in accordance with his orders, General Cobbe soon after 1 p.m. ordered his troops to withdraw to their previous night's bivouacs. Their total casualties during the day had been 94, of which seven were in the Cavalry Division. In the evening General Cobbe issued orders for withdrawal next day to Samarra.

At 7.10 a.m. on the 4th November General Cobbe received the following message from General Maude:—"In consequence of certain developments† on whole front, no further movements towards Samarra should be made by your troops till further orders. Wire their present distribution." General Cobbe cancelled his order for withdrawal and at 8.40 a.m. telegraphed the dispositions of his force to General Headquarters. At noon he received a further message from General Maude saying that he had received confirmation of his previous information that the Turks might evacuate Tikrit if we advanced and that it was probable that stores were being removed from Tikrit.

* Of these the 56th Rifles contributed 108 and the 51st Sikhs 82.

† There is nothing in the records to show what developments were alluded to. But General Maude had just heard of General Allenby's capture of Beersheba and he may have had this in his mind.

But this would necessarily take time and if the cavalry were to move that night to a position say about seven miles north-westward of Tikrit and General Cobbe were to attack Tikrit next day, after moving his infantry and artillery forward at night, he might achieve substantial results. General Cobbe was to telegraph his views.

General Cobbe replied in the evening. He said that on the previous day the Turks had manned their eight miles of trenches at Tikrit continuously, being in considerable numbers in the southern part of them. It was presumed that both their 51st and 52nd Divisions were there and aeroplane reconnaissance on the 4th had shown no movement to the north. This meant that they had adequate force to provide a strong defence to cover the removal of their stores and consequently a determined assault on our part would be necessary. He proposed to assemble the 7th Division at a point about a mile west of the right of the enemy's late second line opposite Daur, to move due north from there and attack the enemy's trenches at Tikrit, a little north of the point where they bent to the north-west, at daylight. As digging would be difficult, this attack must endeavour to get through and for it he would require all three brigades with the 7th Division. He had consequently ordered up from Samarra and Istabulat, in anticipation of his plan being approved, the 9th Infantry Brigade and two batteries. It would not be feasible, he said, to attack via Auja, as the ground was too broken for a successful night approach. The Cavalry Division would move round to the enemy's right flank and its presence might detain some enemy in the trenches there, but, as any shelling compelled the cavalry to keep wide, it must use mounted action and be prepared to suffer losses if it was to effect any good. General Cobbe was taking all preliminary action despite short notice and was prepared to carry on. He asked for an early reply.

About two hours later General Cobbe telegraphed to General Maude that his preparations were complete and the operation would be proceeded with. To this General Maude replied saying that he did not wish operations to be hurried unduly and they should be postponed for twenty-four hours if more deliberate plans were necessary. General Cobbe, however, decided, as it was left to his discretion, to carry out the operation at once.

The walled town of Tikrit stands on the Tigris right bank on a bluff, which rises in a sheer cliff from the river to a height of over 80 feet; and from the highest houses of the town,

150 feet above river level, an excellent view is obtainable, Daur being easily visible. The Turkish trench line, about a mile south of the town, extended from the Tigris bank for about a mile westward and then bent back north-westward and northward for another five miles. For the greater part of its length the first line trench was continuous; second and third lines, connected with the first line, had been constructed in many places; and there were numerous machine gun emplacements. Further, the greater part of the left half of the line, where the broken ground in front afforded some cover, had been made especially strong; while the flat open plain afforded an excellent field of fire to the right half of the line.

General Cobbe had elected to make his attack against a part of the Turkish left centre where his infantry could obtain cover in the broken ground and to which they could readily obtain access by a night march over the open and undulating plain.* From its position of assembly opposite Daur the 7th Division was to move by night due north to a position of deployment about three miles south-west of the distinct angle in the Turkish line and was to regulate its advance from there so as to attack as soon as the artillery could see sufficiently to cover it. Supported by the whole of the artillery, the attack was to be pressed with the greatest vigour.

The Cavalry Division and armoured cars were to be at a point about three miles west of the extreme Turkish right flank by 6.30 a.m., by which time the cavalry patrols were to be in contact with the right half of the Turkish first line. In addition to preventing the enemy withdrawing troops from his right to reinforce his left, the cavalry was to cover the left flank of our own infantry and to watch for any opportunity afforded by their success. The 9th Infantry Brigade, with two field batteries, from Samarra was to form Corps Reserve opposite Daur; and the 21st Brigade Group, moving up the Tigris left bank, would co-operate, if possible, by long range fire.

By 5 and 5.30 a.m. on the 5th November the 7th and Cavalry Divisions had reached their respective allotted positions and the 21st Brigade Group had by daybreak† disposed its guns eastward of Tikrit to co-operate with the right bank attack.

At 5.30 a.m. the 8th Infantry and 4th Field Artillery Brigades, forming the advanced guard to the 7th Division, moved forward to occupy the Jibin Wadi and to advance from there against the enemy's trenches about one and a half miles to the north-east. The infantry had orders to push in at once if

* See Map 36.

† Sunrise was about 6.20 a.m.

the trenches were only lightly held, but, otherwise, to reconnoitre closely and send back information to enable General Fane to launch a co-ordinated attack as soon as possible. At 5.45 a.m., when the enemy's artillery opened fire, the 47th Sikhs, leading the 8th Brigade, drove enemy piquets out of the Jibin Wadi; and then, patrolling with dash and enterprise, sent General Fane sufficient information before 9 a.m. to enable him to draw up his plan of attack. By 9.30 a.m. the 47th Sikhs had established themselves in a *nala* about eight hundred yards from the enemy's position, the 59th Rifles had come up on their right, the 2/124th Infantry had closed up on their left rear in support and the 1st Manchester were well forward in a central position as brigade reserve.

General Fane decided that the 8th Brigade should attack on a frontage of six hundred yards, under cover of an artillery barrage* and supported by the fire of the 19th Brigade, which had orders to exploit any success gained by the 8th Brigade by pushing through it to the northward as soon as the trenches had been taken. The 28th Brigade was held back as divisional reserve; and the artillery was all moved forward to support the attack.

In the meantime the Cavalry Division had sent its two brigades to gain contact with and contain the enemy on the three miles or so of trench line to their front. On the right the 7th Cavalry Brigade had also to take measures to prevent any counter-attack against the left of the 7th Division; and on the left the 6th Cavalry Brigade had also to guard against attack from the northward. Both brigades soon reported the trenches to their front to be held in strength.

It was evident that the enemy meant to stand. His artillery fire was heavy, well sustained and accurate, and so frequently cut our telephone lines that the arrangements for artillery support could not be completed to allow of an infantry assault taking place before 11.30 a.m.†

At this hour our artillery bombardment commenced and, thanks to the excellent co-operation between aeroplanes and guns, proved both accurate and effective. A minute later the 59th Rifles and 47th Sikhs, with the 2/124th Infantry in close support, started their advance. Moving with great

* This was to overlap the frontage of attack by 150 yards on each flank.

† This delay in making the arrangements for artillery support had the result of shortening the daylight time in which to gain decisive results; as it was apparently owing to this delay that more of our infantry did not come into action during the day.

steadiness and determination, these three battalions carried their objective without pause or check and established themselves in portions of the incomplete Turkish third line on a frontage of some eight hundred yards. The trenches had been held only lightly by Turkish infantry, of whom about 85 were taken prisoner. But the casualties of our three battalions had amounted to about 30 per cent. of their strength, due to the enemy's artillery fire and to enfilade rifle and machine gun fire, especially from a high-sited strong point to the left of our attack.

Heavy casualties had also been incurred in the 28th Punjabis and 1st Seaforth Highlanders (19th Brigade) which had moved forward to the right and left respectively of the 8th Brigade to afford covering fire; and it had been found necessary to send forward the 92nd Punjabis to reinforce the 28th Punjabis in view of an enemy counter-attack.

At 12.45 p.m. the 1st Manchester were sent up to reinforce the right of the 8th Brigade firing line and arrived in time to assist in repelling a Turkish counter-attack. Owing to the severance by hostile artillery fire of all cable communications from the front, and to the failure of our infantry to indicate their position to our contact aeroplanes,* it was a long time before General Fane learnt that the 8th Brigade had captured the Turkish trenches. Owing to this and to the fact that three battalions of the 19th Brigade were still heavily engaged on the right and left rear of the 8th Brigade, the original intention of immediately pushing the 19th Brigade northward through the 8th Brigade was not carried out.

The 8th Brigade continued to suffer from heavy enfilade fire from both flanks; and another counter-attack was launched against its right, but was repulsed about 3 p.m. As the strong point to its left was still giving much trouble by its fire, General Peebles, commanding the 19th Brigade, received orders to capture it. Under cover of an artillery barrage, which commenced at 4.20 p.m. and continued for fifteen minutes, the attack on it was carried out with great dash and gallantry by the Seaforth Highlanders and 125th Rifles and met with complete success, the enemy's trenches being occupied about 4.45 p.m. and a number of prisoners taken.

It seemed to the commander of the 7th Cavalry Brigade at this stage that, as the enemy in the trenches to the north-west menaced the left of the Seaforths and 125th, the time had come when the cavalry could materially assist them and also exploit their success; and he accordingly issued orders for the 13th

* It had been arranged that infantry units should light flares as ground signals, but they abstained from doing so in the mistaken belief that it would give their position away to the enemy.

Hussars and a squadron 13th Lancers to make a mounted attack. "B" Squadron of the 13th Hussars, followed by "C" Squadron in support, was sent to advance and locate the Turkish trench line about one and a half miles to its front and from there to sweep to the right up the trench towards the left flank of our infantry. The two remaining squadrons 13th Hussars would follow in reserve and also the squadron 13th Lancers. Under cover of the smoke and dust of the artillery barrage which still hung about, "B" Squadron 13th Hussars reached its destination without opposition and finding our infantry there in position waited till "C" Squadron joined it. Captain Robinson, commanding "B" Squadron, could see 300 to 400 Turks massing some 1,100 yards away to his left and left front and, realising that it was the only way in which he could carry out his mission to assist the infantry, he wheeled the two squadrons to the left and amid the cheers of the infantry charged the enemy, going right through them. Captain Robinson himself was killed at close quarters in the advance and the two squadrons, having passed through the enemy, turned about, went through the Turks again and pulled up near the infantry. They had come under considerable rifle and machine gun fire during their advance and also under artillery fire during their return charge, but it was ill-directed and owing to that and the growing darkness* they had only sustained about 28 casualties among the 100 men or so composing the two squadrons. They are believed to have accounted for at least double that number of the enemy.

Owing to the dust and the failing light the supporting squadrons had at first lost sight of "B" and "C" squadrons, but learnt where they were from our infantry and proceeded to follow them up till they were seen retiring. As, however, it was getting too dark to continue, the supporting squadrons withdrew and, dismounting a short distance from the enemy's trenches, covered the withdrawal of the wounded and of men whose horses had been killed.

In the meantime the Seaforths and 125th (19th Brigade) had pushed on without serious opposition for about half a mile and, as darkness came on, consolidated their gains and pushed out patrols. The 92nd Punjabis (19th Brigade) moved up into the Turkish trenches on the right of the 8th Brigade and the 28th Punjabis were withdrawn to form 19th Brigade Reserve. The 28th Infantry Brigade had reached the Jibin Wadi about 3 p.m. and remained there as Divisional Reserve;

* Sunset was just after 5 p.m.

and the 9th Infantry Brigade in Corps Reserve moved forward from opposite Daur to bivouac at Auja.

During the day the Cavalry Division had successfully detained enemy troops in the long length of trenches opposite it, and the guns of the 21st Brigade Group on the Tigris left bank had kept all roads to the north under shell fire, apparently inflicting loss on the enemy.

At 6 p.m. General Cobbe ordered the Cavalry Division to withdraw to Auja and the 7th Division to hold the line it had gained and to patrol boldly to its front. After reorganising, the 7th Division pushed forward strong patrols at 1 a.m. on the 6th November to secure a line north of Tikrit running westward from the Tigris. Very little opposition was encountered and next morning it was found that the Turks had retreated well to the north.

Our casualties totalled 1,801, of which 161 were killed.* We captured 137 Turkish prisoners and their total casualties were estimated at 1,500, including 300 killed. In addition, a good deal of abandoned material fell into our hands, though much had been burnt or destroyed by the enemy before he retreated, including the river steamer *Julnar*, with which we had attempted to re-victual Kut in April, 1916.

On the 7th November the Cavalry Division started south to Sadiya and on the 10th the remainder of the force began its withdrawal to Samarra. The whole of the Turkish XVIII Corps, including the divisions which had fought at Tikrit, was then located as being at or north of Fat-ha.

During October and the first half of November the activities of the British Air Force, apart from co-operating in the fighting in the Jabal Hamrin and up the Tigris, had been mainly directed to reconnaissance, photography and bombing raids. No. 30 Squadron bombed Kifri aerodrome, apparently with good effect, on the 16th and 31st October,† and during the first half of November No. 63 Squadron bombed the Turkish camps near Fat-ha and No. 30 Squadron those at Qara Tepe. As, however, these camps presented only small and scattered targets as compared with our own camps, it was felt undesirable to continue such projects as likely to lead to retaliatory raids.

At the beginning of November further discussion took place between General Maude and the Chief of the Imperial General

* Cavalry Division 74, Artillery 79, 47th Sikhs 326, 2/124th Infantry 307, 59th Rifles 251, 28th Punjabis 245, Seaforth Highlanders 187, 125th Rifles 128, 1st Manchester 115, and other units 89 in all.

† In these two raids four machines were lost, but all but one pilot escaped safely.

Staff regarding the possibility of getting the Russians under General Baratoff to hold either the Diyala line or the routes into Persia, on the condition that we maintained them with supplies. But on the 8th November the Bolshevik counter-revolution took place; Lenin and Trotski assumed power; and it was felt useless to take any further action until the political situation became clearer. In the meantime, a Russian detachment about 1,000 strong,* under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Bicharakoff, had been sent forward by Baratoff to intercept the disbanded Persian gendarmerie. This it accomplished successfully at Qasr-i-Shirin, and then, being isolated from Baratoff's main force and unable to obtain sufficient food, Colonel Bicharakoff asked if he and his detachment might come under General Maude's orders. Generals Maude and Baratoff agreed to this as a temporary arrangement and the detachment moved to Mandali.

On the 18th November General Maude died of cholera in Baghdad after two days' illness. In Mesopotamia, in the other theatres of war and throughout the British Empire generally, the news aroused deep concern. For, apart from sorrow at the sudden and tragic end of a fine leader, his name had so come to be regarded as synonymous with success that his death was looked upon as indeed a national misfortune.

To those serving under him his loss was a great grief. His great care for all that concerned their well-being, his constant sympathy with their hardships, difficulties and dangers, and his ready and generous acknowledgment of their work had endeared him to all ranks in Mesopotamia; and they all recognised how much they owed to his initiative and energy. As soldiers they also realised how greatly his military capacity had contributed to the change from failure to victory. In fact, the force of his personality had so dominated the campaign that it was regarded generally as his individual effort to an extent that is unusual. In consequence of this feeling and of his well-known habit—disinterested and altruistic though it undoubtedly was—of personally controlling details generally left to subordinates and of seldom confiding his plans to others, some concern was expressed as to what would happen without his guiding brain and influence. This feeling, however, was modified to some extent by the impression that his task was almost complete.

* 27 officers, 510 Cossacks, 336 infantry, 82 mountain gunners, 94 machine gunners, 28 ammunition column = 1,077 combatants; also 173 non-combatants, including a lady doctor and two nursing sisters.

Some measure of the feelings with which he was regarded was shown by the many striking public marks of esteem to his memory and by the large number of telegrams and letters of sympathy which reached Lady Maude, from the King and Queen, from many public bodies, from all parts of the Empire and from numberless individuals, including soldiers of all ranks.

Lieutenant-General Sir W. R. Marshall was appointed to the chief command in Mesopotamia, General Egerton succeeding him in the IIIrd Corps and General Thomson taking over command of the 14th Division. There was little or nothing on record, or within anyone's personal knowledge, to show what General Maude's intentions or plans for the future had been, either as regards operations, organisation or military and civil administration. It consequently took General Marshall some little time to acquaint himself with all the varied factors affecting the situation. But, as he said in his Despatch, "the *moral* of the army was magnificent, whilst organisation and training had reached a high level of efficiency. The Turkish army, on the contrary, was low in *moral* and desertions from it were numerous and frequent; on the Tigris and Euphrates they had retreated out of rapid striking distance and only on our right flank was there a good opportunity of hitting them."

Details of the composition and distribution of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 18th November, 1917, are given in Appendix XLIII, and a list of the principal officers serving with the force on the 1st December in Appendix XLIV. On the Baghdad front General Marshall had a striking force of one cavalry and six infantry divisions, of a strength in round numbers of 3,500 sabres, 66,000 rifles and 302 guns.* In addition, the 11th Cavalry Brigade had already begun to be formed and the first units of the 18th Division had reached Basra, as well as seven new machine gun companies (one for each division).

---

* The total ration strength of the force was:—

British officers	6,747
Indian officers	2,721
British other ranks	105,551
Indian other ranks	139,905
Followers	158,428

Of the followers, over 121,000 were Indian, and the remainder included 12,700 Arabs, 6,500 Kurds, 2,800 Chinese, 1,500 Persians and a few Japanese, Egyptians, Armenians, Chaldeans, Jews, Burmese and Syrians.

On the 22nd November the Chief of the Imperial General Staff sent General Marshall the following telegram:—

"On your assumption of the command in Mesopotamia I think it advisable to recapitulate the instructions issued to your predecessor.

"1. The prime mission of your force is the establishment and maintenance of British influence in the Baghdad *vilayet*. Your mission is, therefore, primarily defensive, but, while making every possible preparation to meet attack, you should take advantage of your central position and of the superiority of your communications over those of the enemy to make your defence as active as possible and to strike at the enemy whenever he gives you an opportunity of doing so with success.

"2. You are further charged with the protection of the pipe lines and oil-fields in the vicinity of the Karun river, and with denying hostile access to the Persian Gulf. You should ensure that hostile parties do not work down south across the line Shushtar–Isfahan.

"3. As regards the Russians, the political situation in that country is so obscure as to make it impossible at present to formulate any definite plans, but you should endeavour to enlist the co-operation of the Russians in blocking the Persian frontier, and are authorised to supply such portion of General Baratoff's force as may come forward to the Persian frontier, if you can do so without detriment to the maintenance of your own force.

"4. It is important to enlist the co-operation of the Arab tribes in your theatre, and induce them to harass the enemy's communications and refuse him supplies. For this an active propaganda, which should make the most of our recent successes in Palestine and Mesopotamia, should be undertaken. As to this you will consult and be guided by Sir Percy Cox.

"5. As far as it is possible to judge the situation here, the destruction of the enemy's advanced bases at Ramadi and Tikrit, together with the successes gained in Palestine and the consequent diversion of enemy's reserves to that theatre, make it impossible for the enemy to bring against you this year a force sufficient to threaten you seriously, and make it doubtful whether he can do so before the hot weather of 1918. Much depends on the extension of the enemy's railway to Mosul, and it is important to obtain all possible information as to this, as well as to get timely

notice of enemy's concentration either on the Euphrates or on the Tigris.

"6. The general situation makes it important that no more troops than are absolutely necessary for the carrying out of your mission, as defined in paragraphs 1 and 2, are locked up in Mesopotamia during the hot weather in 1918, and I therefore wish you to keep in view the possibility of reducing your forces before then, and to make all possible preparation to economise force to the fullest extent by strengthening your defences and improving your communications.

"7. It is of vital importance to economise shipping to the fullest extent, and you will therefore make every endeavour to develop local resources to that end in consultation with Sir Percy Cox.

"8. Please acknowledge and ask for explanation if any points are not clearly understood."

The above is mainly noteworthy as being the first official intimation of a possible reduction of strength in Mesopotamia owing to the unlikelihood of an imminent enemy offensive. The instructions in paragraph 1 for an active defence were evidently intended to ensure that our superiority in numbers in Mesopotamia should be utilised as much as possible to assist indirectly our operations in Palestine, where General Allenby's force had now reached within a few miles of Jerusalem. Altogether five Turkish divisions were by now reported as having gone to Palestine from Aleppo, where only two remained; and the fact that a German unit numbered 701 was reported as having passed through Rayak in Syria on its way to Palestine in the second week of October tended to confirm former reports that a German division also had gone there.

In Russia anarchy and civil war prevailed everywhere. In Moscow and Petrograd, Lenin and Trotski had gained the upper hand and had published a decree calling on all belligerent nations to commence peace negotiations at once. The state of the Russian army was getting worse; its officers were powerless; and it was extremely doubtful if they would be able to maintain any army at the front during the winter, more especially as the Bolsheviks, afraid lest the army should be used against them, were doing their utmost to prevent a military recovery. There was, however, a hope that national troops (Armenians and Georgians) would be raised in the Caucasus, which, with the assistance and support of the Allies, would be able to continue to offer opposition to the Turks.

As regards the extension of the Turkish railway towards Mosul, a British prisoner of war, taken at Kut and employed by the enemy on work on this extension, had recently reached Baghdad after escaping from the Turks and was able to furnish information which showed that railhead was still well to the west of Nisibin.

Local resources had already been considerably developed by General Maude, but he had hitherto not considered that the military situation justified his acceding to Sir Percy Cox's requests that we should bring the fertile Middle Euphrates area between Nasiriya and Falluja under our control. We had, so far, penetrated southwards from Falluja to Hilla, Musaiyib and the Hindiya barrage and we had political officers, in Karbala and Najaf. But in view of Sir William Robertson's pressing instructions and of the improved military situation, General Marshall decided at the beginning of December to bring this area under his control; and a number of detachments, released for this important duty by a reorganisation of the line of communication forces, were sent to garrison various posts there.

Soon after succeeding to the command, General Marshall decided to attack the Turkish force which held Qara Tepe and a line, in advance of that place, extending along the Jabal Hamrin from west of Suhaniya to Abu Zenabil and from there for about forty miles up the Diyala right bank to Qala Shirwan.* The strength and distribution of the Turkish 6th Division, which had been identified as holding this area, was estimated as follows:—Headquarters and 400 rifles at Qara Tepe; 50 sabres, 1,800 rifles and 12 guns in the triangle Narin Köpri–Suhaniya–Abu Zenabil; 900 rifles and 12 guns from Abu Zenabil to Shaikh Baba; and 300 rifles and 2 guns from Shaikh Baba to Qala Shirwan. The advanced line of the British IIIrd Corps extended roughly westward from east of the main crossing over the Kurdarra river to three miles north of Mansuriya and then to the Khalis canal westward of Delli Abbas; the 14th Division being east, and the 13th Division west, of the Diyala.

General Marshall hoped to surprise and destroy the advanced portion of this Turkish force by a converging attack towards Qara Tepe from the line Qizil Ribat–Suhaniya, combined with a movement up the Adhaim by the Cavalry Division directed to cut, at or near Qara Tepe, the enemy's communications

* See Map 35.

with Kifri; at which place the headquarters of the Turkish XIII Corps and a force of about 950 rifles and 8 guns had been located.

Preparations for the offensive were carried out with the greatest possible secrecy; and to prevent enemy aerial reconnaissance a bombing attack was made by our aeroplanes on the Turkish aerodrome at Kifri on the night 30th November/1st December. In spite of this, however, an enemy aeroplane flew over our lines at Mansuriya on the 1st December, and next day another aeroplane flying over our Cavalry Division must have observed its movement. Leaving Sindiya with some armoured cars on the 1st, the Cavalry Division reached Satha that evening and was joined there by a mule column, 400 Ford vans and part of the 33rd Motor Ambulance, escorted by the 20th Punjabis, which had marched up the Adhaim from near its mouth. On the 2nd, the Cavalry Division marched to Chai Khana; and its advanced parties, reconnoitring for a passage through the Jabal Hamrin by which the division could move that night to Umr Maidan, came under hostile artillery fire from the foothills. The only practicable route was found to be held by an entrenched force of Turkish infantry with guns and machine guns; and, surprise being no longer possible, the 7th Cavalry Brigade and "V" Battery were sent forward to clear up the situation. Reporting that the enemy's position was too strong to be forced before dark, the 7th Cavalry Brigade remained in touch with it; and the *liaison* officer with the Cavalry Division sent word to General Headquarters that the prospects of breaking through in time were very doubtful. On the morning of the 3rd the enemy's force had increased and the Cavalry Division was unable to break through or to find another passage.*

In the meantime, the various groups of the IIIrd Corps detailed for the converging attack had concentrated by nightfall on the 2nd December as follows. Corps Headquarters were at Qalat al Mufti. East of the Diyala were: Bicharakoff's Russian detachment at Chahriz; 37th Brigade Group (26 guns) at the Kurdarra crossing; 35th Brigade Group (10 guns) on the main road seven miles north-east of Shahraban, with the 14th Divisional Reserve (2 infantry battalions and 2 guns) close in rear; and 14th Division Headquarters one and a half miles south of the Kurdarra crossing, with two 60-pounder

* General Marshall had issued instructions that, if the Turks were found to be holding the hills in strength, no serious attempt was to be made by the cavalry to force a passage.

guns and two 6-inch howitzers in position on the Jabal Hamrin about four miles to its north-west. West of the Diyala were: 38th Brigade Group (32 guns) two and a half miles north of Mansuriya; 40th Brigade Group (26 guns) four miles west of Delli Abbas; and the 13th Divisional Reserve (1 squadron cavalry, 1 cyclist company, 1 infantry battalion and 6 guns) near Delli Abbas.*

General Egerton had planned to carry out his attack in two phases. In the first phase the enemy would be engaged along the whole front Qizil Ribat–Suhaniya and both his flanks would be turned, the left by forcing the passage of the Diyala above Qizil Ribat and the right by the capture of Suhaniya and the Sakaltutan pass. The second phase would consist of an advance on Qara Tepe up both banks of the Narin river.

General Thomson, commanding 14th Division, had directed the 35th Brigade Group to secure, during the night 2nd/3rd, the Diyala left bank from close below Qizil Ribat to near Tawila; and the 37th Brigade Group to force a crossing over the Diyala above Qizil Ribat before 5.30 a.m.† on the 3rd, its right being covered by Bicharakoff's Russians who would advance to about Kishuk. During the early hours of the 3rd, in order to assist the 37th Brigade Group, the 35th Brigade Group was to act vigorously all along its front and its patrols were, if possible, to secure footings on the Diyala right bank. After crossing the Diyala, the 37th Brigade Group would secure Tel Baradan and Tel Ahmadia; and as soon as the latter locality had been captured, the 35th Brigade Group was to advance towards Qara Tepe, its left on the eastern bank of the Narin, in close touch with the troops of the 13th Division issuing from the Sakaltutan pass.

General Cayley, commanding 13th Division, had arranged that the 38th Brigade Group, after establishing itself during the night 2nd/3rd on a three-mile east and west line with its right on the Diyala about a mile south of Abu Zenabil, should advance at 5.30 a.m. towards Suhaniya and the Sakaltutan pass; while the 40th Brigade Group, reaching a point five miles west of Suhaniya by 4 a.m. on the 3rd, was then to advance north-north-eastward to cut off the enemy in the Suhaniya position and to gain the Sakaltutan Pass. Then,

* Each brigade group consisted of an infantry brigade with field artillery, engineers and pioneers, while some of the groups had also heavy or mountain artillery, Stokes' mortars, cavalry, armoured cars and a bridging train detachment.

† Sunrise was about 6.40 a.m.

the 40th Brigade Group, crossing the pass, was to advance on Qara Tepe in co-operation with the 35th Brigade Group, both coming under the command of General Cayley.

After dark on the 2nd December, these various groups advanced as arranged, their movement being facilitated by the bright moonlight. By 6 a.m. on the 3rd the 2/9th Gurkhas and 67th Punjabis of the 37th Brigade had, without opposition, but in face of considerable physical difficulties, crossed the Diyala by a ford three and a half miles above Qizil Ribat. No ford had been found between here and Qizil Ribat, near which the Norfolks of the 37th Brigade came under enemy fire from the opposite bank at daybreak. The 35th Brigade Group had experienced no difficulty in taking up its line between Qizil Ribat and Tawila, and patrols of the 37th Dogras and 2/4th Gurkhas had crossed by fords near Sawiya and a mile above Tawila respectively. But above Sawiya no ford had been found and the 1/5th Buffs had come under enemy fire from the opposite bank. West of the Diyala, the 38th and 40th Brigade Groups had reached their first positions without difficulty and the latter group, advancing and finding the Suhaniya position unoccupied, had pushed on eastward to a position in the hills about two miles to the north-west of Suhaniya.

On the British right, the 2/9th Gurkhas and 67th Punjabis, with one and a half squadrons 12th Cavalry covering their northern flank and Bicharakoff's Russians also advancing further to the north, began to advance towards Tel Baradan at about 6 a.m. But the difficult country, intersected by many wide and deep water channels, rendered progress very slow. Some hostile infantry were encountered but retreated at once and the only opposition was by some artillery, which caused a few casualties. The Norfolks had, in the meantime, been delayed in crossing by the difficulty of finding a site for a bridge. By 3 p.m., when the Gurkhas and Punjabis reached a line to the north of Tel Baradan, the enemy troops from the Diyala area had all got well away towards Qara Tepe; and attempts by the 12th Cavalry and Bicharakoff's Russians to cut the Qara Tepe–Kifri road were frustrated by hostile gun-fire. At dusk, the commander of the 37th Brigade Group bivouacked with three battalions near Tel Baradan, the remainder of the group being still east of the Diyala about Qizil Ribat; and the cavalry and Russians bivouacked at Kishuk. The infantry at Tel Baradan had experienced a most trying day, having covered about twenty-four miles in difficult country in the last twenty-four hours.

In the 35th Brigade Group, the 2/4th Gurkhas and 37th Dogras received orders soon after 7 a.m. to concentrate on the opposite bank. But the fords were difficult and they did not all get across till 11.30 a.m. and 1 p.m. respectively. Meanwhile at 11 a.m., orders were sent for the whole group to concentrate on the right bank, in readiness to push on as soon as the 37th Brigade had occupied Tel Baradan. Owing to the difficulties of fording, however, the crossing was not completed till dusk and it was also found that the Turks had flooded the area on the right bank. This rendered our artillery immobile and the group had to halt for the night to the south of Tel Baradan. The bridge near Qizil Ribat had by this time been completed, but much ramping remained to be done and there were several irrigation channels on the right bank still to be bridged.

West of the Diyala, the 38th Brigade Group, advancing at 5.30 a.m. from the line it had taken up during the night, soon surprised a Turkish detachment, taking about 80 prisoners. The remaining Turks in this area retired at once through the hills with considerable skill; and the 38th Brigade Group continued to advance steadily to the north-west. But the difficult and intricate country rendered progress very slow and at dusk the infantry bivouacked on a line they had reached which extended north-east from about a mile north of Suhaniya, where the remainder of the group rested for the night. In the 40th Brigade Group the 4th South Wales Borderers, detached towards Suhaniya, had captured at an early hour two Turkish guns and about fifty men; and in the meantime the 8th Cheshire and 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers with a section of mountain artillery had advanced north-eastwards towards the Sakaltutan pass. The remainder of the artillery found it impossible to follow these two battalions and were forced to make such a long detour that they did not rejoin the brigade till nightfall. In the difficult hill country the Cheshire and Welch Fusiliers became somewhat scattered and it was not till about 4 p.m. that they got within a mile of the Sakaltutan pass, which was found to be held by enemy infantry in some strength with a number of machine guns. As the two mountain guns, the only artillery present, were considered inadequate to support an attack, the advance was arrested. The remainder of the group and General Cayley's headquarters bivouacked for the night about a mile north of Suhaniya.

During the day the total casualties in the IIIrd Corps only amounted to forty-two.

After dark on the 3rd December orders were issued for the cavalry at Kishuk to advance next morning towards the Qara Tepe–Kifri road, for the 37th Brigade to withdraw to the eastern bank of the Diyala and for the 35th Brigade Group to advance towards Qara Tepe, being joined after daybreak by the 13th Brigade, R.F.A.* in place of its own artillery immobilised by the inundations. The 38th and 40th Brigade Groups were to capture the Sakaltutan pass at dawn and the 40th Brigade Group was then to push forward to the Narin river.

During the night the Turks were found to have evacuated the Sakaltutan pass, which was at once occupied by the Welch Fusiliers. Early on the 4th December two squadrons 12th Cavalry and the 13th Divisional Cyclist Company (Divisional Troops) crossed the pass and, fording the Narin river† south of Narin Köpri, joined the one and a half squadrons 12th Cavalry and Russian Cossacks advancing from Kishuk. The combined force then advanced into the hilly country north-eastward of Qara Tepe and was engaged throughout the day with an enemy force to the north of Qara Tepe holding positions from which they could not be ejected. At 5 p.m. the Russians were obliged to withdraw to Kishuk owing to their ammunition and food running short and to the exhaustion of their men and horses‡; and the 12th Cavalry withdrew also, joining the 35th and 40th Brigade Groups.

The 40th Brigade Group, meeting no opposition, reached Narin Köpri and halted there. The 35th Brigade Group, much delayed by floods and water channels and joined during the day by the 13th Brigade, R.F.A.,§ only reached a point five miles east of Narin Köpri by 6.30 p.m., when it went into bivouac.

That night General Egerton issued orders that General Cayley with the 35th and 40th Brigade Groups was to advance next day on Qara Tepe and drive the enemy from the hills immediately to the north of that place—but he was not to prosecute operations against a succession of enemy rear guard positions to the north—and to remove or destroy all stores and material found in Qara Tepe.

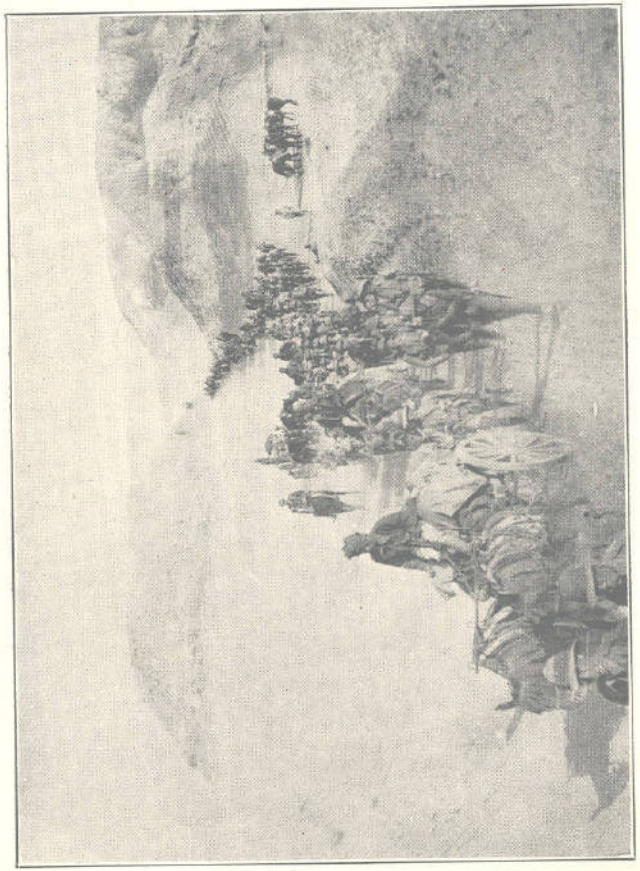
* Belonging originally to the 37th Brigade Group, it was to cross by the bridge near Qizil Ribat.

† The enemy had destroyed all the bridges.

‡ Owing to shortage of food before joining us, neither men nor horses were in good condition.

§ After work all night by the Sappers and Miners and Pioneers, the ramps of the bridge near Qizil Ribat and two bridges over water channels on the Diyala right bank had been completed by 6 a.m. on the 4th.

To face page 94.



British transport crossing the Sakaltutan Pass.

The Turks had been reported as holding a trench line astride the Kifri road about one and a half miles north of Qara Tepe ; and General Cayley decided that the 35th Brigade should attack them from the south-east and the 40th Brigade from the south-west, while the 12th Cavalry threatened their line of retreat from the eastward.*

The advance commenced at 6 a.m. on the 5th December, the 35th Brigade Group moving towards the east of Qara Tepe and the 40th Brigade Group towards the west. At about 7.30 a.m. the one and a half squadrons 12th Cavalry covering the advance of the 35th Brigade came under shell fire from the south-eastern slopes of a high hill to the north of Qara Tepe ; and about half an hour later, joined by the squadron and three quarters 12th Cavalry and four armoured cars from the 40th Brigade Group, moved off to try and work round the enemy's left flank. The 37th Dogras, leading the 35th Brigade, came under shell-fire from about 8.30 a.m. and the attack progressed gradually and steadily till about 11 a.m., when the 2/4th Gurkhas came up on the right of the Dogras and there was a temporary check owing to the heavy hostile machine gun fire. About this hour, the 40th Brigade, having reached without opposition a point about two miles north-west of Qara Tepe, deployed for attack. The opposition this brigade encountered was never very serious and, moreover, its advance was facilitated by the convex slopes and by the excellent covering fire of its field and mountain artillery.† The enemy did not await the 40th Brigade assault and about 12.45 p.m. it gained the crest. On the south-eastern slopes the enemy offered a more stubborn resistance to the 35th Brigade and at 11.30 a.m. it was found necessary to send the 1/5th Buffs forward to support the firing line. Then, about the time that the 40th Brigade reached the crest, the left platoon of the 37th Dogras made a most gallant charge and, followed immediately by the remainder of its company, seized a strong point on the enemy's right, capturing or killing 31 Turks. This ended the fight, as everywhere the enemy then made a rapid retreat, which our cavalry, being held off by gun and machine gun fire, was unable to interfere with.

---

* The Russian Cossacks were not present owing to Bicharakoff being ill. Though sick, he had commanded his men from a stretcher on the two previous days. But he could do so no longer and there was no one to replace him.

† The heavy artillery had been unable to accompany it owing to the difficult country.

During the day the casualties in General Cayley's force totalled 157, of which the 37th Dogras lost 65, the 2/4th Gurkhas 46 and the 5th Wiltshire 29. We took about 40 prisoners, but little in the way of supplies or war material.

In the meantime, the Turkish force facing the Cavalry Division to the westward of Umr Maidan had shown no signs of retiring and our cavalry had been unable to find any other passage through the hills. In the evening of the 5th General Marshall ordered both the Cavalry Division and the IIIrd Corps to withdraw next day, the latter to an advanced line extending from Khaniqin through Qizil Ribat to the Sakaltutan pass. This withdrawal was effected without special incident.

Between the 3rd and the 6th December our total casualties amounted to 29 killed and 190 wounded and those of Bicharakoff's Russians, who had done good work on the two days they had been engaged, to 9. We buried 87 dead Turks and captured 255 prisoners, 2 guns, a machine gun and other war material. The Turkish wounded were estimated at over two hundred. Although the loss we inflicted on the enemy was not as great as had been hoped for, we had strengthened our right flank considerably. It was felt that in future the Turks would experience great difficulty in conducting offensive operations against this flank and also in carrying out their plans for a penetration by small forces into Persia.

On the 1st December the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that, as the arrangements to despatch units of the 18th Division to Mesopotamia had been completed, he proposed to start the formation of a 19th Division for employment as desired by His Majesty's Government. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff replied on the 3rd that the question of how best India could give further assistance had already been under consideration and he hoped to send a full reply in a few days. In the meantime he sent his views on the general situation as follows. Russia's peace movement and the Italian defeats had greatly increased our burden and rendered concentration of effort more necessary than ever in Europe, where Great Britain and France had each sent six divisions to Italy. Our successes in Mesopotamia and Palestine had rendered this concentration more feasible and the Chief of the Imperial General Staff thought we had over-rated Turkish power. Although our successes had upset the Turco-German plans, he doubted if they had ever been as formidable as reports indicated;

and in any case the chances were against any serious attack in Mesopotamia before the next winter. He believed the Turks to have little desire to do any more fighting anywhere; and they were short of men and deficient of other resources. For example, their cavalry division and more than six other divisions in the Jerusalem vicinity numbered only about 15,000 fighting men; in fact the word division throughout their army was a misnomer. France was war-weary, very short of men and breaking up divisions; and Italy would always have to be stiffened by some of our troops. America hoped to put twelve divisions into France by May and twelve more by December; and this rate could not be quickened for lack of shipping. Our infantry in all theatres of war was 100,000 below establishment and would perhaps be twice as short next spring. Germany could probably during the next few months bring thirty to forty divisions from her eastern to her western front and must realise the advantage of gaining a decision before American help arrived. On the other hand she had been well punished in 1917 and her economic position was very bad. Austria was longing for peace but could not break away from her German masters; while Bulgaria would do no more fighting than Germany could make her do.

From the above the Commander-in-Chief would gather, said the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, that we must cut down in Mesopotamia and Palestine to a defensive minimum and that all the additional men India could give were needed, and needed quickly.

On the 4th December, His Majesty's Government decided that, in view of the greatly improved situation in Mesopotamia and of the fact that the number of rifles in our force there was more than treble that of the enemy, one of the Indian divisions should be moved from Mesopotamia to Egypt. General Marshall was accordingly directed to detail an Indian division other than the newly-formed 17th or 18th; and he selected the 7th Division, which left for Egypt before the end of the month, its place in the Ist Corps being taken by the 17th Division. On the 4th the Chief of the Imperial General Staff also telegraphed to the Commander-in-Chief in India that in order to prevent British divisions being broken up on the Western Front it was desired to release British battalions from Egypt by replacing them by Indian battalions and he asked what India could do towards such replacement at an early date.*

* This led to a decision not to raise the 19th Division and to send many more battalions from India to Egypt.

On the 6th December General Marshall learnt from the commander of the Russian Caucasus Armies that an armistice between Turkey and Russia had been arranged; and, on the 22nd, peace negotiations opened at Brest-Litovsk. This was the end, so far as Russian co-operation in Mesopotamia was concerned. Although His Majesty's Government was not primarily nor specially concerned with the form or composition of the new Russian Government, it was directly affected by the attitude of Russia towards the enemy powers. There were still large parts of Russia which in no way acknowledged Bolshevik authority and disclaimed any intention of making peace with the Central Powers; and these His Majesty's Government decided to support as the best means of keeping employed enemy troops, who would otherwise be available for use against us or our allies.*

The spirit animating part of the Russian army is well exemplified by the behaviour of Colonel Bicharakoff and his detachment. On hearing of the Russo-Turkish armistice, General Marshall arranged that this detachment should leave his command and rejoin General Baratoff. But, declaring that the Russian peace proposals were shameful and treacherous, Colonel Bicharakoff and his detachment announced unanimously that they desired to remain in Mesopotamia and fight with the British. This was agreed to as a temporary arrangement.

There were several thousand Austrian and German prisoners of war at this time in Trans-Caspia and Russian Turkestan, who, if Russia made peace, might cross into Persia and enter into anti-British activities; and the outlook was rendered more serious by mutinous outbreaks among Baratoff's troops at Hamadan about the middle of December.† Consequently, in view of the doubtful quality and possible withdrawal of Baratoff's troops, the British Minister at Tehran suggested that General Marshall should take over the protection of the Khaniqin–Hamadan road, as being likely to produce a stabilising effect on the Persian Government. General Marshall, however, pointed out that this would be beyond the scope of the mission of his force and that it would, moreover, entail the employment

* We had also to do what we could to save Rumania, to prevent supplies from reaching Germany, to safeguard our flank in Mesopotamia and prevent a Pan-Turanian movement eastward.

† Amongst the terms of the armistice between Russia and the enemy powers was one which provided for the withdrawal from Persia of the troops of both sides. But it was felt that little reliance could be placed on either Germany or Turkey observing this arrangement.

of more troops than he could spare and would cause considerable supply difficulties. In this view General Marshall was supported by the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, who had already informed General Marshall that, among possible measures for raising and organising local forces of Georgians and Armenians in the Caucasus, the despatch of an armoured car detachment and of a number of British officers for training purposes via Baghdad, Enzeli and the Caspian was being arranged. This was the beginning of the mission under Major-General L. C. Dunsterville known subsequently as "Dunsterforce," whose proceedings will be referred to in later chapters.

In view of the likelihood of Russia making peace, the outlook as regards Persia, Afghanistan and the North-West Frontier of India was becoming more serious; though the British successes in Mesopotamia and Palestine, where Jerusalem had fallen into our hands, and the incidence of winter were factors in our favour. The political situation in Persia was very unsettled, owing largely to mischievous Bolshevik propaganda; and all we could do was to try to get Persian assent and support to the extension of our control over local levies so as to maintain some stability in that country.

There had been several reports that part of the force under General Baratoff wished to join the British as Bicharakoff's detachment had done; and, at Baratoff's request, Bicharakoff with his mounted troops and two guns left Qasr-i-Shirin for Kermanshah at the beginning of January, 1918, to assist in rallying the loyal elements among the Russian troops there. General Marshall also made arrangements for the return to Mesopotamia from Kermanshah of a British survey party and a wireless detachment from the 1st (Anzac) Wireless Signal Squadron that were with the Russians; and to safeguard the road from Khaniqin to Karind he proposed to occupy Qasr-i-Shirin with a detachment.

After the Jabal Hamrin operations and until the weather broke in the middle of December, the aeroplanes of Nos. 30 and 63 Squadrons carried out a series of attacks on the enemy's aerodromes at Tuz Khurmatli and Humr.* Enemy aircraft were active throughout the month, but there were only a few combats and those were indecisive. The personnel of No. 23 Kite Balloon Company (Nos. 51 and 52 Sections) had reached Basra in September, but owing to sickness and delay in arrival of many necessary stores it was not till the end of November that the first balloon took the air. In addition to practising co-operation with artillery, they formed useful landmarks for

* The enemy had moved his aerodrome back from Kifri to Tuz Khurmatli. Humr was on the Tigris above Fat-ha.

armoured cars reconnoitring in the desert. No. 51 Section was stationed at Samarra and at the end of December No. 52 Section left Baghdad for Ramadi.

On the Euphrates, above Falluja, the period October to December was occupied by the 15th Division in consolidating its forward positions and in establishing a sense of security amongst the surrounding tribes. Offensive measures were of a minor nature, consisting of air raids, of punitive measures against hostile Shaikhs and of reconnaissances up the river and into the desert on both flanks. Several bridges were constructed across the Euphrates and the development of the forward area was taken in hand to relieve the strain on the transport, which had to bring supplies from Baghdad by road until the Baghdad–Falluja railway was completed on the 21st December.

Good progress had also been made with the development of the other railway communications, the following lines having been completed: through communication between Basra and Amara; conversion to metre-gauge of the Baghdad–Baquba line; and extensions of the 2 ft. 6 in. line from Baquba through Shahraban to the foot of the Jabal Hamrin and from Abu Jisra (south of Shahraban) to Abu Saida on the Diyala.

The 11th Cavalry Brigade was almost complete, the 7th Hussars and "W" Battery having reached Mesopotamia from India; and the 18th Division* was being formed at

* Its composition and distribution on the 29th December, 1917, was as follows:—

53rd Infantry Brigade.	1/9th Middlesex Regiment	Baghdad.
	1/89th Punjabis	Baghdad.
	1/3rd Gurkhas	Baghdad.
	1/7th Gurkhas	Baghdad.
	No. 207 Machine Gun Company	*En route* to Baghdad.
	53rd Brigade Supply and Transport Company	To be formed.
54th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th Royal West Kent Regiment	Baghdad.
	1/39th Garhwalis	*En route* to Baghdad.
	25th Punjabis	Basra.
	52nd Sikhs	Basra.
	No. 238 Machine Gun Company	*En route* to Baghdad.
	54th Brigade Supply and Transport Company	To be formed.
55th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th East Surrey Regiment	To come from India.
	1/10th Jats	To come from India.
	1/94th Infantry	To come from India.
	116th Mahrattas	With Baghdad garrison
	No. 239 Machine Gun Company	Amara.
	55th Brigade Supply and Transport Company	To be formed.

[*Continued on next page.*]

Baghdad. The 11th Lancers (which had relieved the 10th Lancers on the Tigris Defences), the 19th Company Sappers and Miners (to the 15th Division) and the 2/9th (Delhi) Infantry (for administrative duty on the line of communications) had also recently arrived from India.

The heavy artillery had again been re-organised. The Ist and IIIrd Corps had now six batteries each and in both corps these were divided into two groups of one heavy and two siege batteries. In addition, a siege battery was allotted to each of the 15th and 18th Divisions.

[*Continued from previous page.*]

Two squadrons, 10th Lancers	Attached 52nd Infantry Brigade.
336th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and D Batteries)	Amara (*a*).
337th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and 341st Batteries)	Amara (*a*).
Three small arm ammunition sections	To come from India.
2nd, 5th and 8th Companies, Sappers and Miners	Amara, Basra and Baghdad respectively.
106th Hazara Pioneers	To come from India.
18th Divisional Signal Company	To come from India.
249th Machine Gun Company	Amara.
18th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company	Basra.
Nos. 37, 38, 39 and 40 Combined Field Ambulances	The first two at Basra and the other two to come from India.
No. 22 Sanitary Section	Baghdad.
No. 12 Mobile Veterinary Section	Amara.

(*a*) All 6-gun batteries; A, B and C being 18-pounders, and D/336th and 341st howitzers.

CHAPTER XL.

JANUARY TO MARCH 1918: DUNSTERVILLE'S MISSION AND THE ACTION OF KHAN BAGHDADI.

(MAPS 37, 38 AND 41.)

AT the beginning of 1918, the imminence of a separate Russian peace, Bolshevik and enemy propaganda, the relaxation of discipline, individual fears for the safety or welfare of their homes and other factors were daily hastening the disintegration of the various Russian armies. The Caucasus–Persian front from Trebizond to Kermanshah was still held by apparently about 100,000 to 150,000 Russian troops, but it was clear that we could not rely much longer on their providing an effective barrier to hostile penetration eastwards. Such penetration would threaten our flank and communications in Mesopotamia, would give the enemy control of the mineral, oil, grain and cotton resources of the Caucasus and Caspian areas and would afford him an opportunity for carrying the war through Persia and Afghanistan against our frontiers in India.

As a result of the Russian revolution, the general unrest caused by the world-war, Pan-Turanian designs, Pan-Islamic doctrine,* enemy propaganda and other varying factors, there were indications of instability among all the Mahomedan races from the Caucasus to the borders of Chinese Turkestan and also throughout Persia. In Russian territory there seemed to be a movement among them for a certain measure of autonomy; and in Persia the extremist politicians were clamouring for the cessation of all foreign intervention and withdrawal of all foreign troops. These ideas were all the more disquieting as in no case had the peoples concerned the power or capacity either to gain what they desired, to protect themselves or to maintain real neutrality. Moreover, enemy agents, increased in number by the release in Russian territory of thousands of enemy prisoners of war, were seizing the occasion for anti-British agitation and for organising hostile activity.

On the other hand, the general situation of the various Turkish armies would scarcely permit their undertaking any serious fresh commitment. General Allenby's offensive in Palestine was making calls on their Fourth, Seventh and Eighth Armies in that theatre, which were evidently only being met at the expense of their Sixth Army in Mesopotamia and

* See Vol. I, pp. 19–20, for a brief account of these movements.

their Second and Third Armies on the Caucasus front. These last three armies were reported to be tired, somewhat demoralised, weak in strength and suffering from serious supply and transport difficulties; and their First and Fifth Armies in Europe, the Dardanelles and Asia Minor had already been reduced to a total strength of six or seven divisions. So that they would find it difficult, without running great risks, to advance in force over the long and difficult roads and the snow covered passes to Trans-Caucasia and North-West Persia. The alternative route by the Black Sea would, it was hoped, be closed by the opposition offered by the Ukraine and South Russia and by other obvious difficulties. In any case, enemy action in this direction must meet with considerable delay.

The distances involved and the difficult communications rendered it impossible for us to detach sufficient British forces to the Caucasus and North-West Persia, to which in the latter case there were also political objections. But the reorganisation of the considerable numbers of Georgian, Armenian and other available forces in Trans-Caucasia to defend their homes seemed to be feasible*; while in North-West Persia we still had hopes of raising a sufficient force of loyal Russians, to be paid and maintained by us, to close the roads there against small enemy parties and to maintain stability. It also seemed possible that for this purpose, with the consent and assistance of the Persian Government, we might be able to utilise the Russo-Persian Cossack Brigade and part of the force under General Sykes in South Persia. Farther eastward, arrangements had already been made for India to take over the whole of the East Persia Cordon† and to despatch military missions as soon as possible to Russian Turkestan via Meshed and Kashgar.

On the 3rd January the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Marshall emphasising the importance of preventing the German and Turkish Legations and other enemy parties from reaching Tehran and of making preparations to ensure the safe passage of General Dunsterville's mission. Sir William Robertson also considered it advisable to send to Kermanshah, with Bicharakoff who was proceeding there in order to help in rallying loyal Russian troops, a backing of British mounted troops and any armoured cars which

* On the 1st January the British Military Agent in the Caucasus telegraphed that it was hoped to create a new army by April, consisting of six corps composed of Georgians, Armenians, Russian volunteers, Assyrians and Greeks.

† Hitherto the northern half had been held by the Russians. The cordon was to prevent enemy parties and agents entering Afghanistan.

General Marshall could spare. It was realised that their despatch would depend on the condition of the roads and the supply situation, but prompt action was desirable if possible. These measures were, however, only to be regarded as a temporary expedient to meet a critical situation and were not to be looked upon as extending the mission previously laid down for General Marshall's force.

Bicharakoff, however, was already well on his way and would reach Kermanshah long before a British detachment could join him. General Marshall, therefore, arranged, with the approval of the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, that the British detachment should not go further than Harunabad till intimation had been received from Bicharakoff that it would be advisable for it to do so.

This mounted detachment—known as "Bridges' Column" and consisting of one section "S" Battery, R.H.A., 14th Hussars, a section 15th Machine Gun Squadron and some administrative details under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel E. J. Bridges, 14th Hussars—was at once formed at Sadiya, but owing to heavy rain did not move to Baquba till the 13th January. At that time the road beyond Pai Taq to Harunabad was impracticable for the movement of troops, and, except for brief spells of fine weather, was likely to remain so throughout the winter. No news had been received from Bicharakoff and it was decided that the detachment should remain at Qasr-i-Shirin till General Marshall was in definite touch with that officer.

On the 18th January Bridges' Column reached Qasr-i-Shirin, where Matthews' Column* was already located. Colonel Matthews had returned on the 9th from Pai Taq, where he had gone with a part of his column to meet and escort back wireless and survey sections, which had been attached to the Russian force at Kermanshah, and he had experienced considerable difficulty owing to the indifferent state of the road and bad weather. Arrangements were made to carry out immediate improvement of this road and by the end of the month the bulk of Matthews' Column was located at Surkhadiza Khan, with small detachments at Pai Taq and Sar-i-pul.

General Dunsterville arrived at Baghdad from India on the 18th January. By his instructions from the Chief of the

* Consisting of two troops 12th Cavalry, 26th Mountain Battery (less one section), 1/4th Hampshire Regiment, 186th Machine Gun Company (less two sections), one company 128th Pioneers, two armoured cars 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery and administrative details under Lieutenant-Colonel Matthews, 1/4th Hampshire Regiment.

Imperial General Staff, issued on the 14th, he was appointed Chief of the British Mission to the Caucasus and also British representative at Tiflis. His sphere of work was to extend over all Russian and Turkish territory south of the main chain of the Caucasus over which the Federal Republic of the Trans-Caucasian peoples claimed control, i.e., Armenia, Georgia, Azerbaijan and Daghestan. It was anticipated that he might in the near future need the services of some 150 officers and 300 non-commissioned officers; and a large proportion of these would soon be sent to Baghdad. In the meantime, General Dunsterville himself and such of his staff and personnel as were immediately available were to proceed to Tiflis as soon as possible. He would eventually have under his orders an armoured car detachment (five squadrons of eight cars each) commanded by Commander O. S. Locker-Lampson.*

The Chief of the Imperial General Staff intimated that our primary military object was the maintenance of an effective force on the Caucasus front so as to protect the occupied portions of Turkish Armenia and to prevent the realisation of Pan-Turanian designs; and also indirectly to assist General Marshall in Mesopotamia by helping to cover his right flank on the Persian frontier and by holding as many enemy forces as possible in Caucasia. General Dunsterville was to render the Trans-Caucasus Government every assistance in all matters furthering these objects, more especially as regards the raising, training and equipping of their military forces.

He was informed that he was to maintain touch with the French, who had undertaken the organisation of the loyal Russian forces north of the Caucasus and of the Rumanian army, as well as financial responsibility for Ukraine and the troops under General Alexeieff; and he was also told of the arrangements for forming and financing a Russian volunteer force in North-West Persia which would be under General Marshall's orders.

The only practicable route from Baghdad for General Dunsterville and his mission to follow was via Khaniqin, Kermanshah and Hamadan to Enzeli on the Caspian, a distance of about 635 miles. From the Mesopotamian border to the semi-tropical regions bordering the Caspian, the road, crossing a succession of mountain ranges by passes varying from 5,000 to 8,000 feet in height, was of a very doubtful character as far as Hamadan. It had been made passable for motors by the Russians, but it was difficult in good weather and impassable

* These cars could not reach Mesopotamia before March.

in bad. From Hamadan to Enzeli there was a Russian road, but it was in a bad state of repair.

In addition to difficulties due to bad roads and winter weather, the attitude of the tribes along the route and of the Persians was very uncertain. The Kurds inhabiting the area between Khaniqin and Kermanshah were well armed with modern rifles and had given the Russians considerable trouble; and, though they had hitherto not been actively hostile to us, many of them were known to be under the influence and in the pay of enemy agents. In Persia extreme hostility to the late Russian *régime*, a considerable pro-Turk or pro-German faction, recent signs of co-operation between Persian extremists and the Bolsheviks, an inveterate distaste for foreign intervention and the lack of any military force capable of maintaining their country's neutrality had produced a very difficult and complicated situation in which our diplomatists were engaged in negotiating with a weak Persian Government with a view to gaining our end by conciliatory measures. The action at this period of the Jangalis of Gilan, on the south-western shores of the Caspian, illustrated some of the difficulties we might have to encounter as well as the wide-spreading effect of the Turkish Pan-Islamic and Pan-Turanian ideals. Turco-German agents and Bolsheviks were among the Jangalis and were encouraging them, in conjunction with the extreme section of Persian nationalists, to oppose by force all British action. They had forcibly taken over the administration of Gilan and, in co-operation with the Bolsheviks, had complete control of the port of Enzeli. They had purchased many rifles and much ammunition from Russian soldiers; and were reported as being about to extend their authority to Mazanderan, Kazvin and Zenjan with the intention of marching subsequently on Tehran to establish there a new government under German influence.

Finally, the whole area between Mesopotamia and Hamadan, which had been traversed successively since 1914 by forces of Russians and Turks, was devastated and famine stricken.

General Dunsterville decided to stay in Baghdad and collect there a small party of officers, after which he would go straight to Enzeli and thence by sea to Baku, which he hoped to reach in about twelve days after leaving Baghdad. Preceded a few days previously to Hamadan by two officers in an armoured car, General Dunsterville, with 11 officers, 4 non-commissioned officers, 4 batmen and 41 Ford cars and vans, left Baghdad on the 27th January; but, delayed by bad

weather and the difficulties of the route, he did not reach Kermanshah till the 3rd February.

On the 24th January General Marshall telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that information from the British *liaison* officer with Bicharakoff showed that the latter was gaining no success in rallying loyal Russian soldiers and that a third of his own detachment was expected to leave him. The political situation in Kermanshah was said to have improved, the local Persians having reconciled their differences, in order, it was said, to avoid giving the British a pretext for occupying that town; and there was general rejoicing at the departure of the Russians.

During January, beyond punitive measures against hostile tribes, there were no operations of importance in Mesopotamia. On the 15th January the general British dispositions there were as follows.

Of the IIIrd Corps, the 14th Division was east of the Diyala. One brigade group was distributed between Qasr-i-Shirin, Khaniqin and Mirjana (3½ miles north of Qizil Ribat); another brigade group was at the main crossing over the Kurdarra river; and the remainder of the division was at Shahraban. The 13th Division, west of the Diyala, held the line of the Jabal Hamrin from Abu Zenabil to the Sakaltutan Pass with a brigade group; and the remainder of the division was between Delli Abbas and Sindiya.

The Ist Corps (3rd and 17th Divisions) was in the Samarra area, less one infantry brigade temporarily attached to the 18th Division.

The 15th Division was on the Euphrates, with one brigade group at Ramadi, another at Madhij and the third at Falluja.

The 18th Division, which was not yet complete and which had the 52nd Infantry Brigade (17th Division) temporarily attached to it, was at Baghdad, furnishing detachments on the Middle Euphrates.*

The Cavalry Division, less three regiments and two guns, was on the Tigris at Sadiya. One regiment was attached to the Ist Corps, and two regiments and two guns to the IIIrd Corps. The 11th Cavalry Brigade, not yet complete, was at Baghdad, one of its regiments being temporarily attached to the 18th Division.

* "Middle Euphrates" was the term used to designate the line between Falluja and Nasiriya. The troops employed there in detachments totalled 7 squadrons of cavalry, 4 guns and 3¼ infantry battalions, of which one squadron of cavalry, 2 guns and 1¼ battalions were furnished from Nasiriya. Detachments were located at Musaiyib, Hindiya Barrage, Hilla, Kifl, Kufa, Abu Sukhair, Shinafiya, Darraji and Samawa.

During January, in addition to five bombing raids carried out against Turkish aerodromes and camps, our Air Service was continuously active in reconnaissance and photographic work. The Turkish aeroplanes were also active; and on the 24th and 25th January they carried out bombing raids over Baghdad, which caused us a few casualties.* On the 23rd January two of our aeroplanes flew to Kermanshah, returning with despatches the next day; and on the 25th Lieutenant-Colonel C. B. Stokes, appointed to the staff of H.M. Minister at Tehran, was taken there by aeroplane from Baquba, the journey being successfully accomplished, in spite of bad weather, by the 28th.

The Turkish Sixth Army, from which we had taken during 1917 a total of some 16,000 prisoners and 124 guns, besides inflicting on it heavy casualties, was weak in strength and widely dispersed. Of the Turkish XIII Corps, the 2nd Division was reported to be distributed along the line Altun Köpri–Kirkuk–Tuz Khurmatli–Band-i-Adhaim and the 6th Division to be in the Kifri–Qara Tepe area with detachments on the Diyala to the east of those two places. The XVIII Corps was about Fat-ha on the Tigris and it was reported that its 52nd Division had been broken up and its units distributed between the two other divisions (14th and 51st) of the Corps. Reports were also current that the Turkish Cavalry Brigade and 46th Division were being moved from the Mosul area to Syria.† Two-thirds or more of the 50th Division was said to be on the Euphrates; and in the Sulaimaniya area there was an inconsiderable Turkish force, consisting mainly of frontier troops. The Turkish divisions except the 50th were estimated to be of a strength of about 4,000 rifles each or less, and with the exception of the 50th they were at such distances from us, having regard to the nature of the intervening country, the position of our railheads and our general transport situation, that we could not hope to obtain any decisive success by operating against them. On the other hand, in view of the condition of the enemy's troops, his supply and transport difficulties, his pre-occupation on the Palestine front and the reports that work on the Baghdad railway was at a standstill owing to lack of material, there seemed little chance of a Turkish offensive.

* It was estimated that the Turkish Sixth Army had at this time about 32 serviceable aeroplanes.

† At the beginning of February confirmation was obtained of the disbandment of the 52nd Division and of the move to Syria of the Cavalry Brigade and 46th Division.

On the 2nd February General Marshall informed the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that Baratoff might succeed in holding together a certain number of his men, but that they would be undisciplined and useless; and that Bicharakoff, whose presence alone had prevented the Russian withdrawal from Kermanshah from degenerating into a rout, was also likely before long to have trouble with his own men. All Persian parties were welcoming the departure of the Russians and General Marshall considered that, for the time being at any rate, it was better to keep British troops out of Kermanshah, especially as, if kept ready at Qasr-i-Shirin, they could forestall any Turkish movement on Kermanshah. Bicharakoff's own idea was to rally the best officers and men he could find, take them to the Caucasus and there raise a new force; and General Marshall proposed that he should ask Bicharakoff to come to Baghdad, where he should tell him that we had no objection to his withdrawal from Persia and that we welcomed his proposal to raise troops in the Caucasus.

The Chief of the Imperial General Staff replied on the 6th February saying that H.M. Government had not yet decided on their policy in Persia. It was apparent that the Russians would not be able to close the Persian frontier or to keep open communications with the Caucasus, and it would be necessary for us to consider to what extent we could and should undertake both tasks. To enable him to advise the War Cabinet, Sir William Robertson asked for an estimate of the force required on the Persian frontier to take the place of the Russians and also whether General Marshall could maintain such a force. In conclusion, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff thought that Bicharakoff should be encouraged to remain in Persia as long as there was any hope of retaining any Russian force there.

General Marshall telegraphed on the 9th that the latest reports from Bicharakoff showed little possibility of retaining a Russian force in Persia. To send a sufficient British force there, say a cavalry brigade and an infantry division, would require many troops to hold the lines of communication and practically all the transport in Mesopotamia to maintain it. General Marshall considered that a steady advance on Mosul would be more likely to achieve the object in view than locking up troops in Persia.* Such an advance, he said, would entail pushing forward the railway from Samarra.

* In January our Military Agent in the Caucasus had also telegraphed to the War Office that Assyrian, Armenian and Georgian delegates in Trans-Caucasia had all volunteered the opinion that a move by us towards Mosul would have most beneficial results in Southern Caucasia and Persia.

The Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed his views on the Persian problem to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff on the 12th February. The general situation of the Turkish forces in Mesopotamia rendered an organised advance by them on Tehran improbable. It should, therefore, suffice if we closed the western Persian frontier against enemy emissaries; and this should be possible with Persian Cossacks under British officers. Simultaneously, we should improve the road from Shahraban via Kermanshah to Kazvin and consider the provision of extra transport. Persian susceptibilities should be considered and the employment of British troops in Persia should be the last resort. General Monro disagreed with the proposal to move on Mosul. It would necessitate strong numerical superiority and great expenditure of material and resources, without any definite prospect of decisive results, and it could be countered effectively by an enemy thrust down the Euphrates.

On the 11th February, Bicharakoff arrived at Baghdad, having come by aeroplane from Kermanshah, and he left again two days later to take back with him into Persia the remainder of his detachment from Shahraban. On the 13th General Marshall reported to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that the Russians in Persia were in a hopelessly demoralised state. Bicharakoff would remain at Hamadan with his men, as rear guard to the withdrawing Russians, till the end of February, when he would retire accompanied by Baratoff's "volunteers." It was Bicharakoff's opinion that the Russians were so desirous of peace that the appearance of British troops at Tiflis would create a bad impression; and he believed that the Trans-Caucasian Government had already decided on peace on a pre-war basis.

On the 15th February the Chief of the Imperial General Staff informed General Marshall that it was very desirable to employ a maximum of three armoured car batteries to keep open if possible the Khaniqin–Hamadan–Kazvin–Resht road and that for the time being it was not intended to send any other troops. In reply General Marshall said that when the road was passable—it was then under snow—as many cars would be sent as could be made available.

In the meantime General Dunsterville and the party with him, after considerable delay owing to snow, had reached Hamadan. Joined here by the armoured car which had preceded him, he left on the 15th February for Enzeli. At Kazvin, where he met Sir Charles Marling, the British Minister

at Tehran, he learnt that the Jangalis had announced their intention of stopping his Mission. However, in view of the fact that up till then the opposition that had been previously anticipated had proved to be in reality negligible, General Dunsterville decided to go on and see for himself if he could not get through. He reached Enzeli without opposition,* but found it under the entire control of a Bolshevik Committee, backed by a force of 3,000 soldiers with guns and gunboats, who informed General Dunsterville that they would not allow him to proceed to the Caucasus. The situation of his party was now distinctly precarious; but, as it turned out, General Dunsterville's adroit diplomacy and the unwillingness of the local Bolsheviks and the Jangalis to open hostilities saved the situation. Early on the 20th February just before a party of Red soldiers, sent for by the Enzeli Committee to effect his capture, arrived from Baku, General Dunsterville withdrew from Enzeli, arriving back at Hamadan on the 25th.† In accordance with a telegram sent by General Dunsterville from Enzeli on the 17th, the second party of his mission (14 officers and 11 British other ranks) was halted at Khaniqin and the third party (40 officers and 165 British other ranks) at Shahraban.

The situation in Armenia and Trans-Caucasia had in the meantime taken a distinct turn for the worse. Since the Bolshevik *coup d'état* in Russia in November, 1917, the disintegration of the Russian Caucasus armies had proceeded so rapidly that by this time practically the only troops remaining were Armenians. Some of these had returned from the Russian front in Europe, but large numbers among them had fled from Turkish territory in 1915 to escape massacre and were imbued with inveterate hatred for the Turks. Many thousand Georgian troops had also returned to their country from the European front, but they were full of Bolshevik theories and displayed an unwillingness to go to the front and advocated peace. The 2,000,000 or so Tartars had suffered few war losses, as they had been exempt from Russian military service, and their sympathies were largely pro-Turk. In the uncertainty regarding the future they had, however, agreed to act with the Armenians and Georgians in the declaration of the Trans-Caucasian Federal Republic, even though they would form in

* The armoured car with him had a great moral effect.

† His withdrawal was unopposed, though it was subsequently ascertained that the Jangalis had wished to ambush the party, with the connivance and assistance of the Russian troops withdrawing from Persia. To the credit of the latter, their leaders refused to agree and the project was abandoned.

it a Moslem minority. Although the declaration of this Federal Republic was framed so as to leave the country as an integral part of Russia, the Central Bolshevik Government deemed it advisable to try to re-establish its authority there by the despatch in January 1918 of a Bolshevik Armenian chief commissar named Shaoumian. The Tartars, however, would have none of him. They forced him to retire to Baku and adopted an active pro-Turk policy, setting up a Tartar Government at Elizabetopol and arming their tribesmen with rifles and ammunition taken from the Russian soldiers leaving the Armenian front.

The Turks, who were negotiating with the Federal Republic, saw in this great Moslem reserve of men an instrument to aid them in the fulfilment of their Pan-Turkish ideals; and about the middle of February they broke off negotiations with the Federal Government on the score of Armenian excesses against Moslems and commenced an offensive towards Trebizond and Erzinjan. Simultaneously, tribes on the Caucasus frontier closed the roads to Armenian troops proceeding to the front, and outbreaks by Kurds occurred in the vicinity of Erivan. The Armenian troops in the occupied Turkish territory proved incapable of holding their own and retired in disorder, harassed by Kurds, while Turkish troops occupied Trebizond, Baiburt and Erzinjan.

The previous reports that several Turkish divisions were moving to Syria from the Caucasus were now contradicted and it appeared that only two divisions had actually been so transferred. It seemed evident, therefore, that the Turkish authorities meant to ignore the calls of their southern fronts and to undertake an offensive towards the Caucasus. It is noteworthy in this connection that peace negotiations between the Central Powers and Russia had begun at Brest-Litovsk in the middle of December, 1917, and that, by the terms of the treaty concluded there at the beginning of March, 1918, the Russians agreed to evacuate the occupied Anatolian provinces and also the districts of Ardahan, Kars and Batum, which had been lost by the Turks as a result of the Russo-Turkish war of 1878.

On the 26th February General Dunsterville telegraphed from Hamadan to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that, as the situation in Persia was in the melting pot owing to the weak Persian Government and having regard to the Russian situation and evacuation, it seemed necessary, with a view to operations in the Caucasus and to safeguard British interests

in Persia, for us to occupy the line Qasr-i-Shirin—Enzeli. General Dunsterville was convinced that, whatever the politicians might say, the inhabitants of Persia would welcome such a step. All they wanted was security and they did not care who gave it to them. General Dunsterville considered that a small number of troops would suffice and suggested a strength of one infantry brigade, one cavalry regiment, one battery of mountain artillery, one light armoured motor battery and aeroplanes, with headquarters at Kermanshah, Hamadan and Kazvin.

At this time, the threatened advance on Hamadan of Kuchik Khan with his Jangalis seemed to be hanging fire, owing, it was said, to his determination to wait till the Turks, who were urging him to make this advance, had actually occupied Kurdistan.

To return to Mesopotamia. During January there had been discussions in London over the future British policy in Mesopotamia and Palestine. The Government was anxious to continue operations vigorously with a view to eliminating Turkey from the war, and deputed General Smuts to confer in Egypt with General Allenby, the Naval Commander-in-Chief in the Mediterranean and General Marshall's representative, with a view to advising the War Cabinet as soon as possible on the best use of all our resources. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Marshall on the 31st January and 3rd February explaining this and requesting that General Gillman, the Chief of the General Staff in Mesopotamia, might be sent to Egypt to represent General Marshall's views and to give General Smuts all possible assistance and information.* The Chief of the Imperial General Staff said that the main operations would probably be carried out in Palestine and that co-operation by General Marshall might consist in detaching troops to join General Allenby or in an offensive in Mesopotamia, or possibly both.

On the 21st February the Chief of the Imperial General Staff† telegraphed, to the Commander-in-Chief in India and

* General Gillman left Mesopotamia at once and arrived in Egypt on the 20th February, but General Smuts had already telegraphed his recommendations to London. He had met in Egypt General Hopwood, who was on his way to England, and had formerly been Chief of the General Staff to General Maude, and from him had gathered information as to the situation in Mesopotamia. General Gillman rejoined at Baghdad on the 4th April. During his absence General T. Fraser acted as Chief of the General Staff.

† General Sir W. Robertson resigned his appointment as Chief of the Imperial General Staff on the 18th February and was succeeded by General Sir Henry Wilson.

General Marshall, saying that General Smuts recommended the adoption of a purely defensive rôle in Mesopotamia and the vigorous prosecution of the campaign in Palestine; and that Mesopotamia should feed Palestine with reinforcements from the surplus beyond its reasonable requirements for defence.* General Smuts recommended that two divisions, six batteries of 6-inch howitzers and one cavalry brigade should be transferred from Mesopotamia to Palestine. Sir Henry Wilson said that, provided we maintained an offensive in Palestine, he personally thought that the chances of a Turkish attack in force towards Baghdad were slight. But he would like the views of Generals Monro and Marshall regarding the extent of the reduction in Mesopotamia which, in view of probable future developments, they considered safe.

In reply, General Marshall said that he considered he could safely spare a complete army corps; but General Monro was of opinion that the force in Mesopotamia should not be reduced by more than one division and four 6-inch howitzer batteries. The main reasons for the latter opinion were the chances of further military commitments in Persia and the fact that strength in Mesopotamia afforded the possibility of immediate reinforcement from there to meet serious trouble in India.

On the 1st, 3rd and 6th March, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff sent General Marshall instructions† on the policy which the Government had decided on for the time being in regard to Persia, Mesopotamia and Palestine. In view of the situation on the Persian frontier and the impossibility of his mission getting through to Tiflis, General Dunsterville was to remain in Persia. In order to support him there, General Marshall was to use armoured cars and cavalry, as soon as the road conditions admitted, to keep open the Qasr-i-Shirin—Kermanshah road, and to increase the garrison of Qasr-i-Shirin so as to bring it up to three cavalry regiments and such additional troops as he might think advisable. At the same time the Chief of the Imperial General Staff told General Marshall for his general guidance that it might be necessary later to develop this policy considerably, and extend towards Hamadan. An active defence was to be pursued in

* At this time it was estimated that the Turkish armies totalled 46 infantry divisions, distributed as follows:—Europe, 1; Dardanelles and Asia Minor, 4; Syria and Palestine, 20 to 21; Caucasus front, 7 to 8; Mesopotamia, 6; Arabia, 5; in transit, destination uncertain, 2. One German division was in Syria and there might be another in Asia Minor.

† Repeated to the Commander-in-Chief in India.

Mesopotamia on the lines of the instructions sent to him on the 22nd November, 1917, when he assumed command*; and the reinforcement to be found from Mesopotamia for Palestine was limited to one Indian division and four batteries of 6-inch howitzers. In Palestine an offensive campaign was to be carried out. Finally, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff asked General Marshall to report, having regard to these instructions and to the possibility of the extension of commitments in Persia, what railway and inland water transport personnel† and labour for railway construction he could spare for Palestine.

The 3rd Division was selected for transfer to Egypt, and during March arrangements were made for its movement, its place in the Ist Corps being taken by the 18th Division.

Matthews' Column remained during February in the vicinity of Pai Taq, where road improvement was in progress though hindered to a considerable extent by stormy weather.‡ But except for an armoured car which proceeded to Kermanshah at the beginning of the month and could not return because of the snow and bad road, no other troops moved eastward of Qasr-i-Shirin into Persia during February.

In Mesopotamia during February, beyond punitive measures against aggressive tribesmen and Air Force activity, there were no operations of importance except a short British advance in the direction of Hit on the Euphrates. For the previous two months the Turks had been reported to be reinforcing their troops in that neighbourhood, and at the beginning of February it was estimated that the Turkish force about Hit and Sahiliya consisted of part of the 50th Division (157th and 169th Regiments) with a total combatant strength of between 4,000 to 5,000. There appeared to be little change in the enemy's dispositions on the Tigris; but in the Qara Tepe–Kifri–Kirkuk area there were indications of a concentration of strength to the rear, most of the troops on the Diyala having been withdrawn. This movement was possibly due to supply difficulties, although information that the Turks were making arrangements for flooding the Qara Tepe area indicated some apprehension on their part of an offensive by us in this direction.§

* See page 87.

† The total number of river craft of all sorts then in Mesopotamia, or on order for there, was 1,760.

‡ The snowfall in the mountains during the winter 1917–18 was the heaviest that had occurred for the past ten years.

§ Reports from the Caucasus may have reached them that we were contemplating an advance towards Mosul.

Hit was a point of some strategic importance and was connected by desert routes with Tikrit, the country to the west and Karbala. Moreover, its bitumen wells were valuable for boats, roads, etc. Early in February General Marshall gave General Brooking (15th Division) instructions to capture Hit and its garrison as soon as he could complete his arrangements and weather conditions were favourable. General Marshall considered that it would be comparatively easy to drive the Turks out of their position and capture the town; but, owing to their experience at Ramadi, the capture of the Turkish force would probably be extremely difficult.

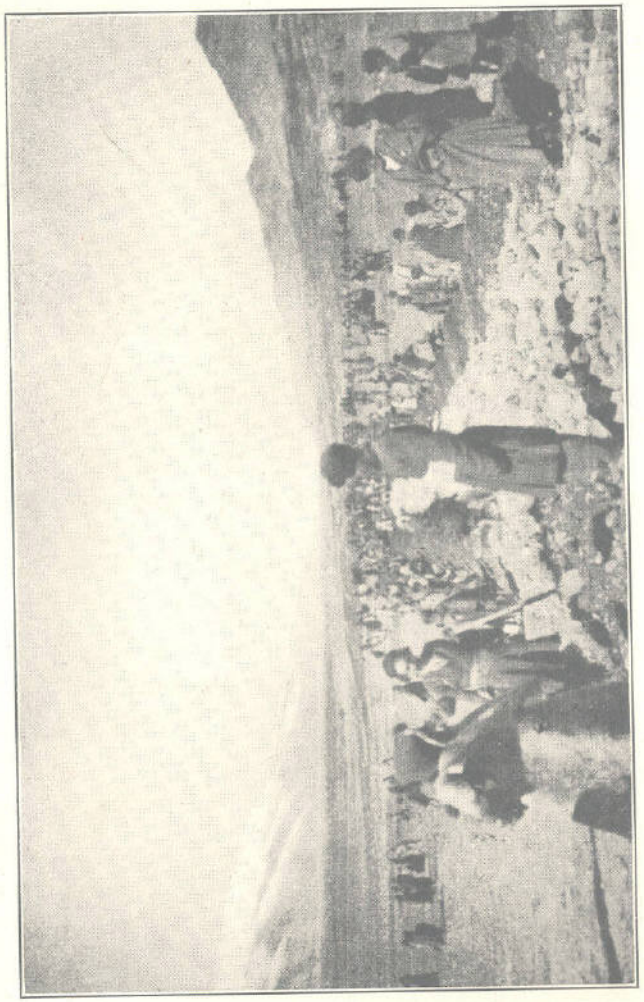
On the 18th February, a strong reconnoitring detachment under General Lucas (42nd Brigade) advanced from Ramadi and, finding Khan Abu Rayan unoccupied, took up a position about ten miles south of Hit.* From here it was ascertained that the Turkish main position was two miles above Hit, behind a depression known as Broad Wadi, and that about two-thirds of the enemy's force was at Sahiliya. Not wishing to commit his troops to serious fighting unless he saw a chance of delivering a severe blow, General Marshall ordered contact with the enemy to be maintained by constant patrolling and reconnaissance, while forward communications were improved and supplies pushed up. The latter operation was facilitated by the completion on the 18th February of the railway extension from Falluja to Dhibban.

On the 1st March, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, in addition to ordering General Dunsterville to remain in Persia, asked him to report what action he could best take. General Dunsterville replied that he would be best employed watching the situation and that the presence of his small party† in Hamadan, where he was trying to allay the suspicions of the local Persian notables, was having a good moral effect. He also recommended that he should be allowed to spend money on famine relief. H.M. Government approved these recommendations and famine relief work (mainly road improvement) was begun on the 23rd March. No better means for changing the local prevailing attitude of suspicion and hostility

* See Map 37.

† 13 officers, 62 British other ranks including motor drivers and one interpreter. With his Mission were 6 Ford touring cars, 34 Ford vans and an armoured car detachment (1 armoured car, 1 lorry and 1 Ford van). By this time, there were in Mesopotamia on their way to join his Mission 173 British officers and 331 other ranks.

To face page 116.



Persian "famine labour" road making near Karind.

could have been devised ; and it was not long before it effected its purpose.*

Besides famine relief work, General Dunsterville and his officers found their time fully occupied in dealings and negotiations with Baratoff, Bicharakoff and the Bolsheviks, in establishing friendly relations with the local notables and inhabitants, and in obtaining information regarding supplies available in the surrounding district. They encountered considerable passive opposition and much hostile propaganda ; but they achieved a gratifying measure of success.

Any hope of being able to raise a force of volunteers from among Baratoff's troops was soon dispelled. But Bicharakoff's detachment still held together and General Dunsterville concluded an agreement with him, which was of mutual advantage. Bicharakoff's detachment and the expenses it actually incurred were to be paid by us† ; it would not withdraw from Persia till replaced by British troops ; and General Dunsterville and Bicharakoff agreed to co-operate in close consultation together, first in Persia and then in the Caucasus, to further their common aim.

On the 7th March General Marshall informed the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that the road to Kermanshah could not be relied upon to permit the movement and continued maintenance of troops, before May ; but that in the meantime favourable weather might allow its occasional use. For this, Colonel Kennion, British Consul at Kermanshah, had made arrangements with local tribes to keep the road open for light traffic. General Marshall would send armoured cars to complete a battery at Kermanshah ; the 6th Cavalry Brigade was being concentrated in the Shahraban—Qasr-i-Shirin area ; General Dunsterville's second party at Khaniqin had been ordered to push on and join him ; and Colonel Bridges' detachment of a cavalry regiment and a battery would move forward from Qasr-i-Shirin as soon as the state of the road permitted.

The situation in Trans-Caucasia was still most unfavourable. The Turkish advance between the Black Sea and Lake Van was continuing, the Armenian troops in front of them being completely demoralised. The provisions of the Brest-Litovsk treaty regarding the transfer of the districts of Batum, Ardahan and Kars were indefinitely framed and left an opening to

* General Dunsterville in his book says " The fame of our relief works spread down even as far as Gilan, and Kuchik Khan, in his pose as an enlightened ruler, felt called on to undertake relief work on somewhat similar lines but on a smaller scale."

† Bicharakoff emphasised the point that he and his men were not mercenaries.

neighbouring states and possibly Germany to intervene. Georgia had claims to Batum; the Armenians regarded Ardahan and Kars as theirs; and the Tartars alone favoured the treaty. The Georgians, however, were unlikely to offer military opposition to Turkey and the Armenians could not hope to make an effective resistance. It was indeed the general impression that the Trans-Caucasus Government was likely to conclude peace with Turkey. Consequently, the apparent intention of the Turks to occupy the portion of the Caucasus inhabited by Mahomedans and to exterminate the Armenian population seemed to stand a very good chance of success.* In point of fact, as was subsequently ascertained, Turco-German rivalry in regard to the Caucasus was likely to be the only deterrent. The Germans occupied Odessa on the 13th March and the Turks became alarmed at the German preparations to open the direct European route to the Caucasus.

The Caspian, including the ports of Petrovsk, Baku, Enzeli and Krasnovodsk, was under Bolshevik control; and under the instigation of enemy or Bolshevik agents, the Jangalis had arrested the British consul at Resht and were about to occupy Kazvin, in co-operation with a force of Persian nationalists. Consequently all communications between Persia and the Caucasus were interrupted. The local situation in Kermanshah had improved somewhat, but elsewhere in North-West Persia it gave cause for anxiety; and the Persian Government was adopting an attitude which would endanger not only their own country but our position in Afghanistan and India. H.M. Government, reluctantly forced to the conclusion that they must make themselves responsible for measures against the common danger which the Persian Government were unable or unwilling to adopt, decided to despatch a sufficient force to patrol and keep open the road from Khaniqin to the east. The point to which this force advanced would depend upon the steadying influence which its presence exerted and upon the degree of authority exercised by the Persian Government.

On the 9th March, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to General Marshall that, if we were to open communication with the Caucasus, it was very important to get troops to Kermanshah as soon as possible. He suggested

* Further evidence of Turkish intentions was obtained at this time by information that, during February, they had called for volunteers from the officers of their Sixth Army for service in the Caucasus, Daghestan and Turkestan "to protect and further the interests of Islam."

that a detachment, equipped with pack transport, should be sent on before the road was opened for regular traffic; and, if reports as to supplies were favourable, a detachment should also be sent on from Kermanshah to join General Dunsterville at Hamadan. On the 12th, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed further that, in view of the importance of energetic and immediate measures to check enemy penetration through North-West Persia, General Marshall's responsibilities were extended to cover all military measures which might be necessary for this purpose. So long as General Dunsterville remained in Persia, he would be under General Marshall's orders and at his disposal to command any troops sent to Persia; and, subject to General Marshall's general instructions, General Dunsterville was to be given a free hand to raise levies and enter into arrangements with local tribes. In all questions of general policy as regarded operations in Persia General Marshall was to be guided by H.M. Minister at Tehran, who would delegate to him and to General Dunsterville such political officers as might be necessary for the local interpretation of policy in connection with arrangements with the Persian officials and tribes.

General Marshall telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff on the 13th March indicating some of the great difficulties of moving and maintaining troops in the famine stricken area to be traversed. He held out hopes, however, of moving a detachment to Kermanshah during a temporary spell of fine weather within the next six weeks. He was about to establish a chain of marching-posts, stocked with supplies and held by infantry, beyond Qasr-i-Shirin; pack transport was being concentrated for this purpose; and the garrison for Karind would move there at once.

A platoon of the 1/4th Hampshire reached Karind on the 16th March; and two days later Lieutenant-Colonel A.S.Capper, appointed administrative commandant of the line beyond Qasr-i-Shirin, left there with Colonel Kennion by motor for Kermanshah. But they were much delayed by heavy rain, snow and the bad road; and, taking on with them from Surkhadiza a party of fifty rifles of the 1/4th Hampshire, only reached Kermanshah on the 24th March. From Kermanshah this Hampshire detachment started on the 28th to join General Dunsterville at Hamadan, its place at Kermanshah being taken three days later by another Hampshire detachment of the same strength. Colonel Capper's report fully confirmed previous information regarding the devastation of the country,

from which the wretched inhabitants had all fled either into tribal territory or into the towns.

In the meantime part of Bicharakoff's detachment had occupied Kazvin, which was threatened by a force of Jangalis. On the 29th March, when the last of the Russians had left Hamadan, motors, sent out by General Dunsterville, brought in to Hamadan twenty men of the Hampshire detachment marching from Kermanshah; and their arrival, says General Dunsterville in his book, rendered his position secure.* The area now under the British IIIrd Corps extended up to and included Kermanshah; the 36th Brigade Group, with headquarters at Qasr-i-Shirin, providing six detachments along the line.†

On the 13th March the Germans had occupied Odessa and by the end of the month the capture of Batum, Ardahan and Kars by the Turks appeared imminent.‡ The new military formations of Armenians and other pro-Ally personnel in Trans-Caucasia were proving unreliable and would take months to become efficient; General Dunsterville's Mission was held up indefinitely in Persia; and heavy fighting was reported between Armenians and Tartars. It was obvious that our chances of organising effective resistance to enemy occupation or control of Trans-Caucasia were much reduced; and the War Office issued orders on the 31st March to try to obtain control of the Caspian fleet.

To return to Mesopotamia. At the beginning of March, in reply to a query from the Chief of the Imperial General Staff regarding his intentions on the Euphrates, General Marshall telegraphed that he intended to attack the Turks at Hit in about three weeks time and to occupy that place as a temporary measure in order to secure possession of the surrounding bitumen fields. Delay was desirable, so that the

* On the 28th a British aeroplane from Mesopotamia arrived at Hamadan, leaving again the same day with despatches for Kermanshah and Baghdad. Its arrival had an excellent moral effect.

† *Sar-i-Pul.* One platoon 1/4th Hampshire.
Pai Taq. One company 1/4th Hampshire (less one platoon) and subsection 186th Machine Gun Company.
Surkhadiza. One section 26th Mountain Battery, 1/4th Hampshire (less two companies and 100 rifles), 186th Machine Gun Company (less three sections), and one company 128th Pioneers.
Sermil. One company 1/4th Hampshire (less one platoon), and one platoon 128th Pioneers.
Karind. One platoon 1/4th Hampshire.
Kermanshah. 50 rifles 1/4th Hampshire.

‡ At this time the total rifle strength of the Turkish forces remaining on the Caucasus front was estimated at 32,000 with 170 guns.

enemy's attention might be diverted elsewhere and our forward reserves of ammunition and supplies completed.

But, on the 8th March, it was reported that the Turks had vacated their Broad Wadi position and were falling back. General Brooking's troops at once advanced and occupied Hit* and Sahiliya on the 9th and 10th March respectively; and the Turks, suffering considerably in their retirement from the attacks of our aeroplanes, withdrew to Khan Baghdadi, twenty-two miles above Hit.† General Brooking's division, with headquarters at Hit, was then distributed in three brigade groups, i.e., at Sahiliya, Hit, and at a point about nine miles below Hit.‡ Railhead was at Dhibban and riverhead was established close to Hit.

As the result of a conference between Generals Marshall and Brooking at Baghdad on the 11th and 12th March, it was decided that General Brooking should commence operations on the 24th. The object of these operations, which might last for ten to fourteen days, was to drive the enemy as far as possible from Hit and to inflict as much damage as possible on him, before withdrawing to occupy a position covering Hit. Describing his intentions to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff in a telegram on the 12th March, General Marshall said that he proposed to occupy Hit till the transport requirements of the local harvest and of the troops sent to Persia necessitated withdrawal to nearer railhead. He considered that to make the occupation of Hit easier the enemy should be pushed back beyond Khan Baghdadi; and as reports suggested that, if pressed, he would retire beyond Haditha and might go as far back as Ana, General Marshall proposed a limited pursuit. In conclusion, referring to a doubt which the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had expressed regarding the advisability of a subsequent withdrawal from Hit,§ General Marshall said that he did not think that such a withdrawal would necessarily give the enemy the impression that we did not intend to advance in force later.

In carrying out the preparations for General Brooking's offensive, every precaution was taken to preserve secrecy

* At Hit they captured a few prisoners, two mountain guns and over 100 *shakturs*, as well as other stores.

† See Map 37.

‡ There were also small detachments at posts from Ramadi to Falluja.

§ In the telegram expressing this doubt sent on the 11th March, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had approved the occupation of Hit, as our presence there constituted a threat of further advance and kept the enemy in uncertainty. The Chief of the Imperial General Staff did not think it desirable to go farther up the Euphrates.

regarding our intentions and also to make the enemy think that we were settling down into summer quarters round Hit. A dummy defensive position was dug at Sahiliya, reconnaissance was restricted and the forward concentration of troops was put off till the last possible moment. Work on roads was somewhat delayed by heavy rain; but by the night 25th/26th March—the date to which the advance had been postponed—two good roads to Sahiliya had been completed; and a reserve of five days supplies for the whole of the striking force had been collected there.*

The Turks were reported to be preparing a position at Khan Baghdadi, of which by the 25th March our airmen had taken several photographs; but several deserters who came in at this period all stated that the Turks intended to retire to Ana.† It was further reported that Nazim Bey had recently taken over command of the Turkish 50th Division from Shukri Bey‡ and that reinforcements of 1,000 Turkish infantry and two heavy guns had left the Tigris for Haditha and Khan Baghdadi, which they might be expected to reach about the 22nd or 23rd March.

On the 22nd General Marshall made a personal inspection of the Euphrates front. He had arranged to try to divert the enemy's attention from the Euphrates by demonstrations on the Jabal Hamrin and Tigris fronts; and these were carried out by the IIIrd and Ist Corps respectively on the 23rd March and two succeeding days. Subsequent information showed that these demonstrations produced the desired effect of mystifying the enemy, causing him to discredit reports of a British concentration on the Euphrates and to withdraw most, if not all, of his aeroplanes from that front.

The 11th Cavalry Brigade, commanded by Brigadier-General R. A. Cassels, left Falluja on the 22nd March to join General Brooking's force; and at dawn on the 25th, after a twenty-mile night march carried out well to the west to avoid any chance of being seen by Turkish spies in Hit, it went into bivouac in palm groves near Sahiliya. On that day also two reinforcing flights of the 63rd Squadron, R.F.C., reached Hit, while the

* Part of these supplies came from Dhibban to Hit by motor vans, of which some 500 were employed, and part by *mahailas*, the wind proving generally favourable. It was also found possible to overcome the difficulties of navigation above Hit and to bring up to Sahiliya a daily average of 30 tons by river.

† General Brooking did not credit these statements.

‡ It was subsequently ascertained that Shukri Bey had been superseded for his undue haste in retiring from Hit—a fact which may well have affected the action of his successor.

forward concentration at Sahiliya of the remainder of General Brooking's force was carried out on the nights 23rd/24th and 24th/25th. These movements gave him the following striking force:—

Air Service	Two flights, 30th Squadron. Two flights, 63rd Squadron. No. 52 Kite Balloon Section.
Cavalry	11th Cavalry Brigade. 10th Lancers (less two squadrons). Squadron 1/1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry.
Artillery	215th Brigade, R.F.A. 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. 395th Siege Battery, R.G.A. (48 guns and howitzers.) No. 118 Anti-aircraft Section.
Engineers and Pioneers	450th and 451st Companies, R.E. Detachment No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train. No. 2 Mobile Bridging Train. 48th Pioneers (less one company).
Infantry	12th Brigade (less 1½ battalions).* 42nd Brigade. 50th Brigade.
275th Machine Gun Company.	
Light Armoured Motor Brigade	8th Light Armoured Motor Battery. 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery. 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery (less one section).

At 10 a.m., on the 25th March General Brooking held a conference at Sahiliya of his subordinate commanders, at which he explained his plan. The following gives the gist of his operation orders.

The strength of the Turkish 50th Division (157th and 169th Regiments only) was estimated at about 170 sabres, 4,500 rifles and 17 to 21 guns. Of this total, 50 sabres, 1,400 rifles and 5 guns were probably at Haditha or at Ana, and about 320 rifles and sabres were reported as on the Euphrates left bank; so that the enemy strength about Khan Baghdadi was estimated at not more than 100 sabres, 2,800 rifles and 12 to 16 guns.

* 43rd Erinpura Infantry garrisoned Hit and two companies 2/39th Gahrwalis garrisoned Sahiliya.

The enemy position about Khan Baghdadi* consisted of an advanced entrenched line (known as "P" trenches) about 1½ miles to the south east of that place and of another entrenched area (known as "Q" and "R" trenches) extending to a distance of over four miles to the westward of Khan Baghdadi.

General Brooking's aim was the complete destruction of all the Turkish forces downstream of Ana.

The forward movement was to commence at 9 p.m., when a brigade group under General Andrew (50th Brigade)† was to advance from Sahiliya along the Aleppo road. It was to be followed at midnight by another brigade group under General Lucas (42nd Brigade)‡; and the remainder of the force was to advance at various early hours on the 26th. At 5.20 a.m. on the 26th General Andrew was to close with the enemy and pin him to his ground; or, if the enemy retired, to pursue vigorously.

General Cassels with the 11th Cavalry Brigade and 13th and 14th Light Armoured Motor Batteries (thirteen armoured cars) was to move with rapidity and boldness and was to act vigorously, throughout the operations, against the Turkish right flank or rear as opportunity offered. He was to try to cut the enemy's telegraphic communications; and he was informed that if the main road was open it might be possible to support him with troops carried in Ford vans.

The remainder of the force would be in reserve.

One flight of aeroplanes was attached to the 11th Cavalry Brigade, another to the artillery commander and the other two flights were to carry out reconnaissance and contact work.

A special group under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel J. McK. Hogg, 2/39th Gahrwalis, had been constituted as a mobile column. It consisted of half a battalion each of the 1/5th Queen's and 2/39th Gahrwalis, two machine gun sections and a detachment 450th Company, R.E. (all to be carried in three hundred Ford vans), the 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery, the 1072nd Field Battery (222nd Brigade) with double-horsed teams and part of a motor ambulance convoy. The last named battery was, however, at first to move forward with Andrew's Group.

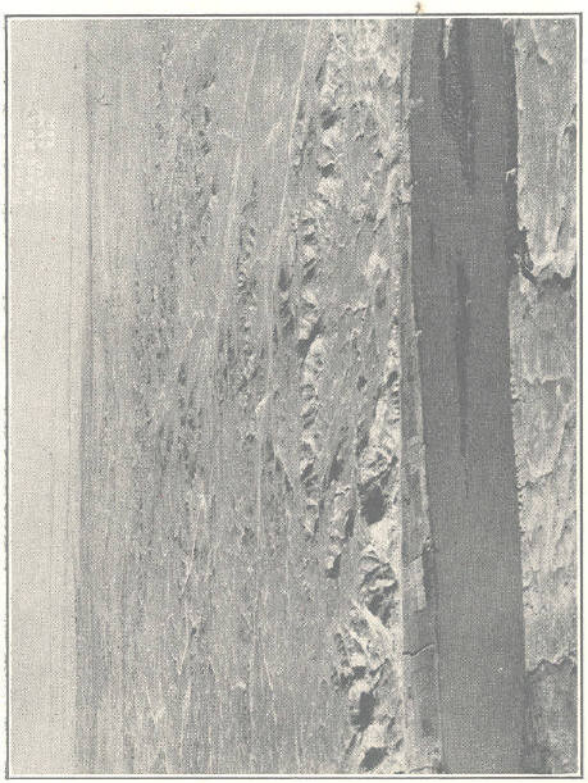
General Brooking pointed out verbally to his commanders

* See Map 38.

† "Andrew's Group" consisted of the 10th Lancers (less two squadrons), 215th Brigade, R.F.A., 450th Company, R.E., 50th Infantry Brigade, 48th Pioneers (less one company), a pack wireless station and No. 108 Combined Field Ambulance.

‡ "Lucas' Group" consisted of the 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (less 1½ batteries), 42nd Infantry Brigade and No. 23 Combined Field Ambulance.

To face page 124.



The Khan Baghdadi battlefield: the Turkish forward position ("P" trenches) area, looking S.S.W.

that the operations would extend over a considerable area, that the various groups, though scattered, were strong and that our force was more mobile than the enemy's. To enable him to use his reserve to the best advantage, it was essential, said General Brooking, that he should receive continual situation reports; and he emphasised the fact that success would depend much on the individual action of group commanders, for which the operations offered full scope.

At Hit the alluvial plain of Mesopotamia gives place to a limestone and clay region, in which the Euphrates runs at a considerably lower level than the surrounding country, which consists for the most part of a barren undulating plateau intersected by steep and rocky ravines. Our information regarding the topography of the country between Sahiliya and Ana was scanty; and topographical reconnaissance had been purposely restricted to avoid arousing the enemy's suspicions.* But, from the information we possessed, the ground over which the operations would be carried out appeared generally practicable for all arms; and it was consequently hoped that the proposed action of the cavalry and armoured cars would not be hindered by difficulties of ground.

General Andrew, starting as ordered, halted just before 1 a.m. on the 26th March at a point on the road about ten miles from Sahiliya. He then sent forward one company from each of three infantry battalions against the enemy's "P" trenches, to occupy them if unopposed or if resistance was faint, but to withdraw if the Turks were present in strength. The three companies, after advancing some distance, were checked about 2 a.m. at close range from the trenches by gun, machine gun and rifle fire.† The position was evidently held in strength and the three companies withdrew. General Andrew then moved his group to the west of the road under cover in the low hills, to avoid the area on which Turkish guns were probably registered and to await daylight.

At 3.15 a.m., General Brooking received the report that the enemy's "P" trenches were strongly held. As this news indicated that the enemy had not retired, General Brooking regarded it as satisfactory. By 4.30 a.m. he had established his headquarters at a point west of the Aleppo road about six miles north-west of Sahiliya, near the only suitable site for the landing of aeroplanes.

* General Brooking considered that the British reconnoitring activity had been mainly responsible for the enemy's retirement from Hit.

† They suffered 43 casualties at this stage. Part of them actually entered the trenches but were driven out again.

When the sun rose at 6 a.m. the general British situation was as follows. Andrew's Group was busy reconnoitring "P" trenches; Lucas' Group was about two miles south-east of General Andrew's headquarters; the 11th Cavalry Brigade (with the armoured cars), which had started at 3.30 a.m. and had turned westward after moving for about six miles along the Aleppo road, was trotting past General Brooking's headquarters to get round the enemy's right; the 395th Siege Battery, Kite Balloon and Anti-aircraft Sections had been ordered to join Lucas' Group; and the remainder of the troops were still at or leaving Sahiliya.

As soon as it was light, a British aeroplane flew over the Turkish position and from it messages were dropped before 7 a.m. on Generals Andrew's and Brooking's headquarters, stating that "P" trenches were held in strength but "Q" and "R" trenches only lightly and that there were no signs of an enemy retirement. By this time a Turkish officer and twelve other ranks, taken prisoner from "P" trenches by General Andrew's leading infantry, had reached General Brooking's headquarters; and it was gathered from them that the 157th and 169th Regiments with 16 guns were in the Khan Baghdadi position and that reinforcements of unknown strength were said to have reached Haditha.

General Brooking issued orders, received by General Andrew at 7.45 a.m., that Andrew's Group, supported by Lucas' Group, was to attack "P" trenches. It was arranged that, as the ground facilitated such a move, Andrew's Group should assault the right flank of the trenches, while Lucas' Group attacked along the Aleppo road and pinned the enemy to his ground. The whole of the artillery, under the orders of the C.R.A. (Brigadier-General F. R. Patch), was to support this attack, which was to be carried out when Generals Andrew and Lucas were both ready.

The Reserve Group, consisting of the Hertfordshire Yeomanry squadron, 451st Company, R.E., 275th Machine Gun Company and 12th Infantry Brigade (now consisting of only the 90th Punjabis and half the 1/5th Queen's), had closed up in rear of Lucas' Group on the Aleppo road by 8 a.m.; and between 8.30 and 9 a.m. Hogg's Group had concentrated near General Brooking's headquarters. The Cavalry Brigade and armoured cars, after moving westward from the Aleppo road for about eight miles, had changed direction to the north-north-west; and at 8.30 a.m. General Cassels despatched a message, received by General Brooking at 9.10 a.m., saying that he

was proceeding in a northerly direction and that, although his contact aeroplane* located the position of the head of his force as being about seven miles west-north-west of Khan Baghdadi, by his own reckoning (unless the map was most inaccurate) it was really about five or six miles west-south-west of that place. He also said that he was detaching a force towards Haditha; that so far it would be quite feasible for the Ford vans to follow the tracks of his armoured cars; and that the ground ahead of him also seemed suitable. Just before 10 a.m., General Brooking sent off an urgent message to General Cassels saying that there appeared every chance of his getting right round the enemy and asking if he advised Hogg's Group being sent to join him. This message reached General Cassels at 11.5 a.m.

About 10 a.m. the movement of General Andrew's troops which threatened the western flank of the "P" trenches caused the Turks therein to begin retiring. News of this reached General Brooking, who ordered an immediate advance, although Lucas' Group was still some distance away. General Andrew had anticipated this order and was already well on the move. By 11.30 a.m. he gained the "P" trenches practically without opposition and took there about one hundred prisoners.

At 9 a.m. General Cassels' right flank guard came under long range rifle fire from the right of "Q" trenches and about twenty minutes later his main body was shelled by enemy guns at long range. This fire had no effect; but before the column proceeded on its way a section of "W" Battery, R.H.A., came into action against the enemy's right and fired about twenty rounds, apparently with effect. At 11.30 a.m., General Brooking heard from General Cassels that he thought it inadvisable to send Hogg's Group to join him, as it would take too long, and he said that his chances of acting against the enemy's rear were good.

At 11.50 a.m. General Andrew reported by telephone to General Brooking that he was hard in pursuit of the retreating enemy, Lucas' Group being about 1½ miles to his right rear. This advance continued till about 1 p.m., when General Andrew's infantry were checked, on a line extending roughly south-westward from the vicinity of Khan Baghdadi, by hostile artillery, machine gun and rifle fire.

* These contact aeroplanes proved of great use in assisting General Cassels to maintain a correct direction.

At 12.30 p.m., the staff captain of the 11th Cavalry Brigade, who had been sent back in a motor by General Cassels at 10.15 a.m. to arrange for the second line transport to follow the brigade, arrived at General Brooking's headquarters. He brought a message from General Cassels saying that the enemy appeared to be reinforcing his right flank from Khan Baghdadi and that he himself was proceeding with the original plan to get behind him.

At 12.25 p.m., General Brooking ordered his reserve group to move forward; at 1.5 p.m. he sent instructions to General Lucas to push on vigorously; and at 1.40 p.m. he directed Hogg's Group to move up the Aleppo road, picking up the 1072nd Battery, and come under General Andrew's orders for vigorous pursuit. The 215th and 222nd Field Artillery Brigades had, meanwhile, started advancing by alternate batteries to afford close support to General Andrew's infantry. But the going was rough and heavy, it took time for our guns to come up, and the enemy's gunfire was severe.* Further time was necessary for registration, and especially for the location of the enemy machine guns.

The Turkish position was a strong one and from their trenches, sited on and near the crests of the cliff-like slopes rising from a deep ravine, they were able to sweep with fire the plateau on the southern side of this ravine. General Andrew was unwilling to commit his infantry to a further advance without adequate and accurate artillery and machine gun support. About 4 p.m. the leading battalion (1/4th Dorsetshire) of Lucas' Group came up on the right of the line, followed in rear by the 2/5th and 2/6th Gurkhas. About the same time the Reserve Group reached "P" trenches and half an hour later received orders from General Brooking to reinforce Lucas' Group. At 4.20 p.m. General Brooking sent instructions to General Andrew to use the Maxim and Lewis guns of Hogg's Group, if they had not been already otherwise committed, to bring enfilade fire on to "R" trenches (where the enemy's main strength appeared to be) from the cliffs to the eastward, under which the Aleppo road ran and to which it afforded an approach from Khan Baghdadi. At 4.45 p.m. General Brooking asked General Andrew to report the situation at once and heard, in reply, at 5.15 p.m. that the whole line was held up by rifle and machine gun fire and that he and General Lucas were going to attack at 5.30 p.m.,† but that they anticipated that it would be costly.

* The 1088th Battery (215th Brigade) especially came under heavy fire, suffering casualties and having one gun put out of action.

† Sunset was about 6.15 p.m.

At 5.15 p.m., also, General Brooking received a report from General Cassels, timed 4.30 p.m., saying that, with his left facing south-east on the Aleppo road, he was engaging the enemy rear and right flank from a point about 6½ miles north-west of Khan Baghdadi; and he asked what the situation of the infantry groups was. General Brooking answered that the infantry were held up by machine gun fire on a general line five hundred yards east of the ravine dividing them from the enemy's "Q" and "R" trenches; that it was evidently the Turkish intention to hold this position so as to enable them to retire during the night; and that he relied on General Cassels to detain them. His own infantry, though very weary, would maintain pressure on the enemy.

The 11th Cavalry Brigade and armoured cars had been obliged to halt for about an hour at 10.45 a.m. to ascertain and reconnoitre practicable routes through a succession of ravines. But the Wadi Hauran was reached at 1.50 p.m. and most of the animals were watered there. The Turkish main force seemed to be engaged heavily with our infantry about Khan Baghdadi and airmen's reports indicated the absence of enemy troops within a distance of ten miles to the northward. Turning eastward and moving as rapidly as the broken nature of the ground permitted, General Cassels' force reached a point about 3 p.m. which was judged to be some two miles from the Aleppo road. Here the Guides Cavalry were detached to the south-eastward with orders to gain contact with and hold the enemy, so as to form a pivot on which the remainder of the force on the northern bank of the Wadi Hauran could wheel and get astride the Aleppo road. This road turned out to be much farther off than had been calculated; but by 5 p.m., the enemy's telegraph line having been cut, General Cassels' troops were taking up a position, facing south-east, along the northern side of the Wadi Hauran with their left astride the road. During the afternoon they had encountered several enemy patrols, evidently detached to keep open the enemy line of retreat, and had come under constant, though ineffective, shell fire and a good deal of long range machine gun and rifle fire.

To revert to the operations of General Brooking's infantry. Their general advanced line ran south-westward from a point west of Khan Baghdadi along high ground, with the enemy's "R" trenches facing them about 2,000 to 2,500 yards to the north-west, "Q" trenches being to their left front. In front line were the 1/4th Dorsetshire (42nd Brigade),

24th Punjabis, 1st Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry and 6th Jats (all 50th Brigade) in this order from the right; and they were to commence their advance on a frontage of nine hundred yards at 5.30 p.m. The 2/5th and 2/6th Gurkhas (42nd Brigade) were to follow the Dorsets in support and the 1/5th Gurkhas were kept by General Lucas as reserve. In the 50th Brigade the 97th Infantry were to support the other three battalions. Three sections 256th Machine Gun Company were disposed to cover the crossing of the deep ravine by overhead fire; Hogg's Group was to co-operate against the left of "R" trenches; and the Reserve Group was to follow Lucas' Group.

When the advance began, our supporting artillery opened its barrage at a slow rate of fire for the first fifteen minutes and then increased to an intense bombardment for fifteen minutes. This fire was accurate and so effective that, under its cover and that of our machine guns, our infantry were able to advance practically without a check and with very few casualties.* Some machine guns in "Q" trenches gave the left of our line a little trouble; but the commander of the 6th Jats detached a company, which soon stormed the ridge on which these machine guns were and captured four of them with a battalion of the Turkish 169th Regiment (12 officers and 250 rifles). The remainder of our infantry encountered little opposition and overran "R" trenches, capturing four guns and many prisoners.

As it grew dark our advanced infantry got somewhat scattered in the broken ground and inter-communication became difficult. At 8.20 p.m., therefore, General Andrew issued orders for the troops to bivouac where they were; and at 11.30 p.m., after visiting units, he issued orders for a further advance at 5 a.m. next morning.

General Brooking with his headquarters had established himself by 5.30 p.m. at a position (within two miles of Khan Baghdadi), from which he could see that the bombardment was effective. But after sunset, the dust and growing darkness with the temporary interruption of telephone communication made it impossible for him to find out accurately what had happened till about 9 p.m. Our own casualties had evidently been light, air reports estimated that we had captured over

* Our guns had gradually got forward into positions from which they could fire at ranges of 1,800 to 2,200 yards, and in front of them farther down the slopes were our machine guns. In addition to the actual effect of this fire, the dust it raised afforded a most efficient screen to our advancing infantry.

1,000 prisoners and that the enemy was seeking escape to the westward and north-westward; and at 10.15 p.m. General Brooking issued orders to the following effect. The 11th Cavalry Brigade was to block completely enemy escape by road and river. Generals Andrew and Lucas and Colonel Hogg were to co-operate with and facilitate the task of the cavalry by immediate, continuous and relentless pressure all night, despite fatigue. General Brooking appreciated fully the efforts already made, but the situation called for further exertion.*

Receiving this order just after midnight, General Andrew at once directed Colonel Hogg, whose group was on the Aleppo road east of "R" trenches, to advance immediately sufficiently far forward to park clear of the road; and started to collect his own group. This took time, and it was about 4 a.m. on the 27th March before the bulk of Andrew's Group started to advance, followed at 6.25 a.m. by Lucas' Group.

In the meantime, General Cassels had established strong points covering the possible enemy lines of retreat along his three miles of front. His dispositions by 9 p.m. were roughly as follows. On the right, south of the Wadi Hauran and at a point about seven miles south-west of its junction with the Euphrates, were the Guides Cavalry (less a squadron detached towards Haditha) with a squadron 23rd Cavalry between them and the Wadi. Thence, on the north side of the Wadi, the 7th Hussars held an extended line up to and astride the Aleppo road. One section "W" Battery, R.H.A., and one section 15th Machine Gun Squadron were in the right centre of the line and another section of each of these units was on the Aleppo road. One squadron 23rd Cavalry was in reserve behind the left of the line; and the remainder of the reserve under General Cassels—one section "W" Battery, 23rd Cavalry (less two squadrons), 15th Machine Gun Squadron (less two sections) No. 5 Field Troop Sappers and Miners, and the thirteen armoured cars—was behind the right centre.

Subsequently, General Cassels sent a detachment with a section of machine guns to the Alus bend of the Euphrates and prolonged his main line towards the river, so as to block as effectively as he could all means of Turkish retreat by land and river. At 10 p.m. he reported his general dispositions to General Brooking, saying that until the situation was clearer he proposed to hold his present line, being prepared

* At 11 p.m. General Brooking also issued orders to the C.R.A. to shell certain defined areas, in which Turks might be, throughout the night.

to move at dawn, either towards Haditha or Khan Baghdadi, according to circumstances or as General Brooking might direct.

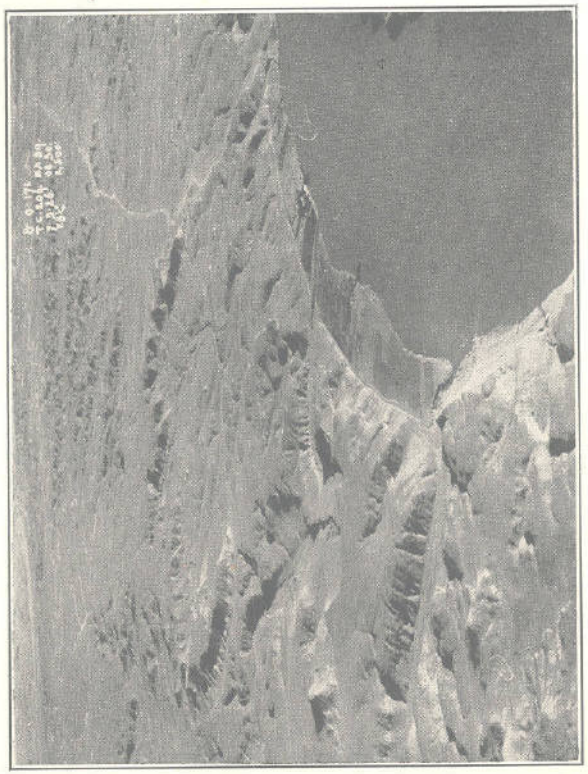
The excellent work during the 26th March of the British Air Force had contributed greatly to the success gained. The assistance given to General Cassels, both by guiding the direction of his force and by furnishing him with constant information of enemy movements and of our infantry operations had been invaluable. In addition to co-operating with the artillery of the main attack, its reconnaissance had afforded much useful information; and it had continuously harassed the enemy with bombs and machine gun fire. During the morning it located Turkish guns firing from barges by the left bank of the Euphrates and five aeroplanes set out to bomb them in the afternoon. The barges, however, were already being towed upstream and although no direct hits were obtained one of them ran into the bank and was sunk.

The anticipated Turkish attempt to break through General Cassels' force materialised just before midnight 26th/27th, the enemy's main effort being directed against the right centre of the British line, i.e., where it was strongest. After about three quarters of an hour's sharp fighting the enemy, beaten back, displayed tokens of surrender*; and two squadrons 23rd Cavalry were sent forward on foot to collect the prisoners, who totalled over 1,000 with several machine guns.

At 5.45 a.m.† on the 27th March, Major Sir T. Thompson (commanding the Light Armoured Motor Brigade), under orders from General Cassels, moved eastward with eleven cars‡ of the 13th and 14th Batteries and, at the Aleppo road crossing of the Wadi Hauran, found a mass of over 2,000 Turkish troops displaying white flags. These were taken prisoner and then, in accordance with orders, six cars of the 13th Battery were sent off along the road towards Haditha to capture any enemy troops that might have slipped through. In the meantime, leaving small parties to guard his prisoners, General Cassels directed the remainder of his brigade to move to the Aleppo road and then along it to concentrate at the Alus bend, before proceeding in pursuit to Ana, which had been indicated by General Brooking as the next operation for the cavalry to carry out.

* There was moonlight.
† Sunrise was about 6 a.m.
‡ Two armoured cars had been detached to escort the second line transport, which had not yet reached General Cassels' force.

To face page 132.



The Khan Baghdadi battlefield: the Turkish rear position ("Q" and "R" trenches) area, looking westward.

At 5.35 a.m., General Brooking telegraphed congratulating General Cassels and directing him to get back Colonel Tennant, commanding the Air Force* ; and at 6 a.m. General Brooking sent a further message to General Cassels saying that a battalion of the 42nd Infantry Brigade was moving to relieve him of his prisoners, that he was then to raid Ana and that Hogg's Group had been ordered to Haditha.

At 6.30 a.m. General Brooking issued his orders for a general pursuit. Hogg's Group, with the double-horsed 1072nd Field Battery and a wireless set carried in Ford vans, was to seize Haditha, where he was to be joined by the Hertfordshire Yeomanry and 10th Lancers' squadrons and from where he was to send back at least two hundred Ford vans to report to the Assistant Adjutant and Quartermaster-General by 5 p.m. ; and the Reserve Group (under Colonel Brodrick), reinforced by a battery, was to march to the Wadi Haqlan (about four miles south of Haditha).

By 7 a.m.—when the total British captures amounted to between 3,000 and 4,000 prisoners, ten guns, many machine guns and much war material—the situation was briefly as follows. Six cars of the 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery, with the remainder of the Light Armoured Motor Brigade (including the 8th Battery from Hogg's Group) preparing to follow them, were well on their way to Haditha, towards which place Hogg's Group was also advancing. The 11th Cavalry Brigade was concentrating about Alus ; Andrew's Group had reached the Wadi Hauran ; Lucas' Group was within four miles of it to the southward ; and the Reserve Group had just started to advance from the vicinity of Khan Baghdadi. Andrew's and Lucas' Group were to clear the battlefield and the 215th Field Artillery Brigade and the 395th Siege Battery were to move back to Sahiliya to ease the supply situation. General Brooking was on his way by motor to see his infantry brigade commanders and General Cassels.

Capturing a number of Turkish transport wagons with their escorts *en route* and also about 100 prisoners after a short action southward of the town, the 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery reached Haditha† without difficulty ; and Hogg's Group, following it, arrived there about 10 a.m. Continuing to advance for some miles beyond Haditha, these

* An aeroplane, piloted by Colonel Tennant, and carrying Major Hobart (Brigade Major, 8th Infantry Brigade) as a passenger, had been shot down on the 25th March near the Khan Baghdadi position ; and both officers had been taken prisoner.

† It was found that the Germans here had burnt their wireless installation.

troops found the road littered with abandoned carts, animals, camp equipment and personal effects of all kinds; and sent back to Haditha groups of Turks, totalling over 300, who as a rule had surrendered without resistance. The demoralisation of the fleeing enemy had been much added to by the bombing and machine gun fire of our aeroplanes, which were also pushing on in the hope of seeing some signs of Colonel Tennant and Major Hobart.

General Brooking caught up General Cassels in the vicinity of Alus about 10 a.m., and gave him the following further instructions. All the troops—11th Cavalry Brigade, Light Armoured Motor Brigade, 1072nd Battery, R.F.A., and part of Hogg's Group to be carried in 100 Ford vans—carrying on the pursuit beyond Haditha, were to be under General Cassels' orders. He was to occupy Ana, try and rescue Colonel Tennant and Major Hobart, destroy or evacuate the wireless installation and stores at Ana and try and find 18,000 gold liras said to be meant for Ajaimi.* His stay at Ana was to be limited.

Having issued orders for the 11th Cavalry Brigade, after rationing and getting rid of all superfluous personnel and impedimenta, to be ready to move from Alus at 1.45 p.m., General Cassels left by motor to catch up Colonel Hogg and the Light Armoured Motor Brigade. General Cassels joined Colonel Hogg beyond Haditha about noon; and gave him orders to form a post at Haditha, to send back 200 Ford vans at once to Khan Baghdadi and with as many men as he could carry in the remaining 100 vans to proceed, together with the Light Armoured Motor Brigade, to Fuhaima. The 11th Cavalry Brigade would arrive at Fuhaima in the evening; and the next morning (28th) the whole force would advance on Ana. General Cassels then proceeded to reconnoitre the route to Ana from an aeroplane and, flying back, rejoined his Cavalry Brigade at Alus at 12.45 p.m.

These arrangements were carried out without a hitch and by nightfall, more Turkish prisoners having been captured in the meantime, the force was bivouacking about Fuhaima. Among the prisoners were Nazim Bey, commanding the Turkish 50th Division, and some of his staff, who had slipped away during the previous night and had been hiding in the hills about Haditha. That evening also the Reserve Group, after a march of about twenty-two miles, went into bivouac at the Wadi Haqlan.

* The report that this sum was in the vicinity was, however, considered doubtful.

The Light Armoured Motor Brigade passed through Ana without opposition at 8.30 a.m., on the 28th March. Hearing of this a quarter of an hour later, General Cassels motored straight there leaving orders for the Cavalry Brigade and Hogg's Group to follow.* By questioning the chief inhabitants, General Cassels gathered that Colonel Tennant and Major Hobart had left Ana for Aleppo on camels on the morning of the 27th, that some Germans and the wireless installation had left on the evening of the 27th, and that the very few Turks and Tartar cavalry† in the town had scattered in all directions on hearing of our approach that morning. General Cassels then gave orders for the despatch of some armoured cars along the Aleppo road with the object of rescuing Colonel Tennant and Major Hobart and of capturing the wireless, the Germans and the influential Arabs accompanying them.

The 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery, which was leading, commanded by Captain Tod, was detailed for this operation. It had already, about five miles above Ana, captured the Turkish commandant of Ana and about twenty other officers‡; and it now proceeded to advance again, with orders to push on, if necessary and possible, for one hundred miles to carry out its task. After going some distance, the battery encountered a party of about 150 Turks, whom it captured after some slight resistance; and from one of the captured officers Captain Tod gathered that Colonel Tennant and Major Hobart had been hurried forward from there on camels about two hours previously. Captain Tod at once pushed on again, succeeded in overtaking the two British officers and, by his skilful handling of his cars, in rescuing them, at a point about thirty-two miles west of Ana.§ The battery also captured the Ana wireless installation; and, after proceeding about fifty miles beyond Ana, returned to that town.

At Ana, as at Haditha, large quantities of war material and large numbers of *shakturs* were found; but as only a small part of these stores could be evacuated in the available transport, the greater part was ordered to be destroyed.

During the 28th March the Reserve Group reached Haditha. On the 29th the 13th Light Armoured Motor Battery went

* They reached Ana between 10 and 11 a.m.

† Mainly deserters from the Russian army.

‡ In the war diary of the battery this commandant is said, evidently by mistake, to have been the commander of the 50th Division, who had really already surrendered at Haditha the previous afternoon.

§ Details of this stirring rescue are given by Colonel Tennant in his book "In the Clouds above Baghdad." For his action Captain Tod was awarded an immediate D.S.O.

seventy-three miles beyond Ana in an unsuccessful search for the gold liras; and all General Brooking's troops not actually required in the forward areas were moved back to Hit in order to lessen the demands for supplies.

The stores at Ana were blown up on the 30th March and General Cassels' troops withdrew to Fuhaima, from which a gradual withdrawal continued for the next few days. By the 6th April,* the British advanced dispositions on the Euphrates consisted of a brigade group at Haditha, a small post at Alus and the headquarters of the 15th Division with another brigade group at Khan Baghdadi.

The striking success achieved by General Brooking was all the more notable in that their recent experience at Ramadi must have imbued the Turks with the necessity for special vigilance. Success was due, in the first place, to General Brooking's complete preparatory arrangements, to his skilful dispositions and to his immediate and resolute pursuit; while in the execution of his plans, the gallantry, dash and endurance of his officers and men, the fine leadership of General Cassels, the excellent co-operation by aeroplanes and the work of the armoured cars and mechanical transport all contributed to the decisive results. Although the early mornings had been cool and pleasant, it had been very hot daily from about 11 a.m. to 5 p.m.; and this and the dust had proved very trying, though mitigated to some extent by the excellent arrangements for the supply of drinking water by the motor vans.

During the operations, in which practically the whole of the Turkish 50th Division was accounted for, the total British casualties only amounted to 159, including 36 killed or missing. We buried 40 Turkish dead, others being buried by the Turks, and we captured 5,254 prisoners, including 18 Germans. In addition we took 12 guns, 47 machine guns and large quantities of arms, ammunition and other war material.

These operations revealed how much the road down the Euphrates above Khan Baghdadi had been improved recently. With only one exception, all the crossings over the numerous ravines had either been bridged† or made passable for motor traffic; and in many places the road had been regraded. On

* Between the 31st March and 3rd April there was much rain, which caused high floods in all the ravines and interfered considerably with movement.

† For instance at the Wadi Haqlan two new masonry bridges, one of eleven arches and the other of three, had been made.

the Euphrates itself Germans had organised a flotilla of launches and barges carrying guns, of which we had sunk or captured four launches and two barges.

There had, in the meantime, been trouble lower down the Euphrates. On the 19th March the British political officer at Najaf (Captain W. M. Marshall) was murdered in that city. Captain Marshall, in common with the majority of our young military-political officers, was distinctly popular among the local inhabitants, and as General Marshall said in his Despatch (1st October, 1918) the murder was due to enemy agency. General Marshall's description of the subsequent events is worth quoting as it illustrates well some of the difficulties and dangers of our occupation of the country behind our fighting fronts.

> ". . . among the evilly disposed inhabitants of Najaf a conspiracy, fostered by German gold,* had been organised . . . . The roots of this conspiracy were in Najaf and its branches extended both up and down the Euphrates valley. To put down this conspiracy, therefore, and to mete out stern justice to those actually concerned in the murder was from every point of view an urgent necessity. It was not desired to treat the city, which contains one of the most holy shrines of the Shiahs and is surrounded by a very high wall, in an ordinary way, i.e., by shelling or by direct assault. A strict blockade was, therefore, ordered . . . . and gradually the blockade line closed in and occupied the bastions of the walls as well as holding the entrance gates. Every consideration was shown to the holy *Ulema* and to the theological students (most of whom were Persian subjects) and had it been necessary to proceed to extremities all these would have been given an asylum . . . . Eventually by the 30th April† the proscribed persons had been handed over and the blockade was raised . . . . The firmness with which the situation was handled, the fairness with which the law-abiding inhabitants were treated and the scrupulous care which was taken to avoid damage to holy persons and places, created a most favourable impression on all the surrounding tribes and contributed in no small degree to the subsequent establishment of friendly relations . . . ."

* Full evidence to this effect was found in German documents captured on the Euphrates.

† Despatch says 13th, a clerical error.

In the middle of March confirmation was obtained of previous reports that part, or all, of the Turkish 6th Division had moved back from the Kirkuk to the Mosul area; but beyond this, the operations already mentioned and some minor punitive measures, there was little incident of military importance in Mesopotamia during March.

On the 14th March, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff telegraphed to the Commander-in-Chief in India and to Generals Allenby and Marshall a summary of his appreciation of the situation in the Near East resulting from the Russian and Rumanian collapses. Broadly speaking, he said, Germany had aimed at world domination by obtaining facilities for naval expansion to contest British supremacy and by gaining complete control of Central Europe and the Near East with a view to expansion eastwards. But the course of the war had modified her original methods of attainment. She was now placing reliance on her unlimited submarine warfare; and—her plans for gaining control of the Balkans, Egypt and the Persian Gulf having been foiled—she hoped to take advantage of the state of Russia to gain a new route to the East by the Black Sea, Caucasus and Caspian.

Natural difficulties of communication and the spread of Bolshevism threatened to cut us off from Armenia and even the Caspian; and Germany would be quick to take advantage of the situation. The Russians were evacuating Batum and that port was open to enemy parties. Although it was unlikely that Germany would be able, in the near future, to place any considerable bodies of troops in this area, we must expect a highly organised propaganda, backed by small bodies of German troops who would neglect no means of undermining British power in the East.

We must answer, said the Chief of the Imperial General Staff, by establishing a barrier to German progress eastwards. If Germany were left free to turn our flank by the north, our efforts based on Mesopotamia and India might be ineffectual. We should, therefore;

(*a*) arrange immediately for Japanese intervention in Siberia;

(*b*) maintain our position in Mesopotamia and continue our pressure in Palestine;

(*c*) extend from Baghdad to the Caspian and build up local organisations on a foundation of military strength, working forward into the Caucasus in order to win over Armenia and make our influence predominate in the eastern ports of the Black Sea; and

(*d*) make certain of anticipating German propaganda in Turkestan by the despatch of a military mission to that country from India.

On the 28th March, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff informed the Commander-in-Chief in India and General Marshall that the situation in France necessitated a change of policy in Palestine, where the future role was to be one of active defence and whence two British divisions were to be transferred to France. There was no intention of making further reductions in Mesopotamia or in Palestine where, he hoped, as Indian battalions arrived and the force there was reorganised, to form a general reserve for the East. In the meantime it appeared that General Marshall's force was quite strong enough to secure the positions in Mesopotamia and, directly he could get over the passes, on the Persian frontier.

In India, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff's appreciation of the 14th March confirmed local opinion that a situation might develop in the future which Indian military resources would be unable to meet. Consequently, the proposal to form a reserve for the East in Palestine was welcome, more especially as there were indications that the Amir of Afghanistan was taking an increasing interest—though his actual intentions were not clear—in the developments across his northern frontiers and in the eastward movement of the Turks.

Details of the distribution of the British forces in Mesopotamia at the end of March, 1918, are given in Appendix XLV. The following had been the main changes in organisation since the beginning of the year.

No. 72 Squadron, R.F.C., had reached the country from England at the beginning of March.

The 18th Division, now practically complete, had taken the place, in the Ist Corps, of the 3rd Division, which was concentrating at Basra for transfer to Palestine.

The "Nasiriya Front" had been abolished, Nasiriya and the Lower Euphrates up to Shinafiya having been taken over by the Euphrates Line of Communication Defences. Four battalions from Nasiriya, formed into the 56th Infantry Brigade, were moving into the Hilla area to relieve the 53rd Brigade of the 18th Division.

The "Baghdad Garrison" had become the "Advanced Line of Communication Defences," still directly under General Headquarters; and its sphere had been extended to comprise the defence of railways radiating forward, railheads inclusive.

Each infantry brigade now included a light trench mortar battery and a small arms ammunition section as integral parts of the brigade.

The heavy artillery had again been reorganised. The Ist and IIIrd Corps now each contained two heavy artillery groups, each of a 60-pounder and two 6-inch howitzer batteries; and two siege batteries of 6-inch howitzers formed part of "Army Troops."

Nine mechanical transport companies had arrived in Mesopotamia in January and February; and the personnel of the mechanical transport companies was being diluted with Indians.

At the end of April, 1917, the naval forces in the country had been merged in the Persian Gulf Division and Rear-Admiral D. St. A. Wake had taken over command in Mesopotamia from Captain Nunn. In January, 1918, eight of the "Fly" class gunboats were handed over to the army, their naval personnel being withdrawn to help cope with the submarine peril in Europe. These eight vessels were transferred to the Inland Water Transport Service for use as river steamers, their guns being used to form anti-aircraft sections "M," "N," "O," "P" and "R."

Owing to the difficulties of navigation of the Tigris above Baghdad, none of the naval gunboats had at the beginning of 1918 gone further upstream than the mouth of the Adhaim. The three Turkish steamers *Baghdad*, *Hamidiya* and *Burhanieh* had retired above this, but no charts of this part of the river were available and there were known to be many shallows, rapids and hidden rocks. Between January and March, 1918, the *Caddisfly*, steaming up at times when the river was swollen by winter rains, managed to get up to Tikrit and charted the river with some accuracy between that place and Samarra.* In March, owing to the continued call for naval personnel to deal with the "U" boats, the remaining eight gunboats were also transferred to the army. From four of them the guns were withdrawn and sent to England, the ships themselves becoming ordinary river steamers. The other four, however, remained as fighting ships, being commissioned as such under military control; officers and machine gunners being found by the Inland Water Transport Service and gun crews by the Royal Artillery.

* For details of this trip, see "The Tigris above Baghdad," by Lieutenant-Commander A. S. Elwell-Sutton, R.N., in the "Geographical Journal" of July, 1922.

At the end of March the only naval vessels on the Mesopotamia rivers were the four gunboats of the "Insect" class.

On the 6th February, a special Directorate of Irrigation came into being, to deal with the development, maintenance and control of irrigation, as well as the construction and upkeep of river embankments, etc.

During the summer and autumn of 1917 the question of the further development of railway and water communications in Mesopotamia, to meet the requirements of a probable enemy offensive, had been under consideration; and at the beginning of October the Chief of the Imperial General Staff had intimated that Major-General H. F. E. Freeland would be sent out as an expert adviser regarding requirements and possibilities. On the 21st January, 1918, General Freeland, in his report, advocated—to meet the requirements of a force of the size forecasted in his instructions—the construction of a railway from Basra up the Euphrates via Nasiriya to Baghdad. General Marshall concurred in this opinion, but various objections to it were put forward by the Commander-in-Chief in India. The whole question of the construction of a through railway from Basra to Baghdad, either by the Euphrates or Tigris routes, was, however, deferred, as the Chief of the Imperial General Staff said that there appeared no likelihood of the British force in the Baghdad area being increased beyond one cavalry and eight infantry divisions, for which the communications, existing or under construction, already sufficed.

At the end of March, 1918, the following railways were in existence:—

Basra–Nasiriya (metre gauge).
Basra–Amara (metre gauge).
Kut–Baghdad (metre gauge).
Baghdad–Baquba (metre-gauge).
Baquba–Jabal Hamrin (2 ft. 6 in. gauge, under conversion to metre gauge).
Baghdad–Samarra (standard gauge).
Baghdad–Dhibban (standard gauge).
Sumaika–Sadiya (2 ft. 6 in. gauge).
Baghdad–Mufraz (Decauville).

In addition a survey was being made for a metre gauge extension from the Jabal Hamrin to Qizil Ribat; and a standard gauge line from Baghdad to Hilla was under construction.

CHAPTER XLI.

APRIL AND MAY, 1918: OPERATIONS IN KURDISTAN AND ARRANGEMENTS TO COUNTER THE TURCO-GERMAN THREAT BEYOND OUR NORTHERN FLANK.

(MAPS 39, 40 AND 41).

HEAVY rainstorms and gales prevailed throughout April and these did much damage and caused considerable interruption to all our communications. As far as Mesopotamia proper was concerned this was of no great military consequence as we had no desire to undertake any extensive operations there, while the Turks were incapable of doing so.* But the bad weather added greatly to our difficulties in coping with the threat caused by the Turco-German movements towards the Caucasus and Persia. For it stopped the movement of even small parties along the road to Hamadan, where, in addition to the natural difficulties and bad condition of the route, the distances were considerable.

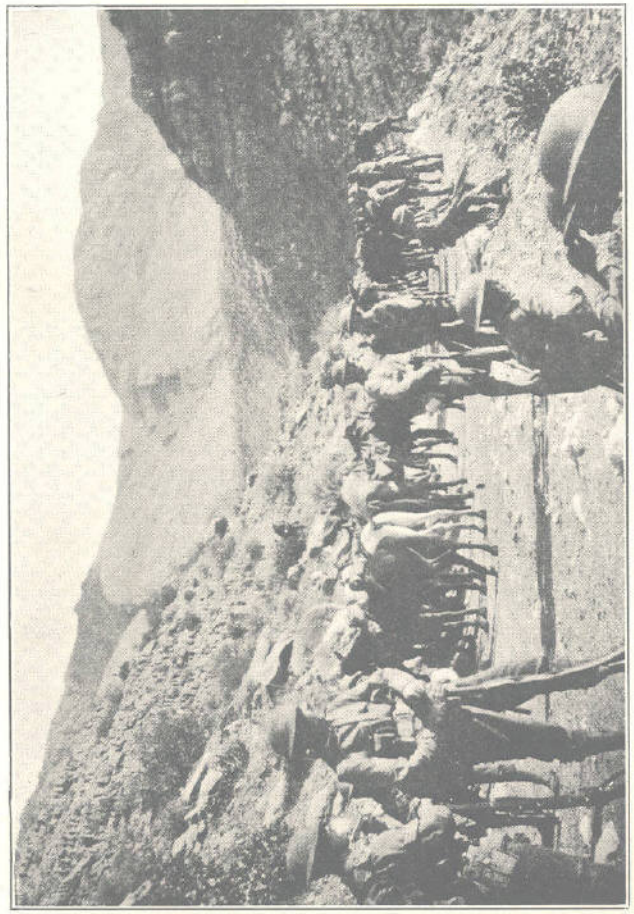
On the 1st April the War Office issued instructions that H.M. Government had decided, for political reasons, that General Sykes' troops in South Persia should not advance to Isfahan, at any rate for the time being, and that General Dunsterville was to take any opportunity of proceeding, with even a few officers, to Tiflis.

By this time it seemed likely that the Bolsheviks in the Caucasus, who were alarmed at the attitude displayed by the Georgians towards the Germans and by the Tartars and other Mahomedans towards the Turks and who were consequently beginning to co-operate with the Armenians to resist a Turco-German occupation, might be less inclined to object to our intervention. It was doubtful, however, if this would not be too late, as enemy agents and released prisoners of war had obtained a good start, Turkish troops were entering the country and there seemed little hope of reconciling the acute differences among the local inhabitants.

One factor in our favour was that the Jangalis had quarrelled with and been driven out of Ardebil and Astara by the Shah Sawan tribe, who inhabited the area between Tabriz and Ardebil. Elsewhere in Persia the situation still gave cause

* For both combatants, Syria was by this time the decisive theatre of operations.

To face page 142.



On the Pai Taq Pass.

for anxiety. In March, H.M. Government had sent a note asking the Persian Government for their co-operation in maintaining the neutrality of their country—the recognition of whose complete independence H.M. Government re-affirmed—offering them financial assistance and requesting that the South Persia Rifles should be acknowledged as the Persian force it was.* At the beginning of April, actuated apparently by the success of the recent German offensive in France, the Persian Government replied rejecting all the proposals made, save that of financial assistance, and denouncing the South Persia Rifles as a foreign force. At the same time they published both notes. In North Persia the harmful results were mitigated to a great extent by the favourable impression which the conduct of our officers and men and our famine relief measures had made on the general public; but in South Persia General Sykes and his officers at once began to encounter growing opposition, which culminated in May in the investment of the force in Shiraz by tribes who declared that they were acting under the orders of the Persian Government.

The security of the Qasr-i-Shirin–Hamadan road had become an all-important question. For some time past Kifri had been a centre for German and Turkish intrigues among the tribes inhabiting the Persian border and areas adjoining this road. Consequently General Marshall came to the conclusion that it would be advisable to drive the Turks out of the Tuz Khurmatli–Kifri–Qara Tepe area and to hold the two former places with his own troops. On the 2nd April he started the discussion of plans for this operation with General Egerton, commanding the IIIrd Corps.

During April, General Dunsterville was occupied in maintaining friendly relations with the local inhabitants—including famine relief work—in the collection of intelligence, in the purchase of local supplies, and in making such other arrangements as were possible to safeguard his line of communications and to hinder enemy penetration into Persia. Agreements were come to between Colonel Kennion, British Consul at Kermanshah, and the local tribes to guard the road from Qasr-i-Shirin to Asadabad, while General Dunsterville began to raise levies at Hamadan to secure the remaining portion. General Dunsterville also made plans for organising

* With the change of Government in Persia some months previously there had also been a change of attitude towards this force.

irregular forces, under British leaders, from the Kurds and other warlike tribes inhabiting the areas along the probable Turkish lines of advance. The bad weather hindered the despatch of reinforcements from Mesopotamia, but during the month General Dunsterville was joined at Hamadan by a total of 35 British officers and 40 British other ranks for duty with his Mission, by one squadron 14th Hussars and three armoured cars of the 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery.

As the month passed, the enemy's intentions became clearer. It was learnt that in March a military mission under Nuri Pasha (brother of Enver) had left Turkey for the Caucasus to organise there, with German support, a force of local Mahomedans* to fight the Armenians and Bolsheviks and gradually to occupy Persian Azerbaijan. This latter movement was ostensibly to cover the enemy operations in the Caucasus, but was actually intended as a first step towards penetration into Persia. On the 15th April the Turks occupied Batum, whence at this time their line ran roughly south-westward via Ardahan and east of Sarikamish to a point near Lake Van. On this front, where their force was estimated at about six divisions with a total strength of some 25,000 combatants, the only opposition to their advance was from the Armenians who were unlikely to be able to withstand them for long. Later in the month the Turks captured Kars, and small bodies of their troops were reported as having entered Persian Azerbaijan in a movement evidently converging on Tabriz from the north-west, west and south-west. A Turkish division was said to be advancing against Urmia from the northward, in co-operation with a force of some 2,500 troops detached from the Turkish Sixth Army in Mesopotamia via Ruwandiz; and in this area a body of Assyrians and other Christians† was said to be offering a stubborn resistance to the Turkish advance. In their advance on Persian Azerbaijan via Urmia, the Turks were trying to gain the co-operation of the Kurds and other warlike tribes in this area, i.e., the same elements which General Dunsterville was reckoning on to oppose the Turkish advance.

The situation in Trans-Caucasia was chaotic. The Federal Government, which still kept nominal control, declared the

* This was the so-called "Islam Army," of which reports began to reach us in May.

† The generic term of 'Jelus,' applying to the various Christian tribes operating in this area, was used in the reports of the period; and this nomenclature will be followed in the ensuing narrative.

independence of the Republic on the 22nd April and tried to re-open negotiations with Turkey, but Turkish troops continued to advance eastward. It was clear that the Georgians meant to come to a separate agreement with Germany, that the Mahomedans, resenting our support of the Armenians and largely under enemy influence, were strongly anti-British, and that our only chance of effective intervention lay in an arrangement with the Armenians and Bolsheviks. Having regard to our attitude towards the loyal elements in Russia, an agreement with the Bolsheviks would not be easy. But the way seemed clearer when, in the middle of April, the Bolsheviks requested British assistance in reorganising the Russian Black Sea fleet; a request which was due apparently to the virtual annexation of the Ukraine by Germany and a German advance towards the Crimea. On the 1st May the Germans occupied Sevastopol and seized part of the Russian Black Sea fleet. Besides giving Germany control over the greater part of the Black Sea littoral, this movement would open to her the main railway from European Russia to Baku along the north of the Caucasus range, where loyal Russian elements were still holding out with French support against both Bolshevism and Germany. The whole situation was thus extraordinarily complicated.

By German influence, however, Turkey was brought to accept the policy of concluding peace with Georgia and Armenia, and German and Turkish delegates arrived at Batum on the 6th May to conduct the negotiations.

The enemy dispositions in Mesopotamia during April appeared to be little changed. On the Euphrates, where we had effectually stopped, for the time being, any idea of an enemy offensive by the destruction of his advanced depots of ammunition and stores, small Turkish detachments re-occupied Ana and Haditha towards the end of April, but there were no other signs of coming activity. The XVIII Corps on the Tigris still held positions at and above Fat-ha; and the troops of the XIII Corps, whose headquarters were at Kirkuk, were widely scattered to the east and south-east of Mosul, being believed to be generally disposed as follows.* The headquarters of the 6th Division was located at Erbil and during the month part of it (apparently including part or all of the 16th and 22nd Regiments) was believed to have moved from Mosul to Ruwandiz; while the 18th Regiment, with three or four

* See Map 39.

frontier battalions, was at Sulaimaniya and near the Persian frontier about Saqqiz,* Bane, Penjwin and Halebja. Of the 2nd Division, whose headquarters with a battalion and eight guns were at or near Tuz Khurmatli, a battalion was believed to be at Tauq, another battalion with two guns at Abu Gharaib, a cavalry squadron, a battalion and the divisional assault company at Kifri, and a cavalry squadron, four battalions and eleven guns in the neighbourhood of Qara Tepe. There were no indications of any reinforcements being sent to Mesopotamia and it was unlikely that the Turks would divert any from Syria. Reliable information had been received that the Turkish railhead was still west of Nisibin and that work had ceased on railway extension owing to lack of material. The Turks were also known to be suffering from raids on their lines of communication by Arabs and Yezidis; and there was confirmation from several sources that their men were badly fed, short of clothing, on bad terms with the Germans and heartily sick of the war.† Moreover, deserters were still coming in to us regularly, the total number during April being about two hundred.

General Egerton, who was placed in command of the coming operations in the Tuz Khurmatli–Qara Tepe area, issued his orders on the 12th April, in conformity with the plan decided on between General Marshall and himself. This plan, while simulating a converging attack upon Qara Tepe and Kifri, really aimed at striking at Abu Gharaib and Tuz Khurmatli so as to cut off and destroy any force to the east and south-east of those places.

Four columns—termed A, B (subdivided into B.1 and B.2), C and D§—were organised for the purpose. Bridging material

* About seventy miles north-east of Sulaimaniya.

† In a letter written by a German officer in Mesopotamia in February 1918 and captured by us on the Western Front, the condition of the Turkish soldiery was described as so bad that the writer considered that if we advanced we could take Mosul without difficulty.

§ COLUMN A (under General Holland-Pryor, 6th Cavalry Brigade).

6th Cavalry Brigade { 21st and 22nd Cavalry, 15th Machine Gun Squadron (less one section), No. 2 Field Troop Sappers and Miners, and administrative units;

13th Hussars
7th Cavalry Brigade Field Troop, R.E. } from 7th Cavalry Brigade.

B/66th and one section 61st Batteries, R.F.A., double-horsed; 'M' Anti-aircraft Section; a special raft unit from 11th Cavalry Brigade; Nos. 8 and 13 Light Armoured Motor Batteries; Infantry Lewis gun detachment in fifty Ford vans (150 rifles and 3 Lewis guns); and administrative units.

was to be carried with each column; and, as they would be operating for considerable distances from railhead over a wide and difficult area, elaborate arrangements for their supply were made, necessitating the use of some 1,200 mechanical transport vans for Columns A, B and C and of a further 100 vans for Column D. Six aeroplanes each were allotted to Columns A and B, three each to Columns C and D, and a further two flights for such general assistance as might be necessary.

The British preliminary movements were somewhat delayed by heavy rain, but by the 24th April the columns had concentrated as follows:—Column C at Mirjana on the Diyala, Columns A and B near Delli Abbas and between that place and the Jabal Hamrin, and Column D at Satha on the Adhaim. Great care had been taken to maintain secrecy and the Turks appeared to be in ignorance of the impending attack.

The strength of the Turkish 2nd Division units, whose general dispositions have already been given, in the Tuz Khurmatli–Abu Gharaib–Qara Tepe–Kifri area was estimated at 100 sabres, 2,900 rifles and 23 guns, their nearest reinforcement—a battalion of about 350 rifles—being at Tauq, twenty miles north-west of Tuz Khurmatli.

The movements of the various British columns from the 24th to the 27th April were to be as follows. Column A,

COLUMN B. (under General Cayley, 13th Division).

B.1.

12th Cavalry (less three squadrons); B/55th and one section 60th Battery, R.F.A.: one section 26th Mountain Battery; No. 92 Anti-aircraft section; one section 71st Company, R.E.; 38th Infantry Brigade (less 6th South Lancashire and one section machine gun company); 9th Royal Warwickshire, from 39th Brigade; half company 8th Welch Pioneers; 13th Divisional Cyclist Company; one section 273rd Machine Gun Company; and administrative units.

B.2.

Advanced Headquarters 13th Division; one squadron 12th Cavalry; 55th Brigade, R.F.A. (less one battery and one section); 384th Siege Battery, horse-drawn; 26th Mountain Battery (less two sections); 40th Infantry Brigade; 7th Gloucestershire from 39th Brigade; 273rd Machine Gun Company (less one section); one section each 71st and 88th Companies, R.E.; half company 8th Welch Pioneers; and administrative units.

COLUMN C. (under General Maclachlan, 37th Infantry Brigade).

Headquarters 37th Infantry Brigade, with the 2nd Norfolk, 82nd Punjabis and half No. 187 Machine Gun Company; one squadron 14th Hussars; headquarters 13th Brigade, R.F.A., with 44th and C/69th Batteries; 2/104th Heavy Battery, R.G.A.; one section No. 15 Light Armoured Motor Battery; 15th Company, Sappers and Miners; and administrative units.

COLUMN D. (under General Norton, 7th Cavalry Brigade).

14th Lancers; "V" Battery, R.H.A.; one section No. 14 Light Armoured Motor Battery; and administrative units.

advancing northward via Ain Laila was, on the 27th, to surprise and destroy the Turkish force at Tuz Khurmatli and Yanija Buyuk. Column C, which was not to advance from the Diyala till the 26th, was to close on Qara Tepe on the 27th and hold the enemy to his position there, while Column B.2, having advanced via Narin Köpri, was to be disposed so as to prevent the enemy withdrawing to the north-west from Qara Tepe. On the left, Column D was to demonstrate against Abu Gharaib so as to induce the Turkish force there to occupy its positions on the Jabal Hamrin facing south and thus enable Column B.1 to surprise and destroy it by an advance from Umr Maidan early on the 27th.

By evening of the 26th April General Egerton's columns had reached the following positions :—

General Egerton's headquarters—Ain Laila,
Column C—Sadda,
Column B.2—Narin Köpri,*
Column B.1—Umr Maidan (accompanied by a detachment under Colonel Crocker, 8th Cheshire, from B.2.),
Column A.—Three to six miles north of Umr Maidan,*
Column D.—In contact with the enemy south of Abu Gharaib.

On the morning of the 26th an air report indicated some enemy withdrawal towards Kifri from Qara Tepe. But later reports showed no signs of any general Turkish retrograde movement, and Column A only encountered small enemy patrols during the day.

During the night of the 26th/27th, the different columns, experiencing difficulty owing to the squally and rainy weather, advanced in the following directions—Column C on Qara Tepe, Column B.2 on Umr Maidan, Colonel Crocker's detachment on Abu Aliq, Column A on Tuz Khurmatli and Column B.1 towards Abu Gharaib. The move of Colonel Crocker's detachment was intended to head off any enemy withdrawal to the north-westward from Qara Tepe; and Column B.1 was to attack, in co-operation with Column D, the Abu Gharaib detachment at 6 a.m. on the 27th. But during the night the Turks withdrew rapidly from Qara Tepe towards Kifri and from Abu Gharaib towards Tuz Khurmatli; and on the morning

* Column B.2. constructed a bridge across the Narin at Narin Köpri and Column A constructed a bridge across the Lesser Naft at a point, about three miles north of Umr Maidan, whence a track led north-eastward to Kulawand and Tuz Khurmatli.

of the 27th April, our troops occupied Qara Tepe, Abu Aliq and Abu Gharaib without opposition. Column B.2 reached a point about four miles north-west of Umr Maidan; and Column A, having experienced difficulty in traversing the waterlogged area and in crossing a series of ravines, arrived at a point about ten miles south of Kulawand by daybreak.*

A great part of the country over which these operations were being carried out was a fertile undulating plateau lying about a thousand feet above sea level and intersected by only a few low ridges (averaging two to three hundred feet in height) until it merged into the hills and mountains to the northward. It was well watered by streams, flowing in some places through deep ravines and in others through ground which quickly became swampy and difficult after rain. At this period, much of the area was covered with long stretches of clover, wild oats and barley and with magnificent crops of corn, not quite ripe; while the vivid green of the landscape was besprinkled with patches of white daisies, scarlet poppies and other flowers recalling an English June. For officers and men, the change from the Mesopotamian plain was very pleasant, enhanced as it was by the coolness of a late season; and the animals revelled in the splendid grazing. It was clear that the loss of this fertile district, just before the harvest, would be very serious for the badly fed enemy.

After a short halt at dawn on the 27th April, Column A continued its northward advance (covered by a wide screen of the 13th Hussars to its front and by a squadron 22nd Cavalry pushed out on its right to cut the telegraph line along the Kifri–Tuz Khurmatli road) till, about 8.15 a.m., when, about five miles south of Kulawand, it came under hostile shell-fire from the north-west and halted. Reconnaissance in that direction disclosed about fifty Turkish infantry with one gun, evidently the rear guard of the Abu Gharaib detachment; and about the same time an air report was received which stated that the enemy, some 600 strong, was holding a position covering Kulawand.†

General Holland-Pryor directed the 13th Hussars, supported on their right by the 21st Cavalry, to advance straight on this position, the 22nd Cavalry with the artillery and machine guns to follow in support on the left rear of the Hussars, and the light armoured motor batteries with the Lewis gun detachment

* Sunrise was about 5.20 a.m.

† See Map 40.

in Ford vans to work round the enemy's right. As soon as the Hussars' advance had compelled the enemy to disclose his position, the cavalry was to take ground to its left and attack the enemy on his right rear.

It was found impossible, however, to ascertain the enemy's dispositions by reconnaissance. The deep ravine and old water courses cleverly converted into trenches, which composed a position made over a year previously by German engineers, were so overgrown with high grass that they were invisible from any distance; and our airmen were unable to see if they were guarded by wire, an almost fatal obstacle to a mounted attack. Moreover, immediately to the south-west of the position a large swamp, in which cavalry horses sunk nearly up to their hocks, prevented the outflanking advance of the armoured cars and the Lewis gun detachment.

According to reports from our airmen the trenches appeared to be unoccupied. But this proved to be incorrect, as a demonstration by the 13th Hussars and 21st Cavalry was abruptly checked by rifle fire, which disclosed the enemy's position at about 11.30 a.m. General Holland-Pryor then decided to work round to the Turkish right rear and attack from that direction. Meanwhile, however, enemy troops showed signs of moving forward from Tuz Khurmatli; and a squadron 13th Hussars was detached to hold them off. The remainder of the 13th Hussars and the 21st Cavalry were withdrawn from the front and pushed round with the 22nd Cavalry to the north-westward, skirting the marsh; and the guns, machine gun squadron and Lewis gun detachment took up positions to the south and south-south-west of Kulawand. By about 12.30 p.m. the cavalry regiments were in a concave line facing roughly north-east, the 22nd Cavalry on the right facing Kulawand village, the 21st Cavalry in the centre and the 13th Hussars on the left; and the attack started. Under the effective cover of a creeping barrage put down by our artillery and of our machine gun fire and assisted by the bombs and fire from our aeroplanes flying low, the cavalry moved forward at a walk and trot over about two miles of very heavy country. They finally broke into a gallop when five hundred yards from the enemy.

Many of the Turkish infantry left their trenches to meet this attack and ran out to hold a dry watercourse, whence they opened a rapid but badly directed fire and where they were ridden over by our cavalry, who did considerable execution

with their swords.* The result was an immediate and decisive success for the British. A great many of the Turks escaped into the hills to the north, as the ground in that direction was very broken and intersected by small watercourses. But a considerable number were accounted for, 150 to 200 being killed (including two battalion commanders) and 565 taken prisoner. A mountain gun and considerable booty were also taken. Most, if not all, of the prisoners belonged to the 5th Regiment, which—located previously to the northward of Qara Tepe—was retiring on Tuz Khurmatli.

Immediately after the position had been captured, the armoured cars and Lewis gun detachment were sent along the road towards Kifri, where they captured a few prisoners. General Holland-Pryor, who had received orders to take Tuz Khurmatli after Kulawand, reconnoitred towards that place; but his advanced troops came under artillery fire as they arrived within range and it was seen that the hills were strongly held by Turkish infantry. It was obviously impossible for Column A to cross the ford close to Tuz; it was then 4 p.m., and the column had been operating and marching since midnight. To make the long detour necessary to cross by a lower ford seemed unlikely to further the general plan of operations; as it might have led to the Turks slipping away during the night or, if they were in force, to a check or reverse which would bring in the local Arabs and Kurds against us. General Holland-Pryor consequently pretended to withdraw his force as the best means of inducing the Turks to remain in their positions at Tuz. But he actually made a counter-march; and his column bivouacked that night four miles to the south of Kulawand, its casualties for the day having totalled only 14 men and 36 horses.

In the meantime, Column C had pushed on towards Kifri, under orders from General Egerton, bivouacking for the night at Chaman Köpri. In the afternoon General Egerton issued orders placing Column A and both portions of Column B under General Cayley's orders for operations against the enemy about Tuz Khurmatli. Column C was to occupy Kifri as early as possible and Column D, transferring its armoured cars to Column B.1, was to remain at Abu Gharaib.

Kifri was occupied by Column C early on the 28th April without opposition. Seventy sick Turks were captured

* It is related that an Indian officer of the 21st Cavalry charged a Turkish officer, who was bombing our men, and took his head clean off with one stroke (cut three on the right).

there and the coal mines were found to have been flooded by the enemy, but were otherwise undamaged. During the night of the 27th/28th, Column B.2 closed up to a point ten miles south of Kulawand.*

Preceded by two strong detachments, sent out before dawn to reconnoitre Tuz Khurmatli and the Khasradala ford on the Aq Su respectively, Column A started to advance north-westward at 6.30 a.m. on the 28th April. At 10 a.m. General Holland-Pryor established his headquarters four miles west of Kulawand where he was joined, first by General Cayley and then by General Egerton. The detachment sent to reconnoitre Tuz Khurmatli, consisting of two squadrons 13th Hussars with some armoured cars, found the enemy in occupation of the trenches south of that place; and here these two squadrons remained in close contact with the enemy for the rest of the day. The detachment of two squadrons 21st Cavalry sent to the Khasradala ford reached it without opposition at 9 a.m.; and one squadron crossing there occupied a knoll one and a half miles to its north. Meanwhile the 21st Cavalry (less two squadrons), sent at 8 a.m. to move on Yanija Buyuk, had found that it was held strongly by the enemy.

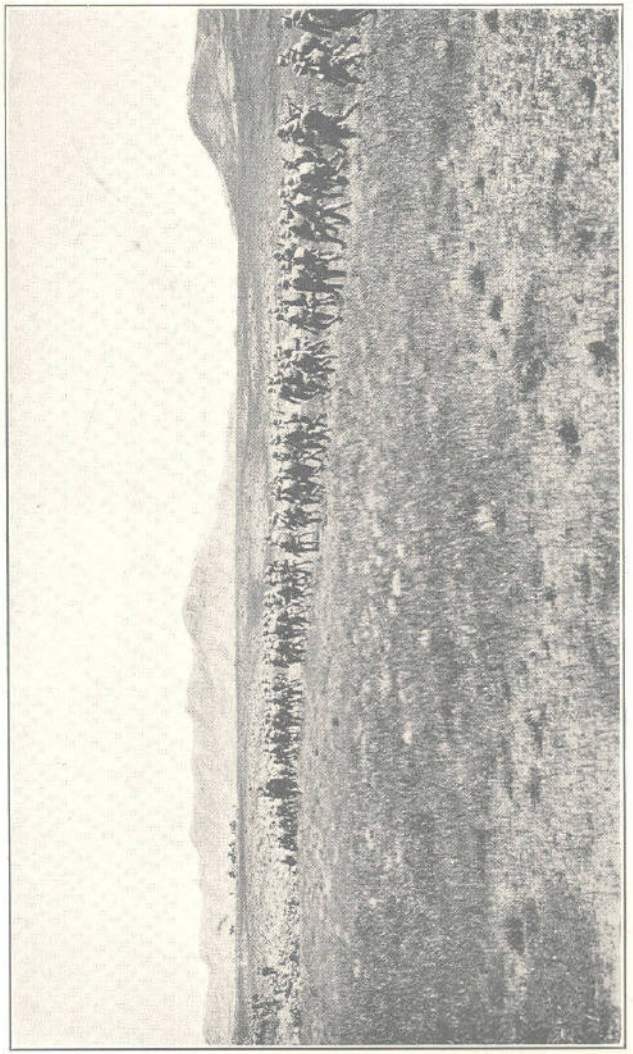
As the result of the discussion at General Holland-Pryor's headquarters, it was decided that Column A should cross the Aq Su by the Khasradala ford so as to get behind the enemy and cut him off from Tauq. By noon Column B.1, which had left Abu Gharaib at 5 a.m., had reached a point six miles west of Kulawand; and Column B.2 was to start again in the afternoon for Kulawand.†

The bulk of Column A concentrated at Khasradala by 3 p.m., but had to halt there while the ford was made passable for the wheeled trafic. Enemy guns (between Tuz Khurmatli and Yanija Buyuk) shelled the ford throughout the afternoon and evening; and in the afternoon the guns from General O'Dowda's Column B.1, moving forward to support Column A, came into action about two miles south of Yanija Buyuk.

* On the 26th April, a small column under Lieutenant-Colonel G. Underhill (one troop 14th Hussars, one section 8th Field Battery, one section 274th Machine Gun Company, one company 62nd Punjabis and 100 mounted irregulars under the local Political officer) left Khaniqin and, on the 27th, the infantry crossed the Diyala, in pontoons with much difficulty, at a point directly between Khaniqin and Kifri. No opposition was encountered, as the enemy had evacuated his posts in that area; and the column arrived back at Khaniqin on the 29th. The irregulars had given useful assistance and the local inhabitants had been friendly.

† It reached the vicinity of that place after dark, sunset being about 6.30 p.m.

To face page 152



British infantry (13th Division) near Tuz Khurmatli.

From here they registered the Turkish gun positions with a view to operations next morning. During the day, our aeroplanes, meeting with no opposition in the air, reconnoitred actively, besides bombing and firing with their machine guns on all enemy troops observed. From their reconnaissance and that of the cavalry, General Cayley gathered that enemy guns were in position near Yanija Buyuk and north-east of Tuz Khurmatli and that his infantry and machine guns were covering the Aq Su crossing south of Tuz Khurmatli from trenches on the right bank.

At 5.25 p.m. General Cayley issued the following order:

> " General plan to-morrow's operations is for Column A to get astride Tuz–Tauq road by 5 a.m. 40th Brigade by 5 a.m. to be at a point about two miles north of Kulawand* and attack northwards. Column B.1 by 5 a.m. to be across the Aq Su north of Khasradala* whence attack will be made on Yanija and Tuz. Column A will report time Tuz–Tauq roads will be reached, on receipt of which information definite orders will be issued. It is probable that four battalions Turks are still in Tuz. Khasradala ford is now in our hands."

At 8.45 p.m. General Cayley's headquarters received a telephone message from Column A, which was understood to mean that the cavalry were already roughly on a line from the Aq Su, just west of Yanija Buyuk, north-eastwards astride the Tuz–Tauq roads to the hills. In point of fact, the cavalry were not yet on this line.† But, in the belief that they were and that Yanija Buyuk had been evacuated by the enemy, General Cayley at once modified his previous instructions, saying that the only route of escape for the Turks was the track leading north-eastward from Tuz. The 40th Brigade was by 5 a.m. to be at a point about a mile south of the left bank of the Aq Su opposite Tuz, having pushed one of its battalions during the night through the Naft Dagh to reach and block as early as possible next morning the routes leading north-east out of Tuz; and Column B.1 was to be at Yanija Buyuk at 5 a.m.

As these instructions were being issued, however, a report came in from Column B.1 that their 12th Cavalry patrols had been fired on heavily at dusk from Yanija Buyuk; and

* In the actual order these points were denoted by map square references.
† It is impossible, from the available records, to explain the mistake.

a warning was sent to the 40th Brigade that the enemy might possibly be holding trenches south of the Aq Su.

At 10 p.m. on the 28th April, General Cayley's troops were disposed as follows. On the right about Kulawand were the 8th and 13th Light Armoured Motor Batteries, the Lewis gun detachment in Ford vans (all from Column A) and General Lewin's 40th Brigade group, i.e., Column B.2 (half-squadron 12th Cavalry, 55th Brigade, R.F.A., less B/55th and one section 60th Batteries, one section 384th Siege Battery, 26th Mountain Battery less two sections, 40th Infantry Brigade and 273rd Machine Gun Company less one section). The two squadrons 13th Hussars in contact with the enemy south of Tuz had withdrawn at dusk; but they failed to find the cavalry brigade and at 11 p.m. joined Column B.1. About two miles west of Kulawand were General Cayley's headquarters, with half a squadron 12th Cavalry, one section 71st Company, R.E., half company 8th Welch Pioneers and the 7th Gloucestershire, the last named unit being under orders to join General O'Dowda's group, i.e., Column B.1. The field artillery of this column (B/55th and one section 60th Batteries) was in position about two miles south of Yanija Buyuk, while the remainder (12th Cavalry, less three squadrons; one section 71st Company, R.E.; one section 26th Mountain Battery; section 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery; 38th Infantry Brigade, less 6th South Lancashire and one machine gun section; half company 8th Welch Pioneers; 13th Division Cyclist Company and one section 273rd Machine Gun Company) were about six miles west of Kulawand and three miles south of Khasradala. General Holland-Pryor with the headquarters of Column A and one squadron 22nd Cavalry was at Khasradala. His troops had begun to traverse the ford about 5.30 p.m., and by dark B/66th Battery, R.F.A., 13th Hussars less two squadrons, 21st Cavalry, 22nd Cavalry less one squadron, with a machine gun section attached to each cavalry regiment, had crossed with orders to take up the following line: the battery to take up a position about two miles west of Yanija Buyuk, the 13th Hussars to hold a line about one and a half miles long northward from the Aq Su at Yanija Buyuk, the 21st Cavalry to prolong this line northward to Yanija Kuchuk and the 22nd Cavalry to form a cordon from there north-eastward to the hills. At 10 p.m. the 13th Hussars were halted westward of Yanija Buyuk, having encountered sharp fire from that place, and the 21st and 22nd Cavalry were waiting at the knoll one and a half miles north of the Khasradala ford for the moon to rise.

At 10.15 p.m. General Cayley issued orders that after Tuz was occupied Column A was to send armoured cars to Tauq, and that two squadrons 12th Cavalry* and the divisional cyclists under Lieutenant-Colonel Deane (12th Cavalry) were to pursue the enemy along the road and through the hills north of Tuz.

At 11.30 p.m. the 21st and 22nd Cavalry, under Lieutenant-Colonel L. A. G. Hanmer, 21st Cavalry, moved forwards towards Yanija Kuchuk; but, owing to the swampy ground and frequent irrigation channels and to having to make a detour about 1 a.m. to avoid a Turkish post, they made very slow progress. Reaching a knoll about two miles to the south-westward of Yanija Kuchuk at 4.45 a.m. on the 29th, the 21st Cavalry halted to take up its allotted line to the eastward. The 22nd Cavalry continued north-eastward and as day broke came under heavy machine gun and gun fire from positions in the vicinity of Yanija Kuchuk: this caused the 22nd to dismount and engage in a fire action with the hostile machine guns. About daybreak also the 13th Hussars (still less two squadrons), supported by the fire of B/66th Field Battery, engaged the enemy at Yanija Buyuk.

On the British right the 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers, with a machine gun section and a section 26th Mountain Battery, had started from Kulawand at 1.30 a.m. on the 29th April with orders to reconnoitre the enemy positions astride the Kifri road to the south of Tuz and, if these were held by the Turks, to work along the Naft Dagh so as to turn the position and, eventually, to cross the Aq Su and cut off enemy retreat to the north-eastward. They were to be supported by the remainder of General Lewin's group, leaving Kulawand at 3 a.m.

At 3.30 a.m. the leading Fusilier company found that the trenches astride the road were held by the enemy, apparently in some strength; and the next company, with the two mountain guns, was detached to seize the high ground to the north-east. On approaching the lower slopes of this ridge, however, this company was driven back by heavy rifle and machine gun fire; and the whole battalion finally took up a position in a watercourse close, and parallel, to the road. By this time (about 4.30 a.m.) the main body was approaching and General Lewin at once ordered his leading battalion (5th

* One squadron was with General O'Dowda, and the half squadrons with Generals Cayley and Lewin were to join Colonel Deane at Tuz as opportunity offered.

Wiltshire) to relieve the pressure on the Fusiliers by capturing the crest of the Naft Dagh to the north-east. This was gained at about 5 a.m. without much difficulty, but the further advance of the Wiltshire was checked by the fire from an enemy strong point, which crowned a commanding feature of the ridge, and by the fire from four guns and four machine guns which could not at first be located. To support the Wiltshire, our artillery came into action about 5.30 a.m. and the 4th South Wales Borderers were pushed forward on the Wiltshire left, with the result that the strong point was captured at about 8 a.m. and the ridge, up to the Aq Su, cleared of the enemy by 9 a.m.

In the British centre, General O'Dowda's group, less its field artillery,* had left its bivouac at 1 a.m., to cross the Aq Su. Having moved through a ford a mile to the west of Khasradala, the main body commenced its advance on Yanija Buyuk at 4.45 a.m. The leading line of the infantry,† its right directed on the southern end of that village, consisted of the 6th King's Own (on the right) and the 6th Loyal North Lancashire; the 6th East Lancashire moved in rear of the North Lancashire in readiness to outflank the enemy from the north; and the 26th Mountain Battery section followed in close support. About 6 a.m. the infantry passed through the 13th Hussars, who were then withdrawn and sent by General Holland-Pryor to join the 21st and 22nd Cavalry and get astride the Tuz–Tauq roads. When about 1,500 yards from Yanija Buyuk, the Lancashire battalions began to come under considerable rifle and machine gun fire and also some artillery fire. But, with the effective support of their own artillery and of the well-directed fire of their machine gun sections, they pushed on steadily in good order and captured the village and three enemy guns, with only slight loss, before 7 a.m.

General O'Dowda had established his headquarters at the knoll one and a half miles north of the Khasradala ford, whence a good view was obtainable. Here he was joined, first by the 12th Cavalry squadron and divisional cyclist company under Colonel Deane‡ and then by the 7th Gloucestershire. At 7 a.m. Colonel Deane's detachment moved north-eastward with orders to close any gap between the cavalry of Column A and the left

* This artillery remained to come into action in its previous positions south of Yanija Buyuk.

† The cavalry, cyclists and armoured cars had been left behind, to cross the river at daybreak.

‡ The 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery had been unable to cross the ford.

of General O'Dowda's infantry. The Gloucestershire were held back as a reserve.

The Lancashire battalions continued to advance, their supporting field artillery south of the Aq Su moving eastward as necessary; and, as the King's Own and North Lancashire closed on Tuz, the East Lancashire swung forward on the left of the line so as to prevent the enemy retiring northward. Tuz was captured at about 9 a.m., and a number of guns and many prisoners were taken there.

To return to the cavalry action on the British left. About 7.45 a.m. the Turkish guns near Yanija Kuchuk suddenly switched their fire on to the 21st Cavalry headquarters, which were rather exposed, and caused a number of casualties including Colonel Hanmer killed. About 8 a.m. the 13th Hussars reached 21st Cavalry headquarters and, while this regiment was assembling for a mounted advance, the Hussars pushed on to where the 22nd Cavalry were engaged with a nest of Turkish machine guns. The fire of these machine guns was not turned on to the Hussars as they approached and it appeared to the latter as if the enemy was withdrawing. The two leading troops of the 13th under 2nd Lieutenant H. Macdonald were, therefore, directed to push on past the left of the knoll from which the machine guns had been firing. But as these troops came abreast of the knoll the Turkish machine guns suddenly opened fire on them at a range of about five hundred yards. Lieutenant Macdonald promptly wheeled his men to the right and charged the knoll, capturing 40 Turks and five machine guns, without any casualties among his own men. This action cleared the way for the cavalry. The Turkish guns near Yanija Kuchuk had, by this time, ceased firing; and bodies of the enemy could be seen streaming away towards the hills to the eastward. The three cavalry regiments at once started to pursue, charging many scattered bodies of Turkish troops and taking many prisoners. By 9 a.m. all organised opposition by the enemy had ceased; and after searching the vicinity and taking more prisoners the cavalry eventually moved back into Tuz.

The squadron of the 12th Cavalry, which had followed in rear of General Lewin's column, crossed the Aq Su near Tuz at about 9 a.m., and, pursuing to the north-eastward, also took a certain number of prisoners. The light armoured motor batteries had been unable to ford the Aq Su, but during the afternoon their cars were drawn across by artillery horses. The 8th and 13th Batteries then pushed on in pursuit as far as

the left bank of the Tauq Chai. But, coming under hostile machine gun and artillery fire from the right bank, they stopped there and finally returned to Tuz.

The operations on the 29th April had been most successful. Though a number of the Turkish troops managed to escape into the hills, their losses were severe, apparently owing to some extent to their poor physical condition* rendering them incapable of sustained rapid movement. We buried over 200 of their dead and captured 1,300 prisoners, 12 guns, 20 machine guns, and large quantities of ammunition.† Our own casualties totalled only one hundred and ninety-four.‡

On the 30th April the 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery ascertained that the Turks had withdrawn from Tauq also.

In the meantime, General Marshall had taken another step to protect his Persian line of communication. The Sinjabis, one of the turbulent border tribes in German pay in the area north-east of Qasr-i-Shirin, became embroiled about this time in a local quarrel with their neighbours, the Kalhur and Guran tribes, who were friendly to us. Our local political officer at once represented that this afforded us a good opportunity to deal with the Sinjabis, the tribe most likely to give us trouble, by giving the Kalhur and Guran active military assistance. General Marshall agreed; and a column under Major Ivens (26th Punjabis), consisting of one squadron 14th Hussars, one section 26th Mountain Battery, two companies 26th Punjabis and a machine gun, was sent to co-operate.

A brief action took place on the 25th April in which our aeroplanes assisted most effectively, in spite of the unfavourable weather. The general results were very satisfactory. The defeated Sinjabis suffered heavy casualties and lost large numbers of their animals; German influence became thoroughly discredited, while British prestige increased; serious raiding stopped; the senior Sinjabi chief, together with tribal representatives in Kermanshah, went to our Consulate there and made submission; and our action was welcomed by the Persian public, who had suffered considerably in the past from these raids. As General Dunsterville said in a letter of the 5th May, this action "has enormously improved the situation

* They were very short of food and clothing and badly shod.

† About half the prisoners, two guns and nine machine guns were taken by the cavalry of Column A.

‡ Units incurring the heaviest losses were the 6th King's Own, 42; 6th Loyal North Lancashire, 20; 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers, 63; 26th Mountain Battery, 13; 21st Cavalry, 23; and 22nd Cavalry, 14.

in Kurdistan and in Persia generally, and will possibly also affect the Turkish advance south of Lake Urmia."

On the 29th April the War Office telegraphed to General Marshall, referring to his recent reports of the situation, that it was certain that the Turks, who would shortly dominate the whole of Trans-Caucasia, intended to occupy Persian Azerbaijan, and that German agents, in collusion with members of the Persian Government, were preparing the ground for a general rising against us when Turkish troops appeared in Persia. In these circumstances it was clear that though it was necessary to maintain a small British force on the Hamadan road—to stabilise the situation at Tehran, to seize any opportunity to capture Enzeli and perhaps to gain control of the Caspian Sea with Bolshevik and Armenian co-operation—the maximum force which General Marshall could maintain there would merely eat up all his transport and do nothing to frustrate the immediate Turkish designs.

The only sound way of effecting the latter, said the War Office, was to strike hard and immediately in the direction of Kirkuk–Sulaimaniya, thus forcing the XIII Turkish Corps to summon to its assistance not only troops earmarked for Persian Azerbaijan but also possibly some of those in Armenia. Such a plan, if promptly and successfully executed, would be certain to impress both the Persian Cabinet and the people of Afghanistan with a sense of British power at a critical moment. It would also facilitate the enrolment of levies by General Dunsterville and would wreck German propaganda based primarily on our inactivity and on disregard of Persian neutrality.

The situation might reasonably be expected to turn in our favour upon our seizing the initiative. Meanwhile, British troops allocated to the Hamadan road and the Persian plateau should be limited to a cavalry regiment, an infantry battalion and as many armoured cars and aeroplanes as could be spared. The organisation of levies for action on, and north of, the road should be actively pushed on.

General Marshall was asked to telegraph his observations on the above as soon as possible, basing his calculations on the assumption that no further demands for transport or railway material, other than normal requirements, could be met.

It had not been General Marshall's intention to advance farther north than Tuz Khurmatli. But on receipt of this telegram he arranged for operations for the capture of Kirkuk

and he explained his views in the following telegram of the 2nd May to the War Office:

"With portion of IIIrd Corps in Tuz Khurmatli area and with mobile column from Ist Corps based on Tikrit I am making arrangements to capture Kirkuk. Underlying difficulty is one of maintenance. For IIIrd Corps, distance from railhead near Shahraban to Kirkuk is 120 miles over hill road with frequent river beds to be crossed, some of which are a mile wide and cause great delay to mechanical transport. To capture Kirkuk and maintain by this line the troops necessary to hold it entails placing the whole corps, while operations last, on reduced rations. By sending a mobile column from Tikrit I relieve to a certain extent the supply situation of IIIrd Corps, but this move necessitates my holding the Ain Nukhaila pass (twenty-five miles north-east of Tikrit) with a brigade of all arms in order to protect my seventy-five mile line, from Tikrit to Kirkuk, from the Turkish XVIII Corps, part of which holds the Jabal Hamrin from Fat-ha to Ain Nukhaila. I can maintain troops permanently at Kirkuk only by supplying them from Tikrit. This will necessitate strong posts along that road to prevent raids by the Turks from the line of the Little Zab, as well as the establishment in a strong position at Ain Nukhaila of at least one brigade. I should also have to extend the Samarra railway to Tikrit. I cannot but feel, as the summer is now commencing, that the formation of these posts coupled with the lack of shelter and water at Ain Nukhaila would seriously affect the health of the troops and would react on their subsequent efficiency. I do not think the distances in this country are fully realised, while the climatic conditions due both to rain and heat are a constant difficulty.

I would recommend that the limit of my forward posts in IIIrd Corps area be Tuz Khurmatli, as Kirkuk is so difficult of access. I can maintain a mobile column at Tuz, which will, I feel sure, be able to deny to the Turks the use of the Kirkuk–Sulaimaniya road for their wheeled traffic. The occupation of Kirkuk will, however, be as ineffective as the proposed occupation of Tuz in blockading the pack roads leading to Sulaimaniya from the north.

As regards sending troops to Sulaimaniya I am unable to do so. Only goat tracks exist leading north-east from Qasr-i-Shirin and supply round by Kirkuk is impossible with the means at my disposal. I am unable to drive the remnants of the Turkish 6th Division out of Sulaimaniya, much as I have desired to do so, but I propose to send a lightly equipped and mobile force, accompanied by Kurd levies, to the rich agricultural district of Halebja, with a view to blockading that route into Persia and to occupying Sulaimaniya when opportunity offers. I consider that, by holding the line Halebja–Tuz, I can frustrate the designs of the Turks in that area and I request approval to work on that basis."

Referring to the War Office telegram of the 29th April and to the above reply of General Marshall, the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed to the War Office on the 3rd May giving his views as follows. The line of communication from Tikrit to Kirkuk via Ain Nukhaila would be difficult to protect as it ran parallel to the enemy's front; rails and rolling stock for an extension of the railway from Samarra to Tikrit would be difficult to provide and in any case the work would take some time; calculations in India confirmed General Marshall's statement that it was beyond the capacity of his transport to carry out the plan proposed by the War Office; and it was not clear that the temporary occupation of Kirkuk would force the Turkish XIII Corps to recall troops destined for Persian Azerbaijan. On the other hand, the effort required to occupy Kirkuk was not greater than that necessary to take Fat-ha and even Sharqat, which would directly threaten the Turkish base at Mosul.

The occupation of the line Halebja–Tuz Khurmatli would, said General Monro, only have a local effort; it entailed further dispersion of our forces; and our policy in Tehran had hitherto been based on a military demonstration in Western Persia, as Sir Charles Marling had consistently informed the Shah. The proposals under discussion provided neither an effective demonstration in support of Sir Charles Marling's policy, nor an effective counter to the Turkish penetration of Persian Azerbaijan.

The above considerations led General Monro to recommend that we should use all our available transport to carry out our original intentions along the Hamadan road. But, if the Chief of the Imperial General Staff decided to threaten the Turkish XVIII Corps, our alternative move should be up the Tigris on Fat-ha; though, as pointed out by General Marshall,

this was open to all the objections of heat and exposure as well as the necessity for railway extension from Samarra.

This telegraphic discussion continued, but, before giving an account of it, it is necessary to describe the operations for the capture of Kirkuk. For these, in order to meet supply requirements, the following readjustment of our dispositions, involving the withdrawal of some troops, was made. General Egerton's advanced force was reorganised into two commands, i.e., a striking force under General Cayley and a force to hold the line of communication under General Lewin. General Cayley's force was divided into two Columns, "A" (under General Holland-Pryor), consisting of one field battery, two light armoured motor batteries, two cavalry regiments and the mobile Lewis gun detachment, and "B", consisting of one squadron of cavalry, eighteen guns and an infantry brigade. General Lewin's force comprised two squadrons of cavalry, eight guns, an infantry brigade and a machine gun company with a proportion of technical and administrative troops.* The line of communication to Tuz Khurmatli, which had hitherto run from near Delli Abbas via Ain Laila and Umr Maidan, was also altered to the route through Narin Köpri, Qara Tepe and Kifri.

On the 2nd May, the strength and dispositions of the Turkish Sixth Army (on the Tigris and in Kurdistan)† were estimated as follows. At Mosul, Army headquarters, 100 sabres, 1,150 rifles and 12 guns; about and above Fat-ha, the XVIII Corps,* 230 sabres, 7,090 rifles and 63 guns; and in the Erbil–Kirkuk–Ruwandiz area, the XIII Corps, 270 sabres, 7,900 rifles and 40 guns. The XIII Corps (2nd and 6th Divisions) was widely dispersed, its distribution being thought to be as follows:— Kirkuk–Altun Köpri, 120 sabres, 1,400 rifles and 12 guns; Erbil area, 1,250 rifles; Chemchemal–Sulaimaniya, 1,200 rifles and 4 guns (some of these might be reinforcing Kirkuk); Saqqiz–Penjwin, 1,600 rifles (irregulars); Ruwandiz and vicinity, 150 sabres, 2,450 rifles and 24 guns (part or all reported as moving towards Urmia).

* The composition of Generals Cayley's and Lewin's forces was as follows:—

Column A.—Headquarters 6th Cavalry Brigade, B/66th Battery, R.F.A., 8th and 13th Light Armoured Motor Batteries, 13th Hussars, 21st Cavalry, 15th Machine Gun Squadron less one section, No. 2 Field Troop Sappers and Miners, "M" Anti-aircraft section, 150 rifles with 32 Lewis guns carried in 50 Ford vans, and administrative units.

Column B.—12th Cavalry less three squadrons, 55th Brigade, R.F.A. less two batteries, one section 384th Siege Battery, 26th Mountain Battery less one section, 38th Infantry Brigade (with the 7th Gloucestershire from 39th Brigade in place of the 6th South Lancashire), and a proportion of technical and administrative units.

A flight of No. 30 Squadron, R.A.F., was also placed at General Cayley's disposal.

General Lewin's Force.—Two squadrons 22nd Cavalry, two batteries 55th Brigade, R.F.A., 40th Infantry Brigade, No. 273 Machine Gun Company, and a proportion of technical and administrative units.

† On the Euphrates, the Turks were reported to have a total of about 1,600 rifles and 9 guns, with small detachments at Ana and Haditha.

The advance of General Cayley's force from Tuz Khurmatli towards Kirkuk was to start on the 4th May. To co-operate with this movement, the Ist Corps at Samarra was to detach a mobile column to seize and occupy the Ain Nukhaila pass and at the same time to move troops up both banks of the Tigris to beyond Tikrit, whence they were to keep the Turkish XVIII Corps under close observation, so as to take immediate advantage of any enemy advance from Fat-ha made with the object of relieving British pressure on Kirkuk.

The weather during the first week in May was stormy with much rain. From the 1st to the 3rd, General Cayley's armoured cars reconnoitred to the front† and on the latter date encountered a few Turks holding a position immediately to the south of Taza Khurmatli. This force was still in its position on the 5th May, when General Cayley's advancing force camped for the night at a point about two and a half miles north-east of Tauq. But on the morning of the 6th General Cayley occupied Taza Khurmatli without opposition and his force continued its advance, Column A gaining touch with the enemy about two miles south-west of Kirkuk. In the evening very heavy rain set in and Column A, after reconnoitring till after dark, went into bivouac about four miles west of Kirkuk, while Column B bivouacked seven miles north of Taza Khurmatli.

That night General Egerton reorganised his force into four portions, each under his direct orders, i.e., 6th Cavalry Brigade, Cayley's Force, Lewin's Force (concentrated near Taza

* 14th Division (3rd, 37th and 43rd Regiments) and 51st Division (7th 9th and 44th Regiments).

† They crossed the Tauq Chai by a bridge, left standing by the Turks, to the north-east of Tauq.

Khurmatli) and Line of Communication troops*; and at 12.20 a.m. on the 7th May, issued orders for the 6th Cavalry Brigade and Cayley's Force to reconnoitre in the morning northward to westward of Kirkuk. But the heavy rain continued throughout the night and, as this rendered the roads almost impassable, General Egerton at 6.40 a.m. telegraphed to his three forces that the day's operations would be limited to defensive reconnaissances and that the troops were to concentrate on the maintenance of road communication. Moreover, owing to the difficulty of transport movement caused by the rain, it had been necessary to put the force on half rations.

Owing, however, to the storm having caused a breakdown of communications, General Egerton's second order only reached General Cayley at 10 a.m., four and a half hours after his advanced guard (12th Cavalry less three squadrons, 6th East Lancashire Regiment, a machine gun section and a section of a field battery), under Colonel Deane, had started. This force saw at dawn that Kirkuk was on fire in places; and soon afterwards, ascertaining that the town had been evacuated by the enemy, entered it at 8.45 a.m. Colonel Deane then proceeded to occupy the heights some two miles to the north of the town and sent his cavalry squadron to reconnoitre towards Altun Köpri. During the morning, patrols from the 6th Cavalry Brigade, which was mainly occupied in reconnoitring northwestward, also entered the town. In the afternoon this brigade went into bivouac to the south of Kirkuk, but the main body of Cayley's Force remained in its previous night's position. The heavy rain had ceased at 8 a.m., but there were showers during the day and in the evening there was a violent thunderstorm. The supply situation gave cause for considerable anxiety.

---

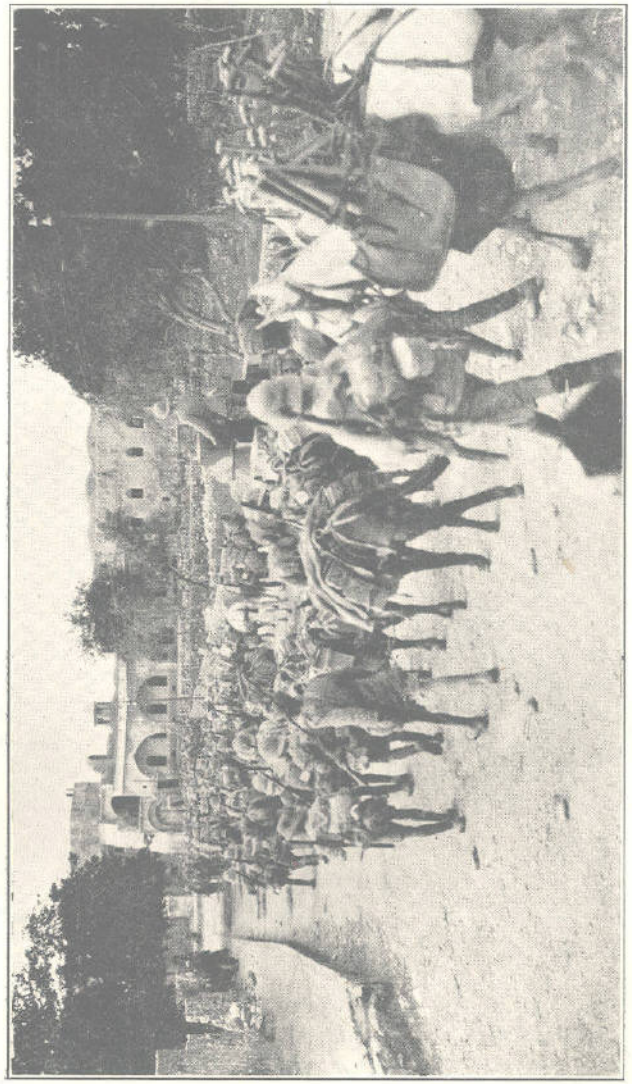
* *6th Cavalry Brigade* (General Holland-Pryor).—13th Hussars, 21st Cavalry, B/66th Battery, R.F.A., 2nd Field Troop Sappers and Miners, two pack wireless stations and administrative units.

Cayley's Force.—12th Cavalry (less three squadrons), 55th Brigade, R.F.A. less two batteries, one section 384th Siege Battery, 26th Mountain Battery less two sections, 'M' Anti-aircraft Section, 38th Infantry Brigade, two sections 273rd Machine Gun Company, 8th and 13th Light Armoured Motor Batteries, mobile Lewis gun detachment, one pack wireless station and a proportion of technical troops and administrative units.

Lewin's Force.—One squadron 22nd Cavalry, two sections 55th Brigade, R.F.A., one section 26th Mountain Battery, half 40th Infantry Brigade, 273rd Machine Gun Company less two sections, one pack wireless station and a proportion of technical troops and administrative units.

Line of Communication Troops.—Remainder of force formerly under General Lewin, with two armoured cars.

To face page 165.



British transport entering Kirkuk.

The weather cleared on the morning of the 8th May and the roads dried up somewhat, enabling a motor supply convoy to reach Taza Khurmatli. But the troops round Kirkuk, which was reached that day by the remainder of Cayley's Force, had still to remain on half rations and on the 9th received orders to eat their emergency rations.

Three damaged aeroplanes, a considerable quantity of ammunition and about 600 wounded and sick Turks were captured in Kirkuk. The grey stone buildings and arched gateways of the town presented a somewhat imposing appearance from outside, and inside there were some fine buildings. But, as usual, the whole place was filthy in the extreme; and the last act of the Turks before leaving was to blow up the fourth century Christian church, a monument of great historical interest. In the town, as in the surrounding country, all the local inhabitants were very short of food and many of them were dying of starvation. The Turks had taken all the available grain, including that usually kept for sowing, and the sheep had been killed in the lambing season. To alleviate these famine conditions, we followed the procedure adopted in districts on the Euphrates and elsewhere recently occupied by us and started soup kitchens and distribution of scraps, supplemented by voluntary contributions from the troops' half rations.

The fine weather continued and on the 9th May the roads once more became passable for motor traffic, thus relieving the supply situation. Armoured cars reconnoitred towards Altun Köpri and airmen reported enemy camps near that place, as well as signs of withdrawal from there towards Erbil. General Egerton established his headquarters at Kirkuk and issued orders that a mobile column under General Holland-Pryor should move out next day and drive in the enemy outposts on the left bank of the Little Zab, to give the impression that we intended to advance to Altun Köpri.

General Holland-Pryor moved out early on the 10th May with the 6th Cavalry Brigade, the 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery, a section 26th Mountain Battery carried in sixteen Ford vans, and two Lewis gun detachments carried in four Ford vans. The Turks were encountered to the south and south-east of Altun Köpri and General Holland-Pryor, operating against both their flanks, engaged them throughout the afternoon and evening. The enemy, who disclosed about ten guns, retired slowly, fighting a rear guard action; and other bodies of his troops were observed retiring north-west from Altun

Köpri, where a big explosion occurred about 7 p.m. At dark, General Holland-Pryor withdrew in accordance with his orders, his only casualties having been 7 wounded. Reconnaissance next day showed no signs of any enemy to the south of the Little Zab.

Concurrently with General Egerton's operations, troops from the Ist Corps had moved forward to the vicinity of Tikrit and to the Ain Nukhaila pass; but the bad weather stopped attempts by armoured cars to move from Ain Nukhaila to Kirkuk. As a result of the constant reconnaissances* of the Fat-ha area by the Ist Corps aeroplanes, armoured cars and troops, it appeared that the Turks had withdrawn many of their advanced troops, leaving the Fat-ha position only lightly held. But we were not prepared for further operations and on the 15th May the columns of the Ist Corps, which had moved forward, started to withdraw and by the end of the month were back in their positions about Samarra.

On the 10th May, replying to Generals Marshall's and Monro's telegrams of the 2nd and 3rd, the War Office explained that its telegram of the 29th April had been sent without a full knowledge of General Marshall's maintenance difficulties. The main object, in order to ease the situation in Persia, was to strike hard at, and keep up the maximum pressure on, Turkish forces within reach; and it was left to General Marshall to decide whether he could do this best by operations on the Kirkuk or the Tigris line. For the latter an extension of the railway to Tikrit would be approved.

The War Office said that General Dunsterville's operations must be regarded as a necessary part of the policy to be adopted, and their success would depend on the pressure which General Marshall could exert on the Turkish forces. It was obvious that General Dunsterville could neither make good the Caspian nor deny Persia to the enemy, if the Turks continued to enjoy full liberty of action in and through Persian Azerbaijan; and the size and mobility of Dunsterforce was limited by the amount of transport which General Marshall could make available without sacrificing the efficiency of the force necessary to establish British influence among the southern Kurds and to clear out the enemy on General Dunsterville's left flank.

As the tribal situation in South Kurdistan seemed favourable, the maintenance of a British force well forward there might develop Kurdish co-operation to an important extent.

* The enemy positions were also harassed by frequent air bombardments.

In regard to the Euphrates line, the War Office considered it advisable to reduce Hit to an outpost, supported by Ramadi; and that, if the railway was extended to Tikrit, the shortage of railway material necessitated discontinuance of the extension to Ramadi.

On the 12th May General Marshall replied. His operations in South Kurdistan had driven the demoralised remnants of the Turkish 2nd Division across the Little Zab beyond his powers of pursuit, but had only caused the diversion of one infantry battalion from the other division (6th) in the XIII Corps to oppose his advance.* To keep up the maximum pressure on enemy forces within reach, his only objective was the Turkish XVIII Corps; and an extension of the railway to Tikrit would bring him within thirty and fifty miles, respectively, of the XVIII Corps positions at and above Fat-ha. Though he had no doubt that he could capture these positions, he was equally certain that the Turks there would retire rather than offer serious opposition; and to maintain the large pursuing force necessary to keep up pressure on the enemy it would be necessary to extend the railway beyond Tikrit. This would enable him to maintain both his Ist Corps on the Tigris and his IIIrd Corps on the Kirkuk–Erbil line.

In General Marshall's opinion, such operations would result in the capture of Mosul and the disappearance of Turkish control of country between the Tigris and the Persian border. But his railhead would then be much closer to the enemy railhead at Nisibin and his force could have no effect on the Turks in the Caucasus, who could be supplied there and at Tabriz from the Black Sea.

To extend the railway to Tikrit would take two months and another two months to Shuraimiya, beyond which no estimate was possible as the line would have to cross the Jabal Hamrin. Moreover, owing to the intense heat of the next four months, General Marshall urged most strongly that no operations should commence before the 15th September.

As regards General Dunsterville's force, General Marshall could only supply at Hamadan from about June to December

* The 6th Division at this time was believed to consist of the 16th, 18th and 22nd Regiments. Two battalions of the 22nd were near Mosul, but the 3/16th and all three battalions of the 18th Regiment moved westward, from Ruwandiz and the Penjwin–Halebja area respectively, to Altun Köpri at the beginning of May. The Turkish force, believed to belong to the 6th Division, which was reported moving towards Urmia, was understood to be 2,500 rifles strong, including the 2/16th and 1/22nd Regiments, with some frontier formations.

(the period the road was likely to be passable) one cavalry regiment, an infantry battalion and the armoured cars, in addition to posts along the road and a small mobile column at Halebja or Kermanshah. Any more troops in Persia than this would have to subsist on the country. General Marshall was in hopes of obtaining considerable co-operation from the Kurds.

He would keep the Hit garrison as low as possible, but he was loth to give it up owing to its commercial value and its importance as a centre of communication with the Middle Euphrates; and his transport situation would not be affected by its retention.

On the 15th May the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed to the War Office expressing general concurrence in the considerations mentioned by General Marshall, which showed the limited utility of operations either by the Tigris or via Kirkuk. General Monro observed that, as the next four months were the most favourable for operations by the Turks in the Caucasus and Azerbaijan, it seemed desirable to concentrate our disposable resources, to the extent that our transport admitted, in direct support of General Dunsterville. This seemed the more desirable in view of Sir Charles Marling's report on the 9th May to the Foreign Office that the marked apprehension at Tehran regarding the Turkish advance into Persian Azerbaijan might lead the Persian Government to encourage opposition to this advance.

On the 18th the War Office agreed to the postponement of operations on the Tigris till mid-September and the extension, in the meantime, of the railway to Tikrit. General Marshall was at the same time instructed to develop General Dunsterville's activity to the utmost extent of the available transport. This telegram was followed by further instructions on the 21st, based on the latest information from Tehran, which indicated that a prompt display of sufficient military force in Persia would gain for us the active support of the Persian Government. The force of a cavalry regiment, an infantry battalion and armoured cars, mentioned by General Marshall in his telegram of the 12th, was not considered sufficient; and he was therefore to make every effort to maintain, at Hamadan and towards the Caspian, a force up to a cavalry regiment, an infantry brigade, armoured cars and aeroplanes. The greatest importance was attached by the Chief of the Imperial General Staff to even a small British force

reaching the Caspian that summer; and he understood that local resources were forthcoming to a certain extent.

General Marshall replied on the 24th May that the movement of troops into Persia, which had been delayed by the Kirkuk operations, would now proceed with the transport released from South Kurdistan. By the middle of June a regiment of cavalry, a battalion of infantry, three aeroplanes and sixteen armoured cars should be at Hamadan; and this was the maximum that he could maintain there with the transport at his disposal. Seven mechanical transport companies would be required for the bare maintenance of this force at Hamadan and could provide nothing for troops between Hamadan and the Caspian, who must depend entirely on local produce. To maintain another three infantry battalions at Hamadan General Marshall would require ten more mechanical transport companies in the near future. Otherwise, these troops would have to live entirely on the country as best they could. General Marshall did not consider this desirable and he doubted the military value of such a force, with its power of effective action limited by lack of mobility.

He accordingly suggested the following as getting the best value out of the available mechanical transport, which was the dominating factor:—

(*a*) The road from railhead to Kermanshah to be held by posts, as then existed, with a small mobile column at Kermanshah.

(*b*) No more cavalry or infantry on foot to be sent beyond Kermanshah, but the cavalry squadron and infantry company already at Hamadan to remain there;

(*c*) one thousand infantry with a number of Lewis guns to form a mobile column carried entirely in Ford vans, to be based in the first place on Hamadan; and

(*d*) an air flight to be maintained at Hamadan, as well as sixteen—and eventually forty—armoured cars.

This organisation would enable 1,000 infantry with armoured cars to cover long distances to deal promptly with any situation that might arise. It would, in his opinion, be far more effective for the purpose required than the force suggested by the War Office and would be far simpler to maintain. He anticipated that, if the scheme were approved at an early date, the mobile column could be ready for action at Hamadan by the middle of June.

On the 25th May the War Office replied that it was not considered that this scheme would suffice to effect our purpose,

i.e., to reach the Caspian and to maintain a force about Kazvin sufficient to secure Tehran. The risks entailed in the War Office proposal were fully justified by the far-reaching results of success; and it should not be abandoned till its execution had been proved to be impossible. The only danger to small bodies of our troops on the Persian road appeared to be from formed bodies of the enemy, who was still 150 miles off and for whom it would be as, or more, difficult to advance as it was for us. The levies being raised by General Dunsterville should assist us materially in the protection of the road and in giving us timely warning of any serious hostile approach. Every effort would be made to send General Marshall another ten mechanical transport companies before the end of the year. In the meantime a full report was required of local supplies in Persia, whose famine-stricken state did not appear to preclude altogether its ability to feed a small force.

On the 27th General Marshall said that the proposed motor column could carry petrol for 100 miles and that its radius of action could be increased by the establishment of petrol stores at Kazvin, Tehran and other suitable points, while it was possible that petrol could also be obtained locally near the Caspian. The column would be able from Hamadan to reach Kazvin in fifteen hours and Tehran or Enzeli in another ten hours, while its headquarters could be moved to Kazvin as soon as petrol arrangements were assured. There appeared to be no reason why, if we employed the motor column, we should not reach the Caspian by the end of June. Owing to its great mobility, General Marshall considered that it would maintain much more effective control from Hamadan to Enzeli than a cavalry regiment and an infantry brigade. He was still of opinion that it was inadvisable to send the latter as he could not maintain it and, even if it succeeded in subsisting on local resources,* he doubted if it would be effective for the purpose required.

In conclusion, he suggested that the motor column should be given a trial. If it was unsatisfactory, its infantry and mechanical transport would be available on the spot and the War Office proposal could be proceeded with.

On the 28th May, the War Office sanctioned General Marshall's scheme with a view to securing command of the Caspian and asked for his proposals for armed launches or other craft, crews, etc.

* General Marshall sent a report on these separately.

While this correspondence was taking place, the withdrawal from Kirkuk had been carried out, the first troops starting back from there on the 11th May, leaving a small mobile column as garrison; and this withdrew also on the 24th. Before the final withdrawal, some 1,600 of the local inhabitants who feared the return of the Turks were also evacuated as refugees at their own request. At the end of the month the advanced posts of the IIIrd Corps in South Kurdistan were back at Tuz Khurmatli and Kifri.

The civil war in the Caucasus continued during May and militated against our chances of stabilising the situation there and of organising opposition to the enemy. Moreover, the Germans to the north of the Black Sea were evidently moving with a view to gaining control of the railway leading to Baku from the north; and the Turks continued to make progress, though slowly, in Trans-Caucasia and towards Tabriz. It was estimated that three Turkish regular divisions were advancing eastward from a line running approximately from Batum to Bayazid; Turkish troops occupied Alexandropol on the 18th May; and at the end of the month it was reported that Turkish troops were moving by rail from Alexandropol to Tiflis. In the last week of May the fiction of any sort of united action by the different elements in Trans-Caucasia was dispelled by the formal dissolution of the Federal Government. The Armenian National Council assumed charge of Armenian affairs; Georgia declared her independence; and the Tartar National Council, which temporarily controlled Tiflis and the main railway, proclaimed a Republic of (Russian) Azerbaijan and allowed two Turkish regular regiments to pass by rail through Tiflis in order to assist the Tartars in their fighting with the Armenians and Bolsheviks. The latter combination had driven the Tartar forces out of Baku but had failed to obtain possession of Elizabetopol.

The Turkish advance towards Tabriz seemed to be hanging fire. It was estimated that this movement was being carried out by one regular division advancing from the northward and by parts of two divisions advancing on Urmia from Khoi and from the west. Early in May Nuri Pasha and several Turkish officers appeared in Tabriz for a few days, announcing themselves as part of the staff of a Turkish army on its way to take over the Mahomedan regions of the Caucasus and to make war on the Armenians. But the Turkish troops appeared to be halted about Marand; and reliable information was obtained

that Nuri Pasha was mainly occupied in forming a Turco-Tartar Islamic army for operations in south-eastern Caucasia and northern Persia. The movement via Urmia was checked by the gallant and stubborn opposition of the Jelus (helped by some Armenians), who, though isolated without support and short of ammunition, inflicted a serious defeat on parts of the Turkish 5th and 6th Divisions in this region in the middle of May.

At Baku the Social Revolutionary Party, with more moderate ideas than the Bolsheviks and favouring British assistance, seemed to be gaining in power. The Bolsheviks, too, alarmed by the progress of the German and Pan-Turkish schemes, declared themselves hostile to the Jangalis and invited Bicharakoff, who with 400 Russians and a British armoured car was still at Kazvin, to deal with the Jangalis and take command of the Baku–Gilan front. Bicharakoff agreed, but stipulated for British assistance; and to this the Bolsheviks gave a grudging and partial assent.

On the 11th May General Dunsterville telegraphed to Baghdad that he was convinced that an attempt could be successfully made to occupy Baku and control the Caspian* and that Bicharakoff was willing to try. But, as General Dunsterville had no troops to replace his,† Bicharakoff could not be spared from Kazvin; and it was impossible to say how long the opportunity would remain open.

On the 12th General Dunsterville left Hamadan to pay short visits to Kazvin and Tehran. After meeting Bicharakoff at Kazvin, General Dunsterville reported that they both agreed that it was in our mutual interests to hold the Kazvin–Enzeli road, control the Caspian and free Bicharakoff to undertake operations in the Caucasus. But British assistance would be necessary. After seeing Sir Charles Marling at Tehran, General Dunsterville arrived back at Hamadan on the 18th May. On the 21st he heard from Colonel Clutterbuck (British liaison officer with Bicharakoff) that, in the opinion of Bicharakoff, news he had received showed that the situation demanded immediate action. The Germans were advancing on Northern Caucasia and Astrakhan, and the British would be welcomed

* The Caspian fleet of five gunboats was at Baku, manned by armed merchant crews, who could be bought.

† The squadron 14th Hussars from Hamadan had reached the vicinity of Kazvin on the 7th May; and there only remained at Hamadan, besides the special duty officers and men of the Mission, three armoured cars and a platoon of the 1/4th Hampshire Regiment.

at Baku. Bicharakoff urged that, if we could not co-operate, he should be allowed to proceed at once to the Caucasus before it was too late. In view of this, General Dunsterville telegraphed to Baghdad on the 22nd proposing that he should collect all available troops and armoured cars and accompany Bicharakoff to Enzeli, severing connection entirely with Persia south of Manjil. All that would be left behind would be the nucleus of levies being raised at Hamadan and the parties of British officers and non-commissioned officers which had been sent to Zenjan and Bijar.

On the 24th May General Marshall repeated to the War Office a report from General Dunsterville that Bicharakoff would leave Kazvin on the 30th for Baku via Enzeli and that General Dunsterville, with all his available force, intended to accompany him. Next day, Sir Charles Marling telegraphed to the Foreign Office protesting against General Dunsterville's proposal to denude Persia of troops as adversely effecting the situation in Persia at a moment when the position in South Persia had become most difficult. On the 27th May the War Office telegraphed that H.M. Government had decided that, in view of the completely changed situation in the Caucasus, General Dunsterville was not to go there. Bicharakoff should be persuaded to stop where he was or not to go further than Enzeli. General Dunsterville's activities were to be confined to assisting to secure the Khaniqin–Enzeli road and to, eventually, obtaining naval control of the Caspian. The former could best be done by raising levies in the area north of Kermanshah and west of Kazvin. To this telegram General Dunsterville replied that he did not wish Baku to give up hope and allow the oil to fall into enemy hands. He, therefore, asked permission to promise that when he got to Enzeli he would send a few officers and give every assistance possible to Baku. He had very little hope of being able to keep Bicharakoff in Persia. After some further correspondence, including a telegram from Sir Charles Marling to the Foreign Office pointing out the extreme importance of securing the Caspian fleet and of destroying the oil wells at Baku, the War Office on the 1st June modified their orders of the 27th May. General Dunsterville, or one or more of his officers, might, at General Marshall's discretion, be sent to Baku. But the first military necessity was to occupy effectively the road to Kazvin and the Caspian.

In the meantime, good progress, in the circumstances, had been made by General Dunsterville at Hamadan and, under

General Marshall's orders, about Khaniqin, in raising levies and in gaining the co-operation of the neighbouring warlike tribes, whose attitude towards us had become much more helpful owing to our successful operations in South Kurdistan and the defeat of the Sinjabis. These factors also enabled General Dunsterville to send a party of British officers and non-commissioned officers to Zenjan with the object of organising opposition to the Turks.

During May some 200 more officers and non-commissioned officers joined General Dunsterville's Mission at Hamadan, as did two more armoured cars and three more platoons of the 1/4th Hampshire. The first squadron of Dunsterforce armoured cars from England, having reached Baghdad, was also well on its way to Hamadan by the end of the month.

In view of the local rising in South Persia against General Sykes' force, the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed to General Marshall on the 27th May asking him if, to assist General Sykes, he could spare any aeroplanes and also provide two infantry brigades with sufficient pack mule transport to carry fourteen days' supplies for an advance inland from Bushire. General Marshall deprecated any further dispersion of his force and said that only about a third of the number of pack mules required could be made available. He also said that aeroplanes could not fly to Bushire owing to the distance and the heat; and their spare parts could not be carried on pack mules. Other arrangements were consequently made by General Monro, including the diversion to Bushire of two Indian infantry battalions under despatch to Egypt.

During April and May there was a continued improvement of British railway communications in Mesopotamia. By the end of May a standard gauge line from Baghdad to Hilla was completed and a survey was in progress for a narrow-gauge extension from Hilla to Kifl. The conversion to metre-gauge of the railway through Baquba to the Jabal Hamrin (railhead, Table Mountain) was completed on the 4th June and its extension to Qizil Ribat was in hand. The idea of an extension to Ramadi and Hit had been abandoned to allow of the preparations for prolonging the Samarra line to Tikrit. Oil fuel was being substituted for coal on the railways at a saving of some 125,000 shipping tons per annum; and the capacity of Basra port had been increased to discharge from 110,000 to 130,000 tons per mensem.

The Cavalry Division ceased to exist in April, the cavalry brigades becoming independent formations, each with a

To face page 174.

"John Hampshire"

A Kurd boy (whose parents died of starvation on the Pai Taq Pass in spite of British efforts to save them), who was adopted by the 1/4th Hampshire and remained with the battalion till it left Persia in 1919, when he was sent to an orphan school.

proportion of divisional troops. In the same month the heavy artillery was reorganised into three brigades, 38th, 74th, and 101st,* as part of Army Troops; and these brigades were attached, respectively, to the IIIrd Corps, 15th Division and Ist Corps. In April also the 31st Mountain Battery arrived from India. The heavy British casualties in France in March had necessitated an urgent call on India for additional units for service overseas; and, to help India, Mesopotamia was called upon to provide a complete infantry company from each of sixty Indian infantry battalions. In this way fifteen trained battalions were furnished ready for immediate service elsewhere; while the sixty original battalions were filled up with recruits from India.

Early in May the Turkish air unit in Mesopotamia was reinforced by some new "Scout" machines, which resulted in a marked increase of hostile aerial activity; but it was found that in the numerous air combats the enemy generally broke away before a decision was obtained. Our air force was also very active in reconnaissance, offensive operations and photography. At the end of May the units of the 31st Wing, Royal Air Force,† were located as under:—

30th Squadron—Baquba, Kifri and Ramadi;
63rd Squadron—Samarra;
72nd Squadron—Baghdad, Samarra, Mirjana and Hamadan;
23rd Kite Balloon Company (51st and 52nd Sections)—Baghdad, Samarra and Ramadi;
Aircraft Park—Baghdad.

* *38th Brigade.*—2/104th Heavy Battery (60-pounders, horsedrawn), 269th Siege Battery (6-inch howitzers tractor-drawn) and 384th Siege Battery (6-inch howitzers, horse-drawn).
74th Brigade.—177th Heavy Battery (60-pounders, tractor-drawn), 257th Siege Battery (6-inch howitzers, tractor-drawn) and 395th Siege Battery (6-inch howitzers, tractor-drawn).
101st Brigade.—2/86th Heavy Battery (60-pounders, horse-drawn), 157th Heavy Battery (60-pounders, tractor-drawn), 159th Siege Battery (6-inch howitzers, horse-drawn) and 246th Siege Battery (6-inch howitzers, tractor-drawn).

† Designation changed on 1st April.

CHAPTER XLII.

BRITISH PLANS TO STOP THE ENEMY'S ADVANCE INTO PERSIA AND TO OBTAIN CONTROL OF THE CASPIAN.

(MAP 41.)

AT the beginning of June 1918 the fighting strength of the Turkish Sixth Army, whose headquarters were at Mosul, was estimated at about 1,800 sabres, 17,000 rifles, 130 guns and 25 aeroplanes. Its distribution was believed to be as follows :—

Euphrates Front (about and south of Ana) : Cavalry Brigade and 24th Infantry Regiment=750 sabres, 1,500 rifles and 9 guns.

Tigris Front (at and above Fat-ha) : 14th and 51st Divisions with five aeroplanes—100 sabres, 7,100 rifles and 63 guns.

Altun Köpri—Kirkuk area : 2nd and part of 6th Divisions with eight aeroplanes—450 sabres, 2,950 rifles and 22 guns.

Sulaimaniya Group : Frontier formations=50 sabres, 1,100 rifles and 4 guns.

Ruwandiz—Urmia area : Part of 6th Division and frontier formations=150 sabres, 2,400 rifles and 12 guns.

Mosul and Lines of Communication : 300 sabres, 1,950 rifles, 24 guns and aeroplanes.

Its men were said to be somewhat demoralised and it was suffering from great supply and transport difficulties.

In the first week of June it was reported that two Turkish battalions and a battery had left Kirkuk for Sulaimaniya and that other units would follow them there and to the Urmia front. It seemed evident that the Turks did not intend to undertake an offensive in Mesopotamia themselves, and that, regarding one by us as unlikely for the time being, they meant to utilise the opportunity to push on with their plans in the Caucasus and in Persia. The Germans at this period were hoping for further success in France, while our advance in Palestine had not only ceased but British troops had been withdrawn from there to France.*

In the Caucasus the peace negotiations between the Turks and the Trans-Caucasian Federation were reported to have been broken off, in spite of the protests of the latter, and it

* If the enemy was not already aware of this, he must have learnt it from an indiscreet question in the British House of Commons.

was said that the Turks, alleging that British and Armenian troops had driven Turkish troops back from near Julfa, had begun to advance again. There appeared to be seven Turkish divisions (about 21,000 rifles and 250 guns) on this front, with their main strength in the Poti-Alexandropol area. German troops* were reported to be guarding the railway from Batum to Tiflis ; and, though Turkish efforts to form bodies of local troops were reported to have met with little success, it was estimated that the enemy would be able to attack Baku in about a month's time.

It appears that on the 8th June the Georgian Government signed a treaty of peace with Germany, by which Georgia was to receive German financial aid and also military assistance to prevent Turkish infringement of Georgian rights and neutrality ; and Germany was, in exchange, to receive priority in mineral concessions. On the 9th June German troops began landing at Poti and on the 12th occupied Tiflis. On the 8th June also, Turkey, acting apparently under German pressure, concluded treaties with Georgia and Armenia, recognising their independence. In return for such recognition, however, Armenia was forced to agree to a Turkish military occupation and to the free passage through its territory of Turkish troops. Thus, by the action of Germany, Turkey was denied the military use of railways through Georgia, the immense prejudicial effect of which on Turkish plans in regard to Baku and Russian Azerbaijan is evident from a glance at the map.† According to German accounts this was justified by the arrangement come to between Turkey and Germany that Turkish military operations were to be confined mainly to an offensive into Persian Azerbaijan and that Baku was not to be occupied by Turks.

During June information was received that the 51st Turkish Division on the Tigris had been broken up and that at least three Turkish battalions had left Kirkuk for the Urmia front. It was also reported that 70,000 to 80,000 prisoners of war, who were fit for service, had returned to Turkey from Russia, On the other hand, an insurrectionary movement by the many thousands of deserters in Anatolia was said to be growing, though lack of organisation would probably militate against its having any great effect.

For his part, General Marshall contemplated no offensive in Mesopotamia during the hot weather. Many of his officers

* Apparently a local formation composed of released prisoners of war and a battalion from the Ukraine.

† See Map 41.

and men were on leave; and, apart from climatic considerations, his orders to secure the Khaniqin—Hamadan—Enzeli road and to gain control of the Caspian required the employment of much of his transport. In the meantime, in view of possible eventualities in the autumn, he had started work on the extension northwards of the Samarra railway.

The wide dispersion of General Marshall's force at this period is noteworthy. The advanced detachments of the IIIrd Corps on his right extended from Kazvin* to Kifri and Tuz Khurmatli; his Ist Corps was about Samarra on the Tigris; and the 15th Division, with headquarters at Ramadi on the Euphrates, had detachments at Hit and Sahiliya.

The supply situation had improved owing to the completion, at the end of May, of the Baghdad—Hilla railway, which opened up a rich supply area and tended to relieve congestion on the line of communications. It was also estimated that, owing to the excellent harvests in the Hamadan area and to the amount of rice obtainable in the Enzeli district, sufficient supplies could be purchased in North-West Persia to feed 5,000 British troops.

On the 1st June General Marshall informed General Dunsterville that the mobile motor column, forming for the purpose of securing the Hamadan—Enzeli road, would probably be concentrated at Hamadan by the middle of the month. This column, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel C. L. Matthews (1/4th Hampshire), would consist of the 1/4th Hampshire, less two companies, (i.e., 400 rifles), two companies 1/2nd Gurkhas, (i.e., 600 rifles), one section 21st Mountain Battery and a detachment 20th Combined Field Ambulance. All the personnel of the column, with their equipment, ammunition, baggage and rations, were to be carried in five hundred Ford vans.

General Dunsterville was still engaged in raising levies at Hamadan, and a party of his British officers and non-commissioned officers at Zenjan were taking steps to raise levies or to subsidise the local tribes between there and Tabriz.

* The British troops on the road from Khaniqin to Kazvin were distributed as follows. From Khaniqin to Kermanshah (inclusive) the troops, under the IIIrd Corps, were the 36th Infantry Brigade (less one company,1/4th Hampshire), 14th Hussars (less two squadrons), 12th Company Sappers and Miners, one company 128th Pioneers and one section each of the 8th Field, 21st and 26th Mountain, and 6th Light Armoured Motor Batteries. Eastward of Kermanshah the area was under General Dunsterville and here there were at Hamadan one company 1/4th Hampshire and two armoured cars of the 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery and at Kazvin four armoured cars of the same battery and one squadron 14th Hussars.

Early in June he sent another party to Bijar with the same object and also to try to gain touch with the Jelus in the Urmia area, though this was not easy, as they were in an isolated situation and the local Persian officials and soldiery were actively hostile to them. Good progress had also been made recently, under General Marshall's orders, in raising a mounted levy corps of Kurds, recruited from the Khaniqin—Kifri—Sulaimaniya area, to check enemy hostilities on the line of the Upper Diyala.

On the 4th June General Marshall telegraphed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff that General Dunsterville was at Kazvin,* where he had Bicharakoff under his orders. As soon as the Dunsterforce armoured car squadron† and the mobile motor column arrived to hold the Kazvin—Enzeli line, Bicharakoff would go to Baku and Astrakhan. General Dunsterville proposed to send the leading armoured car squadron with Bicharakoff, followed later by such troops as could be made available; as this seemed to be the best opportunity which had so far occurred. Thinking that it was not too late to save the Baku oil and Krasnovodsk cotton and obtain entire control of the Caspian, General Dunsterville desired eventually to proceed to Baku himself. He considered that no effect would be obtained by sending only one or two British officers to Baku, which town looked to us for effective support, and that there was no need to destroy the oil fields. General Marshall recommended that General Dunsterville should be given a free hand in regard to sending British troops to Baku on the condition that he retained control over them.

Replying on the 6th, the Chief of the Imperial General Staff said that H.M. Government did not object to General Dunsterville making preparations to send an armed force to Baku, but that, until the mobile motor column had arrived and consolidated the position on the Kazvin—Enzeli road, they did not consider that General Dunsterville, any British troops, or Bicharakoff and his Russians, should go to Baku. They considered that even then the movement on Baku should not take place without further reference to London and definite instructions from there. It was thought that the situation in Trans-

* General Dunsterville had just transferred his headquarters there.

† Formed in England in January 1918, mainly of personnel from Commander Locker-Lampson's armoured car unit which had returned from Russia at the end of 1917, the brigade was to consist of five squadrons (eight armoured cars each), a motor transport column, a mobile medical unit and a wireless section, all under command of Colonel J. D. Crawford (Indian army). The advanced party reached Baghdad on the 6th May; and at the beginning of June one squadron was on its way to Kazvin.

Caucasia would have cleared by the time the mobile column had reached the Caspian. Meanwhile General Marshall was to send a full appreciation of the situation, taking into account the reported transfer of two German battalions from the Ukraine and the reported advance of Turkish troops on Baku.

When this telegram was sent, reports received in London showed that the Bolshevik power appeared to be waning and that, as the universal hatred to the Bolshevik leaders in Russia increased, the separatist tendencies of the various races there were becoming more marked. But there was no party capable of inspiring public confidence sufficiently to replace the Bolsheviks and it consequently seemed evident that the enemy's designs in Russia could only be frustrated by Allied intervention. British troops were already operating to that end in North Russia; and the Allied Governments of Great Britain, France and Italy agreed to ask Japan to take action in Siberia, though—apparently for political reasons—the President of the United States of America demurred at Japanese intervention.

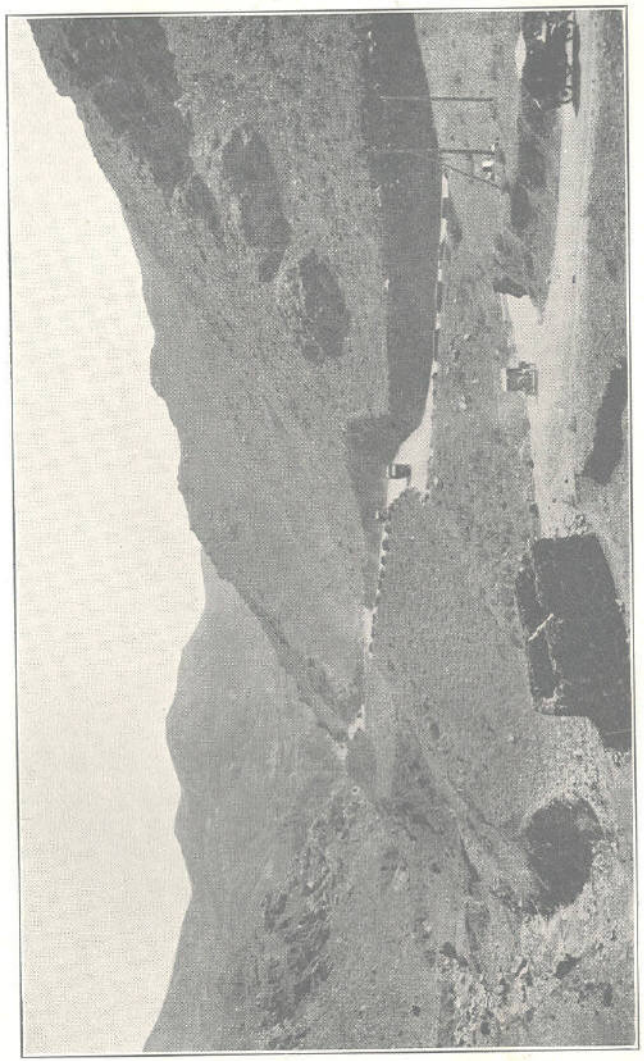
On the 9th June General Marshall telegraphed his appreciation. The enemy appeared to have complete command of the Black Sea. The Turks were believed to be holding Batum, Poti, Alexandropol, Tiflis, Marand, Bayazid and the railways connecting those places; while a short advance would give them Tabriz, though repairs to the railway might cause slight delay.

East of Tiflis progress would be facilitated by the Tartars, who had been recently fighting the Armenians and Bolsheviks near Baku. The Turkish force in Trans-Caucasia and the Urmia region was estimated at 1,500 sabres, 28,000 rifles and 124 guns, excluding irregular elements of the Islam army, Kurdish irregulars and artillery captured from the Russians. Portions of a German depot division were believed to be landing at Poti and a locally raised German regiment with about 800 Ukrainian troops was known to be in Tiflis. The enemy's regular troops were thus estimated at 35,000 and he had control of sea and railway communications to Tabriz and through Tiflis eastwards to within about one hundred miles of Baku.

The Tartars, who comprised the finest fighting material, appeared to be solidly pro-Turk and were believed to be able to produce 30,000 irregulars. The Armenians, except those fighting in company with the Jelus in the Urmia region and those at Baku, appeared to have made peace with the Turks.*

* This news had been just received.

To face page 181.



The road between Kazvin and Manjil.

This left only two groups from whom any material resistance to the enemy might be expected, i.e., the Armenians and Jelus in the Urmia region numbering about 10,000 men with five guns, who were fighting for existence, and the Armenians and Bolsheviks in Baku numbering about 11,000 with 100 machine guns and 33 guns (of which only six were said to be serviceable). The latter group comprised an unnatural anti-Mahomedan alliance formed only for mutual preservation.

It appeared that the enemy intended to move on Baku, clear up the situation in the Caucasus and carry out a military occupation of Persian Azerbaijan. Considerable jealousy and friction relative to their plans and activities in Trans-Caucasia had already broken out between the Germans and Turks.

There was, continued General Marshall, a wide-spread extreme democratic party in Persia which was primarily anti-British and was strongly supported by German agents, while the power and action of the pro-British party were handicapped by the recent German successes in France and by the disturbances in South Persia. If, however, the Turks took Azerbaijan, Persian national feeling would probably be aroused against them just as the menace of a Turkish advance in Persia had already gone far to alienate the Jangalis from the enemy's cause and to facilitate our reaching Enzeli. Tribes near and to the north of Zenjan had also shown some willingness to undertake service on our side.

In considering the rôle of Dunsterforce the length of the communications had to be realised. This made it impossible to support a force north of Hamadan with any prospect of success against an enemy advancing from Tabriz. With the mobile column, of which three companies and two guns were due to reach Kazvin on the 17th June, and with Bicharakoff's troops there should be no difficulty in holding the Kazvin—Enzeli road, if possible by arrangement with Kuchik Khan, and in thus opening up communication with Baku where the time factor was of considerable importance. Subsequent action should, General Marshall considered, be decided by General Dunsterville, who would be guided by events. But the latter had heard the previous day from Baku that the Turks had signed a treaty with the Armenians, Georgians and Tartars, ceding territory to Turkey and giving her the right to move troops over the Trans-Caucasian railways ; that Turkish troops were moving by road towards Baku and would soon be moving there and to Julfa by rail ; and that the Baku Armenians refused to be bound by this treaty. In these circumstances it

would seem desirable to allow Bicharakoff to go to Baku and to send with him a British mission, with a suitable escort under General Dunsterville or another officer, so as to confer with the Armenians and Bolsheviks, gauge the amount of support to be reckoned on in case of a Turkish advance, and arrange if possible for the purchase of the Caspian fleet and for the control of the oil fields.

From a defensive point of view Baku was favoured by nature and General Dunsterville considered that he could hold it if he could get there in time. The people of Baku, who were then wavering, would be heartened by an assurance of help in the form of money and troops; so that General Dunsterville requested early authority to give them this assurance, which might, in his opinion, produce great results.

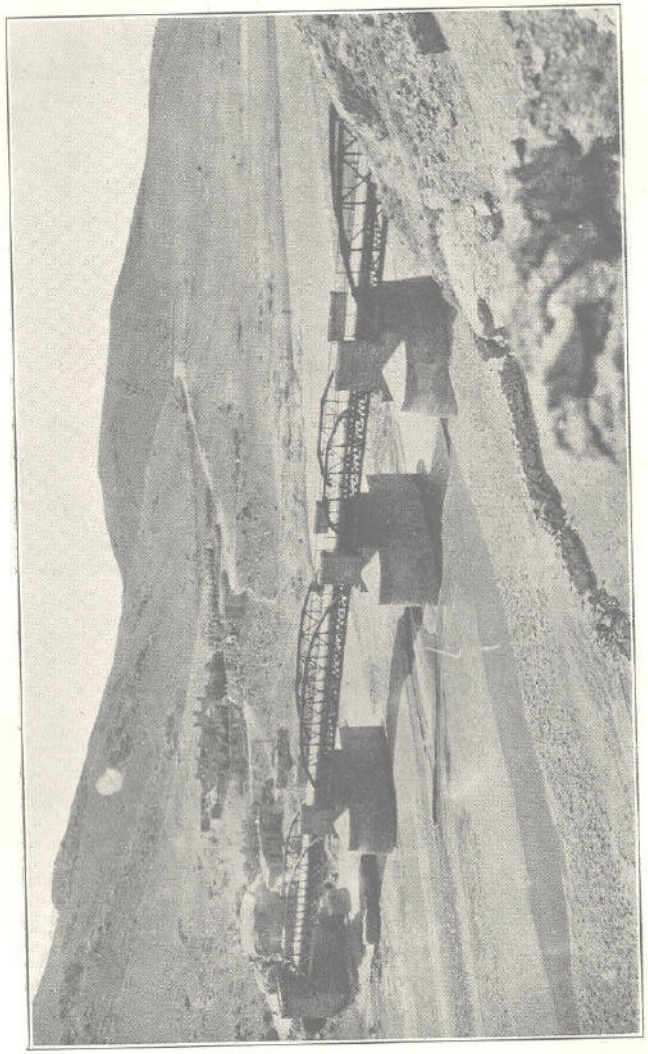
After Bicharakoff had reached Baku, General Dunsterville wished him to rouse Northern Caucasia. General Marshall personally would prefer the Russians to remain on the Enzeli road, but, as their *moral* deteriorated daily, he did not think that they could be induced to do so. It was possible, if not probable, that Bicharakoff might raise more troops in Northern Caucasia, but General Marshall did not think they would ever consent to come to Enzeli.

With an increased number of British troops at Kazvin, it might be possible said General Marshall, to send ammunition and machine guns to the Jelus and Armenians in the Urmia region, and the formation of organised levies at Bijar and Zenjan should be facilitated so as to enable us to push our influence northwards.

On the 12th June General Marshall reported that Bicharakoff was determined to go to Baku and that Lenin's Government had categorically refused to allow any British force or mission to set foot in Russian territory, but had promised to reinforce Baku.

In a telegram of the 13th the Chief of the Imperial General Staff concurred generally in General Marshall's appreciation, but considered that the enemy's combatant strength in Trans-Caucasia would be greater than therein estimated. In view of this and of Georgian and Tartar assistance, it seemed unlikely that Baku could hope to hold out for any length of time, even if reinforced by Bicharakoff and by any British force which it would be possible to send and maintain there. There was no objection to a few officers of Dunsterforce being sent to Baku to report on the position there and especially on the possibility of destroying the oil tanks and pipe lines and of acquiring

To face page 183.



The Manjil bridge.

the Caspian fleet or preventing it from falling into the enemy's hands. But the despatch of troops there or the assurance of armed help seemed to the Chief of the Imperial General Staff both inexpedient and dangerous.

On the 12th June Bicharakoff—with his Russians, one squadron 14th Hussars, two armoured cars of the 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery and two British aeroplanes—found his way to Enzeli barred at the bridge at Manjil by a Jangali force under German officers. After a vain attempt to parley on the part of the Germans, Bicharakoff attacked and dispersed the Jangalis without difficulty. Leaving the squadron 14th Hussars to hold the bridge, he then pushed on and reached Resht and Enzeli a few days later. General Dunsterville persuaded Bicharakoff to hold the road till British troops arrived; and, reporting this on the 14th, General Dunsterville hoped that a brigade each of infantry and artillery would be pushed up from Mesopotamia so that if opportunity offered he could show some force in Baku. He anticipated that he could arrange for their supply in Baku, and would require nothing except ordnance stores, comforts and some groceries from Mesopotamia.

About this time Bicharakoff decided to turn Bolshevik, as being the only means by which he could gain a footing in the Caucasus; and he accepted the post of commander of the Red Army in the Caucasus. After visiting Baku, where he reported the situation to be obscure owing to conflict between the pro-British and anti-British parties, Bicharakoff returned to Enzeli on the 22nd June and began to embark his troops.

Turkish troops occupied Tabriz on the 14th June and General Dunsterville sent a small detachment to Mianeh to watch for any further southward Turkish movement. At the same time he asked if General Marshall could send him any more troops, as, though the local tribes were friendly to us and hated the Turks, they were unlikely to resist a Turkish advance unless supported by British troops. General Marshall replied, as he reported to the War Office on the 18th, that General Dunsterville was not to count upon any increase to his force. General Marshall explained that he was already having extreme difficulty in supplying Dunsterforce with lubricants, petrol, ordnance stores, ammunition and spare parts* and could not guarantee to maintain any larger force. General Marshall also said that General Dunsterville had asked for authority to

* The rocky, mountainous road was causing excessive wear and tear on all mechanical transport vehicles.

improve and metal the road from Kazvin to Tabriz, which would take about five months. But he did not recommend this, as it would facilitate the movement south from Tabriz of a force larger than we ourselves could maintain at Kazvin. About a week later it was reported that Turkish troops had occupied a pass about twenty miles to the south-eastward of Tabriz, the Turkish force at Tabriz then being estimated as about 2,000 strong with two guns.

The advance of the British mobile motor column towards the Caspian was delayed by want of lubricants, and that of "A" Squadron of the Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade by its rubberine tyres* proving unequal to the heat and to the strain of the bad roads. But by the end of June General Dunsterville had secured the whole of the road to Enzeli,† in spite of active hostilities against his force by the Jangalis. The thickly wooded country and the wet rice fields favoured the guerilla tactics of this tribe. But the Hampshire and Gurkhas acquitted themselves well and impressed the Jangalis with a considerable respect for their fighting qualities. The armoured cars had also a good effect, though they were seldom able to move off the roads.

Reports from various sources confirmed the disagreement between Germans and Turks in the Caucasus and showed that their differences were serious. It was stated that the treaties made by the Turks with the Tartars, Georgians and Armenians were absolutely contrary to the previous agreement come to between the Germans and Turks, as was also the Turkish advance on Baku. The Georgians and Armenians were reported to have appealed to the Germans saying that the Turks had obliged them to sign these treaties by force; and the Germans, it was said, had requested the Turks to withdraw to their 1877 frontier and had also issued instructions to their local officers and agents to prevent a Turkish advance on Baku. This led to the Turks being unable to use the railway through Tiflis towards Baku and to their advancing mainly by road independently of the railway.‡ It was also reported that the Germans had received permission from the Bolshevik Government to occupy Baku, and that the Turks resented this and other

* These rubberine tyres were fitted to meet the intense cold of a Russian winter. In the heat the plastic filling solidified and broke back axles at an alarming rate.

† He had moved three platoons 1/4th Hampshire (on foot) from Hamadan to Kazvin.

‡ It was evidently due to this that the Turkish advance on Baku was as much delayed as it was.

German movements in the Caucasus as measures deliberately intended to limit Pan-Turkish schemes. This was felt all the more acutely, as the Turks realised how their past policy towards the Arabs had only resulted in inducing inveterate hostility towards themselves; and their movement to the Caucasus had been largely inspired by the hope of gaining some compensation for the loss of their Arabian provinces by the realisation of some of their plans for an expansion of the Ottoman Empire. Moreover, there was by this time a universal Turkish dislike of, if not hatred to, the Germans; and this had been enhanced by the recent failure of the German offensive to reach Paris and make a speedy end to the war.

The situation east of the Caspian gave us much cause for anxiety at this time. German and Turkish agents were active in Trans-Caspia, Turkestan, Bokhara and Afghanistan. The Bolsheviks had control of Tashkend and, to help them to deal with various opponents, were said to be enrolling and arming Austro-Hungarian prisoners of war, of whom there were known to be about thirty thousand in the area. The Amir of Afghanistan was maintaining a consistently friendly attitude towards us. But he was faced by a very difficult internal situation, owing to the existence of a large pro-Turkish party anxious for anti-British action. He was said to regard the Bolshevik activities in Bokhara with some apprehension, and there was a considerable Afghan party which favoured the seizure of the opportunity to regain territory taken from Afghanisatan by Russia in 1885. At the end of June, General Malleson left Simla to proceed via East Persia to Meshed to take charge there of the British Mission, whose object was to combat German and Turkish propaganda and efforts to organise hostilities against us or our Allies. Here, as in North-West Persia, our capacity was greatly limited by the long and difficult line of communications.*

On the 25th June the Secretary of State for India telegraphed to the Viceroy that the enemy advance in the Caucasus and the possibility of its further extension east of the Caspian had made it necessary to consider carefully the whole military situation in Central Asia and the delimitation of spheres of control between the Government of India and the War Office. After full consideration, His Majesty's Government had decided to allot to the Government of India the sphere comprising South and East Persia, Trans-Caspia and Turkestan. General Dunsterville's operations in North-West Persia would remain

* For further details, see "East Persia," by Brigadier-General W. E. R. Dickson.

under the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia, who would also be responsible for the oil-fields in Arabistan and the Bakhtiari country.

As regards South Persia, General Sykes' force remained invested in Shiraz by hostile tribes acting under the instigation of the anti-British elements in Persia and assisted by German agents, among whom Wassmuss especially was still active. Towards the end of June, however, General Sykes was able by political means to bring about dissensions among his opponents which in addition to the arrival of reinforcements, from India, at Bushire and Bandar Abbas promised to relieve the situation. There was some anxiety lest the Bakhtiaris should become involved and so endanger the oil-fields. But General Marshall was able to maintain cordial relations with the Bakhtiari chiefs; and, to assist the leading chief to restore security along the Ahwaz-Isfahan road, General Marshall placed a section of the 31st Mountain Battery at his disposal with most satisfactory results.*

As regards North-West Persia, the phase in the operations of Dunsterforce concluded by the securing of the road to Enzeli had been successful to a definite extent. Though too late to carry out its original object in the Caucasus, it had for the time being checked the advance of Turco-German agents and small armed bodies into Persia, had definitely stopped the German-Jangali movement southward and had maintained peace and security in the Kermanshah-Hamadan area. In fact, but for its restraining influence, the enemy's plans, to embarrass us by a rising in Persia as a preliminary to an attack on our Mesopotamian communications and to hostile action against our Indian frontier, would probably have reached a much more advanced stage. But much still remained to be done.

On the 28th June the War Office sent the following telegram to General Marshall:

> "H. M. Government are not satisfied that we are taking full advantage of our opportunities or that in North-West Persia and on the Caspian our maximum effort is being made. Whole situation should be reviewed by you in light of more recent information regarding lack of enemy activity in the plains of Mesopotamia and local supplies. Information shows that, at any rate for some time to come,

* General Marshall said in his Despatch: "it is worthy of record that this section of an Indian mountain battery in the hottest season of the year covered a distance of 395 miles in 28 marching days and returned with men and animals in most excellent condition."

the enemy do not intend to make a further effort in Mesopotamia. By the end of this year you will receive ten more Ford van companies, and considerably more transport should be released on completing the collection of the Hilla harvest. In order to increase your supply on the Resht* road, transport on other lines must be cut down to the barest limits. In short, a greater and more sustained effort must be made in North-West Persia. H.M. Government attach more importance to success in that sphere and to securing temporary control of the Caspian than you appear to appreciate. The War Office concurs in this view. You should push a railway survey towards Kermanshah beyond Khaniqin, advising me of practicability of ropeways if railways prove impossible. The Khaniqin—Resht road must be placed in the best possible state to stand traffic throughout next winter and depots must be energetically established along this road. Though there is no necessity to send troops to Tehran, it is necessary, in order to support our Minister's policy at Tehran and to induce Persian Government to subserve British interests, to show sufficient force at Kazvin. A company or two of British infantry is not sufficient for this purpose.

"Regarding Enzeli and Baku we are still in the dark and feel that Dunsterville is not keeping you fully advised with information on these places, for surely at Resht he must be able to communicate with Bicharakoff and get details regarding situation at Baku and Caspian shipping. Bearing in mind that a permanent occupation of Baku is not in question, you should call on Dunsterville for a full appreciation on these points. If we can get complete control of Caspian shipping, destroy the Baku pumping plant, pipe line and oil reservoirs, we shall have attained our present object. Dunsterville should be asked exactly what he requires in troops for this definite purpose, knowing as he presumably does your transport problems and the present capacity of the Hamadan—Resht road. We are unable to advise the War Cabinet regarding the despatch of troops to Baku until we receive such considered opinion from you and Dunsterville. While fully appreciating what your difficulties have been and the somewhat uncertain policy in the past involved by the rapid change of events, we are confident that you will realise now that your main attention must be directed towards Persia and the Caspian,

* Resht was close to Enzeli.

and that, in order to accomplish our objects at Baku, on the Caspian and at Tehran, a supreme effort will be made by you to utilise as many troops as you are able to maintain in North-West Persia."

On the 30th June General Marshall informed the War Office that their instructions had been communicated to General Dunsterville and that he would telegraph further when he knew General Dunsterville's latest opinion. In the meantime he was making every preparation to get ready the troops which General Dunsterville had previously asked for.* A telegram from the latter, dated the 28th, stated that, after a full discussion, Generals Dunsterville and Bicharakoff agreed that the situation in Baku was more favourable than had been represented and that there was a great possibility of organising its successful defence, saving the oil-fields and securing the fleet by using Bicharakoff's force as a nucleus. The most essential thing was to strengthen Bicharakoff with palpable proof of British support. About the 1st July four armoured cars† would embark for Baku and General Dunsterville proposed to send later a company of the 1/4th Hampshire to escort the British officers with Bicharakoff. General Dunsterville was very anxious to go to Baku himself, but must await a more favourable opportunity. Bicharakoff had promised him that this would not be delayed when all parties had agreed to receive him and sink dissension for the common object of offering resistance to the Turks.

On the 2nd July the War Office requested General Marshall to instruct General Dunsterville to send, as early as possible, a mission of two or three officers to report on the situation at Krasnovodsk and to ascertain whether a British force would be welcome there‡ and if local supplies were sufficient for its maintenance. If the results of this reconnaissance were favourable, the situation in Turkestan was such that H.M. Government were prepared to risk a small force. The Mission should also report on the possible purchase by H.M. Government of the total accumulated cotton crop in Trans-Caspia,§ should ascertain whether all enemy agents and prisoners of war there could be

* This apparently meant the artillery and infantry brigades asked for by General Dunsterville on the 14th to enable him to show some force in Baku.

† Of the Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade.

‡ A Turkestan Mission in the Caucasus had asked our Military Agent there that a small British force might be sent.

§ It was reported that two years' store of cotton lay on the Central Asia railway and that the chief German agent had failed to export it, though he had offered 58,000,000 roubles for it.

interned and should try and get in touch with Russian Turkestan, where the situation was believed to be as follows:—A British officer (Captain Jarvis) from Meshed was on his way to Askabad where there were Armenians; the Turkomans, if favourably approached, were believed to be friendly; the Bolsheviks' power was waning; the Bokharans were anti-Bolshevik and would combine with any power to get rid of them; and some of the 38,000 prisoners of war, controlled by the Bolsheviks at Askabad and Tashkend, were armed, but they were short of food.

This undertaking was to be a separate one from that for Baku, though eventually troops sent to Baku might have to be transferred to Krasnovodsk; and any troops sent to either place were to be at once replaced in North-West Persia by troops from Mesopotamia. Though, technically, Krasnovodsk was in the sphere under India it was to be temporarily under General Marshall's control.

On the 4th July General Marshall sent a further reply to the War office telegram of the 28th June, saying that his Director of Local Resources was already at Kazvin organising the purchase of supplies on a large scale. In the meantime the 39th Infantry Brigade had been ordered to move into Persia by battalions as transport became available; and they would be followed by a field artillery brigade (less a battery already *en route*), an engineer field company and a field ambulance. These troops would move by night and would have to take tents, as the maximum day temperature averaged about 116° F. and there were no trees. Part of the transport allotted for the collection and distribution of the Hilla harvest was being withdrawn and all available lorries, including those belonging to the artillery, were being utilised to supply Dunsterforce. General Marshall did not think that any metalling put on the spongy Persian road would stand lorry traffic in the winter rain and snow; at that season he would have to rely on Ford vans, carts and pack transport with their corresponding limitations.

The survey of a railway line beyond Khaniqin had been commenced a month previously,* but there were considerable difficulties. Work on the Persian road was well in hand, though labour was scarce. Telegraphic communication with General Dunsterville had broken down and his opinion was still awaited in regard to the War Office instructions under

* The extension of the railway from Table Mountain to Khaniqin was in progress, but it involved heavy work in the Jabal Hamrin.

reference. As General Dunsterville had repeatedly asserted that an infantry and an artillery brigade could live on the country east of Hamadan, the primary necessities were supplies *en route*, and subsequently petrol, lubricating oil, spares and ammunition, clothing, medical requirements, ordnance stores, etc. Of these the supply of petrol was the most difficult, but this should be easier if we held Baku. General Marshall concluded:

> "The wish of H.M. Government to show as much force as possible in North-West Persia is thoroughly realised and only space and the lack of means to overcome that space limits my efforts to carry out that policy."

On the 3rd July Bicharakoff accompanied by a few British officers and four British armoured cars sailed from Enzeli for Alyat, thirty-five miles south-west of Baku, intending, in co-operation with the Red forces from Baku, to seize the only bridge over the Kura river, 150 miles to the westward.

On the 5th July General Marshall repeated to the War Office a telegram of the 3rd from General Dunsterville, which said that the situation at Enzeli and Baku was most complex. He considered it advisable to avoid an open rupture with the anti-British Bolshevik Committee at Enzeli who had 300 Red Guards there but who did not dare to interfere with him. All classes at Baku appeared determined to defend it against the Turks and desired British aid, but the Bolsheviks objected to any attempt on our part to reach Baku and the Caspian. In these circumstances it was quite impossible for the time being to establish British control of the Caspian; and the only possibility of our securing a footing in Baku lay in our connection with Bicharakoff, who would deal fairly with us if we did so by him. At the same time Bicharakoff's position was extremely difficult owing to his connection with us. Consequently, so as not to alienate the Bolsheviks and make them force Bicharakoff to cut adrift from us, General Dunsterville had not taken over the Russian wireless at Enzeli and had limited the size of his detachment there to 50 rifles. But, as Bicharakoff's men and the Red Guards evacuated Enzeli, this detachment would be increased until we effectively controlled Enzeli. He intended a similar policy at Baku, but it was essential that we should have at Enzeli a force ready to seize an opportunity, which might occur at any moment through the downfall of the central Bolshevik Government or any other cause. All hope of controlling the Caspian would be lost if Baku fell.

The Turks seemed to be operating in three directions, namely against Baku, south of Tabriz and against the Jelus. General Dunsterville's information was that they intended to take Baku first; and to hamper their advance we should place a containing force before Tabriz and concentrate on assisting the Jelus. If General Dunsterville received a complete cavalry regiment and a mountain battery he considered that with an infantry and a field artillery brigade he would have sufficient troops, if they arrived before any radical change in the situation took place. He could not emphasise too strongly the necessity of hastening the despatch of this force in view of the precarious situation at Baku, Urmia and Tabriz and the possibility of rapid development in any or all of these places and of the lateness of the season.

General Marshall added that his arrangements for collecting transport were nearly completed. His infantry, whose leading unit would reach railhead that night, would be despatched first by motor transport, half a battalion at a time, and the guns and first and second line transport would follow by route march. The 8th Field Battery had reached Harunabad and two squadrons 14th Hussars were due at Hamadan next day. He had made arrangements to send ammunition to the Jelus.

The views of the general situation held at this period by the General Staff in India and the War Office are shown by the following summary of telegraphic correspondence which took place between the 4th and the 12th July. Telegraphing on the 4th, the Commander-in-Chief in India offered the following opinions based on such information as was at his disposal; and he asked for the comments of the Chief of the Imperial General Staff. India's increasing importance as a source of supplies and man-power seemed to offer a military objective which Germany might consider worth her serious attention. For she was aware that, if the anti-British war party in Afghanistan got the upper hand, the resultant disorder on the Indian frontier would encourage insecurity in India and cause a diminution of output of men and supplies; and as Germany desired commercial control of Central Asian markets up to the Indian border, she might be prepared to take considerable risks to make the Afghan and Persian frontiers her objective. For this, large German forces would not be necessary, as a Turkish expedition under German leadership might create the required disturbance.

No further development appeared probable on the Salonika front. We seemed likely to remain on the defensive in Palestine.

General Marshall's force, though not immediately threatened, was very extended and his communications on his right flank appeared to be perilously exposed, especially when winter came; while the enemy's effective line of communication to Tabriz, which was beyond our reach and open in winter, gave him an advantage which might enable him to dominate Tehran and menace General Marshall's right flank. In Trans-Caspia the situation was too chaotic to admit of any reliable forecast.

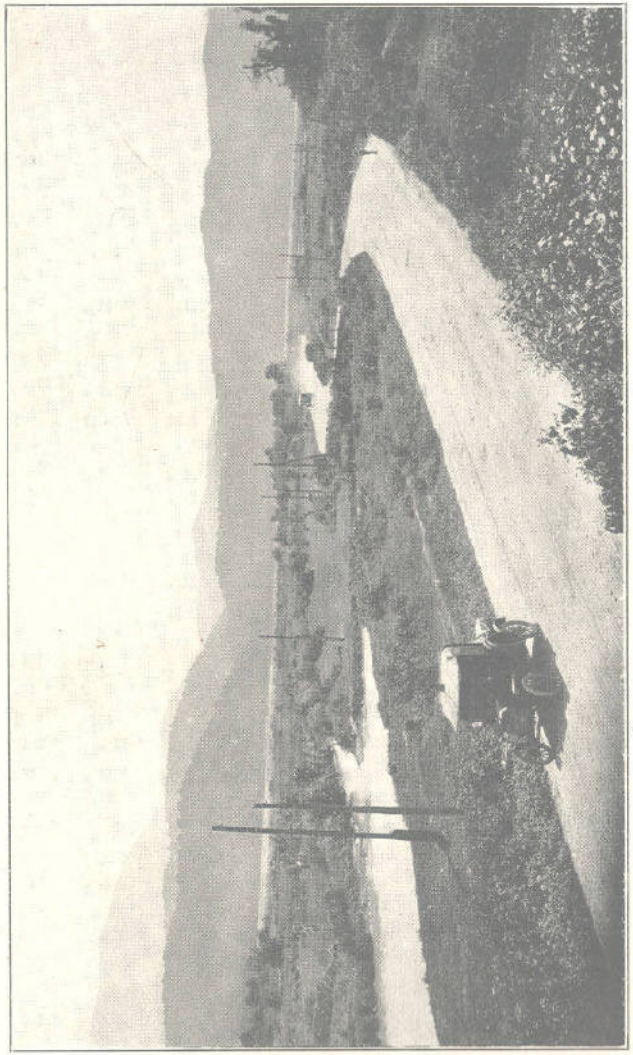
It thus appeared, said General Monro, that General Marshall's forces might be exposed to a dangerous extent and that, for the time being, the British strategic role in the East must be a defensive one. Consequently, to meet contingencies in the East, it seemed necessary to have a central reserve whose strength and distribution the Chief of the Imperial Staff alone could decide. For its location India had certain advantages.

Referring to these views General Marshall telegraphed on the 6th, offering the opinion that neither India nor the War Office seemed fully to realise the difficulties of keeping a force fed and equipped in Persia. He was verifying the estimate of supplies locally procurable, but he thought it improbable that a larger force than was then in Persia and under orders to go there could be maintained. For at least five months in the winter the road would be practicable only for light traffic, and he had therefore to send from Mesopotamia anything not obtainable in Persia for the accumulation of the necessary reserves.

It was not safe to rely on getting petrol from Baku. If he did not do so, he would have to supply it from Mesopotamia, and the large number of lorries required for its transport could not work after the wet weather set in. The supply of clothing and equipment would leave him no mechanical transport to spare and would take away some which he had reckoned on for the harvest in Mesopotamia. Further, as the evacuation of sick and wounded from Persia might be delayed for considerable periods in the winter, he would have to increase the medical units there and form a five months reserve of medical stores.

In conclusion he said that, owing to the extensive mechanical transport requirements of Persia, any advance beyond railhead on the Tigris and Euphrates fronts would be out of the question, while the IIIrd Corps would only have the mechanical transport then being used for its maintenance. It seemed unlikely that the additional ten Ford van companies promised him would be available before the end of the year.

To face page 192.



On the road between Manjil and Resht, looking towards Manjil.

On the 7th July General Marshall left Baghdad on leave to India, the senior officer present (Major-General H. D. Fanshawe, 18th Division) officiating in his place.

On the 10th the Commander-in-Chief in India, referring to General Marshall's wire of the 6th, telegraphed to the War Office that, as the original object of the railway extension to Tikrit seemed to have lost much, if not all, of its force, it seemed a waste of material and rolling stock, badly required elsewhere, to continue with it.

The War Office telegraphed on the 12th a summary of the latest available information relating to the various theatres in which India was interested. In Palestine the Germans seemed inclined to withdraw units and the Turco-German forces there seemed unlikely to reach the figure previously estimated (i.e., 85,000). It was, therefore, improbable that General Allenby would require strengthening unless it was for offensive operations in the winter ; and these would be contingent on the autumn situation in Europe. In the meantime the Hejaz was attracting considerable Turkish attention.

The situation in the Balkans had been favourably altered by a recent change in the Bulgarian Government, and this must cause Turkey uneasiness in the west at a time when she was concentrating her whole effort in the east.

General Marshall's position could be assailed by three routes, i.e., Caucasus—Tabriz, Nisibin—Mosul and Euphrates. Unless the enemy abandoned their Caucasus ambitions, which was unlikely, they had no troops available for a threat on either line. In fact, everything pointed to increasing discord between Turks and Germans in the Caucasus and to efforts on both sides to support their opposing policies by increasing troops in that area. Moreover, the total Turkish mobile reserve did not amount to more than three divisions or about 15,000 rifles. Consequently any serious threat against General Marshall must be by Germans and they were not in a position, until a decision was obtained in Europe, to undertake serious offensive operations in Mesopotamia or elsewhere out of Europe. It was, therefore, considered that General Marshall could rely on carrying out his policy without interruption by the enemy for some time to come, but naturally hampered by contingent problems of transport and space.

The situation in Afghanistan seemed to depend largely on the Amir's personal influence. The possibility of enemy agent intrigues was of course always present, but the arrival of even small batches of enemy troops on the Afghan border seemed

remote and no real danger of any considerable enemy strength being developed there was anticipated.

Even if the situation in Persia became worse, we could not afford to let it influence or hamper the prosecution of General Marshall's plans. So long as the Khaniqin—Enzeli road was secured, it was considered that no likely development in South or East Persia could seriously influence the military situation, except with regard to the oil-fields in Arabistan, whose security was vital.

Although the situation at Baku and on the Caspian was still obscure, there was no evidence to show any immediate danger of a Turkish or German advance through Trans-Caspia. The main factor there in the enemy's favour was the presence of 20,000 to 40,000 prisoners of war, but there were indications that efforts were being made to send these back to Europe. It was also clear that neither Turks nor Germans would be welcomed at Baku or in Trans-Caspia and that, in the latter area, they would probably encounter armed opposition if we encouraged it with some support. The situation depended, however, on our securing control of the Caspian.

The conclusions come to were: that the enemy penetration in the Caucasus was primarily economic; that his progress was hindered by the clashing of German and Turkish policy; that Turkish forces could not be made available for a serious threat in any theatre so long as they were exploiting the Caucasus; and that Germany would make no serious military effort in Asia till her main effort in Europe collapsed or was suspended—and of this early information would reach us. It appeared that the enemy was more embarrassed than we thought; and it seemed safest for us to adopt a bold policy in the East with what forces we had available.

The telegram concluded by saying that, although the security of India for a long time to come appeared to afford no ground for anxiety, our main interest in the East was to free her from embarrassment likely to reduce her power to assist in military undertakings elsewhere; and it was suggested that the threat to India would virtually disappear if Afghanistan would, in her own interests, actively defend her northern frontiers against the Central Powers.

All reports received by the British Government at this time continued to show that the Bolshevik situation was increasingly precarious and that the various separatist movements were gaining ground The Bolshevik leaders, however, were in open alliance with the Germans, who occupied such a large part of

Russia as to give them a strong economic hold on the country. But it seemed possible that Germany might organise a counter-revolution under her own auspices, which would attract the separatists to her. In any case, the necessity of immediate Allied intervention appeared to be imperative.

In the Caucasus, the Germans, who were estimated to have about 3,000 troops guarding the railway from Batum to Tiflis, were said to have prohibited Turkish troop movements by railway until the Turks withdrew from Georgia to the pre-arranged line. But the Turks, evidently intending to occupy Baku in defiance of the Germans, continued to advance in that direction by road from Alexandropol and Julfa. News was also received that the Turks contemplated an early advance into North-West Persia with their recently formed Ninth Army,* of which one army corps had been instructed to concentrate on the line Dilman—Khoi—Julfa with a detachment at Tabriz to watch British movements and prevent a junction between the British and Armenians. There was little news of the progress made in raising the "Islam Army,"† but the formation under Turkish auspices of the independent "Union of Caucasus Mountaineers" disclosed Turkish success in winning over many of the Mahomedan tribes. Parts of the weak 5th and 6th Turkish Divisions were practically surrounding the Jelus at Urmia, but the latter were successfully holding their own. On the 10th July a British aeroplane flew there from Mianeh and arranged with the Jelus to make a sortie to the south, in order to meet and take over at Sain Kala on the 22nd a convoy of ammunition for them sent by the British. A small British column from Kermanshah had also about this time moved out and occupied Sehneh, anticipating a Turkish movement from Sulaimaniya to seize that place.

In the meantime, Bicharakoff's plan to secure the bridge over the Kura river had failed, owing to the pusillanimous behaviour of the Red troops from Baku; and he had been obliged to fall

* The British understood that this army consisted of six or seven divisions, whose titular numbers were uncertain. It has since been ascertained from Turkish sources that this army was formed on the 9th June of the I and IV Caucasus Army Corps and that in July it consisted of the 5th, 9th, 10th and 11th Caucasus Divisions and of the 12th and 15th Divisions, the last having come recently from Rumania.

The title "Caucasus" was originally used in 1916 in the reorganisation of the much depleted Turkish Third Army, the 5th, 9th, 10th and 11th Army Corps, becoming "Caucasus" Divisions with the same titular numbers, and their original component divisions similarly becoming Caucasus regiments. The 36th and 37th Divisions were also named Caucasus divisions at this time. Subsequently, the term "Caucasus" was further applied to units and formations of the Islam Army.

† There was still uncertainty as to its constitution and scope.

back towards Baku, delaying the Turkish advance as much as possible. But he found that he could place no reliance on the Red troops,* and this gave rise to a feeling of hostility between them and his own men.

On the 15th July the War Office telegraphed to the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia that—owing partly to his unwillingness to break with the Bolsheviks at Enzeli and Baku and partly to his confidence in Bicharakoff which they did not entirely share—General Dunsterville seemed to be drifting into a policy of inactivity. If the General Officer Commanding considered it feasible, General Dunsterville might be authorised to strike at Bolshevik influence at Enzeli by the removal of dangerous individuals; and also, if the General Officer Commanding considered that circumstances rendered it desirable or possible, with due regard to the safety of the Hamadan—Enzeli road, for General Dunsterville to send officers or a small force to Baku, the War Office would be glad to see it done. Their information about the situation at Enzeli, Baku and on the Caspian was inadequate and they lacked information about the fleet and the shipping. The situation seemed to be less favourable than it was a fortnight previously and they asked urgently for all the information that General Dunsterville could send.

In reply to this, General Dunsterville denied that he was inactive. His endeavour to hold Enzeli might lead to open hostilities with the Bolsheviks, as they were infuriated at the refusal of H.M. Government to recognise them and were more firmly determined than ever not to accept British military aid in any form, except ammunition and money in return for petrol. Any form of activity by him in regard to Baku would be in actual conflict with the Bolsheviks. Bicharakoff's trustworthiness could only be tested by results, but General Dunsterville was sure that Bicharakoff was working in Allied interests; and if his plans succeeded he could save Baku and hold the Caspian, where the fleet was friendly to him. Over two hundred steamers were available on the Caspian at any time, but were useless to us so long as hostile Bolsheviks held all the ports.

In forwarding this reply to the War Office on the 18th July, General Fanshawe added his opinion that, as Bicharakoff's troops were then about one hundred miles west of Baku, our troops could enter that place only by consent of the

* A British armoured car fell into Turkish hands at this time owing to the Red troops having abandoned a supporting point against orders.

garrison and that—even if it were possible—to send a small force there would achieve no result.

General Dunsterville paid a visit to Baghdad from the 18th to the 20th July, going part of the way there and back by aeroplane and arriving back at Kazvin on the 24th. On the 19th the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia informed the War Office that, if the Jelus succeeded in meeting the convoy of ammunition from Hamadan, General Dunsterville would send some officers and non-commissioned officers to assist them, communication with them would be kept open and more ammunition sent them. General Dunsterville wished to send a mountain battery and 500 infantry to Urmia to assist them and to threaten Tabriz, so as to help Baku by diverting Turkish troops from the Caucasus. But he himself did not agree. Dunsterforce was already much split up, further dispersion seemed undesirable and, in any case, till their transport reached Hamadan about the 5th August, the 39th Brigade Infantry could not leave that place.* A threat to Tabriz, in which area the Turks had two divisions with two more reported on their way there, might precipitate a Turkish attack on the Jelus from the north and across Lake Urmia. In this case the Jelus would have to retire to the south, and it would be impossible to evacuate their population of 80,000.

Knowing the dilatoriness of the Turks and that they were fully occupied in the Caucasus, the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia did not wish to bring matters to a head by sending troops where he would find it very difficult to maintain them; and he preferred to limit his assistance to arms, ammunition and money. It was true that this limited assistance would not prevent the ultimate defeat and probable massacre of the Jelus if the Turks made an attack on them in force. But if it was our policy to protect them in every way possible, this could best be done by an advance, when the weather permitted, to Altun Köpri, if transport was available. For, once we were established on the Little Zab, the Turks would evacuate Sulaimaniya and we should be in a better position to establish touch with the Jelus and to help them. Finally, as the Turkish troops on the Baku front were different† from those in the Tabriz area, the General Officer Commanding did not think that any action about Urmia would affect the Baku situation.

* By the 16th July about 1,100 infantry of the 39th Brigade had reached Hamadan.

† This expression in the telegram presumably refers to the reports that the Turks on the Baku front belonged to a different army to those in the Tabriz area.

On the same day the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia informed the War Office that he had heard from Mr. McDonell* at Baku that, at a meeting of all political parties there, the majority had voted in favour of asking for British assistance, though the local Bolshevik Government had voted against it; and that probably the fleet would shortly visit Enzeli and ask for British assistance, which Mr. McDonell hoped would be granted by embarking troops to land at Alyat. Bicharakoff's agents at Baku asked for three battalions and as many armoured cars and aeroplanes as possible.

In view of this, General Fanshawe said that he had decided, after consulting General Dunsterville, to allow him to send one battalion to Enzeli for despatch to Baku, to be followed as soon as possible by a field battery and by any armoured cars that were mobile. Arrangements would also be made to send to Enzeli at least one battalion of the brigade then arriving at Hamadan, in case the despatch of further reinforcements was required to meet the situation at Baku.

General Fanshawe also explained that the lack of information complained of by the War Office was due to the fact that General Dunsterville had been dependent on the Russian wireless, which was in Bolshevik hands; and that General Dunsterville had not deemed it advisable to precipitate matters and incur their hostility by seizing it. It would probably be possible to do so shortly, and in the meantine sufficient wagon sets of wireless were being sent to render General Dunsterville independent.†

On the 20th July the War Office replied that, though their information regarding Baku and the Caucasus was too fragmentary for them to form a clear idea of the situation, they concurred in General Fanshawe's action in sending one or two

* Mr. A. E. R. McDonell was British Vice-Consul at Baku and had been employed since December 1917 on special service at Tiflis, which he had recently had to leave owing to the enemy's arrival there.

† At the same time General Fanshawe asked for troops to be sent to Mesopotamia, for operations there in the autumn and winter, to replace those employed with Dunsterforce. Two days later the War Office replied that they did not anticipate that the situation, either north of Baghdad or in Persia, justified any addition to the force and they required all the units that Mesopotamia could spare to relieve British units for the Western Front. They suggested, however, the despatch to Mesopotamia of a mountain artillery brigade and a company of Sappers and Miners from India, while they themselves might be able to send the equivalent of two Australian mounted brigades. At this time, it may be noted, correspondence was taking place regarding the utilisation of half a million men, which it was hoped to raise in India within the next twelve months, to release more British troops for France.

battalions, a battery and armoured cars to Alyat. It appeared desirable that General Dunsterville should accompany this force to take command, and it was essential that before it started Enzeli should be placed under sole British control. It was, further, most essential that, so long as the expedition remained in the Caucasus, the shipping required for its eventual movement should be retained under General Dunsterville's control. He might also be able to negotiate for the remainder of the Fleet, always remembering that the main object of our efforts, and the justification for the risk we were prepared to take, was the control of the Caspian.

On the same and the next day the Commander-in-Chief in India sent the War Office two telegrams containing information which an officer belonging to the British Mission at Meshed had brought back there two days previously after a visit to Baku. The Baku army of 10,000 men was untrained, without discipline or organisation, very short of officers and had no reserves. Provisions were scanty and though there was plenty of ammunition it was badly distributed. The Turkish forces attacking Baku were about 15,000 strong, of whom 3,000 to 5,000 only were regulars. The Germans were said to be landing a division at Batum and Poti with a view to attacking Baku, but it was assumed that until they were in full strength no serious effort would be made to capture it. In the meantime they were obtaining from Baku all the oil and cotton they required.

British officers were given every facility for travelling on the Central Asia railway, and, so long as we were in no way identified with any projects for the restoration of the monarchy, general good feeling towards us prevailed. Mr. McDonell at Baku was in an extremely difficult position, being practically single-handed. He had been tried for his life by the Bolsheviks on two occasions, but he still had great influence locally. The greater part of the crews of the Caspian fleet were anti-Bolshevik and we ought to be able to gain them over to our side. All the large steamers on the Krasnovodsk-Baku run had been removed to the Volga, but small steamers, each carrying about one hundred passengers, still maintained a daily service. The Armenians, by their words and actions, had done us incalculable injury by giving rise to the belief that we had adopted in the Caucasus an anti-Mahomedan policy. The Baku Bolsheviks were in German pay and would obstruct us as much as possible, but their position was insecure and would be settled by active measures by us. It was said that the

Germans, after taking Baku, intended to traverse Trans-Caspia and Turkestan and raise Afghanistan against us.

The officer's general impression was that the situation was critical and could only be saved by the prompt appearance at Baku of British forces.

On the 20th July, about 2,500 Jangalis, assisted by some Germans and Austrians, the whole under command of a German (von Passchen), attacked the British detachment at Resht, a town with a seven-mile perimeter surrounded by thick jungle. The British detachment, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Matthews, consisted of about 300 rifles 1/4th Hampshire, 150 rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas, two mountain guns and two armoured cars, its main body being encamped outside the town. It also had a party of twenty rifles holding the British Consulate in the town and another small party holding the Bank. The main assault fell on our camp outside the town, but although the enemy made several attacks they were all unsuccessful. When the enemy finally desisted he left over 100 of his dead on the ground and 50 prisoners, including several Austrians, in our hands.

In the meantime, however, a large body of the enemy had penetrated into the town and attacked the British Consulate. This was surrounded and overlooked by houses and could only be reached from our camp, without a long detour outside the town, through a maze of narrow and tortuous streets. Colonel Matthews, learning early in the morning of the attack on the Consulate, decided to effect its relief by the direct route and despatched a party (under Captain McCleverty) of the 1/2nd Gurkhas with an armoured car to do so. This party, skilfully handled and after a good deal of street fighting, succeeded in reaching the Consulate just in time and in bringing off its personnel and garrison.

Our total casualities during the day were 51, and our success would have been more decisive if it had been possible to follow the enemy in pursuit. But this was prohibited by the thick jungle, the small number of our troops and the fact that a considerable body of the enemy was still at dusk in possession of a great part of the town.

During the next two days, our troops, assisted by two aeroplanes from Kazvin, were occupied in a good deal of street fighting. But " by the end of the month Resht was finally cleared of all signs of active Jangali opposition and came under our effective administration "* The Jangalis gave us little

* " The Adventures of Dunsterforce," by General Dunsterville.

further trouble and Kuchik Khan negotiated for peace, with the result that he agreed on the 12th August, to cease hostilities.

On the 23rd July the War Office telegraphed to the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia expressing dissatisfaction at the manner in which General Dunsterville was endeavouring to counter the enemy's plans on the Caspian, where it appeared to them that, owing mainly to his attitude towards the Bolsheviks, the situation was gradually slipping from our grasp. They gave orders that Enzeli was to be occupied at once and Bolshevik influence there eliminated and that a mission was also to be sent to Krasnovodsk.

Replying on the 25th, General Fanshawe, admitted that information had been meagre, but there had been great difficulties in transmission and he did not consider that General Dunsterville was to blame. Further, with the few troops at his disposal to secure the 270 miles of road between Hamadan and Enzeli, he had been unable to show strength anywhere; while his movements had been limited by the shortage of petrol and the unsuitable tyres of the Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade. He should, however, be able shortly to eradicate Bolshevik influence from Enzeli. He had hitherto had to remain on good terms with the Bolsheviks, owing to his weakness in troops and also in order to help Bicharakoff in what had been a very delicate situation.*

In the meantime, the convoy of ammunition for the Jelus, escorted by the 14th Hussars (less two squadrons) and a section 15th Machine Gun Squadron, had reached Sain Kala, as arranged, on the 23rd July. But the Jelus had not arrived ; and after a few days, information being received that they had been unable to break through, the convoy and its escort moved back, first, about forty miles towards Bijar to a locality more suited for defence and with better supply facilities, and then to Bijar. The Turkish force about Sauj Bulag was said to have increased to about 3,000 combatants.

By the 26th July, the 8th Field Battery had reached Hamadan and the leading echelon (1,100 rifles in motor lorries) of the 39th Infantry Brigade was about half way between Hamadan and Kazvin ; the road from Khaniqin to Hamadan was held by troops of the 14th Division ; and there was a detachment

* It is noteworthy that Mr. McDonell also deprecated strongly at this time any forced action against the Enzeli Bolsheviks ; and it is not clear whether the War Office realised the character and extent of the Armenian-Bolshevik alliance formed with a view to opposing the Turks and to restoring Russian dominion over Trans-Caucasia.

at Sehneh of a squadron 14th Hussars, a section 21st Mountain Battery and one hundred rifles 1/4th Hampshire.

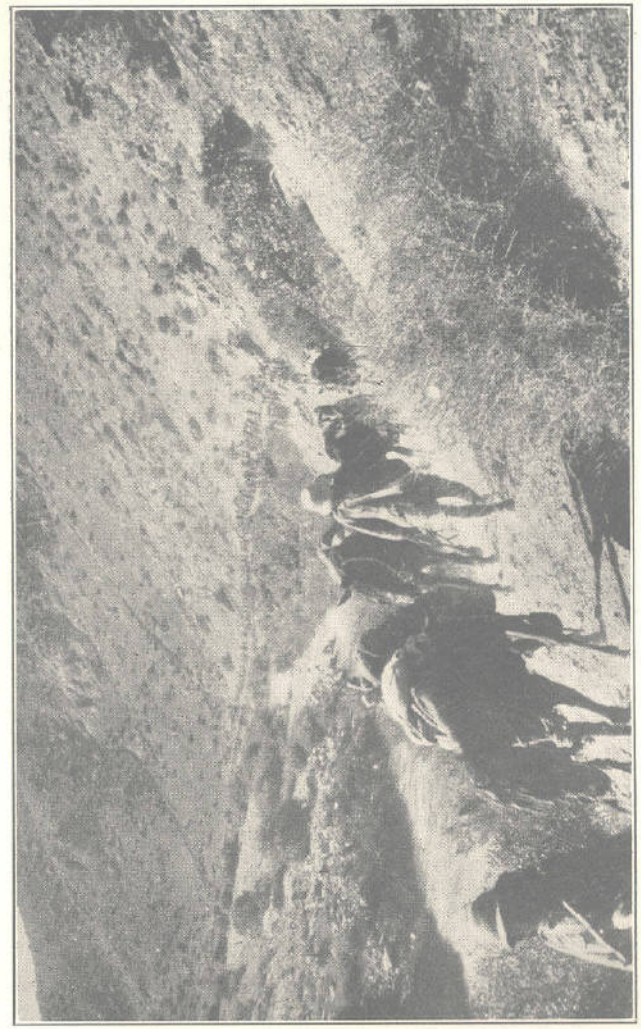
With a view to gaining naval control of the Caspian the Commander-in-Chief, East Indies, had been instructed on the 10th July by the Admiralty (following discussions with the local naval authorities) to consult with the General Officer Commanding in Mesopotamia as to establishing a seaplane base at Enzeli, removing gunboats and as many ships as possible from Baku to Enzeli, and arming merchant ships with 4.7-inch guns. He was also, if necessary, to send a naval officer to obtain information at Enzeli. Soon after this, a party of five naval officers and 86 ratings, with twelve guns, mountings and ammunition, were sent by the Naval Commander-in-Chief from Bombay to Mesopotamia; and Commodore D. T. Norris, already in Baghdad, was placed in charge of naval operations in the Caspian and was ordered to proceed at once to Resht. Two naval parties from the *Moth* and *Mantis*, with one 4-inch and two 12-pounder guns,* left Baghdad on the 27th July for the Caspian and were followed next day by Commodore Norris.

The Turks had, in the meanwhile, been pushing forward towards Baku. The only really effective resistance to their advance was that offered by Bicharakoff's men, who held together in spite of attempts to destroy their discipline and of intrigues against their commander by the Bolsheviks, who showed an increasing distrust of Bicharakoff's intentions. On the 25th July, however, when the situation appeared hopeless, the best men of the Red Army came to Bicharakoff and promised to re-organise their troops. Early next morning, as the result of an all-night sitting, all the Bolshevik members of the Baku Government resigned; and the new Government, terming itself Centro-Caspian, asked for British aid and handed over supreme military command to Bicharakoff.

In telegraphing the results of this *coup d'état* to General Dunsterville, Colonel Clutterbuck† said that Bicharakoff's intention was to hold the line till help came and that the Centro-Caspian Government requested that staff officers, instructors and troops should be sent and that the first instalment, even though small, should come at once. Transports for them had already been sent to Enzeli and the fleet was on our side.

* These guns were conveyed by lorry with considerable difficulty.
† Liaison officer with Bicharakoff.

To face page 202.



14th Hussars on the march to Sehneh.

General Dunsterville, although he had only a few officers* and troops available, decided to accept the invitation from Baku by sending a small party of the 1/4th Hampshire with Colonel C. B. Stokes to announce the impending arrival of other troops. This information, together with an extract from Colonel Clutterbuck's telegram of the 26th July, was telegraphed to the War Office by General Fanshawe on the 29th. On that day the first lorry echelon of the 39th Infantry Brigade was still short of Kazvin, the second lorry echelon was due at Hamadan and the third lorry echelon was at railhead, while the guns and transport marching by road in two echelons were due at Hamadan on the 4th and 5th August.

On the 30th and 31st July, before Colonel Stokes' party could leave, General Dunsterville received reports from Baku showing that the town would be in enemy hands before British troops could arrive and that Bicharakoff's detachment was moving northwards towards Derbend, where Bicharakoff recommended that Dunsterforce troops should land, instead of at Baku.† It appears that when these reports were sent from Baku the Turks were in full possession of the heights above it and were within 3,000 yards of the wharves with no troops opposing them. But, after the reports had been sent, they fled suddenly for some unexplained reason and this emboldened the Baku local forces to pursue them. It may be noted, however, that these men being without adequate military control did not follow up the Turks far enough to take proper advantage of their retreat and thus allowed them to retain possession of the high ground west of the railway, an invaluable position from which it was subsequently found impossible to dislodge them.

General Dunsterville offers the opinion that the movement northward of Bicharakoff's detachment,‡ though apparently justifiable at the time, was a mistake which contributed mainly to the ultimate fall of Baku. On the other hand, Bicharakoff's position had become very critical owing to the failure of the Baku leaders to provide him either with ammunition or supplies ; he had cause to fear treachery on their part and he saw no

* Most of the special duty officers and non-commissioned officers of his Mission were by this time employed on work in Persia from which they could not be spared.

† This proposal was not agreed to by us.

‡ Bicharakoff was accompanied by the British officers with his detachment and by three armoured cars of the Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade under Captain Crossing. They returned to Enzeli at the end of September, when Bicharakoff telegraphed a testimonial to the gallantry they had displayed during the operations.

hope of stopping the Turkish advance. There were indications also that they were moving to cut him off from the northward. He decided, therefore, to maintain his force by withdrawing it towards Derbend where he hoped British troops would join him, and in this case, if Baku still held out, he could give it assistance by operating against the Turkish left flank.

General Malleson at Meshed, learning from General Dunsterville that the fall of Baku was imminent, suggested that the British troops previously destined for Baku should be sent to Krasnovodsk, where we might be able to maintain them by sea as the Caspian fleet was reported to be on our side. At this period the Bolsheviks in Turkestan were threatened from several sides, and we had moved a small detachment of Indian troops (175 rifles of the 19th Punjabis) from Meshed to the Persian frontier, with a view to affording some support to the Menshevik party in their efforts to keep the Bolsheviks out of Trans-Caspia. The War Office were inclined to agree to General Malleson's proposal and requested General Fanshawe to consider it should Baku fall. But General Dunsterville, having heard of the fate of the Turkish attack on Baku, had already sent Colonel Stokes and a small party there* to report on the situation and had decided that, if there appeared to be a reasonable chance of saving the town, the first portion of the 7th North Staffordshire, due at Enzeli on the 3rd August, should leave on the 4th for Baku, to be followed by the remainder of the battalion as it arrived.†

Colonel Stokes reached Baku on the 4th August and, even though the small size of his detachment was very disappointing to the Baku authorities, his arrival put a fresh spirit into the defence. He thereupon telegraphed to General Dunsterville asking that the first party of the North Staffordshire should be despatched, as from a military standpoint the situation was more hopeful than he had anticipated. His view of the situation appeared to be justified on the 5th August by the way in which the local troops, inspired by his arrival, beat off a Turkish attack that day.

On the 4th August, Lieutenant-Colonel Keyworth, R.A., with a party of artillery officers and non-commissioned officers, two armoured cars, half a machine gun company formed of

* 44 officers and men, 1/4th Hampshire.

† It is noteworthy that the Caspian fleet, which was friendly to Bicharakoff rather than to us, might not have agreed to the move of our troops to Krasnovodsk, this being contrary to Bicharakoff's instructions to them, which were to bring the British troops to Derbend.

the personnel of "B" and "C" Squadrons Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade* and 150 rifles 7th North Staffordshire, sailed from Enzeli, reaching Baku next day, when Colonel Keyworth took over command of the British troops there. On the same day General Dunsterville left Kazvin with his headquarters for Enzeli, where the Bolshevik leaders had just been arrested by us.† On the 6th August a second party, consisting of two armoured cars, two machine gun sections and 130 rifles 7th North Staffordshire, left Enzeli for Baku; and on the same day a small mission under Colonel Battine reached Krasnovodsk.

On the 5th Colonel Stokes reported that he had received no reply to telegrams he had sent to Bicharakoff, but that the fleet had received a message saying that he was coming to Baku. Colonel Stokes considered that, if Bicharakoff arrived within two days, Baku might be saved with British assistance and he recommended the despatch there of a British infantry brigade with artillery. The local defence troops, about 8,000 in number, were, he said, under five different political organisations independent of one another, but he hoped to arrange co-ordination of their operations under a central control. In the event of the fall of Baku, arrangements—which could not, however, be relied on implicitly—had been made for all shipping to leave there for Krasnovodsk, Asterabad and Enzeli. But it had been found impossible to arrange for the destruction of the oil-fields, owing to the opposition of the pro-Turkish Tartar workmen and a number of Russians who were unwilling to destroy their means of livelihood.

In the meantime, in order to have sufficient shipping to withdraw the British troops from Baku in case of necessity, General Dunsterville had secured at Enzeli the steamer *President Kruger* and Colonel Stokes at Baku had secured the *Kursk* and the *Argo*. The Centro-Caspian Government tried on several occasions to persuade General Dunsterville to give up control of these ships, but he managed to maintain his hold on them to the end, keeping armed British guards on board them to ensure it.

On the 7th August Colonel Keyworth telegraphed that the Baku local forces had no organisation and that the whole of Dunsterforce was required at Baku if the situation was to be

* Their armoured cars had either not yet arrived or were immobile.

† Documentary evidence of their treacherous complicity with the Jangalis had been obtained and this enabled General Dunsterville to justify their arrest to the Baku Government.

saved. There were sufficient supplies at Baku for 2,000 British troops; but the friendly Centro-Caspian Government was in a precarious situation and might come in conflict with the Bolsheviks at any moment. General Dunsterville thereupon authorised Colonel Keyworth to support, if necessary with force, the Centro-Caspian Government against the Bolsheviks.

It appears that on the 2nd August a Bolshevik leader, Petroff, had arrived in Baku, apparently from Astrakhan, with 1,200 men and two guns and had succeeded in obtaining the release of the Bolshevik leaders who had been confined after the *coup d'état*. But although Petroff had given valuable aid in defending the town against the Turkish attack on the 5th August,* he and his colleagues were working ceaselessly to re-establish Bolshevik control.

In the meantime at Urmia the Jelus had encountered disaster. During the absence of 2,000 of their men, who under their leader Aga Petross had met our convoy of ammunition between Sain Kala and Bijar on the 3rd August, the Turks attacked Urmia. Regarding resistance as hopeless, the whole Jelu population of about 80,000 left their homes and fled southward after Petross, suffering very great losses from the pursuing enemy as well as from sickness and privation. The enemy pursuit was checked at Sain Kala by the 14th Hussars, but only some 50,000 Jelus succeeded in reaching Bijar. From there the majority were evacuated by batches to a large refugee camp formed for them at Baquba, but men capable of bearing arms were formed at Hamadan under British officers and non-commissioned officers into four battalions termed the Urmia Brigade, while other men were employed on work such as road-making. The feeding of this large mass of men, women and children almost depleted the reserve of supplies which had been so laboriously built up for the use of our troops in the winter; and, as they had no idea of discipline or organisation, their movement, which was not an easy matter to arrange,† practically stopped all troop movements into Persia for the time being.

This Jelu retreat added to the difficulties of the military situation, for it would free more Turkish troops to advance southward into Persia against our vulnerable line of communication with the Caspian. The Turks, who had at least one division

* Although the Bolsheviks did not object to a German occupation, they did object to one by the Turks.

† Its successful accomplishment was due to the good work of the British staff under Colonel A. W. H. M. Moens, on the Persian Line of Communication.

at Tabriz and two others not far to its northward, had been joined by some Persian democrats, in sympathy with Turkish Pan-Islamic ideas, who were assisting them by raising irregulars and conducting anti-British propaganda among the local tribes. The presence of Persian Cossacks southward of Tabriz did nothing to ease the situation, as they would not arrest enemy agents, were unlikely to oppose an enemy advance and were detested, owing to their tyrannical methods, by the local inhabitants. On the other hand, bodies of Armenians in the Erivan and Julfa areas were still holding out against the Turks and causing them embarrassment, but were too far away for us to be able to assist them; and the Turks were still mainly occupied in their attempt to take Baku. Moreover, the growing friction with Bulgaria, the reports from Palestine that General Allenby was preparing for a further advance and the German situation in France were all bound to cause them anxiety.

Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey says in "Yilderim" that, when he received orders in July, 1918, to hand over command of the 46th Division on the Palestine front and to proceed to join the Ninth Army in the Caucasus as Chief of Staff, he quite failed to understand why this new army had been formed for a new objective. When he reached Constantinople at the beginning of August he could not persuade Enver,* who seemed convinced that the requirements of the Western Front would prevent General Allenby attacking, of the danger threatening the Palestine front; while General von Seckt, the Chief of Staff at Turkish General Headquarters, said that it was necessary to capture Enzeli and for the Ninth Army, whose advanced guard was at Tabriz, to seize Kurdistan, so as to threaten the British effectively and retake Baghdad. He further said, in the course of the discussion, that, even if the Sixth Army was forced to retire and Mosul was lost, the Ninth Army would continue its operations towards Persia. Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey says that he considered this plan to retake Baghdad more ill-advised that the 1917 project for the Yilderim army; and he hints that Enver's plans for occupying the greater part of the Caucasus were so objected to by the Germans that they contemplated the possible annihilation of the Ninth Army in Kurdistan with equanimity. At this period Halil Pasha had handed over control in Mesopotamia to Ali Ihsan, and proceeded to take over a command in the

* It is noteworthy that by this time Enver seems to have lost much of his popularity and influence.

Caucasus; and as he was a relation of Enver's as was Nuri Pasha,* this appointment added confirmation to the supposition that the Caucasus project was due to the Pan-Turkish ambitions of the Committee of Union and Progress of which Enver at that time was one of the principal representatives.

Further light is cast on the enemy's views by an article† by Colonel Freiherr von der Goltz in the 1923 issue of "Zwischen Kaukasus und Sinai" (the annual of the "Bund der Asienkampfer"). He was ordered from the Western Front in July 1918, to report himself at Tiflis to General von Kress, the head of the German Mission in the Caucasus; and in Berlin he was told that German assistance had been asked for by the Georgian Republic, but that it was also essential in furtherance of the war for Germany to obtain manganese from Georgia and oil from Baku. Moreover, a German victory in France did not necessarily imply the surrender of Great Britain and America; and the occupation of Trans-Caucasia afforded an avenue which made possible a subsequent attack on British possessions in Asia. On reaching the Crimea he learnt that the Turks, in defiance of the compact with Germany, were attacking Baku. In view of the Turkish weakness and their situation in Mesopotamia and Palestine, the only explanation of their conduct he could imagine was that they foresaw the loss of their Arabian provinces and looked to occupation of the Caucasus as giving them something to bargain with at the Peace Conference.

In Persia generally the situation had by this time taken a turn more favourable to us. At the beginning of July General Sykes' force at Shiraz under Colonel Orton inflicted a decisive defeat on his main opponent, whose authority had already been weakened by political measures and by the preparations for British operations from Bushire; and in the middle of July matters were further improved by the operations of a column from Shiraz which effected the relief of a British detachment besieged at Abadeh. These operations in South Persia, the loyal adherence of the Bakhtiaris to their agreement to safeguard the oilfields in Arabistan, our activities in North-West Persia, the defeat of the Jangalis and the obvious setback to the Germans on their Western Front, all combined to induce

* It is said that the formation of the Islam Army, which Nuri commanded and which was Enver's creation, was never approved by any order of the Turkish Government.

† "Meine Entsendung nach Baku."

the Shah to dismiss his anti-British Government and to appoint one more friendly to us.*

The doubts whether we could save Baku and the necessity for preventing the enemy gaining control of the Caspian increased the importance of the measures we were taking in Trans-Caspia. It is impossible in the space available to explain in any detail the various factors affecting the situation, which appeared to be as chaotic and complicated as that in the Caucasus. Briefly, the Trans-Caspian Government was formed by members of the Russian Menshevik party† and controlled the area along the railway from the Caspian to the eastward of Merv. Assisted by some of the Turkoman tribes, the Mensheviks were trying to prevent the Bolsheviks, who were established strongly at Tashkend and whose forces largely consisted of enemy prisoners of war of low *moral*,‡ from ousting them and gaining the Caspian. The Mensheviks were also nervous lest the Turkomans, of their own accord or under Turkish instigation, should obtain control of Trans-Caspia. Among both Mensheviks and Turkomans were many who were distrustful of British intentions. A widespread anti-Bolshevik movement which was in progress in Central Asia rendered the Bolshevik control of part of Turkestan precarious and they were nervous of the Bokharans and Afghans, whose attitude, though neutral for the time being, was uncertain.

Owing to the intrigues rampant everywhere, which made it very difficult to ascertain the truth, General Malleson at Meshed had a very difficult problem to face.§ It had been impossible to give him any clear-cut instructions, while, owing to the long and difficult line of communication connecting him with India, it was impracticable to maintain more than a very small force of troops in Khurasan. At the beginning of August he had been authorised to afford the Trans-Caspian Government support in their struggle against the Bolsheviks; and for this purpose, among other measures, he had moved a detachment of 175 rifles of the 19th Punjabis and a machine gun section to the Persian frontier, where they would threaten the flank of a Bolshevik advance towards the Caspian. In the first week of August, a Bolshevik force advanced against the Merv

* Vossuq-ed-Douleh was appointed Prime Minister on the 7th August.

† The Russians at Askabad, though just as revolutionary in spirit, had quarrelled with the Bolsheviks and had set up their own "committee," calling themselves Mensheviks.

‡ They were unable to return to their homes as the railways to Europe were still partly in the hands of loyal Russian elements.

§ This was rendered no easier by the fact that enemy agents in British uniforms were impersonating British political and military officers in the area under his control.

oasis; and, as the Trans-Caspian Government depended on this area for supplies and Turkoman support, it appealed for support to General Malleson. He sent the machine gun section to the east of Merv to assist the Trans-Caspian forces and, by depleting Meshed and its vicinity of troops, arranged to increase the 19th Punjabis' detachment on the frontier to 500 rifles. At the same time he telegraphed to India urging that a British detachment should be sent from Enzeli to Krasnovodsk, which the Trans-Caspian Government feared would be seized by Bolsheviks from Astrakhan. General Malleson said that he could send the 19th Punjabis' detachment to Krasnovodsk from the Persian frontier, but had no guns to send with it and guns were a prime necessity. On the 12th August the Bolsheviks defeated the Trans-Caspian forces and drove them through Merv to Dushak, their retreat only being saved from degenerating into a disastrous rout by the fine work of the Indian machine gun section.

On the 12th August, in a review of the situation telegraphed to the War Office, General Cobbe* said that there were then about 400 British troops in Baku (who had taken over a section of the defences), that three more companies would reach there in a few days and that the total would be made up to two battalions as soon as the mechanical transport could be put in running order. A third battalion was also being sent to Enzeli for such use as the situation might demand; and an advanced party of a field battery had sailed for Baku, the remainder of the battery being on the road between Kazvin and Enzeli.

Colonels Keyworth and Stokes reported that the troops in Baku other than British were unreliable and that to hold the town a British division would be required. As the War Office had limited the force for Baku to two battalions and a battery, General Dunsterville asked that before he went there he should be told definitely what troops would be sent, as, if these were insufficient, it would be necessary to decide whether Baku was to be evacuated or whether we should hold out there as long as possible. It might be possible, he said, to arrange at once for the evacution, but this would mean the immediate surrender of the Baku garrison and the complete collapse of British prestige and influence. On the other hand, if we held Baku as long as possible it would mean the ultimate loss of all British troops there, as it would be impossible, once the

* On return from leave, General Cobbe had assumed officiating command in Mesopotamia.

enemy began to press the attack, to withdraw these troops; for the Centro-Caspian Government, who controlled the shipping and the fleet, would not assist us.

General Dunsterville also said that he had definitely promised Colonel Battine to despatch troops to Krasnovodsk, and he wished to send 100 infantry there at once while there was an opportunity of doing so, it being unlikely that he would be able to send them from Baku if it fell.

General Cobbe had sent orders on the previous day to General Dunsterville to go to Baku, with the next echelon of infantry, to try to co-ordinate operations there and to bear in mind that his main object was to seize as much shipping as possible and to deny oil to the enemy. Everything appeared to depend on a friendly fleet or on our seizing sufficient ships to evacuate our troops in case of necessity and General Dunsterville should be on the spot to decide this.

Having regard to all the facts, including information that the Turks, besides reinforcing their Baku force, had other troops within their reach, General Cobbe recommended that the British force sent to Baku should be limited to two or three infantry battalions and aeroplanes. Artillery should not be sent as it would be difficult to evacuate and, moreover, the Turks attacking there were said to be short of guns. As regards Krasnovodsk, where the reports both as to water and supplies were not reassuring, he asked whether he or General Malleson was to send a detachment of infantry. He hoped that he would not be ordered to send artillery, which could only take its equipment ammunition with it, as he already had too little ammunition on the spot to meet the contingency of a Turkish advance southwards from Urmia and Tabriz, where they were then concentrating. He assumed that General Malleson would be responsible for supplies at Krasnovodsk from the local resources of Trans-Caspia.

In his opinion, the vital factor was either the complete control by us of the Caspian shipping, or the maintenance of such friendly relations with the fleet as would give us the use of shipping to meet our requirements; and he hoped that General Dunsterville would be able to arrange this by other measures than force. With shipping available, arrangements could be made to bomb the Baku oil fields and to prevent the movement of Bolsheviks from Astrakhan to Krasnovodsk. But, without the means of evacuating Baku, any attempt to destroy the oilfields would appear to be inadvisable. It was also to be

remembered that we could only maintain shipping so long as we were able to get fuel from Baku.

Pending further instructions he was ordering General Dunsterville to complete the force at Baku to two battalions, to concentrate a third battalion and a battery at Enzeli and to await orders regarding Krasnovodsk.

On the 13th August General Dunsterville reported that in a letter of the 9th Colonel Stokes said that Bicharakoff would probably return to Baku if he could, but that for the time being he was engaged with a local rising of the Daghestanis.

On the 14th August the War Office telegraphed to India and Mesopotamia that they considered it undesirable to lay down a detailed policy for General Malleson. Our three principal objectives were: control of the Caspian shipping, the occupation of Baku as long as there was a hope of holding it, and the permanent occupation of Krasnovodsk. The object of occupying Baku was primarily to control the Caspian shipping and secondarily, if it was impossible to effect its continued occupation, to render the oil fields and port useless to the enemy for many months. When this was done, unless the situation at Astrakhan developed so as to justify hopes of early Russian co-operation, we should not attempt to hold Baku against superior forces but should transfer the detachment to Krasnovodsk. It seemed quite likely that Alexeieff's activities north of the Caucasus might re-act favourably on the situation at Baku and enable us to maintain our hold there. Guns were the main consideration for Krasnovodsk and could be most rapidly obtained from Mesopotamia, where the matter should at once be taken in hand. The occupation of Krasnovodsk was to be permanent, and both Mesopotamia and General Malleson should make every effort to build up a force there and arrange for a satisfactory defence seaward. It was, however, too early yet to decide on the strength of its garrison. The limits of the spheres of control laid down for India and Mesopotamia should not hinder necessary action by either party outside its sphere; and the man on the spot must frequently take energetic and rapid action without reference to India or the War Office.

At the same time the War Office replied separately to General Cobbe's telegram of the 12th intimating their general concurrence in his proposals, but saying that at such a distance they were unable to do more than outline the general policy to be followed. There was no objection, if the situation permitted, to a force up to three battalions and a battery

going to Baku and it was hoped that if evacuation became necessary the destruction of the oil resources would be carried out, by force if necessary.

They sanctioned the despatch of a detachment up to a battalion to Krasnovodsk, but, in view of the possibility of hostile transports entering the port there from Astrakhan, guns were all important and consequently at least a section of a battery should be sent there also, even though it only took equipment ammunition. Attempts must be made to obtain local supplies and in this General Malleson was asked to assist; but it was too much to expect him to undertake responsibility for the full supply. Crude oil was obtainable at Krasnovodsk.

General Dunsterville was to be instructed not to hesitate to dispose of any remaining Bolshevik influence at Baku if necessary, and in carrying out these instructions he could rely on the full support of the War Office.

In Mesopotamia during the period under review in this chapter there were few incidents of importance. The total strength of the Turkish Sixth Army appeared to have decreased by about 200 sabres, 3,000 rifles and a few guns and aeroplanes, the main reduction having taken place on their Tigris front; and about 100 sabres and 1,800 rifles had moved from the area between Mosul and Kirkuk to Saqqiz and Sauj Bulag. The Turkish XIII and XVIII Corps seemed to have been disbanded and on no front was there more than a single division remaining. The Tigris group was believed to consist of the 14th Division (7th, 9th and 43rd Regiments), the Kirkuk and Sulaimaniya groups were found by the 2nd Division (1st and 18th Regiments) and that in the Sauj Bulag area by the 6th Division (16th and 22nd Regiments). As already related, the command of the Sixth Army had been taken over from Halil by Ali Ihsan.

On the British side, beyond the movements into Persia already mentioned, the only important change in dispositions was the occupation of Tikrit on the 12th July by a detachment of the Ist Corps so as to cover the extension of the railway from Samarra.

On the 10th July a reconnaissance by two British officers, under Arab escort and accompanied by a Yezidi chief, left Balad for the Jabal Sinjar, where they received a cordial reception from the Yezidis. They found that this tribe was then in complete subjection to the Turks, as the result of punitive measures by the latter in retaliation for Yezidi raids on the Nisibin-Mosul line of communication. Consequently,

and as the Jabal Sinjar could be completely dominated by Turkish artillery, the Yezidis were unable to make further raids or to co-operate actively with us, unless we located troops in the Jabal Sinjar or occupied Mosul.

On the 22nd June General Marshall had urged on the War Office a reconsideration of their decision not to construct a through railway up the Euphrates valley from Basra to Baghdad, as he pointed out that to link up the 156-mile gap between Nasiriya and Hilla would effect a saving in fuel and time and admit of considerable reductions in his river fleet and among its personnel. This recommendation was approved by the War Office on the 18th July; and at the same time they laid down the following order of priority for railway construction: (i) extension of railway to Khaniqin and into Persia as far and as rapidly as possible; (ii) construction of the Nasiriya-Hilla section; and (iii) the extension to Tikrit.

On the 14th August a 2-foot 6-inch line from Hilla to Kifl was opened to traffic; and next day General Cobbe reported that he anticipated that the railway into Persia might reach Khaniqin by the end of November, Qasr-i-Shirin early in January and Pai Taq by the end of March.

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE FALL OF BAKU.

(MAPS 41 AND 42.)

ON the 15th August, on receipt of a report from Colonel Keyworth which showed the situation at Baku to be most unsatisfactory, General Dunsterville decided to leave for that place at once. Colonel Keyworth said that there were only twenty-two local infantry battalions, with a total strength of about 6,000 rifles, to hold the twelve-mile line of defence; these battalions being unorganised, and with very few officers. Moreover, they were so lacking in discipline that they wasted much ammunition and left their positions in the line whenever they pleased. The line of defence, which was very indefinite, lay for the most part along the crest of stony cliffs, from which the fire was plunging and ineffective. There were very few trenches, such rifle pits as existed being badly sited; and there was no wire. The whole line was so close to the town and harbour that the enemy guns, with aeroplane observation,* could bombard the whole place without difficulty There appeared to be a shortage of all stores, though it had been impossible to ascertain what there actually was in the town; and though most of the population, friendly or hostile, were armed, the Government was afraid to disarm them.

Petroff and the other Bolshevik leaders, with 1,200 armed followers, had seized thirteen ships, the entire contents of the arsenal and as much war material as they could lay hands on, and had started for Astrakhan. But the fleet had forced them all to return, when the Baku Government instead of taking firm measures to render these men incapable of further harm, commenced an interminable discussion with them. Petroff absolutely declined to fight alongside the British or to hand back the guns and ammunition.

Political meetings, speeches and discussions interfered with all work and it was impossible to get anything settled. Colonel Keyworth had got the Government to agree to a definite line of defence; but on the right flank it was open and not even patrolled, with the result that the Turks had got round into the Tartar villages in rear. Russians refused to work with Armenians and, as Russian officers were said to be serving in the Turkish attacking force, Russian officers in the town

* In point of fact the enemy do not appear to have had any aircraft there.

were declining to go to the front. Food was scarce, nothing having been imported for two months,* and there was only a week's supply in hand. But Colonel Crawford had joined the Food Control Board and it was hoped that matters would shortly improve.

Transport was a difficulty, as motor vehicles could not go everywhere and animals could not be fed in any numbers; and this hindrance to movement in the intense moist heat made supervision of the long front very difficult.

General Dunsterville, accompanied by Commodore Norris, left Enzeli on the 16th August in the *President Kruger* and reached Baku next day. In his book† he describes the town as lying in a crater-like cup, the ground on the west and north rising gradually for about two miles till it reached the line of cliffs, whence it fell precipitously for over 500 feet to the bottom of the desert valley through which ran the railway from Tiflis. Outside the town the whole country was open and barren, consisting mainly of sandy desert and salt lakes partly dried up. The chief oil fields were at Binagadi, Balakhani and Bibi Eibat, with the main oil refineries at Black Town, and there were two miles of wharves at Baku.

At daybreak on the 18th August General Dunsterville made a personal inspection of the line of defence. On the left, a mile west of Bibi Eibat, where the high ground ran down in a series of rocky spurs to the sea, the position was a good one with a fair field of fire and a naturally guarded flank. The 7th North Staffordshire, who held this section, had dug well-sited trenches; and this had inspired the Armenian battalion on their right to make an effort also in the same direction. The line then ran due north, first along seven miles of cliffs and then gradually down through low ground to Dirty Volcano, where it turned east to Binagadi. General Dunsterville considered that the line should have continued due north from Dirty Volcano to the sea; an extension that would have required comparatively few men for its defence, as the Masazir Salt Lake provided a natural obstacle for half the distance. This part of the line had been left open by the withdrawal of Bicharakoff's detachment; but, till the arrival of the British, the Baku authorities had taken no steps to fill the gap. Consequently the Turks had got well round this flank, and all the villages, mainly Tartar, to the north and east of the town were full of small enemy parties and Tartar levies.

* This was said to be due to the nationalisation policy.

† "The Adventures of Dunsterforce."

The main Turkish position lay along the ridge on the further side of the railway to the west, and the cliffs between it and the town afforded in General Dunsterville's opinion a very strong position to reliable troops. But the local troops were not reliable and the British troops were too few to do more than hold the left of the line and Dirty Volcano, which appeared to be the most important points. The general reserve was supplied by local troops, but it was soon found that they were seldom at hand when required. They were composed for the most part of townbred Armenians of a less virile type than their rural countrymen whose courage had been frequently shown elsewhere. The Baku Armenians disdained to dig trenches, had little idea how to use their rifles effectively, constantly disobeyed orders and generally speaking showed little courage.*

The town was controlled by five Dictators and the fleet controlled the Dictators. Commodore Norris being very anxious to commence his work of taking over and arming merchant vessels, General Dunsterville asked for six ships to begin with, pointing out the benefits that would accrue. But the fleet and Dictators were all against such a course† and General Dunsterville felt that it was inadvisable, if not impossible, to act in opposition to their wishes.

It was clear to General Dunsterville that the situation was as bad as it could be. The best way to save the town would be to seize and hold the heights to the west, then in Turkish possession. But the local troops were not fit for such a task and it would take much reorganisation and training to render them capable of it. The most that could be hoped for was a passive defence till British reinforcements or Bicharakoff's men‡

* In "The Adventures of Dunsterforce" General Dunsterville says: "I do not blame the Armenian soldier of Baku for his cowardice, which is at best merely a comparative term. He was not a soldier by instinct or training, but just an ill-fed, undersized factory hand. A rifle was pushed into his hand and he was told to go and fight. He had no equipment, no proper instructors, no decent officers and no regular arrangements for food supply. Meanwhile as he sat in the trenches, with the bullets whistling by and the shells bursting overhead, he knew that most of his mates had skulked back to town and were having tea with the girls, and why shouldn't he go too? . . . under such circumstances no troops could be expected to display a high standard of valour. And finally I would add that there were many cases of individual bravery among them."

† They suggested that our guns should be mounted on their ships and should come under their officers and orders.

‡ Bicharakoff was at Derbend, where he had been joined by half the garrison and had beaten off an attack by Bolsheviks. He proposed to occupy Petrovsk and to obtain reinforcements from Northern Caucasia to relieve Baku.

arrived, or till some other factor arose to improve the situation. As there were always long gaps in the line of defence, owing to the failure of the local troops to take up or hold their allotted positions, it seemed clear that at any moment a determined Turkish attack might take the town; and, as it was full of German and Austrian released prisoners of war and the Tartar population was mainly pro-Turk, the enemy was certain to have detailed information of the conditions prevailing.

By this time the whole of the 7th North Staffordshire (20 officers and 539 other ranks under command of Major J. W. Ley) had reached Baku and parties of the 9th Royal Warwickshire had begun to arrive. On the 17th August a company of the North Staffordshire had moved out to the neighbourhood of Digya to co-operate with a detachment of about 600 local troops in driving the Turkish parties out of Fatmai and the neighbouring villages. But during the fighting on the 18th four-fifths of the local troops retired hastily to Baku, and, as this left both its flanks uncovered, the North Staffordshire company had no option but to retire and entrench a position to the north of Digya. It fortunately only incurred three casualities.

On the 20th August General Dunsterville sent General Cobbe a telegram saying that he had just received a despatch from Bicharakoff. The results of our intervention at Baku were becoming apparent and it was necessary to regard the whole situation from a new point of view. Bolshevik influence had been practically eradicated* and everybody, including Mahomedans, in the Caspian and Caucasus regions looked to Great Britain to save Russia and the Caucasus. The Daghestanis had offered to assist Bicharakoff and the British; Russian colonists in Lenkoran were awaiting the arrival of a British Mission to organise their forces for co-operation in the relief of Baku; the Georgians were wavering; and Bicharakoff promised to return to Baku with 10,000 fresh troops from Northern Caucasia. General Dunsterville deprecated strongly any idea of withdrawing from Baku, as this would not only result in military disaster but would have a very bad political effect in Persia and Trans-Caspia. All depended on whether we could hold Baku for the period necessary to enable the above movements to take shape. The situation was critical

* It was reported that Alexeieff, who was pro-British and anti-German, had occupied Astrakhan; and the Baku Government was at last disarming Petroff's men and retaking possession of the guns and munitions they had tried to make off with.

as the Armenian troops were unreliable and until they were organised only a handful of British troops stood between Baku and destruction. Everything pointed to an early Turkish offensive and it was imperative that British reinforcements should be despatched immediately.

In repeating this telegram to the War Office on the 22nd, General Cobbe gave the 39th Infantry Brigade distribution on that day. The 7th North Staffordshire were in Baku; of the 9th Royal Warwickshire about one hundred were in Baku and the remainder had either embarked from Enzeli or were on their way there from Kazvin; a company of the 9th Worcestershire was at Kazvin and two companies on their way there from Hamadan, where the fourth company was guarding the Jelu refugees;* and three companies of the 7th Gloucestershire were due at Hamadan on the 25th, while the fourth company was at railhead.

On the 20th August, General Dunsterville started for Derbend in the *President Kruger*, accompanied by Commodore Norris, to arrange for co-operation by Bicharakoff. But on approaching that port next afternoon their ship, which was unarmed, was fired on by a Bolshevik vessel and, not wishing to get shut up in Derbend, they returned to Baku.

On the 20th, Major Wagstaff, who was in command of the detachment about Mianeh watching the Turkish troops at Tabriz, reported that Turks were coming down the Tabriz road. His detachment, located north-westward of Zenjan, consisted of a few Dunsterforce British officers and non-commissioned officers with some 650 levies and a platoon 1/4th Hampshire, and its advanced patrols seem to have been about five miles from Yusufabad, which was thirty miles south-east of Tabriz; while at Zenjan there were one squadron 14th Hussars and fifty rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas. The Turkish 11th Caucasus Division was believed to have concentrated recently at Tabriz, so that this movement might be the commencement of an advance against our vulnerable line of communication with the Caspian.

On the 21st and 22nd reinforcements consisting of a section each 44th and C/69th Field, and 21st Mountain Batteries, two armoured cars, one hundred rifles 1/4th Hampshire and

* A good many Russian and Armenian bad characters had arrived with the Jelus and it was thought that they and the armed Jelus might give trouble. The formation of the Urmia Brigade had begun and General Cobbe had also authorised the retention at Hamadan of one of the three Gloucestershire companies due there on the 25th.

fifty rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas were despatched towards Mianeh from Kazvin.* On the 22nd a British aeroplane reconnaissance over Tabriz observed no enemy movement south of Yusufabad where there were twelve tents, while at Saidabad, ten miles nearer Tabriz, there were thirty tents and two batteries. On the 23rd, the British advanced patrols fell back for about twelve miles when some 300–400 Turkish troops made an advance of about ten miles from Yusufabad; and on the 25th another detachment of the 1/2nd Gurkhas (ninety rifles) left Kazvin for Zenjan.

Although the Turks made no further advance on this line for another fortnight, various reports were received, from apparently trustworthy sources, that the Turkish IV Corps intended to advance from Sauj Bulag by the two roads via Saqqiz and Sain Kala. In consequence of this, the movement towards the Caspian of the 2nd Field Battery, 7th Gloucestershire and one company 9th Worcestershire was stopped on the 27th and 28th August, the battery being halted not far from Kazvin and the other two units at Hamadan.

General Dunsterville had taken with him to Baku his advanced headquarters only, leaving his main headquarters at Kazvin, where General Lewin took over temporary command of the troops south of the Caspian and charge of all operations in North-West Persia under direct orders from Baghdad. On the 29th August the General Staff at Kazvin appreciated the situation as follows. Of the Turkish I Corps, the 11th Caucasus Division (4,250 rifles) was at Tabriz with detachments thrown forward to the south-eastward, and the 9th Caucasus Division (4,000 rifles) was on the line of communication between Alexandropol and Julfa. The 5th Division (4,000 rifles) of their IV Corps was south of Urmia, with advanced detachments towards Sauj Bulag, Miandab and Sain Kala, the 12th Division (4,000 rifles) was near Dilman, and a mounted brigade was in the Sauj Bulag-Miandab area. The greater part of the 15th and 36th Divisions were in reserve at Alexandropol† and the 6th Division was in the Ruwandiz-Saqqiz-Sauj Bulag area. For a Turkish advance the Tabriz-Mianeh-Kazvin, Miandab-Sain Kala and Sauj Bulag-Saqqiz roads were the only ones fit for wheeled and mechanical transport, the remainder being

* The field batteries belonged to the 13th Brigade, R.F.A., recently arrived, and the mountain guns and infantry were furnished from the Mobile Motor Column.

† From subsequent information it is doubtful whether the greater part of these two divisions had not then moved towards the Baku front and their place been taken by the 10th Caucasus Division.

generally only passable by pack transport; and on each of the lines of advance there were passes or difficult country to be traversed.

Our available force was disposed as follows. One squadron of cavalry, six guns,* three armoured cars, 300 infantry and 800 irregulars in the Mianeh area; two squadrons of cavalry, a section R.E. field company and 70 irregulars in the Bijar area; and a squadron of cavalry with two mountain guns in the Sehneh area. Behind these detachments, on the main road to the Caspian, were 275 rifles and a field battery (less a section) in the vicinity of Resht and between there and Kazvin; an infantry company, one and two-thirds field batteries, one armoured car and a squadron Dunsterforce armoured cars in the Kazvin area; and one and a quarter infantry battalions at Hamadan.†

We could use mechanical transport on the roads from Kazvin to Mianeh and from Hamadan to Sehneh, Bijar, Zenjan and Kazvin, and pack transport elsewhere. It was felt that to fight the Turks we could place little reliance on the irregulars or friendly tribes and that our widely dispersed force was not strong enough anywhere to stop a determined Turkish advance along any of the three lines open to them.

After consideration of the various courses open to the Turks, the conclusion come to was that they would most probably advance from Tabriz via Mianeh on Kazvin; and that to meet this contingency we should have: first, to evacuate the road between Enzeli and Kazvin; secondly, to move some artillery from the Kazvin to the Hamadan area; thirdly, to reinforce Mianeh with three armoured cars; and lastly, to evacuate Kazvin.

On the 31st August General Dunsterville telegraphed to Kazvin from Baku, where a Turkish attack was in progress, asking that the Gloucestershire and 2nd Field Battery (then near Kazvin) should be sent at once to Enzeli. But General

* Two 18-pounders, two field howitzers and two mountain guns.

† The above is the force as given in the appreciation, but the records show some discrepancies. At Enzeli and between there and Kazvin were headquarters and three platoons 1/4th Hampshire and about 255 rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas, as well as half the Dunsterforce Armoured Car Machine Gun Company, and the field battery (less a section) was under orders to leave for Krasnovodsk. The 39th Machine Gun Company was at Kazvin; and at Hamadan, or in its vicinity, were seven and a quarter companies of infantry (1/4th Hampshire, 7th Gloucestershire, 9th Worcestershire and 1/2nd Gurkhas), a section 21st Mountain Battery and the 72nd Company, R.E. (less one section).

Lewin* replied that the local situation precluded the despatch of any troops; and this reply was concurred in by General Headquarters, Baghdad. On the same day half a battalion Gloucestershire and a section 21st Mountain Battery were ordered to Bijar from Hamadan.

To return to Baku, where the British were doing all they could, in the face of great difficulties, to effect an improvement in the fighting efficiency of the local forces. The training of local units was taken in hand, arrangements were made to regulate the supply of ammunition, the ammunition and arms in the Arsenal were examined and set in order and measures were taken to improve the discipline of the local troops. But in practically every direction the British encountered great opposition, owing not only to suspicion of the ultimate British intentions and the feeling that the introduction of law and order signified the commencement of a counter-revolution, but also owing to the prevalent anti-British and Bolshevik propaganda and to the general distrust of one another among the local population which prevented any cohesion among them. Moreover, the reference of every single matter to the committees, which existed in every unit, brought about endless procrastination. Some improvement was, however, apparent owing to our efforts, though the people of Baku persisted in the belief that since the British had arrived all was well and that further effort on their part was unnecessary. In regard to the gunboats and shipping General Dunsterville could see no immediate prospect of securing control.

On the 24th August he left for Enzeli to settle the final terms of peace with Kuchik Khan† and to secure the release of Captain Noel and other British prisoners. Having arranged these matters, General Dunsterville arrived back at Baku on the 27th. Lieutenant-Colonel Faviell, temporarily commanding the 39th Infantry Brigade, reached Baku with his brigade headquarters on the 24th and assumed command of the British infantry there, consisting of the 7th North Staffordshire (under 550 strong), the 9th Royal Warwickshire (under 450 strong), a company 9th Worcestershire (about 100 strong) and a platoon 1/4th Hampshire. Colonel Keyworth still remained in command of the whole British force, which had

* On the 31st General Bateman-Champain (commanding 36th Infantry Brigade), who with his headquarters had arrived at Kazvin a few days previously, took over command of the troops in North Persia from General Lewin, who then paid a visit to Baku.

† It is of interest to note that henceforward Kuchik Khan acted as our contractor for the supply of rice from Gilan.

been joined on the 20th by two aeroplanes (Martinsydes) of the 72nd Squadron. These planes, meeting with no opposition in the air, were occupied during the next ten days in reconnaissance, bombing and distribution of propaganda.

The line of defence, by this time better defined, ran (from left to right) from about one and a half miles west of Bibi Eibat past Wolf's Gap and west of Baladjari Station to Dirty Volcano, where it turned eastward, along the northern face of the hill west of Binagadi and 2,000 yards north of Digya, to about two miles south of Mashtagi. Here it stopped, leaving an open gap to the sea-shore. The North Staffordshire held the extreme left of the line, Dirty Volcano and a part of the position north of Digya, while three weak companies of the Warwicks were in reserve at Digya.

On the 26th August the Turks attacked Dirty Volcano, held by five officers and 135 other ranks of the North Staffordshire under command of Captain Sparrow. The first attack developed from the south-west at about 10.30 a.m., and Colonel Faviell, who had just arrived to inspect the position, returned at once to Baku to secure lorries to take out every available man to reinforce Dirty Volcano.

The enemy, estimated at about 1,000 strong, attacked with great vigour, being supported closely by mountain artillery and by heavier artillery further back. To this fire the local Baku artillery made no reply at all, but four separate attacks were repulsed by the machine gun and rifle fire of the North Staffordshire. On the fifth occasion, however, the enemy, having succeeded in working round the northern flank, brought enfilade and reverse fire to bear on the North Staffordshire posts, annihilating No. 1 and causing heavy casualities among Nos. 2 and 3. This was about 1.30 p.m. All the officers and more than half the non-commissioned officers and men had been killed or wounded* and the remnant of the company fell back to the oil-wells at the foot of the hill. Here they were rallied by Major A. H. Ruston, of the Dunsterforce armoured car machine gun company, who happened to be visiting his guns there. But, owing to the risk of being cut off from the right flank, Major Ruston soon ordered a retirement and the 58 survivors then fell back to a position two hundred yards north of Baladjari. The Turks, having secured Dirty Volcano, made no further attack to the south of it.

* Three officers killed or missing, 2 officers wounded, 46 other ranks killed or missing and 31 wounded.

Dirty Volcano was in full view of the rest of the defensive line, but the local troops failed to give the North Staffordshire any support or assistance. It was subsequently ascertained that the two Armenian battalions who should have been in support at Baladjari Station were not there, while it was said that the local artillery failed to open fire owing to the absence of all their officers. About 70 rifles of the North Staffordshire and 70 of the Warwicks moved out in lorries from Baku about 2.30 p.m. under command of Major Ley (North Staffordshire), but it was not till about 4.30 p.m. that they and a section of the 8th Field Battery, which had only reached Baku the previous day, arrived on the scene, being followed soon after by the company of the Worcestershire.

During the attack on Dirty Volcano, Lieutenant Craig's company of the North Staffordshire near Digya received orders to support an Armenian battalion which was holding the hill immediately west of Binagadi; but on arriving near the hill about 2.15 p.m. found that it had been evacuated. Pushing on, however, they reached the crest as an enemy party, about 250 strong, occupied the lower northern slopes; and these the North Staffordshire drove back with heavy loss. Soon afterwards, the enemy, having re-formed, made another attack; but this was beaten back without difficulty and the enemy fell back to cover out of range. In this affair the North Staffordshire suffered ten casualties, including Lieutenant Craig and another officer wounded. The hill they had occupied was christened Stafford Hill.

It was not until he reached the railway line on the Digya road that Major Ley learnt from a Russian officer that Dirty Volcano had been lost. No other information could be obtained from this officer, but Major Ley's interpreter informed him that the North Staffordshire company from the Volcano was about half a mile from the derricks at its foot. To this point Major Ley sent the party of North Staffordshire which had come out with him in lorries; and he ordered his Warwickshire party to occupy some rising ground about 2,000 yards due east of the Volcano. He himself proceeded to the latter point, which was christened Warwick Castle, and saw Lieutenant Craig's company of North Staffordshire occupying Stafford Hill. In the meantime the "lorry" party of North Staffordshire, coming under fire, had reached within half a mile of Dirty Volcano derricks, when it was ascertained that the survivors from the Volcano had fallen back to the northward of Baladjari; and here they had been joined by the Worcestershire company

from Baku, who prolonged their line to the left. Major Ley decided to hold the line Stafford Hill–Warwick Castle–Baladjari Station, his action being subsequently confirmed by Colonel Faviell, who at 5 p.m. received orders to move out from Baku and take command of the British troops on the Baladjari–Digya line. At 9 p.m., the remainder of the 8th Field Battery, which had arrived at Baku that day, also reached the position.

The Warwicks (three companies) at Digya had not been engaged; but in the evening one of their companies moved up on the left of the local troops holding the line east of Binagadi Lake, so as to close part of the gap existing between them and Binagadi village.

From the 27th to the 29th August the enemy displayed little activity beyond some artillery fire. Colonel Faviell took advantage of the interval to improve his defensive line, including the emplacement of seven more machine guns and the formation of a post held by seventy North Staffordshire under Lieutenant Russell in the low ground between Warwick Castle and Baladjari village. As Colonel Faviell reported on the 28th, however, this line though naturally strong was anything but secure. Though some of the gaps between the British posts were partly filled by local troops—who were not, however, properly entrenched—the line was too extended for the troops available for its defence. The only reserves were furnished by local troops; but, as these could not be relied on, a serious attack could hardly fail to capture any of the British posts. Much remained to be done in the way of inter-communication, a second line of defence was required, and, as soon as reinforcements made it possible a British battalion should be kept in reserve.

Considerable movement among enemy troops was observed on the 30th August; and next morning they attacked. The first assault was made against Stafford Hill, where the North Staffordshire company, 80 strong under Lieutenant Petty, held trenches just below the crest line facing north, north-west, and west, while some local troops had been detailed to hold a trench at the south-west corner. A line of wire entanglement, which ran along the foot of the hill about five hundred yards from the trenches, had just been more or less completed by an Armenian working party. But there was much dead ground; and the local troops abandoned the south-western trench, which commanded the valley between Stafford Hill and the hill immediately east of Dirty Volcano.

The North Staffordshire drove back a strong enemy patrol just before sunrise, i.e., about 5.30 a.m.; but soon after this about 500 Turkish infantry were seen massing for attack at the foot of the western slopes of Stafford Hill. They were supported by about twelve field and mountain guns and by several machine guns firing from behind shields in the open. The British 8th Field Battery came into action,* and the Warwicks gave what support they could with rifles and machine guns from Warwick Castle. But their fire in this direction was much restricted by the existence of many oil-derricks; and the enemy managed to work gradually up the western and northern sides of Stafford Hill, enfilading many of the Staffordshire trenches.

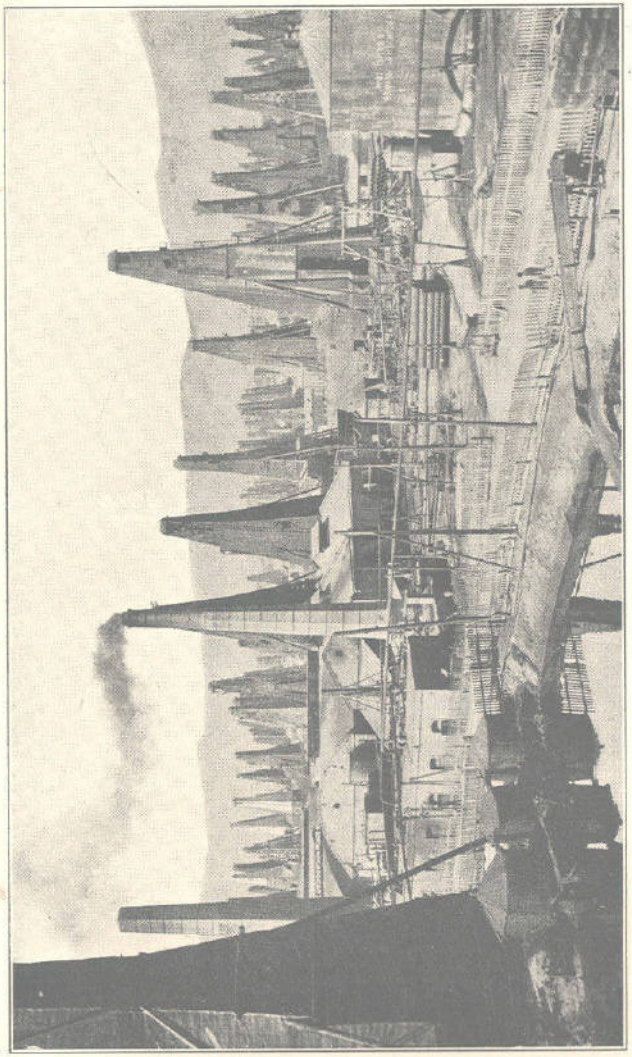
At an early stage in the attack, Lieutenant Petty sent to ask the Russian commander of the reserve of two local battalions in Binagadi village to assist by making a counter-attack. But although it appeared to our officers that this could easily have been done, it was not attempted till too late. The forward observing officer of the 8th Field Battery was forced by the advancing Turks to leave his post on Stafford Hill and it was some time before another observing officer reached Warwick Castle. Lieutenant Petty was killed and many of his men either killed or wounded; and it was only with difficulty that the North Staffordshire continued to hold on in the hope that the local troops in Binagadi village, to whom Colonel Faviell had also sent an urgent request for support, would come to their assistance. By 8 a.m., however, it became clear that the hill was no longer tenable; and, some forty per cent. of their number having been killed or wounded, the North Staffordshire company fell back on Warwick Castle. Officers and men had displayed great gallantry and had only failed to hold their ground through lack of support.

At 6 a.m. Colonel Faviell had sent an order for the head-quarters and one company of the Warwicks to move from Digya to the centre of the Binagadi oil derricks† and remain there in reserve. But the order did not reach the Warwickshire headquaters till 6.45 a.m. and they and "B" Company did not reach the neighbourhood of the derricks till 8 a.m. Even then they could not get into communication with brigade

* One section was in position near Binagadi village during the attack on Stafford Hill, but its subsequent position and that of the remainder of the battery are not given in the records, though they were evidently north of Baladjari. It is noteworthy that this battery was then much below its proper establishment.

† Apparently rather over a mile south of Binagadi village.

To face page 226.



Oil derricks, Binagadi.

headquarters, so they remained in ignorance of the situation. But, seeing some local troops retiring, half "B" Company moved out and covered their retirement, coming under some hostile machine gun and rifle fire at about 1,400 yards range.

The local troops in Binagadi village appear about this time to have made an attempt to move towards the eastern slopes of Stafford Hill. But it was too late and the movement was unsuccessful. About 8.30 a.m. Turkish infantry were seen swarming over the top of Stafford Hill and the second forward observing officer of the 8th Field Battery reached Warwick Castle just in time to turn the guns on to them with good effect. By this time the section of the battery at Binagadi had been obliged to withdraw hastily, as enemy infantry had got within one hundred yards.

About 10 a.m. the Turks advanced from Stafford Hill against Warwick Castle, which was held by a Warwickshire company and the survivors from Stafford Hill. An Armenian battalion on the left of the Warwicks retired at once, leaving this flank open ; and by 11 a.m. the enemy had worked round three sides of the position, being then within forty yards of its northern face. Its evacuation was clearly necessary if the garrison was to evade capture or annihilation. Withdrawal to the south eastward was therefore ordered and was successfully carried out under the covering fire of Lieutenant Russell's party of North Staffordshire ordered forward for the purpose.

A further short retirement to the south was made and the whole line re-formed. The 5th Russian Battalion* is mentioned in the war diaries as having done very well in this retirement, the only instance in which the local troops took any effective part in the fighting. The others had all retired across the railway line, the first place where it was found possible to rally any of them.

The line of defence now ran northward from Baladjari village to near the Binagadi derricks and thence to Digya. But there were large gaps in the line, which the few weak companies of British infantry and the 5th Russian Battalion (about 150 strong) were insufficient to fill, and there was no reserve. Colonel Faviell reported this unsatisfactory state of affairs and obtained permission to fall back after dark to a line along the railway embankment from Baladjari to the west end of the Beyuk salt marsh, leaving two companies of the Warwicks still at Digya. The total British casualties for the

* Apparently this was one of the battalions from Binagadi village.

day amounted to 44, most of which had occurred on Stafford Hill ; * and all reports agreed that the enemy's losses had been considerable.

General Dunsterville, who had been at the front during the attack on Stafford Hill, wrote a letter that afternoon to the Baku Government giving his opinion of the military situation. He recapitulated how, in reply to an invitation to assist, he had brought as many troops as possible to Baku, and that though the small size of the force had occasioned disappointment in Baku, he had never promised to bring any exact numbers. He explained the British difficulties and showed how it had become necessary to divert some troops, intended for Baku, to meet a Turkish advance which threatened to isolate his force by cutting his line of communication ; and he said that no great additional reinforcement of British troops was to be expected. He went on to describe how that morning most of the Baku troops had retired instead of fighting and how, in consequence, it would shortly be necessary to withdraw to the railway line, the last possible position for defence. He considered that even then the town and port could be saved if the Baku troops developed—what they did not then possess—the spirit to fight and the determination not to yield. But if they continued to retire whenever they came under fire, further defence would be a waste of time and life. While he was willing with his troops to continue the defence to the bitter end, it was quite hopeless to endeavour to do so with troops who had no intention of fighting.

That night, a Council of War, consisting of all the various Committees, and attended by General Dunsterville, sat for many hours without achieving anything useful.

The next morning a force of about 600 Turkish infantry accompanied by a large body of irregular cavalry attacked the Digya sector, which was held by Russian and Armenian battalions with two companies of the Warwicks in reserve. The loss of Stafford Hill and Warwick Castle had weakened the position at Digya and during the night 31st August/1st

* The effective strength at Baku of the 39th Infantry Brigade on the night 31st August–1st September was :

	British Officers.	*British other ranks.*
Brigade Headquarters	4	84
9th Royal Warwickshire	16	437
7th North Staffordshire	13	425
9th Worcestershire	4	102
Total	37	1,048

September the British had repeatedly but unsuccessfully advised Colonel Stepanoff in command to withdraw. The enemy attack commenced at about 6 a.m. and the Russians and Armenians only held on to their positions for about an hour, when they retired hurriedly, leaving the Warwicks isolated and with both flanks uncovered. These two companies then fell back steadily and gradually, fighting a rear-guard action, for some three miles towards the point where the Baku–Digya road crossed the railway. But before they could reach it, they ran short of ammunition and a number of their men were cut off by enemy cavalry. When finally about noon they reached the railway, 4 officers and 67 other ranks were missing.

By this time the British infantry were all very tired men. Ever since their arrival in Baku they had been on constant duty day and night, generally in the front line ; they had seldom had the full, or kind of, ration they were used to ; and they had found the moist heat very enervating. General Dunsterville discussed the whole situation with General Lewin, who had just arrived in Baku for a short visit, and came to the conclusion that it was useless to continue the defence and that he must withdraw the British troops from Baku. He informed the Baku Government of his conclusions and requested them to meet him that afternoon (1st September). At 4 p.m. he addressed the assembled committees, informing them that he considered that Baku could not be saved from the Turks and that to continue its defence would only involve unnecessary loss of life. The British troops had hitherto done all the fighting, as the local troops had consistently failed to assist or support them ; and he was about to give orders to his men to withdraw from the line. He gave this warning so that the Baku authorities could fill the gaps with their own troops ; but he recommended them to make terms with the enemy at once. In conclusion, he urged them to take immediate action and not to waste time in making speeches and passing resolutions. He then left them for an hour to come to a decision.

His speech caused considerable anger and consternation. But it failed to achieve the desired effect ; for when he returned in an hour's time, the assembly was still engaged in useless talking. He begged them to act and again left them for an hour, only to find on his return that they were still passing resolutions without showing any signs of taking definite action. As he felt that under such conditions it would be unfair to the inhabitants to desert them, he decided to allow his troops to remain, contenting himself with sending a warning note to

the dictators.* To this they replied that the British troops could only be permitted to leave the town at the same time and on the same terms as their own troops and after the evacuation of non-combatants.

In the meantime, on the 28th August—before news of the Turkish attack on the 26th reached him—General Cobbe, referring to a report he had received from his liaison officer who had left Baku on the 22nd, telegraphed his views on the Baku situation to the War Office. He estimated that when the whole of the 9th Worcestershire Regiment reached Baku, the total British force there would be about 2,000† and it would have to be fed from North Persia. The Turks opposite Baku numbered 5,300 regulars with 26 guns and 8,000 Tartar irregulars under Turkish officers; another 1,000 regulars were due there; of 6,400 German regulars with 20 guns in the Poti-Tiflis area, probably 4,000 with the guns could reach Baku within a month; and, if more troops were required, the Turks had another 5,000 men and 50 guns available, who could also get there within a month.

The extrication of the British from Baku would be extremely difficult, especially if they were defeated, and this seemed ultimately certain. In the meantime General Dunsterville had failed to obtain control of the shipping, his presence at Baku appeared to be harmonising the Turco-German differences, and Russian reinforcements from outside Baku seemed unlikely to materialise. Consequently General Cobbe had asked General Dunsterville if he considered that the force in Baku could withstand a Turco-German attack; and, if not, how he proposed to carry out his orders to obtain and arm shipping for the control of the Caspian and to prepare for the ultimate withdrawal of his troops from Baku.

The War Office telegraphed in reply on the 31st August expressing entire concurrence in the views expressed and in the orders sent to General Dunsterville. But they suggested that he should also be instructed to destroy the oil-plant at Baku before withdrawal, if it could be done without compromising his troops.

General Marshall, who arrived back from leave on the 1st September, informed the War Office that day that, owing to the Turkish concentrations at Tabriz and Sauj Bulag, he had

* In this connection see the summary of General Dunsterville's official telegraphic report of 1st September given hereafter.

† He did not then know how weak the units were.

withheld* the fourth battalion of the 39th Brigade and the 2nd Field Battery, both of which General Dunsterville had asked should be sent to Baku.† General Dunsterville had been ordered to evacuate that place at once and had been told that no more reinforcements would be sent him. His troops were to be withdrawn to Enzeli, but he might increase the garrison of Krasnovodsk up to a battalion and a battery. This latter order was modified next day by instructions that he was to be guided in calculating the size of the force at Krasnovodsk, for the defence of which he would be responsible, by the probability that the force would have to depend for supplies on North-West Persia and by the numbers of ships at his disposal. To obtain ships was, he was told, of the utmost importance.

In the meantime, the Trans-Caspian force opposing the advance of the Bolsheviks from Merv had been reinforced in their position at Kaakha by about 500 rifles of the 19th Punjabis, sent by General Malleson from Meshed. On the 28th August a Bolshevik attack in force was beaten back with heavy loss. In this action most of the local troops fled, leaving the Punjabis to bear the brunt of the fighting; and the gallant conduct of the latter combined with the pusillanimity displayed by many of the Bolshevik force, mainly contributed to the successful result. Next day a company of the 1/4th Hampshire, which had recently reached Krasnovodsk from Enzeli, joined the force at Kaakha; and a section of the 44th Field Battery, which reached Krasnovodsk from Enzeli on the 2nd September, reached Kaakha on the 4th.

On the 1st September General Dunsterville telegraphed to Baghdad that he was doubtful if it would be possible to save Baku. This telegram, which was delayed in transit and was repeated to the War Office by General Marshall on the 4th, crossed the telegram from the latter ordering evacuation. General Dunsterville said that the delay in arrival at Baku of British reinforcements had given the enemy the initiative and that our troops had been forced back to the last line of defence.

* In point of fact the order had been sent before General Marshall arrived back, but he confirmed it.

† On the 3rd September the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed to the War Office offering the opinion that the Turkish force at Sauj Bulag was primarily a flank guard, which, as it could be met by reinforcements to Kermanshah and Hamadan from railhead, hardly seemed to justify the withholding of reinforcements from Baku. Moreover, in General Monro's opinion the movement of reinforcements towards Enzeli would have been useful towards meeting an enemy advance from Tabriz.

He had 900 British troops* and about 1,000 Russians on whom he could rely, the remainder of the Baku force being negligible. The enemy had about 6,000 regulars and 8,000 irregulars and the town swarmed with enemy sympathisers and agents. Although he had kept the War Office orders secret, the Baku authorities were beginning to think that our only object was to destroy the oil wells, gain control of the fleet and then abandon them after removing their only means of making terms with the enemy—a reply to their appeal for assistance which they regarded as dishonourable. It was consequently difficult for him to obtain any concessions or arrange for the oil destruction. But he was consistently pressing for ships on which to mount naval guns and he had at last been allotted two on the condition that their crews remained Russian. He had stated all along that it was impossible to control the fleet or to deny the oil fields to the enemy unless we continued to hold Baku ; and he trusted that H.M. Government were under no illusions on the subject and were aware that if Baku fell we should incur odium and accusations of bad faith.

After the 1st September the Turks did not renew their attacks for nearly a fortnight, though they carried on intermittent artillery bombardments of the town and wharves, their fire being specially directed on the British headquarters. On the 3rd September General Dunsterville telegraphed that he had made preparations for evacuation, but that the local government had informed him that the British troops could only be permitted to leave Baku on the same terms and at the same time as their own troops. On the 4th he reported that his refusal to recognise control over British troops by the local government had achieved a salutary effect : ten ships had been placed at his disposal for arming, subject to the condition that only the gun-crews should be British. On the 5th he telegraphed that he had received the order to withdraw, but considered it impossible to do so under the guns of the fleet. He also said that Bicharakoff had captured Petrovsk and had promised to send 1,000 infantry to Baku within a week. The local situation appeared more promising and General Dunsterville had told the local government that he would remain with them to the end, withdrawing only if matters became hopeless.

* In addition to the 900 odd rifles of the Warwickshire, Staffordshire and Worcestershire battalions, there were the Headquarters 39th Infantry Brigade, the 8th Field Battery, three armoured cars of " A " Squadron Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade, half a machine gun company formed by the same brigade, a platoon 1/4th Hampshire and two aeroplanes.

He again laid emphasis on the great value of Baku and said that if the remainder of the 39th Infantry Brigade were sent him there was a possibility of saving the town. It should be noted that these telegrams of the 4th and 5th, together with one sent on the 6th, giving the probable dates of arrival of Bicharakoff's reinforcements, were delayed in transit and did not reach Baghdad till the 9th September. Another telegram sent by General Dunsterville on the 5th was not, however, delayed. In this he asked for the despatch of reinforcements to Baku and he was told at once in reply by General Marshall that no more troops would be sent him and that his orders for withdrawal still held good.

On the 5th September our advanced post on the Tabriz road, consisting mainly of irregulars holding a point about forty-five miles north-west of Mianeh, was attacked and driven back for about ten miles to the south-eastward by an enemy force about 800 strong. Small bodies of British reinforcements were sent out in support, but the enemy developed a strength of about 2,000 with two guns and steadily pushed back our force (which most of the irregulars deserted), occupying Turkmanchai on the 7th and Mianeh on the 9th. Our troops, by then numbering about 50 sabres, 6 guns, 350 infantry, two armoured cars and 260 levies, then took up a position on the Kuflan Kuh, which though naturally strong was too extensive for this force to hold.

Before returning to the description of events at Baku, a short digression is necessary to give an account of some correspondence which took place at this time between London, Simla and Mesopotamia regarding plans for increasing the British force in North-West Persia and for countering the enemy's plans in that direction.

On the 28th August the War Office telegraphed pointing out that the extension of the railway to Pai Taq would reduce the road distance to Enzeli to about 446 miles. They were sending out 1,300 Ford vans and 500 Peerless lorries ;* and General Marshall was to make every effort to reduce his transport in the Hilla area, to obtain local transport and to get fuel supplies from the Caspian.

They suggested that the roads from Hamadan to Zenjan and Bijar and from Kermanshah to Sehneh should be improved so as to allow of preparations for meeting a hostile advance on or about the line Zenjan-Bijar-Sehneh, where works of

* Lorries had proved more useful than Ford vans on the Persian road during the summer, but would not be so in winter when the roads would become heavy with rain and snow.

defence should be undertaken and depots of stores and munitions should be formed. In conjunction with these measures a railway should be developed from the Diyala, preferably north of the Jabal Hamrin, towards the head-waters of the Little Zab, with the object of maintaining a force to act offensively against the flank of any Turkish force advancing from Urmia—Tabriz against Sehneh—Zenjan. The War Office went on to suggest the route for this line to follow, whether it was wholly railway or composed partly of rail, road and ropeway.

It was also desirable, they said, for the ultimate security of the Hamadan-Kazvin road to develop at least a road line of communication from Ahwaz (in Arabistan), or Amara, to Hamadan; and they asked that reliable technical information should be obtained as to its possibilities and best alignment. They concluded by saying that the future priority of railway construction in Mesopotamia was to be: (i) extension to Pai Taq, (ii) extension towards Kirkuk, (iii) Nasiriya-Hilla.*

On the 2nd September the Commander-in-Chief in India telegraphed his views on the War Office proposals. On the assumption that the enemy's first objective after Baku would be to obtain control of the Caspian, he considered that the enemy's main effort in North-West Persia would be directed along the Tabriz-Mianeh road or along the road north of it through Ardebil to Astara on the Baku-Enzeli road. It appeared to him that, having regard to various topographical, political and military considerations, (which he detailed), the Turkish force about Urmia was only a flank guard. Consequently he was of opinion that we should concentrate, before winter set in, on the improvement of the route to Enzeli and on the defence of the sector securing our position against attack on the Tabriz road west of Zenjan and of the coast road north-west of Enzeli, with such counter-offensive measures as opportunity might offer. The preparation of the Zenjan-Bijar-Sehneh line should, he considered, be regarded as a secondary matter, except in so far as it could be executed by purely local labour.

He did not agree with the proposed construction of a railway from the Diyala towards the head-waters of the Little Zab, owing to the military operations and dispersion of force it would entail, to its length through hilly country delaying construction, to its limited effect and to its vulnerability to enemy attack from the Mosul direction.

* The railway to Tikrit was completed on the 1st September except for the watering arrangements.

The line of communcation from Ahwaz to Hamadan, with Mohammerah as its starting point, had definite strategic and economic advantages. But careful investigation in India of the project, both then and previously, led to the definite conclusion that only a railway could make it an effective communication; and for the construction of this at least a year would be required.

General Marshall telegraphed his reply on the 5th September. With the transport promised by the War Office and assuming that by March 1919 the railway to Pai Taq, as well as the rope-way to the top of the pass, had been completed, he would probably be able to deliver 100 to 120 tons a day at Enzeli.

Contracts had been made locally to keep the Kazvin-Zenjan, Hamadan-Zenjan and Hamadan-Bijar roads in order and the Hamadan-Sehneh road had been made fit for motor traffic. But the Kermanshah-Sehneh road was bad even for pack transport and there was no local labour available to repair it. The preparations outlined by the War Office would be taken in hand whenever local transport became available.

General Marshall then entered into details of the various difficulties attending the construction of a railway towards the head-waters of the Little Zab and of a line of communication to Hamadan from the south. He was unable to recommend either of these projects and he considered that, to maintain a force of any material size in North-West Persia, all our energies should be devoted to developing the route via Kermanshah and Hamadan.

Local supplies for the winter in Persia had, he said, been estimated as sufficient for 14,000 men and 2,500 animals, but owing to lack of transport the maintenance of a force of this size, in case of continued operations, could not, for the time being, be guaranteed. He recommended that when the transport situation became easier two infantry brigades should be concentrated at Hamadan and Kazvin, which, with the other arms then in Persia and the two infantry battalions on the line of communication west of Hamadan, would be the total force that he could supply during the winter. This disposition was, he considered, the one best suited to meet the most probable enemy movement, i.e., from Tabriz on Kazvin. But, till his own transport facilities had greatly improved, the enemy would be able to concentrate superior forces on that line. Should this happen our troops would withdraw slightly westward so as to menace the right flank of any hostile move.

If this view was concurred in, he recommended that the dangerously exposed detachments at Enzeli and Resht should be withdrawn and that if the detachment at Krasnovodsk could not be sent back to him it should be administered by General Malleson.

On the 9th September, on receipt of the delayed telegrams of the 4th, 5th and 6th from Baku, General Marshall telegraphed to General Dunsterville that it was difficult to understand the situation at Baku thoroughly but that he did not seem to be attempting to carry out General Marshall's orders for withdrawal and that accordingly events in the whole of Persia were likely to be compromised. On hearing next day of this action by General Marshall,* the Commander-in-Chief in India at once telegraphed his views to the War Office as follows. General Dunsterville appeared to be holding his own, to be improving his position in Baku and to have obtained possession of a portion of the Caspian fleet. Bicharakoff's success at Petrovsk offered sufficient prospect of his ability to reinforce Baku to justify considerable risk in retaining our troops there. In fact his troops might then have reached Baku. After General Dunsterville's undertaking to remain with the Baku people to the end and in view of the impossibility of his withdrawal, except with the assent of the fleet, General Monro did not agree with General Marshall's action in again reminding General Dunsterville of the orders to withdraw, nor did he understand how the latter's action could compromise events in the whole of Persia. General Monro recognised, however, that there might be good reasons of which he was unaware for General Marshall's action. Unless however, the War Office considered these very convincing, it was for consideration whether General Marshall should not be urged to reinforce Enzeli with all available troops in readiness to take advantage of any favourable development in the situation at Baku. This chance of retrieving our position on the Caspian, thereby securing a short sea-line of communication between Baku and Enzeli, would enable us to act on interior lines against the Turkish wings at Baku and Tabriz.†

On the 10th September General Marshall telegraphed that he had received no further report from General Dunsterville but that Colonel Clutterbuck, who was sick and had left Baku on the evening of the 6th, gave the following information at Enzeli on the 7th. The hostile bombardment had been renewed

* General Marshall's reports to the War Office were always repeated to India.

† This telegram does not appear to have been repeated to General Marshall.

on the 6th after having ceased for two days, during which the enemy's movements had been screened by dust storms. On the 6th rumours were current that the enemy was withdrawing and our patrols reached Binagadi and Digya without meeting any Turks, while, to the west of Baku, an Allied detachment reported the departure of large railway trains up-country. The Baku Government had received a letter from the Moscow Government saying that the latter had appealed to Germany against a Turkish occupation of Baku and that Germany had promised that she and not Turkey would occupy the town. Bicharakoff's troops were expected but had not arrived.

General Marshall added that he had received no confirmation of the alleged Turkish withdrawal. He also said that Turkish patrols had entered Mianeh, our detachment having withdrawn to the Kuflan Kuh position, and that on the Bijar line there was no change. Next day he reported that the North-West Persia situation was serious, hostile raiding parties having been reported nine miles south-west of our Kuflan position.

On the 9th September General Dunsterville sent two telegrams to General Marshall, repeating them to the War Office, who received them on the 11th. In the first he said that the tactical situation at Baku was entirely due to the delay in sending him troops and he deprecated strongly the idea of abandoning Baku. In the second—which he sent in reply to General Marshall's telegram of the 5th saying that no more troops would be sent to Baku and that the order for withdrawal from there held good—he stated that evacuation in unarmed ships was impossible under the guns of a hostile fleet. The Baku Government had decided not to surrender the town and he had no alternative but to stand by them. He believed that a successful defence was possible for the following reasons. The defensive position was exceedingly strong and could be made impregnable with reliable troops. The Turkish force was demoralised by the heavy losses among its best troops. The Allied success in France was affecting the situation in the Caucasus, where the Georgians were persistently reported to have risen against the Germans and a force of Armenians was said to be closely threatening the railway bridge over the Kura river. Even if German troops were not withdrawn from the Caucasus to meet the situation in France, it was improbable that, with Georgians and Armenians in insurrection and threatening their lines of communication, the enemy could send to Baku the number previously estimated. Baku had guns, ammunition and war material as good as anything the enemy could bring against

it; and, having command of the sea, its Government could move troops and supplies there without opposition. Bicharakoff's first echelon had arrived that day and he promised 5,000 men in another fortnight. Lenkoran had 4,000 men ready to move. Reorganisation of the Baku forces would produce about 3,000 reliable troops. So that, with the backing of one British brigade, he confidently believed that the above force could hold Baku against anything the enemy could bring against it. The alternative was complete disaster and the permanent loss of all objects we had been working for.

On the 11th the War Office telegraphed to General Marshall that, having regard to the situation reported in his telegram of the 10th, i.e., Colonel Clutterbuck's report, H.M. Government considered that, for the time being, British troops should hold on to Baku. They were also anxious that the British force on the Hamadan-Enzeli road should be increased at an early date.

On the 12th September, General Marshall informed the War Office that he was sending General Thomson, commanding 14th Division, to take command in North-West Persia and was ordering to Baku the remainder of the details of the three British infantry battalions there, some naval ratings and some Ford vans. But an outflanking advance that day by 1,500 Turks with four guns, which obliged the British detachment on the Kuflan Kuh to evacuate its position and retire in the direction of Zenjan, led him to modify these orders. General Marshall reported that, though the British detachment was too weak to stop the Turkish advance, this could be delayed sufficiently to enable him to draw in to Kazvin the troops between there and Enzeli, so as to avoid the risk of their being cut off; and that consequently only those details of the 39th Infantry Brigade which were between Kazvin and Enzeli would go to Baku. General Marshall added that he had for some time been collecting local transport to enable him to send reinforcements to North-West Persia and that in three days time he would be able to despatch, from railhead, two infantry battalions and drafts, which should reach Hamadan four weeks later.

By this time the force in Baku had been reinforced by headquarters and two companies 9th Worcestershire and by 500 of Bicharakoff's men with ten machine guns. Good progress had been made in wiring and improving the defences, including the reorganisation of the telephone communications. But it had been found impossible to get the Armenian troops to

entrench themselves properly; and, though some progress had been made with their training, their discipline was still so bad that they could never be relied upon, either to take up their allotted positions or to remain in them.* The local political situation had become more complex, as it was reported, first, that the fleet was negotiating with the enemy to surrender the British force† and then, that the Armenians had opened negotiations to surrender the town after the withdrawal of the British force. The latter report was said to have so infuriated the fleet that they threatened to bombard the Armenian quarter. They were also said to have the intention, in common with some of the other local parties, of deposing the local authorities altogether in favour of entire control by the British. In his book General Dunsterville says that he considered this solution of the difficulties. But he realised that he had insufficient British officers with him to carry out the various necessary tasks; and he had to rest content with the limited control he had already established.‡

It was difficult to gain any exact idea of the Turkish dispositions and intentions; and, though the enemy had no aircraft, observation by our two aeroplanes and by the two Russian seaplanes was much hampered by the continuous hot winds and dust storms. At the beginning of September the Turks began concentrating men a short distance westward of Baladjari, but most of these troops appeared to have moved elsewhere by the 6th and both Binagadi and Digya had been evacuated. During the second week of the month troops were again observed westward of Baladjari and south of Binagadi, but they were only seen in inconsiderable numbers. On the night of the 12th/13th, however, an English-speaking Arab officer deserter came in and said that the enemy was preparing for a general attack, probably next day. He could not say on which part of the line the main attack was intended, though he thought it might be against our left. The 5th Caucasus, 15th and part of the 36th Caucasus Divisions formed the Turkish force

* General Dunsterville had tried to bring the local troops under proper discipline by linking three of their battalions with a British battalion, the brigades so formed being under the commander of the latter. But he met with much opposition and also objections to a British officer assuming command—though the local officers had not the necessary experience; and the scheme was still under discussion when the end came.

† The truth of this is uncertain.

‡ Colonel Stokes had been appointed Chief of Staff to the local Commander-in-Chief and other British officers were in charge of the arsenal, the machine guns and the combined infantry of the defensive line.

opposite Baku and he estimated their maximum strength at 7,000. All the cavalry were irregulars, but the majority of the infantry were regulars.* He believed that there were thirty-two field or mountain guns with the force, though he himself had only seen four. The 5th Caucasus Division, which had been concentrated west of Baladjari, had moved over to the Turkish right and the 15th Division was, he believed, being moved over to the left. The Turks, whose intelligence was bad, believed that there were in Baku 3,000 British, 4,000 Russians and 6,000 Armenians; and feeling sure that the Armenians would not stand they meant to capture the town. If the attack failed this time, they would bring up the 10th Caucasus Division as a reinforcement.

This information enabled Colonel Keyworth to make some preparation to meet an attack next day, though he was uncertain whether it would fall on his left or about Baladjari. It also led General Dunsterville to countermand an operation against the enemy's line of communication, which Colonel Rawlinson was to have left Baku on the 13th to carry out from Lenkoran.

By 9.30 p.m. on the 13th September the general disposition of the troops holding the line of defence was as follows. Westward of Bibi Eibat, "A" Company, North Staffordshire (about 60 strong under Captain Bollington) held the left of the line, with an Armenian battalion (about 100 strong) in local reserve; at Wolf's Gap was a Russian detachment with two machine guns; and Headquarters and "C" Company North Staffordshire (about 80 strong) with 20 rifles Warwicks and Worcestershire, under Major Ley, had just moved out from general reserve in the town and had occupied a commanding position in rear of "A" Company, near a local battery of field guns and howitzers. Colonel Keyworth had sent out this reserve to meet the contingency of a night attack against his left, and meant to withdraw it in the early morning if not required.

"B" Company, North Staffordshire, under Captain Turkington, apparently about 100 strong, which had just moved from local reserve south of Baladjari, held about eight hundred yards of the line north of Wolf's Gap, near two batteries in position. Northward of them, for two-and-a-half miles or more, to the point forming the right of the Left Section of the defence, the line was held by Armenian troops, with two

* He said that the Turks had not yet begun to employ the irregular infantry they had recruited.

Armenian battalions in rear, in reserve, at the headquarters of the Left Section of the defence (Colonel Beg Surab).

Bicharakoff's men held the left of the Right Section of the defence, which included the angle where the line turned east. On their right "A" and "C" Companies of the Worcestershire held a line, about two miles long, which passed Baladjari Station and village, with "B" Company in local reserve. The Warwicks (less a company) continued the line to the right as far as the Beyuk Salt Marsh, their fourth company (100 strong under Captain Bushell) being in reserve at 39th Brigade Headquarters on the Baku-Binagadi road about one-and-a-half miles south of Baladjari. "D" Company of the North Staffordshire (50 strong under Major Havelock) was also in reserve about two miles west of Brigade Headquarters. Four field batteries, including one of howitzers and the British 8th Battery, were with the Right Section of the defence.

On the right of the Warwicks, the south bank of the Beyuk Salt Marsh was held by an Armenian battalion and at the defile immediately to the east of it were posted four of the Dunsterforce armoured car machine guns. Two of the Dunsterforce armoured cars were at Baladjari and the third was in reserve at Baku. The extreme right of the line, which was threatened by enemy mounted troops, was covered by a force of about 500 Armenian infantry, a cavalry squadron, a battery and three Russian armoured cars.

The above statement does not take into account the dispositions of a large part of the local forces, as these were never known to the British and never accorded with the orders issued to them.

For about an hour after midnight (13th/14th September) firing was heard, apparently from about one-and-a-half miles north of Wolf's Gap. But no information was obtainable concerning it, and a patrol sent out by "B" Company North Staffordshire found nothing to report. At 4.30 a.m. a considerable amount of firing was again heard from the same direction, but no information about it could be obtained; and it gradually subsided, only to break out again in increased volume about an hour later. It had been a very dark and misty night and, when day broke, the mist in the Wolf's Gap region, which grew thicker for two or three hours, rendered it impossible to see for any distance. All the British commanders reported all quiet on their immediate fronts, so Colonel Keyworth asked for information from Major Dayrell, liaison officer with the headquarters of the Left Section of Defence.

He replied that he thought that the enemy had broken the line to the north of Wolf's Gap and had gained the ridge overlooking the town. As this report was not verified, Colonel Keyworth ordered Captain Bollington ("A" Company, North Staffordshire) to proceed to Wolf's Gap and report on the situation. In the meantime, Major Ley, in conference with Major Dayrell, decided to move his reserve company towards Wolf's Gap; but before he could do so, he received orders (about 6.35 a.m.) from Colonel Keyworth to move back into the town. Captain Bollington had found all correct at Wolf's Gap and an official report to Colonel Keyworth from the Russian General Staff said that the line was intact. At the same time Colonel Keyworth had received information from Colonel Faviell that an enemy attack was developing against the Baladjari sector. In point of fact, though the line at Wolf's Gap and for half-a mile north of it was intact, the enemy really had broken through about a mile or so further to the north.

In the Baladjari sector, though the firing from the direction of Wolf's Gap had been heard, all had been quiet till about 6 a.m., when the Worcestershire drove back a small Turkish patrol seen in the vicinity of Warwick Castle. Not long after this several hundred of the enemy were seen advancing towards Baladjari and, though by about 7 a.m. they were checked by the fire of the Worcestershire and Warwicks at a distance of about 1,200 yards from the line of defence, other enemy movements near Binagadi and the heavy firing from Wolf's Gap direction showed Colonel Faviell that a serious attack was in progress. At 7.40 a.m. he heard from British headquarters that Major Ley's reserve had been withdrawn to the town, but he could get no information regarding the situation on the left flank. He then informed Colonel Keyworth's staff officer that from the heavy firing he concluded that the main attack was directed against Wolf's Gap and that the attack on Baladjari was only a feint, which he could easily deal with.

At 7.45 a.m. Colonel Keyworth, receiving definite information from Major Dayrell that the enemy was in possession of the ridge north of Wolf's Gap (from which the Armenian battalions were retreating), ordered him to get in touch with Major Ley and use the reserve to restore the situation. This Major Dayrell was unable to do; but Colonel Keyworth intercepted Major Ley before he reached the town with orders to move to the high ground to the south-west of the town, so as to prevent the enemy from extending his gains to the south and occupying the ridge immediately above the town.

About 7 a.m. bullets had begun to come against the right rear of "B" Company North Staffordshire to the north of Wolf's Gap and, as these increased in volume, the company was forced gradually to change front, till the whole faced roughly north-north-east. Hostile machine guns also came into action and at about 8 a.m. the company had to fall back to a ridge some 1,200 yards east of the crest line. At this hour Captain Bollington, hearing by telephone from "B" Company that it was surrounded* and then finding all communication with that company severed, sent rather more than half his own company towards Wolf's Gap. But at 8.30 a.m., to save itself from being completely cut off, "B" Company had been obliged to make a further retirement to a line immediately west of the outskirts of the town.

After a stiff up-hill climb, Major Ley's company reached the cemeteries, which were on the hills immediately above and to the south-west of the town, at 9.30 a.m. He encountered local troops retiring and he at once sent a party of about 40 rifles to take up a position on a cemetery hill to his front, which local troops also began to occupy. He also sent a small party to join "B" Company, whom he could see on his right to the north-north-east. In this way a scattered line was formed facing roughly west, which closed the entrances to the town from the south and south-west and which was held by parties of the North Staffordshire with local troops collecting in between them. By this time Captain Bollington had concentrated the rest of "A" Company and had taken up a line facing roughly north, which ran from the direction of Wolf's Gap towards the cemeteries, covering some local guns. Colonel Keyworth, meanwhile, had withdrawn the two armoured cars from Baladjari and had sent them to join the third car, to operate to the westward of the town. Here, boldly and skilfully handled throughout the rest of the day, they did considerable execution among the enemy.

About 11 a.m., in face of an enemy attack in force and under orders from Colonel Keyworth, "A" Company fell back in good order and, making a detour, joined Major Ley's detachment. About the same hour Colonel Keyworth withdrew the Dunsterforce machine guns from their position eastward of the Beyuk Salt Marsh and sent them also to the left of the line.

* An incorrect and apparently unauthorised message sent by a signaller who was killed about that time.

In the Baladjari sector reports reached Colonel Faviell continuously from 8.45 to 9.45 a.m. that the enemy was collecting near Binagadi, while at 9 a.m. he heard from Major Havelock that the enemy, who had evidently penetrated the line north of Wolf's Gap, had obliged Bicharakoff's infantry to throw back their left flank. At 9.45 a.m. Colonel Faviell, in accordance with instructions from Colonel Keyworth, ordered Captain Bushell to take his Warwickshire company (in reserve) and operate against the left of the enemy who had broken through to the North of Wolf's Gap. Colonel Keyworth had said that the Russian General Staff was sending two local battalions to assist in this movement. But they never appeared; and the Russian commander of the Right Section of defence sent in their place three Armenian companies and a hundred of Bicharakoff's men. The Armenians broke under shell fire; but Captain Bushell's company and Bicharakoff's men, attacking with the greatest gallantry, became heavily engaged with superior numbers; and they attained considerable success until the Warwickshire officers and many other ranks became casualties, when their progress came to an end.

This counter-attack relieved the local situation temporarily, but at noon Colonel Faviell heard from Major Havelock, who was being joined by the survivors of Captain Bushell's party, that he was urgently in need of reinforcements. Colonel Faviell then sent him the Worcestershire company which had previously been in local reserve at Baladjari. Telephonic communication with Major Havelock broke down and Colonel Faviell heard nothing further from him till 1.30 p.m., when he learnt that Major Havelock's party had driven the Turks off the ridge. In the meantime Colonel Faviell had ordered the evacuation of Baladjari, as he had learnt that Bicharakoff's men had begun to retire. The Worcestershire were directed to fall back to the main ridge on the south and east of Baladjari, the Russians were to withdraw to the high ground near the Baku-Baladjari road to the left of the Worcestershire and the Warwicks were to remain where they were. On hearing of Major Havelock's success, however, Colonel Faviell tried to cancel these orders; but he was unable to gain communication with the Russians and the movement proceeded.

The retirement of the Worcestershire left a temporary gap on the left of the Warwicks, of which the enemy took immediate advantage to attack in that direction; and at the same time he developed an attack against the Warwicks' right, whence the Armenians at once retired. Under orders from Colonel

Faviell, the Warwicks held on for a time to enable the 8th Field Battery to withdraw and then fell back into line with the Worcestershire. During this time Major Havelock's party had again been heavily engaged and, deserted by most of the local troops, had been obliged to fall back in the direction of the town. Major Havelock himself was killed and many of his detachment were killed or wounded. About 3 p.m. the Russians on the left of the Worcestershire main body also retired. This necessitated the further retirement of the whole line, which fell back gradually and slowly till about 5 p.m. when it reached the vicinity of the northern outskirts of the town.

To return to the British left, where the Turkish pressure had been steadily maintained and where, owing to the amount of dead ground, it had been impossible to observe their numbers and dispositions. They had brought several guns into action and from 10 a.m. onward shelled the Allied line heavily, especially directing their fire against the cemetery hill position; and between 2 and 4 p.m. they gradually worked forward into a cemetery to the north-west of this position. From here their machine guns enfiladed the cemetery hill crest and under this fire the local troops suddenly retreated about 4 p.m. With insufficient men to fill the gaps they left, Major Ley felt that he had no option but to withdraw his men also. As, however, the enemy made no attempt to follow up our retirement, the local troops were able to rally and push uphill again with part of the North Staffordshire, to take up a final and last position.

At 3 p.m. Colonel Keyworth came to the conclusion that, if they wished to avoid annihilation or capture, the British troops must evacuate Baku.* Colonel Stokes was sent for and the situation explained for the information of the Russian Commander-in-Chief. After this the necessary orders for withdrawal were issued, Major Ley being instructed† to hold on to his position at all costs till 8.30 p.m. to enable the remainder of the troops to withdraw to the place of embarkation.

In point of fact, the enemy appears to have been incapable of further serious effort anywhere after about 4 p.m.; and the gallant tenacity of the British infantry had been so far successful

* General Dunsterville, having learnt that the Russian Commander-in-Chief considered further resistance impossible, had visited Colonel Keyworth's headquarters a little while before this and discussed the situation. Finding, however, that Colonel Keyworth considered that the position could be held till the evening, General Dunsterville left it entirely to his decision whether and when evacuation was necessary.

† This order reached Major Ley about 6.30 p.m.

that the Turks, whose losses are said to have been very heavy,* were unable to interfere with our withdrawal. The stand made by the three British battalions, totalling altogether less than 1,000 rifles, is worthy of our highest admiration ; and senior British officers on the spot were of opinion that, had another 1,000 British infantry been available as a reserve, the situation could have been restored.

Only one of the two British aeroplanes present had been fit to take the air during the day ; and during its reconnaissance flight at dawn the clouds and mist had prevented identification of the enemy troops north of Wolf's Gap. But its Lewis gun fire had been directed against enemy reserves halted on the western slopes of the Turkish ridge. During the morning two further reconnaissances were carried out and the enemy troops fired at, till mechanical trouble necessitated a return to the Baku aerodrome. This having been remedied, two further flights took place, when the enemy troops were again fired at from a height of 1,500 feet. The aeroplane was hit several times by enemy rifle and machine gun fire and at 3 p.m. both the British aeroplanes, being unfit for further immediate work, were ordered to be destroyed.

The British casualties during the day amounted to about 125, of which 50 occurred in the North Staffordshire, 40 in the Worcestershire and 26 in the Warwicks. That they were not greater, as was at first feared,† was mainly due to the extraordinarily bad shooting of the Turks.

The plans for evacuation had been carefully drawn up beforehand and the actual withdrawal was carried out successfully and without special incident. It had been anticipated that the local inhabitants or troops, resenting the evacuation, might attempt to oppose it by force. But they did not do so until it was too late for them to stop it. General Dunsterville notified the Dictators in the afternoon of his intention and they raised no objection at the time The sick and wounded with some other details embarked in the *Kursk* and *Argo* and the greater part of the force with General Dunsterville and his staff in the *President Kruger*, while munitions were loaded in the *Armenian* by Colonel Rawlinson.

By 10 p.m. all the men were on board the *President Kruger*, the *Argo* having already left and the *Kursk* being about to start. Two of the Dictators had just arrived at the wharf

* Colonel Faviell estimated them at 2,000.

† Owing to the darkness and dispersion of the force, the totals were not known till after Enzeli had been reached.

with peremptory orders for the British troops to return to the line of defence. The enemy shelling had ceased, the Turks had not yet entered the town and the Baku people, they said, meant to continue the fight. But General Dunsterville refused to sacrifice more lives in a vain cause. Whereupon the Dictators said that the fleet would be ordered to sink his ships. General Dunsterville, however, decided to take this risk. He knew that it would take some time for the fleet, which had no searchlights, to receive and carry out these orders ; while even their obedience was uncertain, as they disliked the Dictators and were not unfriendly towards the British. The only real danger was from a guardship at the entrance of the port ; but she had no large guns and General Dunsterville hoped to pass her unseen in the dark.

The departure of the *President Kruger* was delayed till past midnight by families of the crew ; but she got off at last and was just passing the guardship when one of her crew turned on all the electric lights. This led to a challenge from the guardship and to her opening fire, fortunately without effect. The three steamers carrying troops all reached Enzeli safely next day.*

The *Armenian* followed the *President Kruger* and was hit by several small shells from the guardship ; but she managed to get through to Enzeli without loss of life.

A certain amount of material had to be destroyed in Baku and the animals were handed over to Bicharakoff's contingent ; but all the personnel and guns were safely brought away, thanks to the foresight and capacity of General Dunsterville, Commodore Norris and the officers under them.

Baku had been taken by the Turks without German assistance. Colonel von der Goltz says† that till the end of August the Germans had only a weak mixed brigade at Tiflis ; and, though reinforcements came by sea from South Russia, followed by a Bavarian cavalry brigade, great difficulties were

* A fine testimony to the gallantry of the British at Baku is afforded by a document presented to General Dunsterville at Enzeli in the following terms :

"We the Committee and crew of the S.S. *Kursk* have witnessed with intense admiration the heroic conduct of your brave British soldiers in the defence of Baku. We have seen them suffering wounds and death bravely in defence of our town, which our own people were too feeble to defend. It is wonderful to us that these fine fellows from that distant island in the North Sea should have come all this way to the Caspian and have given up their lives there in the cause of honour and glory. We are so much impressed by their bearing and valour and by the whole episode of the British endeavours to save Baku from the Turks, that we wish to be at once taken over as a body and granted British nationality."

† "Meine Entsendung nach Baku."

encountered in landing them and moving them eastward. These difficulties were only just being overcome and an advance to Baku arranged when the news arrived that the Turks had taken that place.

On hearing of the evacuation of Baku, the War Office telegraphed to General Marshall on the 16th September, asking how much shipping was controlled by General Dunsterville and the enemy at Baku respectively, what damage was done at Baku before evacuation and whether any troops had been sent to Krasnovodsk. They also asked General Marshall for his plans regarding North-West Persia and emphasised the increased importance to us of Krasnovodsk.

In his reply on the 17th General Marshall said that he had asked for definite information regarding the shipping. He understood that we had taken over two ships for arming on the 13th and begun work on one of them ; while on the previous day General Dunsterville had telegraphed from Enzeli that all ships at Baku had been ordered to Petrovsk or Astrakhan and that the fleet was pro-British and wished to come either under our control or that of Bicharakoff. General Dunsterville requested, however, that any action regarding Krasnovodsk might be taken before the attitude of the fleet possibly changed into one of hostility. Beyond putting the permanent wireless station at Baku completely out of action, no damage had been done before evacuation, though a subsequent report said that the oil reserves were on fire. No more troops had been sent to Krasnovodsk, where the maximum that could be supplied was said to be a battery and a battalion. General Malleson asked for ample ammunition for the battery, but General Marshall was unable to transport this to Krasnovodsk, and the guns at Kaakha had already expended much of what they had. India proposed that General Malleson should take over command of Krasnovodsk.

As regards his plans in North-West Persia General Marshall thought that a reconsideration of the situation there and in Trans-Caspia was necessary. We had narrowly escaped disaster at Baku, we had extremely small prospects of controlling the Caspian fleet—which would be useless without the oil fuel obtainable only from Baku—and we appeared to have only a very few merchant ships in our hands. Having regard to supply and maintenance difficulties he was opposed to sending more troops to Krasnovodsk and would even advocate the return to Persia of the detachments already sent there. The Turks about Sauj Bulag threatened the approaches

to Kermanshah and Hamadan, while south of Tabriz they were in considerable strength and had obliged our troops to evacuate the Kuflan Kuh, the strongest obstacle to their advance.* He would like to withdraw all troops between Kazvin and Enzeli† and to concentrate adequate fighting forces at Kazvin and Hamadan, with detachments at Zenjan, Bijar and Sehneh. This opinion, he said, was based mainly on the tactical situation influenced by the great difficulties of maintenance, which had, moreover, been increased by the influx of the Jelu refugees.

In another telegram of the same day General Marshall said that he was recalling General Dunsterville and breaking up his Mission, whose personnel would be employed with the Urmia Brigade, and elsewhere in Persia, while all the troops in North Persia would come under the direct orders of General Thomson.‡

On the 18th September General Marshall repeated telegrams sent the previous day from Enzeli by General Dunsterville and Commodore Norris. General Dunsterville had promised to pay the Caspian fleet if it would join us and he hoped to receive a favourable reply after its representative had seen Bicharakoff at Petrovsk. Commodore Norris said that he could man three or four ships with British personnel, using Russians for the engine room ; that there was sufficient oil available at Enzeli and Krasnovodsk ; and that he could carry out his original orders if Enzeli was strongly held with reasonable harbour defence. General Dunsterville said that, when we had the armed ships ready, there was no reason to fear the Caspian fleet, as it lacked unity of control and was short of ammunition. General Marshall added that he was sending orders for a naval party with guns, which had been stopped at Kazvin, to be sent to Enzeli at once, as well as other naval details from Basra and Baghdad.

On the same day the War Office telegraphed to General Marshall emphasising the importance to us of obtaining control of the Caspian and giving orders that Enzeli should not be evacuated unless military necessity absolutely compelled it as a last resort.§

---

* In a previous telegram of the same date General Marshall had reported that the Turks about the Kuflan Kuh had made no further advance.

† The evacuation of Enzeli was actually ordered on the 17th September and elicited strong protests from Commodore Norris.

‡ General Fraser succeeded General Thomson in command of the 14th Division.

§ This order was repeated by General Marshall to General Thomson on the 19th.

Reports from Commodore Norris in the next few days showed that the fall of Baku, with its Centro-Caspian Government, had really facilitated his task as it removed the main obstruction he had hitherto encountered. In fact, he found that the number of ships he could arm was limited only by the material, labour, personnel and time available.

In Trans-Caspia the fall of Baku caused much anxiety to the local government, lest it might lead to the Turks crossing the Caspian and declaring a *Jahad* among the Mahomedan tribes in Turkestan and Central Asia. On the 11th September the Bolsheviks had attacked Kaakha but had been repulsed, owing largely to the accurate and effective shooting of the British field guns (44th Battery); and on the 18th the Bolsheviks again attacked this position, but, being unsuccessful, retired so disheartened that they made no further attacks for many months. General Malleson had sent reinforcements of two squadrons 28th Light Cavalry, which were on their way there. But the British force there was still very weak in numbers and the situation had many elements of danger in it which would affect us materially in Afghanistan and India. On the 24th September the War Office, in consultation with the Admiralty, issued orders that steps must be taken immediately to gain control of the Caspian, by drastic measures if necessary.

By the time these orders were received, Commodore Norris had already begun to make good progress towards organising both Enzeli and Krasnovodsk as naval bases, in collecting material and in other necessary arrangements. On the 27th September he reported that the Caspian fleet was disorganised and under the complete control of Bicharakoff; that he proposed to ignore it as long as it was not hostile; and that when his armed ships were ready he would take all further action required. The armed flotilla which he was preparing would ultimately comprise twelve ships, six of them being small vessels for inshore work; and on the 30th September General Marshall reported to the War Office that the first of these vessels would be ready by the 6th October and that work had commenced on a second vessel.

Since the 12th September, the part of the 11th Caucasus Division which had forced our detachment to evacuate the Kuflan Kuh had made no attempt to advance in force further southward and was reported to be collecting supplies in the Mianeh area. The general disposition of the remaining Turkish divisions in and around Trans-Caucasia was believed to be as follows. At Baku, 5th Caucasus, 15th and part of the 36th,

Divisions; Alexandropol, 10th Caucasus, and part of the 36th, Divisions; Erivan-Julfa area, 9th Caucasus Division; Dilman-Urmia, 12th Division; Sauj Bulag, 5th Division, with 6th Division in detachments near there and towards Ruwandiz; and the 37th Division at Batum. After the fall of Baku it was reported that the 10th Caucasus Division* was to come to Tabriz. A few days later it was reported from a reliable source that Nuri Pasha at Baku had received orders from Enver Pasha that of the seven regiments there, one was to remain at Baku, one was to clear the Derbend-Petrovsk area and the other five were to be withdrawn from Baku and in communication with Halil Pasha were to furnish a force to clear the south-western shores of the Caspian† and occupy Enzeli. About the same time news was received that a small Turkish detachment, apparently from Tabriz, had occupied Ardebil, which Persian Cossacks had abandoned after a feeble resistance.

On the 16th September, the troops on the Persian line of communication from Qasr-i-Shirin (inclusive) to Hamadan (exclusive) consisted of the squadron Hertfordshire Yeomanry, 26th Mountain Battery, 72nd Field Company, R.E. (less one section), 5th 12th and 15th Companies Sappers and Miners, 48th and 128th Pioneers, 26th and 62nd Punjabis and administrative units; and the North Persia Force (late Dunsterforce) comprised the 14th Hussars, one section 15th Machine Gun Squadron, 13th Brigade, R.F.A., 21st Mountain Battery, one section 72nd Field Company, R.E., 36th Infantry Brigade (1/4th Hampshire, 1/2nd Gurkhas, with 36th Sikhs and 1/6th Gurkhas under orders from Mesopotamia), 39th Infantry Brigade (9th Royal Warwickshire, 7th Gloucestershire, 9th Worcestershire and 7th North Staffordshire), 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery (less one section) and Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade.‡ There were also two and a half flights of the 30th and 72nd Squadrons, R.A.F.

---

* This was the division which the Arab officer deserter at Baku on the 13th September had said was held in reserve for the attack on Baku.

† A small British mission was still in Lenkoran, where the Russian settlers were debating whether to surrender to the Turks.

‡ The distribution of the North Persia force was approximately as follows:—
Kaakha—Krasnovodsk. 44th Battery, R.F.A. (less one section), and 136 rifles 1/4th Hampshire.
Enzeli.—8th Battery, R.F.A.
Headquarters 39th Infantry Brigade, with 9th Royal Warwickshire, 9th Worcestershire (less one company) and 7th North Staffordshire.
One platoon 1/4th Hampshire.

[*Continued on next page.*

On the 17th September General Thomson, who proposed to establish his headquarters at Hamadan, issued orders for a gradual redistribution of his force, which aimed at concentrating his main strength at Zenjan, Kazvin and Hamadan in accordance with the plan telegraphed by General Marshall to the War Office on that date. On or before the 21st, however, news was received that the movement to Tabriz of the 10th Caucasus Division had been cancelled and that it had been ordered to proceed urgently to Constantinople. There were several reasons which might account for this order. For some time past the Turks had been strengthening their coastal defences and removing Greeks from the littoral districts as they feared that a concentration of Allied ships at Mudros indicated an intention to make a landing in support of the revolutionary movement that was forming in Turkey. An Allied advance in the Balkans, based on Salonika, was steadily gaining ground. General Allenby had just gained a great victory in Palestine. In France and Flanders also, affairs were progressing well for the Allies. It was significant, too, that Germany had just made a definite peace offer to Belgium and that Austria had

[*Continued from previous page.*]

Resht area.—100 rifles 1/4th Hampshire, 238 rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas and two armoured cars (6th Light Armoured Motor Battery).
Kazvin—Resht road.—140 rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas.
Kazvin.—Headquarters North Persia Force.
13th Brigade, R.F.A., headquarters and one section each 2nd and C/69th Batteries.
Headquarters 36th Infantry Brigade and details.
Two sections 39th Brigade Machine Gun Company.
Zenjan line (or en route there).—One squadron 14th Hussars (reduced to 16 sabres).
One section each, 44th and C/69th Field and 21st Mountain, batteries.
One company each, 7th Gloucestershire and 9th Worcestershire, 150 rifles 1/4th Hampshire and 160 rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas.
39th Brigade Machine Gun Company (less two sections).
Two armoured cars 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery and four of the Dunsterforce armoured cars.
Bijar line.—14th Hussars (less two squadrons).
Section, 15th Machine Gun Squadron.
Section, 72nd Field Company, R.E.
Section, 21st Mountain Battery.
7th Gloucestershire (less one company).
Sehneh line.—One squadron, 14th Hussars.
Section, 21st Mountain Battery.
Hamadan and vicinity.—2nd Battery, R.F.A. (less one section).
50 rifles 1/4th Hampshire and headquarters and 220 rifles 1/2nd Gurkhas.
186th Machine Gun Company.
Three Dunsterforce armoured cars.
Above is exclusive of levies and irregulars, whose number and dispositions are unknown.
Pack, wagon or lorry wireless sets were with each detachment.

asked the United States of America to arrange for a peace conference.

General Marshall, having ascertained that the levies and irregulars raised by General Dunsterville had not proved to be of much military value, decided to disband them (or utilise them only as road guards or tribal police) and to concentrate on the organisation of the four battalions of the Urmia Brigade.*

On the 23rd September the War Office ordered General Marshall to complete the detachment in Trans-Caspia to a battery and a battalion, sending with them warm clothing, stores and ammunition sufficient for at least four months. Meat, grain and forage would be arranged for locally by General Malleson, under whose orders this detachment would come. This arrangement had been agreed to by the Commander-in-Chief in India who said, however, that the detachment could best be maintained from Enzeli. But to meet the contingency of the loss of Enzeli he was issuing orders to push on with the railway extension to Mirjawa on the Indo-Persian frontier. He also asked that the supply of some Ford vans previously asked for should be expedited to enable him to supply a brigade in advance of Meshed by the spring of 1919. The 9th Royal Warwickshire and a section of the 39th Brigade machine gun company left Enzeli for Krasnovodsk on the 29th September and the last section of the 44th Field Battery was to follow them shortly.†

For a few days after the fall of Baku, the attitude of the Jangalis appeared to be uncertain, but it was then reported that they were ready to co-operate with us in resisting a Turkish invasion of Persia, subject to the approval of the Persian Government. This Government was by this time friendly to us; and, with a view to strengthening it in this attitude, the War Office, on the 25th September, sent the following summary of the general military situation in the Middle East to the Military Attaché at Tehran for the information of Sir Percy Cox, who had arrived ten days previously from Baghdad to

* The organisation laid down for this brigade was for Nos. 1 and 4 Battalions to be composed of Jelu Assyrians and Nos. 2 and 3 of Armenians. Each battalion was to consist of four companies (one being mounted) with two British officers and three British non-commissioned officers per company; while each battalion was to have a British commandant, adjutant, quartermaster, sergeant-major, quartermaster-sergeant and orderly room sergeant. It was proposed to utilise two battalions on the Zenjan line and one each on the Bijar and Sehneh lines.

† It did not sail till a month later owing to influenza, of which an epidemic at this time was the cause of a high sick rate among all the troops.

replace Sir Charles Marling as British Minister at Tehran on the latter's departure to Europe on sick leave :*

> "The complete destruction of the whole Turkish army in Palestine leaves Syria open to invasion. Every anti-Turkish element in the country will support the advancing British. The communications of the Turkish force in Mesopotamia are thus seriously threatened and in all probability it will be forced to abandon Mesopotamia altogether. Arabia is completely lost to them and the fall of Medina is now imminent. Turkey, in addition to being faced with the loss of three-quarters of her Asiatic territory, is gravely threatened in Europe by the Allied advance in the Balkans, which, since 15th September, has continued uninterruptedly. The Bulgarian army is in a critical situation and a slight further advance by the Allies will sever it in two. To meet all these dangers on so many fronts the Turks have only one army left, which is now in the Caucasus and Persia. General Allenby's victory has already compelled them to transfer to Constantinople a division which was destined for Tabriz ; and the situation in the Balkans and Palestine will completely paralyse Turkish operations in the Middle East, and in all probability will lead very soon to the evacuation of Persia. Thus the whole situation has been transformed in the last few days and the Turks must now think only of protecting their own territory and not of further aggression."

On the 27th September, Bulgaria asked for an armistice ; and it was reported that the Germans intended to withdraw their troops from the Caucasus and that the Turkish Government wished to do the same. As it turned out, however, both German and Turkish troops remained there for some weeks longer ; though danger of a further Turkish advance into Persia became almost negligible. Colonel von der Goltz says† that he was sent to represent German interests at Baku and set out for that place by railway from Tiflis with a large escort on the 2nd October. His party was stopped by armed Tartars before he reached Elizabetopol, but Nuri Pasha invited him four days later to Baku, where he soon afterwards arrived, and

* Sir Percy Cox would have preferred to remain at his post in Mesopotamia till the end of the war, and only responded to the call to Tehran at the express wish of the Viceroy of India and of General Marshall, who felt that his intimate knowledge of the personnel and problems of the Mesopotamia Force would make his presence in H.M. Legation helpful to them at that juncture.

† "Meine Entsendung nach Baku."

tried unsuccessfully to purchase the Caspian fleet so as to gain a road to Turkestan. About a fortnight after he reached Baku the first train-load of oil left Baku for Tiflis. But the war news became worse daily and on the 2nd November he and his party departed for Germany. He denies that it was a mistaken dispersion of force to send German troops to the Caucasus, as he considers that it was a necessary undertaking to obtain oil and manganese, which were essential for carrying on the war, while it also afforded a possibility of striking at the British. As regards the Turks he said that Nuri Pasha had very high-flown plans for consolidating his position in Russian Azerbaijan and for advancing into Persia, where he expected to organise a rising which would enable him to attack the British in Mesopotamia from the east. Nuri's position in Baku was, however, precarious, as only the town area and the railway connecting it with the west were in his hands. To the south were hostile Armenians ; to the north the Daghestanis were undecided in their attitude ; the anti-Turkish Bolsheviks and other Russians were in Astrakhan and Northern Caucasia ; and in Persia were the British.

At the end of September General Marshall received reports that the 10th Caucasus Division had reached Damascus and that another Turkish division had been withdrawn from their Caucasus armies. A German cavalry brigade and seven German infantry battalions were said to be still in Trans-Caucasia.

On the 30th September General Gillman, Chief of the General Staff in Mesopotamia, who had been visiting North Persia and Tehran, accompanied Sir Percy Cox to an interview with the Persian Premier, who was anxious—owing to the fall of Baku, our retirement from Mianeh and the evident inefficiency of the Persian Cossacks—lest the Turks should advance on Tehran. He also feared treachery, owing to Turkish intrigues, on the part of the Jangalis. General Gillman, was, however, able to reassure him, both as to the competence of our troops north of Zenjan to stop any further Turkish advance and also as to our ability to maintain Persian security at Enzeli and on the Caspian.

In Mesopotamia, during the period under review in this chapter, there were no active operations of importance. But, owing to the requirements of other theatres of war, there had been considerable reductions in the British force, while other changes had been made and were projected. Half a million additional combatants were being recruited, trained and

organised in India, where it was proposed to raise 67 new infantry battalions. Of these, 40 were to replace British battalions in Salonika, and the other 27 were to be used to expand the 13th Division and 56th Infantry Brigade in Mesopotamia into three new mixed divisions. To assist India in the organisation of these new battalions, most Indian units in Mesopotamia furnished contingents of trained officers and other ranks. In addition, in September Mesopotamia was called on to send twelve Indian Infantry battalions to Salonika at once. To furnish these, an Indian battalion was taken from each infantry brigade in the 14th, 15th, 17th and 18th Divisions, which left them each with only three battalions.

The regiments composing the 6th Cavalry Brigade were now the 11th Lancers, 21st Cavalry and Patiala Lancers. The 14th Hussars were in Persia and the 22nd Cavalry were attached to the 15th Division on the Euphrates front.

The troops in Persia had for the most part been detached from the IIIrd Corps, in which the 13th Division had now only two infantry brigades (38th and 40th), and the 14th Division was still short of an artillery brigade (13th).*

Medium trench-mortar batteries no longer formed part of Corps Troops, but the artillery of each division included a battery of 6-inch Newton trench-mortars, which had replaced the 2-inch mortars. The artillery of the 17th Division had also been increased by a Volunteer and an Anglo-Indian battery (each of four 18-pounders) taken from the line of communication defences, which had been further reduced by three-and-a-half infantry battalions.†

Each division had a divisional train in place of each of the Supply and Transport companies with each brigade; and the mechanical transport had been increased by the arrival at Basra in September of a motor ambulance convoy and the leading portions of twelve additional motor transport companies.

Leave to India, Ceylon and the United Kingdom had been granted during the summer to officers and men on a fairly generous scale; and, owing to this and the excellent arrangements for the care of the health of officers and men remaining

* The 2/7th Hampshire (from L. of C. Defences) had been attached as an additional battalion to the 40th Brigade; the 56th Brigade had been allotted to replace the 36th Brigade in the 14th Division; and the 82nd Punjabis had replaced the 1/2nd Gurkhas in the 37th Brigade.

† Four battalions withdrawn and two companies Nabha infantry joined from India.

in the country, the casualties from sickness had been less than ever before.*

Very good progress had been made in developing the local resources of the country; and amongst other measures the following may be noted. A very large proportion of all the grain required for the force had been obtained from the recent harvest. Bitumen wells in the Euphrates Valley were opened and lime was manufactured on a large scale at Hit: a considerable quantity of both had been exported, and it had been possible to allow local private enterprise to participate in the industry. Steps had also been taken to develop and work oil-bearing strata at various places, and to obtain coal from the Kifri mines. The dredging of the Hammar Lake was almost completed; and there was a continuous and adequately equipped wharf, 3,300 feet long, at Basra, where there were many other developments and improvements.

* The arrangements at Bombay and Colombo for disposing of those who had gone on leave were much appreciated.

CHAPTER XLIV.

BRITISH ADVANCE UP THE TIGRIS; ACTIONS AT FAT-HA GORGE AND ON THE LITTLE ZAB.

(MAP 43.)

ON the 30th September General Marshall reported that he estimated the strength and dispositions of the Turkish forces on the Mesopotamia front to be as follows:—

Euphrates line, with headquarters at Ana and outposts at Alus; 1st Composite Cavalry Regiment, one horse and one field battery, one 10·5 cm. gun, 24th Infantry Regiment, an engineer company and gendarmerie—total 630 sabres, 9 guns and 1,165 rifles.

Line of Communication, Mosul (exclusive)—Nisibin: 200 sabres (31st Cavalry) and 100 gendarmerie.

Jabal Sinjar; 100 gendarmerie and 3 guns.

Mosul; Headquarters of Sixth Army and of Line of Communication, 350 sabres, 20 guns, 335 rifles and some depot formations.

Tigris line, in the Fat-ha positions, with outposts about Shuraimiya and headquarters at Humr: 14th Division (divisional squadron, divisional artillery of ten field batteries, 7th, 9th and 43rd Infantry Regiments, and divisional assault, signal and engineering companies), two batteries 15 cm. howitzers, one battery 10·5 cm. howitzers, one 10·5 cm. gun, one mountain battery, one section anti-aircraft guns, No. 2 Flying Detachment and some line of communication details=total 130 sabres, 59 guns, 3,465 rifles and 100 machine guns.

Kirkuk line, Headquarters at Kirkuk with advanced detachments at Tauq and Chemchemal: 2nd Division (divisional squadron, divisional artillery of four and a half field batteries, 1st, and two battalions 18th, Infantry Regiments and divisional assault, signal and engineer companies), one battery 10·5 cm. howitzers, one section mountain guns, one section anti-aircraft guns, No. 13 Flying Detachment and some line of communication details = total 310 sabres, 26 guns, 1,740 rifles and 40 machine guns.

Sulaimaniya Group, with detachments on the Halebja-Penjwin line: one frontier battalion, the 3/18th Infantry Regiment, one mountain battery and gendarmerie=total 50 sabres, 4 guns, 720 rifles and 10 machine guns.

Ruwandiz Group, with detachments at and towards Bane: divisional squadron, divisional artillery (8 guns), 16th and 22nd Infantry Regiments*, divisional assault, signal and engineer companies (all lately belonging to the 6th Division), and one frontier and one gendarmerie battalion=total 80 sabres, 8 guns, 1,840 rifles and 40 machine guns.

General Marshall also said that he had received information that the Turks, expecting us to assume the offensive on the Tigris front, had ordered the 5th Division (then concentrated at Sauj Bulag), with all the details of the IV Army Corps† headquarters and half the corps administrative units, to join the Sixth Army immediately. The strength of the 5th Division was estimated at 70 sabres, 25 guns, 2,400 rifles and 47 machine guns, but General Marshall did not consider that it could be fully concentrated at Fat-ha before the 24th October.

At this time H.M. Government felt it advisable to exploit at once the effect of General Allenby's success in Palestine, so as to eliminate all Turkish influence south of the Taurus mountains. For, if the Turks were given time to rest and to foment quarrels among the local populations, the situation would almost certainly deteriorate to our disadvantage. Consequently, on the 2nd October the War Office telegraphed to General Marshall that, as the Turks had been placed in a position of extreme difficulty by the British victories in Palestine and the collapse of Bulgaria, a request from them for the cessation of hostilities in the near future might result. In the circumstances, it was advisable that we should gain as much ground as possible up the Tigris. At the same time the work of the line of communication to the Caspian should not be retarded in any way, as its development was of primary importance. Further, as General Allenby's cavalry might be pushed on towards Aleppo, the feasibility of assisting them by a cavalry raid up the Euphrates should be studied. General Marshall was to send his proposals for carrying out either or both of these operations, bearing in mind that, to be effective, any action must be initiated without delay.

---

* It was subsequently reported that the 22nd Regiment had absorbed the 16th.

† The other division (12th) of this corps, with the corps cavalry, artillery, engineers, etc., was to remain in the Urmia area.

On the 4th October, General Marshall replied as follows :—

" In proposed operations the ruling factor is provision of transport. Practically all my transport of every description is employed on the Persian road. The maximum I can hope to make available for operations in Mesopotamia is some two hundred Ford vans ; and I may be able to form a mule cart supply column by combing out second line transport from units not taking part in operations by withdrawing them to railheads from forward positions. This transport will be quite inadequate for cavalry raid up Euphrates, in addition to an advance up the Tigris, owing to the great distance (350 miles) to Aleppo from railhead on Euphrates and paucity of mechanical transport combined with absence of local supplies along this route. No material assistance could be afforded to General Allenby by a cavalry raid from Hit up the Euphrates. I recommend, therefore, that all my resources be devoted to an advance towards Mosul from Tikrit. In this case on approaching Mosul the problem of maintenance should become easier, as some supplies will be obtainable locally upstream of Little Zab. I will forward my proposals for this operation in a short time."

On the 5th October General Marshall telegraphed that, in anticipation of approval, arrangements had been started for an advance up the Tigris by the Ist Corps and two cavalry brigades with the line of the Little Zab as the first objective. The preliminary arrangements entailed the formation of " dumps " in advance of Tikrit railhead and the collection of transport scattered over a wide area. These arrangements would involve at least ten or twelve days delay before an actual advance could commence.

After reaching the Little Zab, said General Marshall, further action would depend on developments. Arrangements were being made to push on the railway northward of Tikrit, but, till the results of the survey in progress were known, not more than half a mile of construction a day could be counted on.

On the 6th October the War Office informed General Marshall that, should his transport be insufficient to permit of both operations, precedence over the cavalry raid up the Euphrates should be given to the advance up the Tigris, for which his proposals were approved. The extension of the railway from Tikrit to Shuraimiya should be given priority next after the Kermanshah line.

General Marshall, learning, even before the capture of Damascus on the 1st October, that, owing to General Allenby's victories, the Turks were hurriedly withdrawing troops from the Caucasus* and that there was no longer any danger of an enemy advance on Kazvin, agreed fully that the time had come to take the offensive against the Turkish force covering the approaches to Mosul. The main part of this force was holding a position of great natural strength, astride the Fat-ha gorge, which the Turks had been preparing for nearly eighteen months, with a second strong position astride the Tigris at its confluence with the Little Zab.

General Marshall would have preferred to make the Turks fight on ground of his own choosing by carrying out his main advance via Kirkuk. But the lack of available transport, owing to the requirements of Persia and of the collection of the Mesopotamian harvest, prohibited such a course, so that the only alternative was a direct advance up the Tigris.

At a conference at Baghdad on the 5th October, attended by General Cobbe, General Marshall explained his intentions and gave general instructions for the operations. The main advance up the Tigris would be carried out by the Ist Corps and 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades under the command of General Cobbe, his right flank being covered by a small column from the IIIrd Corps. This column, commanded by General Lewin, was to advance on the line Tauq–Kirkuk–Altun Kōpri and prevent the enemy forces in that area from moving down the Little Zab. Further, the 56th Infantry Brigade was to move from the Euphrates to assist in constructing the railway line northward of Tikrit.

A good many preliminary movements of troops† not required for the operations would be necessary, to bring them back to the railways so as to release transport required for the advance ; and these movements with other necessary preparations would, it was considered, take about twelve days.‡

*It was reported that four Turkish divisions were being withdrawn.

† The disposition of General Marshall's force at the beginning of October was briefly as follows. Troops amounting to nearly a division were on the Persian line of communication and in Persia ; the 14th Division, east of the Diyala, was distributed from Khaniqin to Shahraban ; the 13th Division, west of the Diyala, had one brigade group in the Qara Tepe–Kifri–Tuz Khurmatli area and the other about Delli Abbas ; the 17th Division was in the vicinity of Tikrit on the Tigris right bank ; the bulk of the 18th Division was about Samarra, with a brigade at the Tigris–Adhaim junction ; the 15th Division was on the Euphrates with its advanced troops at Sahiliya to the north of Hit ; and the 6th, 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades were at or near Shahraban, Baghdad and Falluja respectively.

‡ By the 13th October it became clear that they would take longer.

The opinion of H.M. Government that Turkey would propose peace was confirmed early in October. On the 4th it was learnt on good authority that the Turkish Government had telegraphed to Berlin that it was about to ask for peace, as the Central Powers could no longer give adequate assistance, and that Germany had replied that she was ready to help Turkey in every way, that the communications between the two countries would not be interfered with and that measures had already been taken for the military occupation of Bulgaria. It was also reported that German troops were being sent by sea from Russia to Constantinople. In the next two or three days Turkish emissaries attempted to open peace negotiations through the British diplomatic representatives in Greece and Switzerland, but, as these emissaries were not accredited by the Turkish Cabinet, there was nothing to be gained by discussing proposals with them.

It was said that the Sultan of Turkey, with considerable support, was endeavouring to free the Turkish Government of the influence wielded by the Committee of Union and Progress. This report gained further credence when news was received on the 8th October that the Turkish Cabinet, including Talaat and Enver Pashas, had resigned, that Tewfik Pasha had been appointed Grand Vizier and that, in spite of German objections, the new Turkish Government was about to inform the United States of America of its desire to negotiate for peace. But a few days later information was received that the Sultan's and Tewfik's efforts to form a Cabinet free of the influence of the Committee of Union and Progress had been frustrated and that Izzet Pasha had been appointed Grand Vizier and had formed a Cabinet. In the meantime, H.M. Government, deeming it advisable to be prepared for an offer of peace, had ordered terms for an armistice to be drafted by the British Admiralty and War Office.

The whole question of peace with Turkey was considered at a conference of the Prime Ministers of Great Britain, France and Italy at Paris on the 7th October, when it was decided that, while terms of peace could only be discussed at the end of the war, an armistice might be concluded by any of the three Powers whom the Turkish Government might approach on the subject. The terms of such an armistice were also approved, being those already drafted in London with some slight additions and alterations.

On the 13th October, the Turkish *Chargé d'Affaires* at Madrid presented a note to the Spanish Minister for Foreign Affairs requesting the Spanish Government to ask the President of the United States of America to take upon himself the task of re-establishing peace. The Turkish Government also expressed its desire for an armistice.

The President of the United States was informed of the terms proposed by the Allies for such an armistice and it was suggested to him that, in any reply he might make, the Turkish Government should be recommended to apply for an armistice to one of the naval and military commanders of the Allied forces in touch with the Turkish armies. President Wilson then proposed that he should also communicate the proposed terms of the armistice to Turkey. But before he received a reply from all the Allies to this proposal a further Turkish offer of peace was received. This was brought by General Townshend, who was set at liberty for the purpose by the Turkish Government and who arrived at Mitylene on the 20th October.

Next day a telegram was sent from London to the British Naval Commander-in-Chief in the Mediterranean saying that General Townshend's message containing the Turkish peace proposals had been considered by H.M. Government. They were prepared in due course to consider terms of peace, but these could not be arranged by Great Britain independently of her Allies, which would take time. They were ready, however, at once to discuss conditions of an armistice; and this would have to be concluded promptly if Turkey was to escape further military disaster and to have the benefit of British assistance in throwing off the German yoke. The Naval Commander-in-Chief was to inform the Turkish Government that he was authorised to receive a representative accredited by them to arrange the terms of an armistice. This invitation was accepted by the Turkish Government, whose representatives reached Mudros on the 26th October.

In the meantime, the British force in Mesopotamia, having completed its preparations, had begun to advance towards Mosul.

The Turkish position at the Fat-ha gorge was thirty-five miles north of the British railhead at Tikrit. On either side of the gorge the rugged Jabal Makhul and Jabal Hamrin rose abruptly some 1,000 feet above the plain and, with their steep slopes scored by many winding rocky ravines, presented a

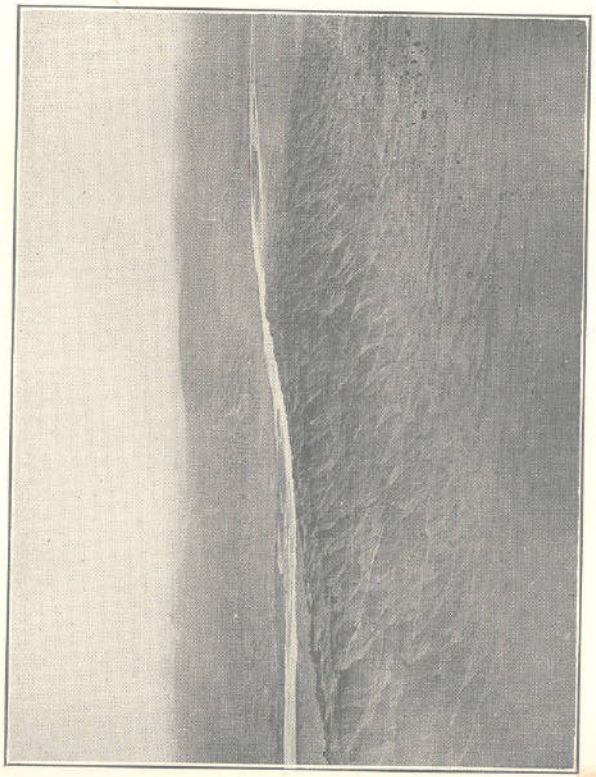
difficult obstacle to movement. The Jabal Makhul flanked the right bank of the Tigris closely from the gorge to Ain Dibs, where there was a practicable pass across the range, and continued in a north-westerly direction till it gradually merged into the plain to the westward of Sharqat. Above the Humr bend, also, the right bank of the Tigris was closely flanked by another and similar range of hills—the Jabal Khanuqa—which extended nearly to Sharqat, while the area between the Jabal Khanuqa and the Jabal Makhul was a jumbled mass of low hills and ravines.

On the right bank of the Tigris, two roads led from Shuraimiya to the neighbourhood of Sharqat. One went along the river bank through the Fat-ha gorge and crossed a succession of ravines, of which the largest had been bridged by a wooden structure which the Turks would be sure to destroy as they retired; while the other lay over the waterless desert westward of the Jabal Makhul, which it crossed near Balalij. On the left bank of the Tigris the road which led from opposite Tikrit over the Ain Nukhaila pass was passable, but difficult, for wheels, and the only other practicable route over the Jabal Hamrin between Ain Nukhaila and Fat-ha was a steep and difficult bridle path over the Darb-al-Khail pass. There were springs or wells of water at both these passes, but the water in them was insufficient for a force of any size. There was also a road along the left bank of the river, but, after passing through the Fat-ha gorge, both the road and the country adjoining it were completely commanded by the hills on the Tigris right bank.

The Turkish position on the right bank at Fat-ha consisted of a succession of trench lines, which ran westward from the Tigris along the forward slopes of the Jabal Makhul for about three miles and then bent back to the north-west. The crest of the Jabal Makhul was naturally very difficult of access owing to the steep and precipitous nature of its slopes; and every possible track across it was protected by Turkish trenches and guns. On the left bank of the Tigris, the trench lines extended for some five miles along the crest line and the forward slopes of the Jabal Hamrin.

Fifteen miles to the rear, the second Turkish position extended from the vicinity of Ain Dibs across the hilly and broken ground to the Tigris south of Mushak and continued for some ten miles along the northern bank of the Little Zab. This bank was generally precipitous and commanded the southern

To face page 264.



The Fat-ha Gorge.
(Jabal Makhul range in foreground.)

bank, while the Humr section of the position, where the Turks had a bridge across the Tigris, completely dominated all the ground on the left bank about the confluence of the Little Zab and the Tigris.

At the beginning of October, the infantry of the Turkish 14th Division were believed to be disposed as follows :—About Fat-ha, 43rd Regiment and divisional assault company ; about Humr, 9th Regiment ; and at Sharqat, 7th Regiment. Each regiment had a strength of about 1,200 rifles. By the second week in October the news of the transfer of the 5th Division to Mesopotamia had been confirmed, and, as it was reported that part of the 2nd Division had already reached the Tigris from Altun Köpri and was being followed by the rest of the division, it looked as if the units of the 5th Division were relieving those of the 2nd in the Altun Köpri area. Information had also been received that the troops in the Sulaimaniya group had withdrawn from the frontier and were concentrating. The 7th Regiment had apparently moved forward from Sharqat to Humr, and six 15 cm. howitzers were reported to have been withdrawn from the Tigris front and sent to Aleppo, where practically all the Turkish troops from the Euphrates front were believed to have gone also.

On the 21st October, the enemy's dispositions and numbers were estimated as follows :—

Fat-ha (both banks of the Tigris) : 14th Divisional Cavalry and assault company, 9th and 43rd Regiments= 90 sabres, 2,620 rifles and 28 field guns ; *

Ain Dibs–Humr–Little Zab : 7th and 22nd Regiments (the latter having come from the Ruwandiz area)=30 sabres, 2,910 rifles and 14 field guns ; *

Sharqat : about 200 rifles.

Altun Köpri–Kirkuk–Taza Khurmatli area ; 2nd Division = 330 sabres, 2,240 rifles and 30 guns. Some of these might be on their way to the Tigris.

The advent of Ali Ihsan to the command of the Turkish Sixth Army had evidently effected a considerable improvement in its discipline and *moral.* Its men were said to be well fed and to have great confidence in Ali Ihsan, who had rid himself of all the unpopular German staff. It was also reported that he had warned his troops that an attack up the Tigris by six British divisions was imminent and that the Turkish hold on the Fat-ha position must be maintained.

* It was reported that all the heavy guns had been sent to Aleppo. This report was confirmed a few days later.

In the meantime, General Cobbe, who felt that a direct attack on the Fat-ha position would be a costly and indecisive operation, had assured himself by careful reconnaissance that, owing to lack of water, a turning movement round the enemy's right was impracticable, except for armoured cars. He decided finally to turn the enemy's left, secure a crossing over the Little Zab* and drive the enemy across to the Tigris right bank, where he hoped to cut off the larger portion of the enemy's force covering Mosul and to destroy it.

With the limited amount of transport available it was impossible to initiate our attack from Tikrit as a surprise, while it was necessary to form advanced depots of ammunition and supplies as far forward as possible and to develop and prepare the water supply at the Ain Nukhaila and Darb-al-Khail passes. To obtain such measure of surprise as was possible, depots of supplies were openly formed on both banks of the Tigris about Jift, constant reconnaissances were carried out towards the enemy's right, Arab agents were used freely to make enquiries indicating our intention to move in that direction, and the preparation of the water supply on the Jabal Hamrin passes was postponed till the last possible moment.

The two divisions (17th and 18th) of the Ist Corps were comparatively new formations and but few of their units had previous war experience. Each of their infantry brigades had also been reduced by an Indian infantry battalion transferred to Salonika, and from each of the remaining Indian battalions one company, as well as many officers and non-commissioned officers, had been withdrawn to form in India the nuclei of new battalions. Moreover, at this time the numerical strength of every unit was considerably reduced by an epidemic of influenza.

The forward depots, providing seven days' supplies for the force and ammunition, were completed on the 18th October. On that day the Ain Nukhaila and Darb-al-Khail passes were occupied and, away on the right flank, General Lewin's column†

*Until a few days before his advance General Cobbe was uncertain whether the Little Zab was fordable.

† H.Q. 40th Infantry Brigade, with 4th South Wales Borderers, 5th Wiltshire and two machine gun sections.
12th Cavalry (less one squadron) and one machine gun section.
A/66th Battery, R.F.A. (less one section) and one section 61st Battery, R.F.A.
One section 71st Company, R.E.
13th Light Armoured Motor Battery.
No. 30 Squadron, R.A.F. (less half flight) and one flight No. 72 Squadron.
Adminstrative units.

occupied Tauq, after a night march from Tuz Khurmatli. The Turkish cavalry at Tauq withdrew to Taza Khurmatli, leaving twenty-seven prisoners in our hands.

On the same day General Cobbe issued an operation order in which he announced his intention of attacking the enemy holding the Fat-ha position, with a view to securing the passage of the Fat-ha gorge preparatory to advancing to the line of the Little Zab. He organised his force into the following groups.

(a) 18*th Division Group* (operating on left bank) under Major-General H. D. Fanshawe.*
(b) 17*th Division Group* (operating on right bank) under Major-General G. A. J. Leslie.*
(c) *Corps Reserve.**
(d) 63rd Squadron, R.A.F. (less half flight) and one flight 72nd Squadron, R.A.F.

The heavy artillery was to move into positions near the Tigris banks during the night 22nd/23rd October to commence counter-battery work on the 23rd.

The 7th Cavalry Brigade was to be concentrated north of the Darb-al-Khail pass on the 23rd.

The 18th Division Group was to attack the enemy holding the Fat-ha left bank position on the 24th, using the 7th Cavalry Brigade to turn and attack this position in reverse, and to bring fire to bear on the enemy on the right bank. The objectives of this group were (1) to capture the Fat-ha left bank position, (2) to cut off the retreat of the enemy holding this position, (3) to co-operate by fire with the 17th Division Group operating against the right bank position and (4) to guard against an enemy advance from the direction of the Little Zab.

Careful arrangements were to be made to enable our infantry on the Jabal Hamrin to show their positions to the 7th Cavalry Brigade and to our troops to the south.

The 17th Division Group was to operate on the right bank so as to facilitate the attack on the 24th October of the 18th Division Group. During the night 23rd/24th the 17th Division was to be disposed on a wide front, so as to keep down the fire from the enemy's right bank position, with its own main strength on its right ready to push forward along the river as the 18th Division attack progressed. Its field artillery was to be disposed so as to afford heavy covering fire to its advance,

* The composition of these groups underwent some alteration after this order was issued and is given later.

and it was to be prepared to assault the right bank position on the morning of the 25th.

Preparations for throwing a bridge across the Tigris at Jift were to be completed by 6 p.m. on the 22nd.

During the next few days, while the forward concentration of troops was proceeding, further reconnaissances were carried out and, as a result of these* and of conferences with his subordinate commanders, General Cobbe made some modifications in his original orders, including the organisation of the different groups.

The 18th Division Group included the 7th Cavalry Brigade, two squadrons 32nd Lancers, D/336th Battery, R.F.A., 337th Brigade, R.F.A., 74th Brigade, R.G.A., (2/86th Heavy and 159th Siege Batteries), 2nd Indian Mountain Artillery Brigade (25th and one section 34th Batteries), 53rd, 54th and 55th Infantry Brigades, 2nd, 6th and 8th Companies Sappers and Miners, one section 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery and the 249th Machine Gun Company, giving a total strength of about 1,400 sabres, 7,700 rifles and 48 guns.†

The 17th Division Group included the 32nd Lancers (less two squadrons), 220th, 221st and 336th (less D Battery) Brigades, R.F.A., 101st Brigade, R.G.A. (157th Heavy and 246th, 257th and 395th Siege Batteries), 34th Mountain Battery (less one section), 34th, 51st and 52nd Infantry Brigades, Malerkotla and Tehri-Gahrwal companies of Sappers and Miners, 1/32nd Sikh Pioneers, one section 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery and the 276th Machine Gun Company, giving a total strength of about 200 sabres, 7,700 rifles and 82 guns.

The Corps Reserve had at first included the 11th Cavalry Brigade, 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery, 56th Infantry Brigade and 448th and 450th Field Companies, R.E. On the 20th October, however, General Cobbe heard from General Marshall that, while he approved generally of the proposed plan, he did not agree to the 56th Infantry Brigade being withdrawn from railway construction to take part in the operations. The 11th Cavalry Brigade and armoured cars had also only been included in the Reserve to preserve secrecy in regard to General Cobbe's intentions, and on the 21st and 22nd he issued separate

* It was ascertained that the Little Zab was fordable in places, that the country between the Jabal Hamrin and the Little Zab was practicable for cavalry, and that water was obtainable *en route*.

† The R.H.A. batteries of the 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades were equipped with 18-pounder guns and teams of eight horses.

secret orders for the 11th Cavalry Brigade under General Cassels and for the Light Armoured Motor Brigade under Major Sir T. Thompson to carry out special missions.

The 11th Cavalry Brigade, starting from the northern end of the Ain Nukhaila pass on the night 23rd/24th October, was on the 24th to reach a point on the Little Zab about twenty-five miles above its junction with the Tigris. Next day the brigade was to operate down the Little Zab so as to assist the attack of the Ist Corps, by intercepting movement between the Turkish forces about Altun Köpri and those on the Tigris and by securing a bridgehead over the Little Zab for subsequent use by the Ist Corps. General Lewin—whose column would occupy Taza Khurmatli on the 23rd, Kirkuk on the 24th and operate towards Altun Köpri on the 25th—was to meet General Cassels on the 23rd to arrange for co-operation between their respective columns. The 63rd Squadron, R.A.F., was to assist the 11th Cavalry Brigade on the 24th by reconnoitring the line of the Little Zab and was to detail a machine to work with it on the 25th.

Besides giving General Cassels the above written instructions, General Cobbe discussed with him future eventualities, including the possibility that after the 25th October the 11th Cavalry Brigade might be called upon to cross the Tigris above Sharqat.

The Light Armoured Motor Brigade (8th Light Armoured Motor Battery less two sections, 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery, three Lewis gun detachments from the 56th Infantry Brigade in motor vans and 13th Motor W/T Station) was to move on the 24th from Abu Rajash to Hadr, a desert city about thirty-five miles westward of Sharqat. From there it was to assist the Ist Corps attack by (*a*) raiding the enemy's communications about Sharqat on the 25th, (*b*) bringing such pressure to bear upon the enemy southwards of Sharqat as the situation might permit, (*c*) intercepting the enemy's line of retreat to Mosul, while retaining full mobility, and (*d*) co-operating with our cavalry on the left bank of the Tigris if opportunity offered. On the morning of the 24th the brigade was to halt at Tel Ajar till noon and be ready to operate to the east and south-east if the necessity arose; and on the 25th the 63rd Squadron, R.A.F., was to get into touch with the brigade and ascertain its probable route to and from Hadr. Colonel Leachman, who had great knowledge and experience of the Arabs, was to accompany the column as political officer to facilitate intercourse with the local tribes.

Early on the morning of the 23rd October General Lewin's column, having advanced from Tauq, entered Taza Khurmatli without opposition and, gaining contact with an enemy detachment five miles to the northward, drove it back towards Kirkuk.

By the same morning, the forward concentration of General Cobbe's force was complete. On the previous day two of his infantry brigades* had advanced and established themselves on a line within about a mile of the enemy's trenches at Fat-ha gorge, to cover the positions which some of his artillery would take up during the ensuing night and to allow of artillery reconnaissance by the remainder.

On the morning of the 23rd General Cobbe's force was disposed as follows :—

Thirty-two guns (i.e., all except the mountain guns and those with the 7th Cavalry Brigade) of the 18th Division Group were in position on the left bank of the Tigris, covered by the 55th Infantry Brigade.

On the crest of the Jabal Hamrin at Darb-al-Khail was a column under General Nightingale consisting of one troop 32nd Lancers, 2nd Mountain Artillery Brigade (eight guns), 8th Company Sappers and Miners and 54th Infantry Brigade, all equipped with pack transport.

Moving north of the Jabal Hamrin to a water supply depot† at the northern end of the Darb-al-Khail pass were the 7th Cavalry Brigade and one section D/336th Battery R.F.A.

At Ain Nukhaila were one troop 32nd Lancers, 116th Mahrattas (less two companies), 2nd Company Sappers and Miners (less two sections), half the 55th Brigade machine gun company and one section 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery.

The remainder of the 18th Divisional Group were in reserve.

The 11th Cavalry Brigade was on its way from the Tigris, opposite Tikrit, to the northern exit of the Ain Nukhaila pass.

On the right bank of the Tigris, the 101st Heavy and 220th Field Brigades of artillery were in position, covered by the line of the 51st and 52nd Infantry Brigades. The remainder of the 17th Divisional Group were in reserve about Shuraimiya.

The Light Armoured Motor Brigade was at Abu Rajash.

During the 23rd October the artillery, which was in position, registered and engaged any enemy batteries that could be located from the air, the enemy's guns replying intermittently.

* The 55th on the left bank and the 52nd on the right bank.

† The water from local springs had been supplemented by water in tanks sent on camels from the Tigris.

On the left bank it appeared to the 55th Infantry Brigade about midday that hostile activity to its front had decreased and it sent forward patrols. But these found the enemy still occupying his trenches. At 2 p.m. the 54th Brigade Group started to advance along the crest of the Jabal Hamrin, where, owing to the winding nature of the path, the distance to be traversed proved to be nearly twice as long as it appeared from the map. Various defensive positions were found to be unoccupied and, no opposition having been encountered, the column reached a point about six miles from the gorge at 6.30 p.m.

At 9.30 p.m., when the moon rose, a strong reconnoitring party from the 55th Infantry Brigade advanced and at 1 a.m. reported that the trenches on the left bank were empty. The brigade then at once moved forward and occupied the mouth of the gorge. In the meantime, the 54th Brigade Group had also restarted its advance at 9.30 p.m. and it entered the enemy's position at 1.30 a.m. The night march of the 7th Cavalry Brigade round the enemy's left was also carried out without opposition, a point about three miles north-east of Fat-ha being reached at 3.30 a.m. on the 24th.

On the right bank our infantry made no advance till dusk on the 23rd, when the 51st and 52nd Infantry Brigades advanced their line for about half a mile and all three brigades of field artillery moved forward into positions to support the attack at dawn by the 18th Division. During the night, enemy piquets on the right bank continued firing until 3.30 a.m. But by 5 a.m. it was definitely ascertained that the enemy had abandoned his position on this bank also ; and his trenches were occupied by our infantry at daybreak*.

The enemy's speedy evacuation of his whole position came as a surprise to the British. General Cobbe had hoped that an assault on the Turkish right bank positions would not prove necessary and that the successful action of the 18th Division Group on the left bank on the 24th would lead to a general enemy retirement. But the retirement on the right bank took place twenty-four hours earlier than had been anticipated.

At 5.30 a.m. on the 24th October, the 7th Cavalry Brigade sent out a detachment (13th Lancers, two R.H.A. guns and a machine gun section) to cover its right flank, and did not learn till 6.30 a.m., after it had sent the 14th Lancers towards the enemy position on the Jabal Hamrin, that the Turks had retired.

* Sunrise was about 6.10 a.m.

The main body of the brigade then concentrated to the north of the position about a mile from the Tigris and, seeing small bodies of the enemy retiring along the right bank road, sent orders to the flanking detachment to move in towards the Tigris and fire on them. This it did, firing on some enemy transport with its guns. The 7th Cavalry Brigade then proceeded towards the junction of the Little Zab and the Tigris.

The 53rd Infantry Brigade was ordered by the 18th Division to pass through the gorge, followed by the 337th Brigade, R.F.A., and the 74th Brigade, R.G.A.; the 2nd and 8th Sapper and Miner Companies and the 55th Infantry Brigade being directed to improve the road and assist with the traffic. The road proved to be very bad and it was not till 8.30 a.m. that the 53rd Infantry Brigade and C/337th Battery, R.F.A., began to debouch from the gorge and to move northward. A half squadron 32nd Lancers joined them later and one section 2/86th Battery, R.G.A., also pushed on, but, delayed by the difficulties of the road, failed to join the 53rd Infantry Brigade that day.

On the right bank, 17th Division Headquarters issued orders at 4.40 a.m. to meet the contingency of an enemy retirement, directing the 32nd Lancers' squadron and one section 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery to start from their bivouac near Shuraimiya at 6 a.m. and reconnoitre the enemy's trenches in the gorge. Orders were also issued to the 34th Mountain Battery (less one section) to start at the same hour and join the 51st Infantry Brigade, which was directed to organise a column of one battalion, two sections of a machine gun company and these mountain guns to act as a flank guard moving along the crest of the Jabal Makhul. When it was ascertained definitely that the enemy had retired, the cavalry and the armoured cars were ordered to push ahead of the 51st Infantry Brigade through the gorge.

Just before 8 a.m. General Cobbe received an air report that the rear of a two-mile long column of enemy infantry and transport was about four miles north of Fat-ha on the right bank. This information was at once sent with orders to the 17th Division to press forward and engage this column before it could gain the cover of the position covering Humr. But the 17th Division was unable to comply, as it had just learnt that the road through the gorge had been so badly damaged as to be impassable even for pack transport. Sappers

and Pioneers were hurried forward to effect the necessary repairs. These took time, however, as the Turks had blown the road completely away in places. The armoured cars could not get on at all and there was considerable delay before the Lancer squadron passed through. This delay enabled the Turkish rear guard to escape unmolested, except by the 63rd Squadron R.A.F., which bombed and machine-gunned it repeatedly from low altitudes, apparently with good effect.

At 11.15 a.m. General Cobbe issued orders that the advanced guard of the 17th Division should occupy a line from the Tigris to the crest of the Jabal Makhul, about eight miles above Fat-ha, to which the advanced guard of the 18th Division on the left bank was to conform, while the remainder of the 18th Division occupied Tel-ad-Dhahab.

At 12 noon the road through the gorge on the left bank was reported to be fit for guns and would, it was hoped, be fit for motor transport in an hour's time. But on the right bank, the 17th Division held out no hopes of the road being fit for guns before the next morning.

The squadron 32nd Lancers on the right bank reached, about midday, a point some ten miles above Fat-ha and came under hostile shell fire. The 51st Infantry Brigade was still some miles behind and the Lancers were unable to make much further progress. At 3.45 p.m. they reported—the message reached 17th Division headquarters at 7 p.m.—that the enemy was holding a position about two miles below Mushak, and at dusk the squadron fell back to the south-west of Tel-ad-Dhahab. Here the 51st Infantry Brigade had taken up a line extending south-westward from the Tigris, having been unable, owing to the difficulties of the road, to reach the line indicated by General Cobbe.

On the left bank of the Tigris an officer's patrol from the 7th Cavalry Brigade had crossed the Little Zab during the course of the morning and had taken six prisoners. The head of this cavalry brigade arrived within about 4,000 yards of the Little Zab-Tigris junction at 3.15 p.m., when "V" Battery, R.H.A., came into action against enemy columns marching up the right bank. Enemy guns, apparently four field guns on the north bank of the Little Zab, immediately replied, but "V" battery remained in action till just before 5 p.m. and during this period British aeroplanes also bombed the enemy on the Tigris right bank. The cavalry brigade withdrew

about 5 p.m.* and went into bivouac below Tel-ad-Dhahab,† in which vicinity the 53rd Infantry Brigade also bivouacked.

During the afternoon General Leslie, commanding the 17th Division, inspected the right bank road through the gorge and reported that the road had been repaired for about three miles but that transport carts could only be got through by man-handling. This was due not so much to the damage done as to the nature of the road, which was generally only eight to twelve feet wide and crossed numerous ravines or dry water-courses where the gradients were excessive and the bends of a hairpin type. Pack transport could traverse it quite well and this was being organised to supply the 32nd Lancers and 51st Infantry Brigade.‡ The gorge might be avoided by crossing and recrossing the river by bridges, said General Leslie. But he had no reason to suppose that the road was any better further upstream and he was not yet in cable communication with the 51st Brigade. The cable wagon had been unable to get along the road and cable was being laid by hand; visual signalling had proved impossible; and communication was being maintained by runner or mounted orderly.

In a Ist Corps operation order issued at 6.30 p.m. it was stated that on the right bank the enemy had retired to positions running westward from Mushak and on the left bank to the Little Zab. The British advance was to be continued next day. The 17th Division was to gain touch with the enemy and drive him back to his positions, assisted by the fire of the 18th Division heavy artillery from the left bank. The 18th Division was to assist the advance of the 17th Division and to secure a crossing over the Little Zab, pushing the 7th Cavalry Brigade across that river to threaten the enemy's left flank.

General Cobbe had previously issued orders for a bridge to be completed that night across the Tigris at Fat-ha, so that the eight mountain guns might cross from the left to the right bank and the 336th Brigade, R.F.A., might cross from the right to the left bank. The bridging train itself was to accompany the 18th Division.

* Sunset was about 5.20 p.m.

† The cavalry brigade had to change its first bivouac near the Little Zab and move farther south to get out of range of enemy shells. Its wireless equipment was temporarily lost, which caused delay in getting information and orders through.

‡ The Army Transport carts were of the Indian pattern, i.e., drawn by two mules wearing pack saddles. Thus, by leaving the carts behind, the mules could be used as pack animals, carrying about half the load they could draw.

The positions of the advanced detachments on both banks at nightfall on the 24th October have already been given. The remaining troops of the 18th Division Group were more or less concentrated about Fat-ha; and the 34th Infantry Brigade, Sappers and Pioneers of the 17th Division Group were in the gorge, where they been hard at work on the road all day, with the remainder of the group to the southward.

At 6.30 p.m. General Leslie reported that it would be impossible for the heavy guns to pass through the gorge on the right bank; and at 9 p.m. General Cobbe informed the 17th Division that if the roughness of the roads made the maintenance forward of the columns specified in his order of 6.30 p.m. impossible, General Leslie must push on with at least two infantry brigades, the divisional machine gun company, the mountain artillery and one brigade of field artillery.

In the meantime, the 11th Cavalry Brigade had carried out its task with complete success. It had left the northern end of the Ain Nukhaila pass at 2 a.m. on the 24th, taking with it three days' rations (one day in Ford vans). Learning at 10.45 a.m. from a message sent by aeroplane that the enemy had evacuated the Fat-ha position, General Cassels concluded that, in consequence of this, the enemy's position along the Little Zab would be considerably contracted. He, therefore, decided to make for a ford lower down the river than he had originally intended and directed his advanced guard (7th Hussars, two guns "W" Battery, R.H.A., and a machine gun section) on Zarariya. The advanced guard approached this ford just before 3 p.m. and could see no signs of any enemy. But a contact aeroplane which landed was at once met by heavy machine gun and rifle fire from the right bank of the stream at six hundred yards' range, which damaged the machine badly though it left the pilot and observer uninjured. The enemy then opened fire with four guns and it was evident that he was holding the further bank in some strength.*

The presence of this enemy detachment was a surprise for General Cassels, but he realised that his advent was equally a surprise for the Turks and he decided to force a crossing at once. Before 4 p.m. a practicable though difficult ford, four and a half feet deep, was found about a mile downstream and, crossing here under the covering fire of the horse artillery guns, the 7th Hussars gained a footing on the precipitous opposite

* It was subsequently ascertained that the detachment consisted of a few cavalry, four guns and two battalions 18th Regiment (800 rifles) *en route* for the Tigris.

bank. From there they started to work round the enemy's right and this movement, combined with the accurate fire of our guns, caused the Turks to retire north-westward under cover of a rear guard, which the 7th Hussars engaged till after dark.

The main body of the brigade reached the Little Zab just before it was dark, having marched about 77 miles in the previous 39 hours, and bivouacked on the left bank, while the 7th Hussars, who had suffered 15 casualties, held a position on the right bank covering the crossing. General Cobbe received news of this successful crossing at 5 p.m.

On the extreme British right General Lewin's column had, during the day, pushed forward towards Kirkuk, where the enemy displayed some strength.* As the rôle of his column was to contain the Turkish force in this area, General Lewin saw no reason to risk heavy casualties by an attack, and therefore contented himself with maintaining close contact.

At 7.30 p.m. General Cobbe received a wireless message from the Light Armoured Motor Brigade reporting that it had reached the vicinity of Hadr without seeing any of the enemy.

During the 25th October the Turkish force at Kirkuk maintained its position till dusk, when it began to withdraw towards Altun Köpri. General Lewin's column, which had kept in close contact with the enemy throughout the day, occupied Kirkuk and a line to the north of it after dark.

At dawn on the 25th the Turks on the Tigris were found by our advanced troops to be still holding a line from the southward of Mushak to the crest of the Jabal Makhul; but the enemy detachment, with which the 11th Cavalry Brigade had been engaged on the Little Zab the previous evening, had withdrawn, apparently to the Tigris. Reports that the enemy was holding the Mushak position were received by General Cobbe from his airmen between 7 and 8 a.m. and further air reports received at the same time gave him the following information. The Light Armoured Motor Brigade had been seen at 6.45 a.m. some twenty-six miles due west of Sharqat, evidently proceeding towards that place; four enemy battalions with eight guns had been seen at 7.30 a.m. three miles north-eastward of the Humr bridge proceeding in a north-easterly direction, probably towards the Little Zab; and the 11th Cavalry Brigade was engaged in crossing the Little Zab.

* From subsequent statements of prisoners the enemy's strength appears to have been about 150 sabres, 1,900 rifles and 8 guns.

In the meantime, the British advance up both banks of the Tigris had re-commenced. On the left bank, at 5 a.m. the 7th Cavalry Brigade started for the Shumait ford across the Little Zab, by which its patrol had crossed the previous day, and the 53rd Infantry Brigade with C/337th Field Battery advanced up the road with orders to throw a bridge across the Little Zab and to establish a bridgehead. The advanced guard of the 53rd Brigade (1/7th Gurkhas) had received orders to secure the left bank of the Little Zab and to reconnoitre for a ford below Shumait. At 5 a.m. also D/336th, A/337th and 341st Field Batteries and the 74th Brigade of heavy artillery left Fat-ha, escorted by the 1/5th Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment (54th Brigade), to cover the advance of the 17th Division up the Tigris right bank.

At 7.15 a.m. the advanced guard of the 7th Cavalry Brigade (13th Lancers and a section of the machine gun squadron) crossed the Shumait ford after a sharp skirmish; and by 11.15 a.m. the main body had also crossed, with several casualties from shell fire incurred while crossing. The 13th and 14th Lancers were pushed on at about 11 a.m. with orders to move to the north and then to circle westward to the Tigris, so as to cut off any of the enemy there. General Cassels, whose first necessity was to establish a bridgehead and ferry at the Zarariya ford, had received (by aeroplane) at 7 a.m. a copy of General Cobbe's operation order and instructions to co-operate with the 7th Cavalry Brigade in threatening the enemy's left flank. At 10.20 a.m. two cars of the 8th Light Armoured Motor Battery,* which he had despatched at 8.30 down the left bank of the Little Zab to gain touch with the 7th Cavalry Brigade, returned with information that the brigade was crossing at Shumait. Thereupon General Cassels, taking with him the 23rd Cavalry and one section each from the horse artillery battery and machine gun squadron, started down the right bank of the river. The remainder of his brigade was told to be ready to move at short notice and the Ford van convoy was directed to return to Fat-ha with the wounded and six prisoners taken the previous evening by the 7th Hussars.

The 1/7th Gurkhas (advanced guard, 53rd Infantry Brigade), on approaching the Little Zab about 10.30 a.m., came under accurate hostile shell fire and also some machine gun and rifle fire, which caused them some casualties. It was not long, however,

* These had escorted General Cassel's Ford van convoy from Ain Nukhaila.

before they found a ford some two miles above the Little Zab–Tigris junction.

On the right bank of the Tigris, the 34th Infantry Brigade (less 2nd Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment), with the eight guns of the 2nd Mountain Artillery Brigade which had crossed from the left bank during the night, moved forward from the Fat-ha gorge about 6 a.m. to join the 51st Infantry Brigade, which began to push forward half an hour later. The 403rd and 404th Field Howitzer and the 246th six-inch Howitzer Batteries were to follow the 34th Infantry Brigade, with the West Kents to assist them through the gorge. The advanced guard (one squadron 32nd Lancers and 1st Highland Light Infantry) of the 51st Infantry Brigade at about 8.20 a.m. reached the vicinity of Qala Jabbar, where it came under effective shell fire from hostile mountain guns and where the brigade received instructions (originating from Corps Headquarters) not to become too closely engaged before sufficient infantry and artillery support could reach it. Its flanking detachment, under Colonel Coningham, moving along the crest of the Jabal Makhul, also came into contact with the enemy about 9.15 a.m. Both these bodies of troops continued to advance, and at noon the advanced guard of the 51st Brigade was about two miles north-west of Qala Jabbar with Colonel Coningham's detachment* roughly abreast of it—though separated from it—on the Jabal Makhul. By this time the 34th Infantry Brigade with the mountain guns had reached 17th Division headquarters at Qala Jabbar. But the 403rd and 404th Field Howitzers had only managed to reach a point about two miles beyond Fat-ha, having lost several vehicles in traversing the gorge. It had been found quite impossible for the six-inch howitzer battery to get on at all; and the remaining batteries of the 220th Field Artillery Brigade had been ordered forward with infantry parties to help them.

It was further found that carts on the road completely blocked all traffic in the opposite direction. It was therefore decided to use pack transport only and, as the number of mules with the division was limited, those attached to the 52nd Infantry Brigade had to be utilised to supply the other two brigades.

On the Tigris left bank, also, the difficulties of the road had delayed the advance of the artillery. By noon, however, the three field batteries and one gun of the 2/86th Heavy

* Communication with this flanking detachment was difficult.

Battery were in action some five miles to the north-west of Tel-ad-Dhahab. The remaining three guns of the 2/86th Battery came into action at 2 p.m., but the 159th Battery not until a good deal later. The area where these batteries had to take up their positions was flat, open and in full view of the Jabal Makhul and the Humr ridge, where the ground afforded excellent observation posts and concealment for the enemy's guns. Moreover, these disadvantages were accentuated by the lack, for some unexplained reason, of British aeroplane observation. Nevertheless this artillery fire was not without effect, as it attracted to itself much of the enemy's gun-fire from the right bank and forced several parties of Turks on the right bank to fall back.

At noon an airman reported to General Norton (7th Cavalry Brigade) at Shumait that about 1,000 Turks were five miles to the north of him. Thereupon, taking with him the 13th Hussars and followed by "V" Battery, R.H.A., General Norton proceeded northward as rapidly as possible for over an hour and reached a point about five miles north of Nami without sighting any enemy.* The 13th and 14th Lancers were already in this vicinity and they then started to move southward along the Tigris bank, followed by General Norton and the 13th Hussars. To the southward of Nami they took about one hundred prisoners trying to ford the river. In the meantime, General Cassels, learning from air reports that the 7th Cavalry Brigade had pushed some way up the Tigris, went ahead of his troops in a car at 12.30 p.m. He met General Norton near Nami at 2.45 p.m. and, learning that there were no enemy remaining on the Tigris left bank, withdrew with his detachment to Zarariya.

In regard to the enemy detachment which had been between the Tigris and the right bank of the Little Zab, and which had been heavily bombed and fired on by our aeroplanes during the morning, two air reports received by General Cobbe at 1.45 p.m. and 3 p.m. make the situation clearer. The first said that the 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades were both moving down the right bank of the Little Zab at 12.25 p.m. with about 1,000 enemy infantry retiring in front of them towards the Humr bridge. The second reported the enemy's dispositions in this area to be as follows at 2.20 p.m.: 200 cavalry and 500 infantry crossing the Tigris by a ferry about two miles above Sharqat; four guns to the southward of Nami

* The 7th Cavalry Brigade came to the conclusion that our airmen had mistaken our own cavalry for the enemy.

moving fast towards the Humr bridge; and large numbers of troops crossing this bridge.

At 1.50 p.m. General Cobbe heard from the 18th Division that the 53rd Infantry Brigade had started to cross the Little Zab at a ford about two miles from the Tigris. This report, taken in conjunction with the air report of the movement of the two cavalry brigades, led him at 2.10 p.m. to send off an order by aeroplane to General Cassels, saying that, as the enemy had apparently been driven across the river off the Tigris left bank, he was to push on at once with the 11th Cavalry Brigade, if he could feed himself, to ford the Tigris above Sharqat.

Receiving a message at 3 p.m. that the whole of the 53rd Infantry Brigade had crossed the Little Zab, General Cobbe issued orders for the construction of a pontoon bridge there and the improvement of the approaches to it so as to facilitate the passage of a Ford van convoy to supply the 11th Cavalry Brigade. He also sent orders to the 17th Division to press its attack vigorously and to the 18th Division to support the 17th by pushing on to the Humr bend. Actually the 53rd Infantry Brigade was still crossing the Little Zab and the whole did not get over till dusk.* But the 341st Field Battery moved forward to close range and came into action near the Little Zab-Tigris junction. Here it came under such accurate and steady shell fire from the hostile guns that eventually only two of its guns and wagons were brought out of action.

At 4.30 p.m. General Cobbe heard from the 18th Division that both cavalry brigades were retiring to the Little Zab and he sent another order (issued by wireless at 4.55 p.m.) to General Cassels to push on to Sharqat at once, cross the Tigris north of that place and cut the enemy's line of retreat. At the same time he asked General Fanshawe† if he could detail a column to leave next morning and push up the Tigris left bank to prevent the enemy from crossing and to support the 11th Cavalry Brigade.

At 6.45 p.m., half an hour after receiving an air report that the enemy had started to break up the bridge at Humr, General Cobbe issued his orders for further operations. The enemy, the order said, having been driven across to the Tigris right

* The records do not give the actual message, so that it is not clear how the mistake occurred.

† In the message to General Fanshawe it was stated that the enemy was blowing up his guns. General Fanshawe, however, felt sure that what had been reported to General Cobbe as the enemy's guns being blown up was in reality the guns of our 341st Battery being destroyed by hostile fire.

bank, would probably retire northwards during the night. The Turkish 5th Division might have reached Erbil four days previously and might be moving down the Great Zab to the Tigris, but General Lewin's column was still containing the enemy's Kirkuk group.

The following moves were to take place as early as possible. The 11th Cavalry Brigade was to ford the Tigris thirteen miles above Sharqat and intercept the enemy's retreat. A column under General Fanshawe, consisting of the 7th Cavalry Brigade, two troops 32nd Lancers, a field artillery brigade, one section of a 60-pounder battery, an infantry brigade and part of the bridging train, was to advance before daylight on the 26th October along the Tigris left bank direct to Sharqat. The 17th Division was to continue to gain ground during the night and would pursue along the right bank, reporting as soon as it had secured Ain Dibs and Balalij, so that rations might be sent forward by the desert road.

General Cassels, whose brigade had rations up to the 27th, did not receive General Cobbe's orders to push on till about 8 p.m. He made arrangements to do so early next morning.

General Cobbe's order of 3 p.m. to the 17th Division to press its attack was not received by General Leslie till 5 p.m. and did not reach the Highland Light Infantry, the leading battalion of the 51st Infantry Brigade, till after dark. The two leading companies of the Highland Light Infantry started to advance along the road at 7 p.m., the two remaining companies which had been detached to the right being called in to support them. At about 8 p.m. the head of the battalion suddenly came under heavy rifle and machine gun fire at close range. The two supporting companies had not yet rejoined, but the two leading companies, with great gallantry, promptly closed with the enemy, forcing their way through a double high-wire entanglement. Taking twenty prisoners they captured the Turkish trench, which, lying astride the road and to the west of it, was apparently a piquet post. Their own losses amounted to over one hundred. Soon afterwards, the 14th Sikhs in brigade reserve were ordered to send forward two companies to support the Highland Light Infantry. But they were withdrawn again to reserve an hour later when the Highland Light Infantry had consolidated their capture and had established close contact with the enemy, making it clear that, here at any rate, he had not yet retired.

On the extreme British left the Light Armoured Motor Brigade had found Sharqat occupied by about 1,000 enemy

infantry with guns and had been forced to retire. The brigade then swept to the northward, engaging enemy infantry and transport columns on the road to Mosul apparently with good effect. General Cobbe received news of its action at 5.45 a.m. on the 26th.

At 11 p.m. on the 25th October the dispositions of General Cobbe's force were as follows.

On the northern bank of the Little Zab the 11th Cavalry Brigade was at Zarariya, the 7th Cavalry Brigade at Shumait and the 53rd Infantry Brigade, with C/337th Battery, R.F.A., two miles from the Tigris junction. The bridging train, which had been much delayed in its march from Fat-ha by the bad road, did not reach the Little Zab till after dark. Six batteries of the 18th Division artillery were south of the Little Zab, almost opposite Mushak, with the 54th Infantry Brigade, which had moved forward from Fat-ha during the day, bivouacking close by. Headquarters of the 18th Division were at Tel-ad-Dhabab and the remainder of the division (less the Ain Nukhaila detachment) were at Fat-ha, the greater part having been employed during the day on road improvement.

The 51st Infantry Brigade covered a wide front on the Tigris right bank. The Highland Light Infantry were holding the advanced line astride the road and along broken hills to the west of it at a point about a mile south of Mushak; and in rear of them in support were eight mountain guns. To the left, about one and a half miles south-west of the Highland Light Infantry, Colonel Coningham's column of the 1/10th Gurkhas, four mountain guns and two machine gun sections was on the crest of the Jabal Makhul.* The remainder of the brigade group, with 51st Brigade headquarters, were bivouacked on the road about a mile in rear of the Highland Light Infantry. At Qala Jabbar were the 17th Division headquarters, the 34th Infantry Brigade (less 2nd Royal West Kent) and the 403rd and 404th Field Howitzer Batteries. These two batteries, of which the 403rd was pushed forward during the night to join the 51st Brigade Group, had been brought up only by dint of great exertion and resolution. The 1064th and 1066th Field Batteries had also, after great effort, got through the Fat-ha gorge, but were still five miles short of Qala Jabbar. The remainder of the 17th Division Group were at, or south of, the gorge.

At 11 p.m. General Cobbe sent orders to the 18th Division to be ready to move at dawn and to send patrols with machine

* The supply of this column had been extremely difficult owing to the nature of the ground.

guns to prevent the enemy repairing the Humr bridge. Further, if the enemy had not retired north of Humr when the division started next morning, a detachment must be left to watch the bridge.

The British advance on the Tigris right bank had been much hampered on the 25th October by the difficult country, which afforded few sites for gun positions and little scope for manoeuvre. On the other hand, the ground facilitated the operations of the enemy, who had all the advantages of previous preparation and whose dominating positions among the right bank hills enabled him to neutralise to a great extent the effect of our artillery fire from the left bank. The progress we had made up the Tigris left bank had, however, given us a great advantage, which the enemy had failed to counter by his movement of troops across the Humr bridge.

It was estimated by General Cobbe that the Turkish position, which extended from Balalij along the crest of the Jabal Makhul to the southward of Ain Dibs and thence to the Tigris below Mushak, was held by a force of about 250 sabres, 6,000 rifles and 42 guns. It was believed that their 22nd Regiment, with 12 guns, was holding Ain Dibs and its vicinity; that the 43rd Regiment, with another 12 guns, occupied the line from Ain Dibs to Mushak; that the 7th Regiment, with some guns, was in the Balalij-Sharqat area; and that their reserve (9th Regiment and one or two battalions 18th Regiment) was about Qalat-al-Bint. It was confidently anticipated that the enemy would retire during the night 25th/26th.

The enemy's position was one of great natural strength, and his many months' previous acquaintance with the area had enabled him to post his guns, infantry, and especially his machine guns to take full advantage of the precipitous heights, the razor backed spurs, the steep slopes and the winding ravines, which all combined to hamper the attack.

Reports from the Highland Light Infantry from 2 a.m. to 5 a.m. on the 26th October stated that the enemy was still holding his trenches in strength. At 5.15 a.m. General Leslie issued orders that, if the enemy was still in position, the 51st Infantry Brigade was to attack at 7 a.m., supported by the 403rd Field Howitzer Battery and by the eight guns of the 25th and 34th Mountain Batteries. The 34th Infantry Brigade would advance from Qala Jabbar at 6 a.m. General Leslie had not been able to get into communication with Colonel Coningham since the previous day.

Just after 6 a.m., the two leading companies of the Highland Light Infantry started to advance on their own initiative. But they were quickly compelled to fall back again. The 14th Sikhs, near brigade headquarters, began at 6 a.m. to deploy into artillery formation to the east of the road, and at 6.25 a.m. advanced, with their left on the road, on a frontage of five hundred yards. Two of their companies were in first line and two in support, while a section of the brigade machine gun company moved to their right rear; the intention being that, when their line came abreast of the Highlanders, both battalions should assault the enemy's trenches.

The Sikhs' advance was directed against the enemy's left, which—as subsequent inspection showed—the Turks had made especially strong. The road from the Fat-ha gorge to Mushak ran closely under the hill sides and practically the only flat ground to the east of it was a two-mile-long low-lying strip, covered with thick thorn and scrub (three to five feet high), whose northern end terminated about a mile south of Mushak. Near this point the Turks had dug a line of trenches, covered by wire entanglement, which extended east of the road for a few hundred yards to the Tigris. In this vicinity the Tigris bed was then practically dry up to the main channel* which flowed east of the islands shown on Map 43. To protect themselves against an attack advancing along the river bank and bed, the Turks had dug on the slopes of the hills west of the road well-sited trenches and machine gun emplacements which faced eastwards. So well had these been concealed that our troops were unaware of them; and, even when suspected, they proved almost impossible to locate.

As soon as the 14th Sikhs began to advance they came under a galling artillery fire and, shortly afterwards, under heavy machine gun and rifle fire, the machine gun fire from their left front being especially effective. In spite of severe casualties† they continued to advance steadily and gallantly until about 7.30 a.m., when they were definitely checked not far from the enemy's wire and could make no further progress. Their left company then joined up near the road with the Highlanders, while the remainder of the battalion, reforming, took up a line in a shallow depression about three hundred yards from the enemy's line, where they remained under fire for the rest of the

* Across the main channel the Turkish steamer *Hamidiya* lay stranded.

† During the day their total casualities amounted to 323, including six of their eight British officers. Most of these casualities were incurred between 6.30 and 7.30 a.m.

day. Their attack had been supported by the fire of the eight mountain guns in position on the hill slopes west of the road and of the 403rd Field Howitzer Battery in position to the east of the road. But the mountain gun shells had little effect on the well-entrenched enemy, while the fire of the field howitzers was neutralised by that of an enemy howitzer battery, whose accurate shell fire put the 403rd Battery temporarily out of action about 8 a.m.*

General Wauchope, commanding the 34th Infantry Brigade, got into touch with General Hildyard, commanding the 51st Infantry Brigade, just as the 14th Sikhs' advance came to a stop. It was clear that they were under heavy fire, and, as he understood that their right was in danger of an enemy counter attack, General Wauchope sent forward two companies 114th Mahrattas to secure this flank. These Mahratta companies pushed forward with great steadiness under a heavy artillery fire till 9.30 a.m. when they reached an island in the Tigris bed, well beyond the flank of the Turkish first line; and here they remained for the rest of the day under constant artillery and machine gun fire.†

In the meantime, owing to the heavy fire from the hills to their left front, the Highland Light Infantry had been unable to do more than hold on stubbornly to their trenches near and across the road. Neither the Brigade nor Divisional headquarters were in touch with Colonel Coningham's men on the crest of the range, and, learning the situation, General Leslie at 8.30 a.m. ordered the 34th Infantry Brigade forward to support the attack and to secure the high ground to the left of the Highland Light Infantry. Twenty minutes later General Leslie received a report (by runner)‡ from Colonel Coningham saying that his infantry had been in touch with the enemy all through the night, that he was meeting with considerable opposition, and that the ground was precipitous and difficult.

At 10 a.m. the 404th Field Howitzer Battery reached the front and came into action not far from the position of the 403rd Battery; and at the same hour General Leslie sent orders to General Wauchope to take control of the forward troops. At

* The 403rd Battery had 25 casualties, and the 220th Artillery Brigade commander (Lieutenant-Colonel R. K. Lynch-Staunton) was mortally wounded here at this time.

† They incurred a total of 92 casualties.

‡ Visual signalling was impracticable. At 9 a.m., learning that touch had been lost, General Cobbe sent two armoured cars along the desert road to try and get into communication with Colonel Coningham. But they returned to Corps Headquarters at 3.30 p.m., without having been able to do so, though they had seen Colonel Coningham's troops on the range.

10.30 a.m. General Wauchope ordered the 112th Infantry and a machine gun section to advance on to the hills to the west of the Highland Light Infantry so as to secure the left of that battalion and gain connection with Colonel Coningham's Gurkhas. The 112th effected this successfully at the cost of only one casualty, gaining touch about midday with the Gurkhas, who were then about two miles south-east of Ain Dibs.

At 10.40 a.m. General Wauchope went forward to make a personal reconnaissance and to discuss the situation with the officer commanding the Highland Light Infantry, and a little later General Leslie also went to the front to see the situation for himself. By this time a section 1064th Field Battery had also arrived and come into action, and the 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment* had been ordered up from the Fat-ha gorge to rejoin the 34th Brigade. Before he left his advanced headquarters, General Leslie sent General Cobbe a report timed 11 a.m. In this, he summarised the situation showing that the enemy had developed unsuspected strength near Mushak; he pointed out that the 52nd Infantry Brigade was immobile; and he suggested that a bridge should be thrown across the Tigris near Qala Jabbar with a view to effective co-operation by the 18th Division.

At this stage it is necessary to turn to the operations on the Tigris left bank. General Fanshawe had issued orders at 11.25 p.m. on the 25th that the 7th Cavalry Brigade, two troops 32nd Lancers, 337th Brigade, R.F.A., and one section 2/86th Battery, R.G.A., should push on up the Tigris bank at 6 a.m., and that the 53rd Infantry Brigade was to follow them as soon as it had been relieved by the 54th Infantry Brigade.

By 6 a.m. on the 26th October General Fanshawe with his advanced headquarters had reached the Little Zab, where the pontoon bridge had not yet been completed. The approaches to the bridge presented difficulties and it consequently appeared unlikely that the ration convoys would be able to get across the river before dark. Learning of this, General Cobbe at 7.15 a.m. cancelled the forward movement of the column previously detailed and gave directions that the 7th Cavalry Brigade was to advance towards Sharqat, so as to give support to the attack on the Tigris right bank by the 17th Division and to prevent any enemy escaping to the left bank. The 7th Cavalry Brigade proceeded accordingly, but, as men and horses had consumed

* This battalion was only about 400 strong, owing to influenza, and did not reach the front till dusk.

all their rations,* it received orders to return at dusk to the Little Zab. The 337th Brigade, R.F.A., one section 2/86th Battery, R.G.A., and the 54th Infantry Brigade (less 1/5th Royal West Kent Regiment escorting guns) were at this time all moving forward towards the Little Zab.

By 9.15 a.m. General Cobbe had heard that the 11th Cavalry Brigade had left Zarariya for Sharqat at 6 a.m., that the Turks were holding in strength the Ain Dibs-Mushak position and that their artillery was shelling heavily the advanced troops of the 17th Division and also the 7th Cavalry Brigade. At 9.25 a.m. he sent a message to General Fanshawe saying that the enemy might possibly hold on to his right bank position while withdrawing his heavy material and a portion of his force, unless he could be threatened in rear. It appeared probable that he meant to retain Sharqat and to effect a junction with his 5th Division, whose strength was estimated at 2,500 rifles and 25 guns. His 1st Regiment and a battalion of his 18th Regiment were still being contained by General Lewin. It appeared, therefore, continued General Cobbe, that General Fanshawe had a sufficient force on the Little Zab to secure the bridgehead there and also to send a small column with part of the bridging train to support the 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades, so as to enable them to cross the Tigris above Sharqat and to prevent the Turkish 5th Division joining the Turkish 14th Division south of the Great Zab. General Fanshawe was told at the same time to arrange for the supply of the 11th Cavalry Brigade.

At 10 a.m. the bridge across the Little Zab was completed and an hour later General Fanshawe reported that most of the divisional artillery had crossed and that the 7th Cavalry Brigade was assisting the 17th Division attack. At the same hour he informed General Cobbe that the 7th Cavalry Brigade had eaten its emergency, and all its horse, rations. In consequence of this last information General Cobbe, not knowing that it had already started, sent orders that the 7th Cavalry Brigade should not move forward.

By 12.30 p.m. the 337th Brigade, R.F.A., and section 2/86th Heavy Battery were in action north of the Little Zab against hostile batteries in the Humr area, being covered by patrols pushed well forward by the 53rd Infantry Brigade, which also kept the Humr bridge under observation. The remainder of the 74th Heavy Artillery Brigade were in action in their previous day's positions supporting the attack of the 51st and 34th Infantry Brigades.

* Its ration convoy had been delayed by the bad road.

About midday, on receipt of General Leslie's report (timed 11 a.m.) of the enemy's unexpected strength about Mushak, General Cobbe directed the 63rd Squadron, R.A.F., to send up as many aeroplanes as possible to assist the 17th Division by bombing the enemy. He also issued orders that as much as possible of the 52nd Infantry Brigade should be equipped with pack transport* and sent to reinforce the 34th and 51st Brigades, that the bridge at Fat-ha (which had been taken up) was to be reconstructed and that the 55th Infantry Brigade was to be ready to cross it at short notice to reinforce the 17th Division.

At 1 p.m.† General Cobbe also sent orders that the 7th Cavalry Brigade was to move back to Fat-ha to obtain rations and await orders. In reply he heard at 2.50 p.m. that the 7th Cavalry Brigade had already moved up the Tigris with orders to return at dusk, when it would be ordered to move back to Fat-ha so as to be south of Tel-ad-Dhahab by dawn on the 27th. The advance of this brigade was carried for about ten miles northward of the Little Zab without opposition, as on its approach the few enemy cavalry seen at once re-forded the Tigris. Its advance had the great advantage that it screened from the enemy the wider movement of the 11th Cavalry Brigade. It is noteworthy, in this connection, that after about the 20th October no aeroplanes appear to have assisted the Turks during these operations.

On the Tigris right bank General Leslie decided between 1 and 2 p.m., as a result of his personal reconnaissance, that he would not attempt a further attack till next morning. For this, the line of advance taken by the 112th Infantry appeared to be the best. But it would mean a slow and arduous operation with few positions even for mountain guns; the infantry of the 51st Brigade were much exhausted by their exertions of the past few days;‡ and, owing to the transport shortage and difficulties, it had been necessary to reduce the rations of all the advanced troops in the 17th Division by a quarter. General Leslie decided, therefore, that the main attack next day should be made by Colonel Coningham's column.

At 2.25 p.m. General Cobbe learnt from an air report that at 12.40 p.m. the 11th Cavalry Brigade was about four miles from

* More pack mules had come up from the line of communication.

† About this time the aeroplanes of the 63rd Squadron returned and their observers reported that their bombs had had little effect on the well-entrenched enemy in the Mushak position.

‡ During the 25th/26th October the brigade casualities totalled 618.

the Tigris, east-south-eastward of Huwaish, being apparently unopposed. Twenty minutes later he received a report from the Light Armoured Motor Brigade that it had at 8 a.m. got astride the Mosul road, about one-and-a-half miles south of Huwaish, where it had cut the main telegraph cable, and that throughout the morning its machine guns had engaged enemy infantry.

During the day the weather had been dull, with some wind. This increased about 3.30 p.m. and raised a duststorm, which completely stopped all flying for nearly two hours. It also greatly hampered the fire of our guns, especially those on the Tigris left bank, and prevented them from replying to a particularly heavy fire which the Turkish guns opened at this hour on the 403rd Battery.

During the afternoon orders were sent directing one battalion and the machine gun company (less a section) of the 52nd Infantry Brigade to join Colonel Coningham, another battalion with a machine gun section to reinforce the 51st Infantry Brigade, and the third battalion to move to the Fat-ha gorge. The 45th Sikhs were detailed to join Colonel Coningham and started to do so at 4 p.m. On the Tigris left bank the 54th Infantry Brigade (less 1/5th Royal West Kent Regiment) crossed to the north of the Little Zab.

Soon after 5 p.m. General Cobbe received a report brought by a contact aeroplane that the 11th Cavalry Brigade had crossed the Tigris without opposition. By this time the duststorm had died down again and the 63rd Squadron sent up all available aeroplanes for contact and artillery work.

At 5.40 p.m. General Leslie issued his orders for the night and for the resumption of the attack next morning. Colonel Coningham's column was to drive in the enemy's right flank so as to force him to abandon the whole position; and the 34th and 51st Infantry Brigades were to maintain pressure on the enemy's front and keep in touch with Colonel Coningham.

At nightfall the advanced infantry lines of the 34th and 51st Brigades were drawn back somewhat and reorganised. The 114th Mahrattas held the low ground between the Tigris and the road, the Highland Light Infantry remained in the centre and the 112th Infantry continued the line westward through the hills, in touch with the 1/10th Gurkhas on the crest of the range. The 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment formed a reserve in rear of the 114th, and the 14th Sikhs a reserve in rear of the Highland Light Infantry. The 1/6th Hampshire and a machine

gun section from the 52nd Brigade were on arrival to form Divisional Reserve.*

In the meantime, the 11th Cavalry Brigade, encountering no opposition, had reached a point some miles eastward of Huwaish at 1 p.m. when General Cassels learnt from an air report that the Light Armoured Motor Brigade was astride the Mosul road north of Sharqat and had cut the enemy's telegraph cable. General Cassels had a good view of the right bank of the Tigris, where the gorge at Huwaish seemed to offer him a good position to make for in the first instance. But he had first to find a ford. As the result of reconnaissance on a wide front a ford was found opposite Hadraniya, about thirteen miles above Sharqat, at 3.30 p.m. The crossing was a difficult one, involving the passage of three branches of the river. In the last the ford followed, for about five hundred yards, a narrow ledge where the swiftly flowing stream was about four and a half feet deep, with water at least a foot deeper immediately above it and much deeper just below it.

By 4.30 p.m. the Guides Cavalry, the leading regiment, had crossed to Hadraniya, where there was a Turkish hospital under a small guard. From Hadraniya General Cassels with the Guides proceeded at a gallop to Huwaish, five miles distant, orders being left for the 23rd Cavalry, the machine gun squadron and a section "W" Battery, R.H.A., to join General Cassels at Huwaish as soon as possible after they had crossed. Huwaish was reached soon after 5 p.m. without encountering any of the enemy, and General Cassels, finding the position there a strong one, decided to hold it, at any rate for the night. The position taken up was one facing south, astride the road, on the north bank of the Wadi Muabba. The 23rd Cavalry machine gun squadron and horse artillery section also reached here by 6.30 p.m.

The ford, which was difficult by day, was too dangerous to cross after dark, and the rest of the cavalry brigade remained for the night on the left bank, being joined about 8 p.m. by the transport column. General Cassels then sent off a wireless message to General Cobbe, reporting his position and asking that the officer commanding the Light Armoured Motor Brigade† might be directed to report to him next morning. General Cassels, who was without information regarding the progress made by the main body of General Cobbe's force, also

* Actually they did not reach Divisional Headquarters.

† This brigade had seen the 11th Cavalry Brigade across the Tigris during the day, but had been unable to gain communication with it.

said that he proposed to advance next morning down the Tigris right bank. At 10 p.m. he issued orders for the rest of the fighting troops of his brigade (less one squadron 7th Hussars) to join him at Huwaish early next morning. The squadron of Hussars was to guard the transport, etc., on the left bank, and a ferry across the Tigris about two miles above Huwaish was to be established as early as possible. The ensuing night passed quietly and without incident.

On the extreme British right General Lewin's column advanced on the 26th October towards Altun Köpri, his cavalry and armoured cars encountering the enemy's rear guard about ten miles from that place. Some time after this, the further progress of the column was blocked by a river, which was impassable for the armoured cars; and the column bivouacked seventeen miles north of Kirkuk.

Owing to supply difficulties, further operations against the enemy by General Lewin's column had, after this, to be limited to action by his cavalry, armoured cars and guns. These operations, carried out during the next few days under the command of Colonel Deane (12th Cavalry), harassed and contained the enemy who was holding a bridgehead at Altun Köpri.

At 7.30 p.m. on the 26th October General Cobbe issued an operation order, stating that the enemy's Tigris group still held the Balalij-Ain Dibs-Mushak position and that it was possible that the Turkish 5th Division had reached the Sharqat area. Then, after giving the dispositions of our own troops, General Cobbe ordered:—

(*a*) the 17th Division to attack vigorously on the 27th, pressing its main attack along the crest of the Jabal Makhul;

(*b*) the 18th Division to assist the 17th Division by fire from across the Tigris; and

(*c*) the 7th Cavalry Brigade and the 55th Infantry Brigade to move to Shuraimiya to form Corps Reserve.

The belief that part of the Turkish 5th Division might have reached Sharqat was due to the unexpected resistance offered by the enemy in the Mushak position and to air reports of a concentration of two to three thousand Turkish infantry near Sharqat. The move back of the 7th Cavalry Brigade, which had been due in the first instance to supply difficulties, was intended by General Cobbe as a preliminary to sending it when opportunity offered by the desert road round the enemy's right flank.

During the night of the 26th/27th October, the guns of the 18th Division Group to the north of the Little Zab continued to engage the hostile batteries about Humr, while patrols and machine guns from the 53rd Infantry Brigade demonstrated actively near the Humr bridge, both to prevent its reconstruction by the enemy and to lead him to believe that we intended to cross there ourselves. Two sections 238th Machine Gun Company were also sent back to the south of the Little Zab and they dug themselves in near the left bank of the Tigris, to the north-eastward of Mushak, so as to support the 17th Division attack next morning.

Early on the morning of the 27th October, however, patrols from the 17th Division found that the hostile trenches to their front had been evacuated.

CHAPTER XLV.

THE BATTLE OF SHARQAT AND THE ARMISTICE.

(MAPS 43, 44 AND 45.)

SUNRISE on the 27th October was at about 6.10 a.m., and up to within an hour of that time patrols from the 114th Mahrattas and Highland Light Infantry reported that the enemy was still holding his trenches in front of them. At 6 a.m. the headquarters 2nd Mountain Artillery Brigade with the 25th and one section 34th Batteries left the low ground to join Colonel Coningham's column on the crest of the Jabal Makhul to support its attack against the enemy's right flank. At 6.30 a.m. however, General Leslie received information from the infantry patrols that the enemy had retired and, this being confirmed, orders were issued at 7 a.m. for a column under General Wauchope to move forward immediately in pursuit. In addition to one squadron 32nd Lancers, 220th Brigade, R.F.A.,* 34th Infantry Brigade and Tehri-Gahrwal and Malerkotla companies of Sappers and Miners, this column included the 2nd Mountain Artillery Brigade (less 34th Battery) which, therefore, had to be recalled. By this time General Leslie had also heard that the whole of the 11th Cavalry Brigade had crossed the Tigris above Sharqat.

Patrols from the 114th Mahrattas and Highland Light Infantry had moved forward at once and, meeting with little opposition, continued to cover the advance. General Wauchope ordered the 114th Mahrattas to follow the patrols and form advanced guard and the 112th Infantry to move along the high ground and form left flank guard. But, owing to the deployment of the infantry, the scattered disposition of the different units,† the bad road, and the difficult ground, there was considerable delay in starting and in the subsequent progress of the column. At 7.30 a.m. General Leslie heard from Colonel Coningham that, finding the enemy had retired, he had advanced about 3,000 yards since dawn and was

* Consisting of two sections 403rd, the 404th, one section 1064th, and the 1066th Batteries.

† The 32nd Lancers had to come up from the Fat-ha gorge, t[illegible] mountain artillery had to return from the crest of the range and did not jo[illegible] the column till 10 a.m., the 1066th Battery was unable to start before 9 [illegible]m., and the remainder of the field artillery did not follow till 1 p.m. or af[illegible].

continuing to press forward towards Ain Dibs and Balalij. The 45th Sikhs and 258th Machine Gun Company, after a long and arduous march, had joined him at 6.15 a.m.*

On the Tigris left bank it appeared evident to 18th Division headquarters soon after dawn that the Turks on the right bank had retired ; and, this being confirmed by reconnaissance, the 53rd Infantry Brigade closed its outposts and made preparations to advance.

About 8 a.m., when it was clear from aerial and other reconnaissance that the enemy had evacuated his whole line and was retiring towards Sharqat, General Cobbe issued orders that the 7th Cavalry Brigade was not to cross the Tigris at Fat-ha and that the 18th Division was to push forward a column at once along the Tigris left bank. The composition of this column was left to the discretion of General Fanshawe, but it was to be strong enough both to block the ferry near Sharqat and to send troops to support the 11th Cavalry Brigade. It was also to be accompanied by a few pontoons for rafting.

General Fanshawe detailed a column, under command of Brigadier-General G. A. F. Sanders, consisting of two troops 32nd Lancers, A/337th and one section 341st Field Batteries, one section 2/86th Heavy Battery and the 53rd Infantry Brigade, with orders to push on to opposite Sharqat to prevent the enemy crossing the Tigris in that vicinity and to assist the 11th Cavalry Brigade in every possible way. By 9 a.m. the leading troops of this column had begun to advance and the whole group was on the move by 11 a.m. except for the pontoons, which joined the column before dark. In his report, General Cobbe expressed his appreciation of the despatch with which this column was sent forward.

General Cassels, commanding 11th Cavalry Brigade, had not learnt, till just after midnight 26th/27th October, of the lack of progress made by the 17th Division on the 26th and of the probability that enemy reinforcements from Erbil had reached Sharqat.† In reply, General Cassels asked for information concerning the situation on the Tigris left bank below his position and the whereabouts of the 7th Cavalry Brigade. He also asked for more 18-pounder shrapnel.

* His column now consisted of 34th Mountain Battery, 1/10th Gurkhas, 45th Sikhs, two sections 257th Machine Gun Company and 258th Machine Gun Company (less one section).

† The message containing this information had been sent off by General Cobbe's headquarters just before dusk on the 26th, but it had been dropped by an aeroplane by mistake on the 7th Cavalry Brigade, by whom it had to be sent to 18th Division headquarters for transmission to General Cassels.

A squadron 23rd Cavalry, sent at 6 a.m. on the 27th October by General Cassels to reconnoitre southwards, soon came in touch with a Turkish detachment in position astride the road about two and a half miles south of Huwaish. Its strength was estimated at 400 to 500 infantry, with machine guns and with at least three guns. These opened fire on the 23rd Cavalry and then on the Light Armoured Motor Brigade, which General Cassels could see working over the ground three to four miles away to the south-westward. General Cassels decided to attack this Turkish detachment as soon as his own guns had come into action and after he had received air reports which he expected shortly. His main objects in making this attack were to force the enemy to disclose his strength and dispositions and to conceal his own weakness ; while, if he were successful in ejecting the Turks, he would hold their position himself with the Huwaish line as a second position in rear. In the meantime he instructed the 23rd Cavalry squadron to remain in observation.

At 7.45 a.m., from a copy of General Cobbe's operation order of the previous evening dropped for him from an aeroplane, General Cassels learnt that the 7th Cavalry Brigade had been ordered back to Shuraimiya ; and soon afterwards it appeared evident, from the air reports he received, that the enemy had evacuated his position at and below Humr and was concentrating at Sharqat and some three or four miles south of that locality. General Cassels' patrols on the Tigris left bank also reported that there were no signs of any enemy on that bank. At 9 a.m., when the ferry across the Tigris two miles above Huwaish had been established, General Cassels reported his general situation to Corps headquarters and expressed confidence in his ability to hold up the enemy until the 17th Division attack developed. This message was not received by General Cobbe till 1.50 p.m. and is an instance of the great delays which took place in the transmission of messages during these operations, due to constant breakdowns in the means of communication. In the meantime General Cobbe had instructed the 63rd Squadron, R.A.F., to be prepared to send aeroplanes promptly to bomb the enemy if there were any indications of a heavy enemy attack on the 11th Cavalry Brigade and had pointed out to General Fanshawe how important it was to get troops to a point opposite Sharqat.

At 10.45 a.m. General Fanshawe, learning that General Cassels had asked for more 18-pounder ammunition, sent twelve wagon loads escorted by a troop of the 32nd Lancers to

push forward independently. This convoy, it may be noted here, reached the ferry above Huwaish at 10 p.m. after a march of thirty-five miles.

At 11.15 a.m. General Cassels received a message (despatched from Corps headquarters at 8.40 a.m.) confirming the evacuation of the Turkish position below Humr and informing him of the despatch of General Sanders' column. About an hour later General Cassels sent a squadron 7th Hussars to hold in check a Turkish detachment of about four hundred infantry, which, he heard from one of his patrols, was about fourteen miles to the north on the Mosul road and was advancing southward. In the meantime air reports showed that there had been no enemy movement between Sharqat, where large numbers were concentrating, and the Turkish detachment two and a half miles to the south of his own position.

His attack on the latter was launched at 12.30 p.m. Supported by the fire of " W " Battery, R.H.A., and by the active co-operation of the Light Armoured Motor Brigade on their right, the 23rd Cavalry and a section 25th Machine Gun Squadron advanced rapidly down the road and their main body attacked the left of the enemy's position with conspicuous dash. The enemy at once disclosed his exact position and his strength, which was evidently 800 to 1,000 infantry with four guns. Thereupon, General Cassels decided not to persist in his idea of ejecting the Turks from their position and he ordered the 23rd Cavalry to withdraw, but " W " Battery to keep up a steady fire and to make an accurate register of targets for future use. General Cassels had effected one of his main objects and hoped that he had effected both.* The 23rd Cavalry drew out of action successfully, having sustained forty-nine casualties including five British officers.

In this affair the armoured car of the Light Armoured Motor Brigade commander, while attacking the enemy's flank at close range, was wrecked by a direct hit from a Turkish shell, and Major Thompson himself and his crew of three were taken prisoner. Soon after the attack had been broken off, Captain Somerset, who succeeded Major Thompson in the command of the Light Armoured Motor Brigade, received orders from General Cassels to send two armoured cars to reconnoitre northwards along the Mosul road for twelve miles and to keep the remainder of his brigade in observation five miles to the south-west of Huwaish,

* The Turkish commander subsequently stated that he estimated that we had two cavalry brigades at Huwaish that day.

ready to stop, at any cost, any hostile turning movement against General Cassels' right.

General Sanders' column was meanwhile making good progress up the Tigris left bank. The 54th Infantry Brigade had taken steps to secure the bridgehead over the Little Zab and to guard against any enemy movement from the Altun Köpri direction and during the day it was joined by the 336th Field and the 74th Heavy Brigades of artillery. The 55th Infantry Brigade had crossed to the Tigris right bank near Fat-ha by 11.15 a.m. and in this vicinity it remained.

Colonel Coningham's column reached Ain Dibs at 11.30 a.m., where he had to make a long halt to water men and animals and where he left the 45th Sikhs and 258th Machine Gun Company. The remainder of his column, resuming its advance, reached Balalij at 6.30 p.m. without special incident. The progress of General Wauchope's column continued to be slow and at noon he found it necessary to halt at a large ravine about two miles south of Humr to concentrate his column.

The 51st Infantry Brigade and the remainder of the 17th Division had received orders in the morning to halt for the time being. About midday, however, General Leslie received an order from Corps Headquarters to press on and gain contact with the enemy. The reason for this order was that it seemed clear to General Cobbe that the enemy, who was concentrating round Sharqat and entrenching a line about three miles south of it, did not intend to hold any intermediate position. General Cobbe himself proposed to push forward the 101st Heavy Artillery Brigade via the desert road and Balalij, as soon as Colonel Coningham's column had occupied the latter place, so as to facilitate the advance of the 17th Division by supporting its left. At 2.15 p.m. General Leslie issued orders that General Wauchope's column was to push beyond Qalat-al-Bint and gain touch with the enemy, that Colonel Coningham's column was to occupy Balalij that day and advance on Sharqat on the 28th and that the 51st Infantry Brigade was to reach Qalat-al-Bint by 6 a.m. on the 28th. The 1/6 Hampshire (52nd Brigade), after clearing the previous day's battlefield, were to return to Fat-ha.

Moving by a westerly track the 112th Infantry reached Qalat-al-Bint at 4.30 p.m., but the main body of General Wauchope's column with part only of his artillery did not get there till between 6 and 7 p.m., while the 403rd and 404th Field Batteries, delayed by the difficult road, did not reach that place till about 11 p.m. The 51st Infantry Brigade and one section

1064th Field Battery reached the Humr plain after dark and bivouacked there for the night. For the greater part of the day General Leslie was out of communication with Colonel Coningham,* but at 3 p.m. General Cobbe, learning from an air report that Balalij was clear of the enemy, at once ordered the headquarters 101st Heavy Artillery Brigade with one section each of 60-pounders and 6-inch howitzers, escorted by two troops 32nd Lancers, to join Colonel Coningham at that place.

To return to General Cassels, who at 2.45 p.m. judged from information received that the whole Turkish force was on the right bank of the Tigris. Some 2,000 to 3,000 of its infantry appeared to be entrenching a line two or three miles south of Sharqat, another 1,000 infantry were about two and a half miles south of his own position, apparently 4,000 to 5,000 more infantry were in the vicinity of Sharqat and there was a detachment twelve to fourteen miles north of him being watched by a squadron of the 7th Hussars. As regards our own troops he understood that General Sanders' column was moving up the Tigris left bank in his own direction and that the 7th Cavalry Brigade was at or on its way to Shuraimiya, but he had no recent information regarding the situation of the 17th Division. At 3 p.m., therefore, when he sent General Cobbe a situation report and announced his intention of fighting any enemy sent against him, he asked what progress had been made by the 17th Division. This message crossed one sent by General Cobbe at 3.20 p.m. (but only received by General Cassels at 10 p.m.) saying that General Sanders' column would arrive opposite Sharqat about 6.30 p.m. and would be able, if necessary, to reinforce General Cassels with infantry during the night and also that the 7th Cavalry Brigade, which would be sent up the Tigris left bank early next morning, should begin to reach the Hadraniya ford between 10 and 11 a.m. Immediately after sending this message, General Cobbe visited the 7th Cavalry Brigade and gave General Norton orders to start very early next morning and push forward as speedily as possible to join General Cassels.

At 4.35 p.m. General Cassels sent an officer with a message to General Sanders giving a summary of the situation and expressing the opinion that it was possible that the Turks would make a determined effort to break through the 11th Cavalry Brigade. The best help that General Sanders could

* Hearing this, General Cobbe sent an aeroplane at 2.30 p.m. to locate this column and give it information regarding the enemy.

give, he said, would be by co-operation from the Tigris left bank opposite the stretch between Sharqat and Qabr Gazi and by sending some infantry, if available, to join General Cassels on the right bank.

During the afternoon the 11th Cavalry Brigade continued to strengthen its defensive position. General Cassels assumed, for lack of information to the contrary, that the 7th Hussars squadron had succeeded in holding up the enemy detachment to the north; and at 5.30 p.m. two armoured cars returned from reconnaissance northward and reported that they had drawn fire, about five miles north of Hadraniya, from two hostile camel guns. These armoured cars remained with General Cassels for the night.

General Sanders' column reached a point eastward of Sharqat about 8 p.m. There was no sign of any enemy bridge there and, after leaving the 1/9th Middlesex to piquet the river between Sharqat and Tulul-al-Aqr,* the column marched on. It was apparently about this time† that General Sanders sent off a message to General Cassels by a cavalry patrol, saying that he intended marching all night, that he would do his best to help, and that the 18-pounder ammunition had been sent on ahead of his column. General Cassels received this message at 9.30 p.m. and about an hour later sent an officer to General Sanders with another message, giving the various courses which seemed open to the Turks and expressing the opinion that they would probably leave a rear guard to hold off the 17th Division while they tried to break through the 11th Cavalry Brigade. He was consequently in urgent need of the 18-pounder ammunition and infantry he had previously asked for.

General Sanders' column continued to march throughout the night and, after getting into touch with the 11th Cavalry Brigade about 4 a.m. on the 28th October, reached the Tigris bank opposite Huwaish an hour and a half later. Its march of about thirty-three miles had been a fine performance.

In the meantime, at 8 p.m. on the 27th, General Cobbe had issued an operation order for the next day's movements. In this it was stated that the enemy was reported to be rapidly entrenching a line about three miles south of Sharqat and that his pontoon train had left Sharqat, going northward, at 4.15 p.m. The 11th Cavalry and Light Armoured Motor Brigades

* Air reports had stated that the Turkish pontoons were being moved in this direction.

† The record in which the time should be given is missing.

were to continue to block the enemy's retirement northwards. The 17th Division was to continue the pursuit during the night and to attack the enemy vigorously as early as possible in the morning. General Sanders' column was to be prepared to push on to the ferry north of Huwaish before daylight if the situation demanded it, pushing on cavalry in the meantime to watch the river as far as there during the night.* The 7th Cavalry Brigade was to press forward so as to co-operate with the 11th Cavalry Brigade and General Sanders' column in cutting off the enemy's retreat; and the 18th Division was to hold the bridgehead on the Little Zab.

General Cobbe had come to the conclusion that the enemy probably intended to hold the line south of Sharqat, which he was entrenching, with about half his force and to make a direct attack on the 11th Cavalry Brigade or else cross to the Tigris left bank with the other half. His chances of effecting the latter had been minimised by General Sanders' rapid advance, but this made it all the more necessary to divert as many of the enemy as possible from an attack on the 11th Cavalry Brigade. As further reports reached him, General Cobbe saw that the progress of the 17th Division had been unexpectedly slow. Moreover, it was not clear that General Leslie realised how imperative it was to press the pursuit. Accordingly at 10 p.m. General Cobbe's Chief of Staff telephoned both to General Leslie and his senior General Staff Officer and impressed on them the urgent necessity of more rapid progress and of calling on their troops for further efforts despite exhaustion.

At 11.20 p.m. General Leslie issued a fresh order directing General Wauchope's column to advance at 3 a.m., with a view to attacking the enemy south of Sharqat, and Colonel Coningham's column to advance from Balalij with the same object. The artillery of both columns was to be well in action by 8 a.m. supporting the attack, in which the 18th Divisional artillery would co-operate from the Tigris left bank. The 51st Infantry Brigade was to continue its march through Qalat-al-Bint at 6 a.m. along the river road and be in reserve.

Until the situation towards Altun Köpri was clearer and more definite information had been received in regard to the whereabouts of the Turkish 2nd and 5th Divisions, it seemed necessary to keep troops on the Little Zab. But some reduction in

* Contact aeroplanes had kept General Cobbe acquainted during the day with General Sanders' progress, but he had not yet heard of the latter's decision to march all night.

strength was considered possible and at 1.30 a.m. on the 28th October a column consisting of D/336th and C/337th Field Batteries, one section 2/86th Heavy Battery, the 1/39th Gahrwalis and the 238th Machine Gun Company (less two sections) left the Little Zab to join the force under General Sanders.

After a quiet night the 11th Cavalry Brigade, at dawn* on the 28th October, could see no enemy movement to the southward or south-westward. Getting into communication with General Sanders across the Tigris by visual signalling, General Cassels asked him to send his pontoons to the ferry, where there were only one raft and a small captured boat working and where the welcome arrival of over 800 rounds of 18-pounder ammunition had just been reported.

To the northward the squadron of the 7th Hussars was still in touch with the enemy detachment reported the previous day, and General Cassels had no sooner sent (about 7 a.m.) two armoured cars to join this squadron than he received a report from it that the enemy looked like advancing and had started to work round the squadron's left.

About the same time enemy infantry were seen some two miles to the south advancing northwards. They were extended on a front of about seven hundred yards with their right on the river and were moving forward slowly and deliberately. General Cassels at once sent this information to General Sanders and asked him to get his guns into action so as to enfilade the enemy and also to send some infantry by the ferry as soon as possible. The Turks opened fire with their guns about 7.20 a.m. on both the 11th Cavalry Brigade and General Sanders' column. But the latter could not locate the hostile guns† till after 8 a.m., when the positions of two Turkish batteries were reported by our airmen, and could at first only range on the "bursts" of "W" Battery's shells. The fire of "W" Battery was apparently accurate and effective, as, though the enemy was advancing in considerable strength, his progress continued to be slow.

At 8 a.m. General Cassels heard that General Sanders had sent the 1/7th Gurkhas to join him by the ferry. Soon afterwards he decided to deliver a counter-attack against the enemy's left by sending the 7th Hussars (less two squadrons) to move across his own front and round the enemy's left under cover

* Sunrise was about 6.15 a.m.

† The number of these was difficult to estimate. By evening General Cassels estimated that the Turks had 24 guns in action.

of the Wadi Muabba and a branch ravine. Well handled, and making skilful use of the ground, the Hussars surprised the enemy about 9.15 a.m. by suddenly coming into action dismounted against the left of his advancing infantry. These at once fell back for some distance with considerable loss and the Hussars continued to exploit their success with boldness till about 10.30 a.m. when, threatened themselves by an outflanking movement, they drew out of action. Their object had been well effected at the cost of about 30 casualties. In the meantime, General Cassels, hearing that the 7th Hussars squadron to the north had been obliged to retire for about a mile, had sent it a reinforcement of half a squadron of the same regiment from the Tigris left bank.

The Turks to the south of General Cassels now changed their tactics. They recommenced their frontal attack with only a weak, widely-extended line advancing astride the road, while their intention of turning General Cassels' right was evident from the large columns seen two or three miles away moving in that direction. To counter this, General Cassels sent the 7th Hussars (less two squadrons) to prolong his right flank to the north-westward and to cover the guns of "W" Battery. These guns opened fire on the enemy columns, apparently with good effect, but they continued to make progress—though it was slow—past the British right; and at 12.15 p.m. General Cassels had to extend his line further to the north-west by sending the 23rd Cavalry to take up a line on the right of the Hussars.

At 1 p.m. the situation was generally as follows. Two and a half regiments of the 11th Cavalry Brigade were holding a convex line some four miles long, the Guides Cavalry on the left facing south astride the road, the 7th Hussars in the centre facing southwest and the 23rd Cavalry facing the same way on the right of the Hussars. The Light Armoured Motor Brigade was operating against the enemy about four and a half miles southwest of Huwaish. Groups of Turkish infantry to the southwestward, totalling 2,500 to 3,000, were moving north either trying to escape or to turn the British right, and another 300 to 400 to the southward were advancing widely extended towards the high ground south of the Wadi Muabba opposite the Guides Cavalry. Some of the Turkish guns were taking the line of the 7th Hussars in enfilade. To the north, a squadron and a half of the 7th Hussars and two armoured cars were retiring southward very slowly before an enemy detachment which was some two and a half miles

north-northwest of Hadraniya. There were no signs of the 7th Cavalry Brigade and there was no definite information in regard to the 17th Division. In the circumstances, General Cassels felt justified in asking General Sanders to send him a field battery and also—so as to enable him to set free a mobile reserve—another infantry battalion. At the same time he sent a message describing the situation to the commander of the Light Armoured Motor Brigade and asked him to do his utmost to delay the Turks' outflanking movement and prevent their escape.

The 1/7th Gurkhas were still crossing the ferry, which the pontoons from General Sanders' column did not reach till 1.30 p.m. But at 2 p.m. the leading Gurkha company reached General Cassels' position and relieved two squadrons Guides Cavalry. These were sent at once to reinforce the 7th Hussars, against whose front an attack appeared to be imminent. Three quarters of an hour later the rest of the Gurkhas arrived and relieved the remaining squadrons of the Guides, who then went into reserve.

At 2 p.m. D/336th and C/337th Field Batteries joined General Sanders and came into action beside his other guns and at 3 p.m. the section 2/86th Heavy Battery also arrived and came into action. These guns, which formed part of the column which left the Little Zab at 1.30 a.m., had been ordered by General Fanshawe at 9 a.m. to push on independently, ahead of the 1/39th Gahrwalis and machine gun company.

At 2.50 p.m., hearing from Corps Headquarters that on arrival the 7th Cavalry Brigade was to come under his orders, General Cassels sent a despatch rider to meet General Norton with a message requesting him to send his brigade straight to the Hadraniya ford and to come himself to see General Cassels at Huwaish.

At 4 p.m. General Cassels heard from the 7th Hussars that though the enemy from the south-west had worked forward in strength to within three hundred yards of the Hussars' line, his expected attack had not materialised. At 4.15 p.m. General Norton reached General Cassels' headquarters and the 7th Cavalry Brigade could be seen starting to cross the Hadraniya ford. At 4.20 p.m. General Cassels sent a situation report to Corps Headquarters, repeating it to General Sanders and the 17th Division; and ten minutes later he heard that General Sanders had sent A/337th Field Battery to join him by the ford.

General Norton was directed to piquet the enemy detachment to the north for the night and to extend the right of General Cassels' line round to the Tigris above the ford, keeping the bulk of his brigade in reserve near the ford. He was also to be prepared next morning, first to dispose of the enemy detachment to the north and then to co-operate on General Cassels' right flank.

About 5.15 p.m. the two squadrons Guides Cavalry in reserve were sent to relieve the 7th Hussars (less two squadrons), who then moved back into reserve. By this time the Turkish force from the south-west had ceased to move in a northerly direction, and, facing practically along the whole 11th Cavalry Brigade front, was engaged in an active fire-fight. The Turkish right was on a bluff near the Tigris south-east of Huwaish and their left about two miles north-west of that place. The fighting on this line continued till well after dark.

During the 28th October the 11th Cavalry Brigade had incurred over 100 casualties among officers and men* and a good many more among its horses. Its successful defence owed much to the accurate fire of "W" Battery, R.H.A., under Major A. H. MacIlwaine, and to the fire power conferred on it by its sixty machine guns. No. 63 Squadron, R.A.F., had also rendered much assistance by repeatedly bombing and machine-gunning the enemy.

The march of about forty-five miles by the 7th Cavalry Brigade had been a good performance† and its arrival had been most timely. The crossing of the Hadraniya ford, during which several men and horses were drowned, was continued till after dark. But even then "V" Battery, R.H.A., and one squadron 13th Hussars had to remain for the night on the left bank. At 9 p.m. the 1/39th Gahrwalis, each man carrying 170 rounds of rifle ammunition and a bomb, and the 238th Machine Gun Company reached General Sanders' position after a fine march of thirty-four miles. They were then sent on to the ferry, which they reached at about 11 p.m., ready to cross and join General Cassels early next morning.

To turn to the 17th Division. General Wauchope's column had advanced from Qalat-al-Bint at 3 a.m. on the 28th October, the enemy being reported to be holding an entrenched position about eleven miles to the north-northwest. The presence of enemy parties in the neighbourhood of Qalat-al-Bint had also been reported the previous evening and this necessitated

* The 7th Hussars contributed 70 and Guides Cavalry 32.

† It left Fat-ha at 1 a.m. and had crossed the Little Zab by 7.15 a.m.

searching the heights on either side of the road, a lengthy and difficult operation in the dark. Owing to this and to the number of deep ravines which could generally only be crossed with difficulty, progress was slow. At 7.15 a.m., when about seven miles from the enemy's position, General Wauchope sent the 112th Infantry and the 25th Mountain Battery to move along the crest of the Jabal Khanuqa with a view to attacking the enemy's left.* It had originally been General Wauchope's intention to halt the remainder of his column for an hour at this stage to give the Mahrattas time to get abreast. But, as the information that General Cassels was being heavily attacked made it important to lose no time, the main column, headed by one squadron 32nd Lancers and the 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment, continued its advance at once.

By 8 a.m. the 32nd Lancers had gained touch with the enemy and an airman had reported that some 2,000 Turkish infantry were holding the trenches to the south of Sharqat. At this hour General Leslie joined General Wauchope and, assuming direct command, issued orders that the column was to push on but that its infantry were not to be committed to the attack without adequate artillery support.†

At Balalij Colonel Coningham, who had been out of touch with Divisional headquarters since the previous day, did not receive his orders to advance till 8.25 a.m. At 9 a.m., as he was starting, communication (by heliograph) was re-established and he was told to co-operate on General Wauchope's left flank. With Colonel Coningham were two troops 32nd Lancers, headquarters 101st Heavy Artillery Brigade with one section each of the 157th and 246th Batteries, the 1/10th Gurkhas and two sections 257th Machine Gun Company. The 45th Sikhs with three sections 258th Machine Gun Company were on the march from Ain Dibs and passed through Balalij at 11 a.m. on their way to join Colonel Coningham.

The difficult nature of the ground continued to delay the progress of General Wauchope's column. Even the infantry and pack animals experienced difficulty in crossing many of the numerous deep dry watercourses, and the field artillery only managed to get along with very great difficulty. In the meantime the 32nd Lancers, reconnoitring well and boldly, furnished most accurate reports of the enemy's position and strength,

* They also had orders to get into communication with the 18th Division on the Tigris left bank.

† The field artillery was even then, apparently, some way behind the infantry, owing to the bad road.

and also in regard to the most suitable ground for our own advance. The enemy's trench line, some three-and-a-half miles south of Sharqat, was about two miles in length, extending from the cliffs of the Jabal Khanuqa westward to the Mosul road with its right refused to the north-west. It had been estimated earlier in the morning that its garrison was about 2,000 infantry with some guns, but before midday the Lancers reported that about 1,000 of the infantry had withdrawn. At 11.30 a.m. General Leslie could see the 1/10 Gurkhas on the left deploying and preparing to co-operate in the attack with their right on the road, but they were still some distance off.

About noon the 404th and 1066th Field Batteries came into action in positions, between the converging roads from the Fat-ha gorge and Balalij, some 3,000 to 3,500 yards from the enemy's trenches; and about the same time the 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment, with one section 129th Machine Gun Company on each flank, reached a point on the foot-hills about 1,200 yards from the Turkish trenches and came under effective hostile gun and machine gun fire. Lieutenant-Colonel Woulfe-Flanagan, commanding 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment, came to the conclusion that it would be best to attack at once without waiting for the turning movement on his right by the 112th Infantry and mountain guns, who, delayed by bad ground, were still about two miles to his right rear. General Wauchope concurred and ordered a company 114th Mahrattas to support the attack, retaining the three remaining companies and two machine gun sections as brigade reserve.

The attack was well organised and was carried out with gallantry and skill. It was well supported by the fire of machine guns from both flanks and of the 404th and 1066th Field Batteries, though, for some unexplained reason, these batteries had no aeroplane to observe for them. The 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment went into action with only eighteen officers and four hundred and fourteen other ranks. But the leadership, steady discipline and dash they displayed was specially marked; and the attack met with complete success, the enemy's front line trenches being entered about 1.30 p.m. The Mahratta reserve was pushed in; and by 2 p.m. two enemy lines had been captured, the Turks being in full retreat after leaving eleven machine guns and some 200 prisoners in our hands. The 1/10th Gurkhas, whose approach probably hastened the enemy's retreat, joined the 34th Brigade infantry at 2.30 p.m. and the 1064th and 1066th Field Batteries managed to push forward with difficulty and shell the retreating enemy.

In this affair the British casualties amounted to about 140, of which 112 were incurred by the 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment.

Men and animals were by this time greatly exhausted owing to the heat of the day, the shortage of water and their recent exertions. At 3.30 p.m. General Wauchope reported that his infantry were consolidating the captured trenches and that their patrols had been unable to keep up with the rapid retreat of the enemy, most of whom had passed out of sight. He strongly urged that his brigade should halt for the night near the West Kent headquarters, where a good watering place was handy.

The 51st Infantry Brigade had started from its bivouac at 2 a.m., reached Qalat-al-Bint at 6.30 a.m. and, after halting there for an hour for rest and water, had pushed on again. It had been held in reserve during the attack.

Concurring in the necessity for rest and water,* General Leslie decided that the pursuit was not to be pressed further that day.

The general situation at nightfall on the 28th October was as follows.

The Turkish Tigris Group was between the 17th Division and General Cassels' force. The 18th Division barred its way eastward across the river, and the difficult waterless country was bound to hamper its escape westward as an organised force. To the north of General Cassels' force were two Turkish detachments,† apparently of no great strength, one being near Hadraniya and the other twelve miles further to the north. Both appeared to be trying to advance southward.

With General Cassels were the 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades and the 1/7th Gurkhas, a total of about 2,300 sabres, 800 rifles and 12 guns, of which 100 sabres and 6 guns were on the left bank of the Tigris. A/337th Field Battery was moving towards the Hadraniya ford to join General Cassels but could not cross till next morning, and the 1/39th Gahrwalis had not yet reached General Sanders' position. The Light Armoured Motor Brigade was about eight miles west of Sharqat.

With General Sanders, near the left river bank to the south-east of Huwaish, were the 53rd Infantry Brigade (less 1/7th Gurkhas) and 16 guns (D/336th, C/337th, one section 341st and 2/86th Batteries) and south of his position three troops 32nd Lancers were watching the river line as far as Sharqat.

---

* The horses of one battery are said to have been without water for sixty hours.

† As subsequently ascertained these were, respectively, the 13th Regiment with two guns and the 14th Regiment with four guns, both of the 5th Division.

General Fanshawe, with 18th Division headquarters, No. 8 Company Sappers and Miners and B/336th and C/336th Field Batteries, was at Nami, to which place the 159th Heavy Battery was on its way from the Little Zab. The 54th Infantry Brigade (less 1/39th Gahrwalis) and A/336th and 341st (less one section) Field Batteries were at the Little Zab bridgehead. Between Fat-ha and the Little Zab were the 32nd Lancers (less three squadrons), who had been sent by General Cobbe to patrol that river and so release more infantry. The remainder of the 18th Division was about Fat-ha and furnishing the detachment at Ain Nukhaila.

With General Leslie to the south of Sharqat on the Tigris right bank were one and a half squadrons 32nd Lancers, 220th Field Artillery Brigade (403rd less a section, 404th, one section 1064th and 1066th Batteries), 101st Heavy Artillery Brigade (one section each 157th and 246th Batteries), 2nd Indian Mountain Artillery Brigade, 34th and 51st Infantry Brigades, 45th Sikhs, three sections 258th Machine Gun Company and the 276th Machine Gun Company. This gave him a total of about 150 sabres, 3,200 rifles* and 34 guns.

The remainder of the 17th Division, which was south of the Fat-ha gorge, had been organised by General Cobbe at midday as a mobile column for use as a Corps Reserve.

At 7.20 p.m. General Leslie reported to Corps Headquarters that the advanced portions of his division had concentrated on the heights above Sharqat and would advance again at 6 a.m. on the 29th. General Cobbe, however, did not concur in this. At 8.35 p.m. he sent an order to General Leslie pointing out that the enemy appeared ready to surrender and that it was imperative to push on to the assistance of General Cassels, whose troops had been holding up the enemy force and had been engaged for two days. The moon would rise at 1.25 a.m. and at 1.45 a.m. the 17th Division was to advance vigorously, and at all costs brush aside any opposition by outflanking the enemy rear guards on a wide front. General Cobbe expected the 17th Division to get into touch with General Cassels' force by 7 a.m. on the 29th. He had sent Ford vans with water up the road to Balalij and they were to be pushed on to supply the most advanced troops.

General Leslie replied at first that this order would be complied with. But after consultations with his subordinate commanders he sent another reply deprecating a night advance.

* i.e., 34th Infantry Brigade about 1,200, and the 51st Infantry Brigade (including 45th Sikhs) about 2,000.

He considered that such a movement by his tired force, through the difficult unreconnoitred country in front of him, would be likely to lead to confusion and he thought that the same end could be attained by daylight. To General Cobbe, however, it seemed evident that the enemy's main effort would be directed during the night to an attempt to break through General Cassels' force, for which the Turks would employ the greater part of their troops unless the 17th Division followed their rear closely. General Cobbe realised fully the great exhaustion of men and animals and the nature of the demands which had been made on their physical endurance for the past four days. But he considered that the circumstances justified him in ordering the 17th Division to close with the enemy at the earliest possible moment. He was, therefore, unable to accede to General Leslie's request to allow his force to rest till daylight.

During the 28th October General Cobbe had been kept well in touch with the general situation by air-reports. On the other hand, the cable communications between his headquarters and the different columns and formations had been frequently interrupted, owing to the cables having been destroyed by shell fire or by Arabs, or in one or two cases to report centres having outrun the cable. General Cobbe had four wireless stations at his disposal. Of these, two pack stations were with the 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades, one motor station with the Light Armoured Motor Brigade and a wagon station with Ist Corps Headquarters.

Throughout the night 28th/29th the Turks displayed considerable activity along the portions of General Cassels' front held by the 11th Cavalry Brigade and the 1/7th Gurkhas, the brunt of the fighting being borne by the Guides and the Gurkhas. But the hostile guns ceased firing altogether after the earlier part of the night ; and, although in places the Turks got within one hundred yards of our line, they made no real effort to break through. The 13th Lancers of the 7th Cavalry Brigade held a line which extended, from a point between Hadraniya and the ford, in a southwesterly direction to the right of the 11th Cavalry Brigade ; and here the only incident of importance during the night was the surrender of a Turkish field ambulance with about 100 men.

At 1.45 a.m. on the 29th October General Cassels informed General Sanders, in answer to a query on the subject, that he would like another field battery and the 1/3rd Gurkhas warned to be ready to join him. About 4.30 a.m. the 1/39th Gahrwalis and 238th Machine Gun Company started to cross the ferry

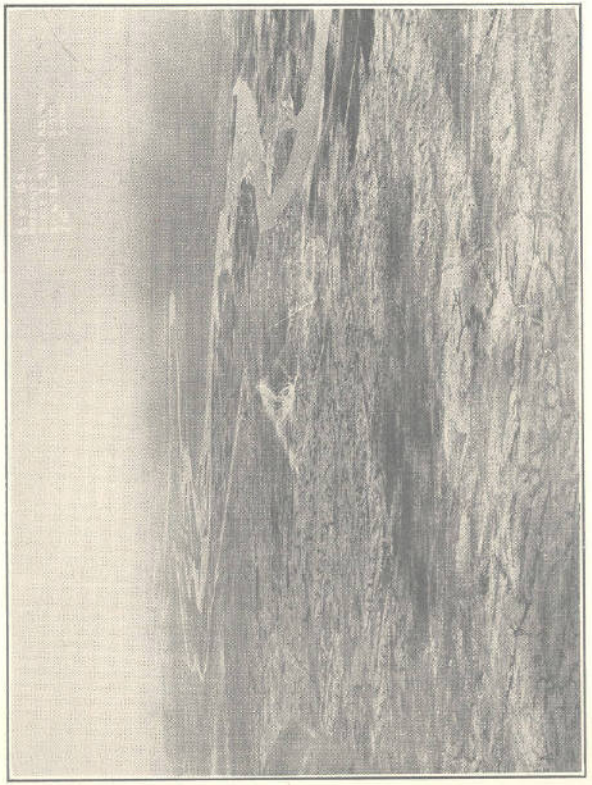
to the right bank and by 5.30 a.m. all the cavalry horses were saddled up and ready to move. It seemed probable to General Cassels, as he stated in a situation report to Corps Headquarters at 6 a.m., that some of the Turks had already escaped to the north, passing west of his line, and that more of them might be following from the Sharqat direction with the 17th Division on their heels. He had consequently instructed General Norton to move northward and northwestward with the object of rounding up any Turks who had passed and of intercepting any who might follow.

Before dawn the main body of the 7th Cavalry Brigade had moved into a covered position under the river bank near the ford; and "V" Battery, R.H.A., and the 13th Hussars' squadron on the left bank were ordered to cross the ford as soon as there was sufficient light. The moment the squadron began to cross, however, two Turkish guns about 3,000 yards away to the northwest shelled the ford heavily and, though the squadron managed to get through without casualties, it was considered advisable for "V" Battery to wait till the hostile fire had been subdued. The battery came into action on the left bank about 7 a.m. and soon caused the enemy guns to withdraw. In the meantime, one squadron 13th Lancers, which had been ordered to push up the Mosul road at dawn, had also encountered shell and machine gun fire and had taken up a position on a detached underfeature which was known as Cemetery Hill (see Map 44). Here it remained under fire from commanding heights to the north.

At 7 a.m. the two leading companies 1/39th Gahrwalis arrived at General Cassels' position and the officer commanding, who reported that the remainder of the battalion was following shortly, received orders to relieve the 23rd and Guides Cavalry as soon as possible, to enable those regiments to join the 7th Hussars in reserve.

To the south of Sharqat the progress of the 17th Division advanced guard (No. 2 Mountain Artillery Brigade, 51st Infantry Brigade and three sections 258th Machine Gun Company), which had left its bivouac at 1.45 a.m., had been slow. The ground was broken and difficult and in the dim moonlight considerable difficulty was experienced in keeping to the ill-defined road. At dawn a squadron 32nd Lancers pushed forward to join the advanced guard and the main body of the Division also started from its bivouac. About an hour later, when about three miles north of Sharqat, the Lancers gained

To face page 310.



The Sharqat battlefield: 29th October 1918 (looking north).

touch with enemy infantry holding the high ground to the west of the road.

The country to the east of the road for about seven miles north of Sharqat was flat and low-lying, but to the west a broken hilly plateau rose steeply from the road and was intersected by many deep ravines and watercourses.* These were dry and were generally passable by pack animals, but, while they afforded some cover, they tended to break up the regularity of an advance. Making skilful use of these natural advantages for delaying action, the Turkish infantry fell back slowly before our advance. This was by then being carried out on a broad front to the west of road, the Highland Light Infantry (on the right) and the 1/10th Gurkhas being in first line and the 14th Sikhs in support in rear of the Gurkhas. The 45th Sikhs, forming 51st Brigade reserve, moved forward, under the crest of the plateau, just west of the road.

At 8 a.m., when a field and a mountain battery came into action to support the advancing infantry, General Leslie joined the advanced guard. The situation was not clear and, though his advanced guard continued to make steady though slow progress, it was not till 11 a.m. that he learnt from an air report that the enemy's main position lay on the plateau about three miles south of Huwaish. Its general line extended westward from the road for about two miles and then bent backwards to the northwest for another mile or so. It had evidently been hastily prepared and its trenches were not in continuous or regular lines, but were arranged in depth in numerous short lengths, and were sited so as to take full advantage of the irregular and broken ground. The position was very difficult to discern or define.

To return to General Cassels, who at 7.30 a.m. could see large numbers of troops about three miles to the southward, but could not be certain whether these were Turks or the 17th Division. If the latter, it confirmed his former suspicion that part of the enemy force had escaped by passing to the west. Consequently he warned General Norton to be ready, if necessary, to move northward, in which case the 11th Cavalry Brigade would follow the 7th. A short time afterwards, hearing that A/337th Field Battery was crossing the ford, General Cassels ordered it to join General Norton.

At 8 a.m. General Cassels received an air-report which placed the most advanced troops of the 17th Division at a

* See Map 45.

point some four miles to the south, though there might be some a mile further north. General Cassels then asked the airman to locate the nearest enemy troops to the south and also to reconnoitre for fifteen miles to the north and north-west; and he received a reply just before 9 a.m. saying that there were no enemy forces of importance to the north and northwest and that the nearest enemy troops to the south were those who had been facing him all night. He then asked the airman to reconnoitre for fifteen miles to the west; and by 10 a.m. he heard that there were no enemy troops for ten miles to the west and that the most advanced troops of the 17th Division were about four miles to the south. General Cassels, coming to the conclusion that the troops seen three miles to the south must be Turks, then sent directions to General Norton to carry out his original orders. During his uncertainty in regard to the enemy situation, General Cassels had heard that C/337th Field Battery was crossing the ford and had told General Norton to retain it. He now cancelled this order and directed General Norton to keep A/337th Battery but to send C/337th to join General Cassels.

At 11 a.m. a further air report gave General Cassels the exact situation of the Turkish main position three miles south and also a clearer idea of the position of the 17th Division. He at once sent this information on to General Sanders and he added that there was no indication that Turks had escaped to the north and that he was going to turn his own guns on to the Turkish main position, which he suggested General Sanders' guns should also fire at. At 11.30 a.m., C/337th Field Battery arrived at General Cassels' position and came into action to the northeast of Huwaish. Half an hour later he heard from General Sanders that his guns were in action against the Turkish main position, that he was pushing infantry and machine guns to the Tigris bank to the eastward of this position and that he would like to know if General Cassels wanted the 1/3rd Gurkhas. General Cassels answered this query in the affirmative.

General Norton, in the meantime, had been engaged with the enemy detachment, which was holding a bluff about one thousand yards north of Cemetery Hill and which was obviously in greater strength than the air reports had led him to expect. This bluff, over a hundred feet above the plain bordering the Tigris bank, was at the south-eastern edge of a broad plateau (see Map 44). After such personal reconnaissance as was possible, General Norton ordered the 13th Hussars, supported

by the 14th Lancers and covered by the fire of "V" Battery on the Tigris left bank and of a machine gun sub-section on Cemetery Hill, to advance at a gallop, dismount under the bluff and carry the position by a dismounted attack. There was obviously sufficient dead ground under the bluff to give cover to the horses and for the organisation of a dismounted attack, while the covering fire of our guns should be sufficient to prevent the enemy leaving the shelter of his trenches to defend the dead ground.

Moving forward at 8.15 a.m., the leading squadron of the 13th Hussars came under heavy gun and machine gun fire as soon as it emerged from the cover of the river bank. Its commander fell, severely wounded, and the squadron, inclining slightly to the left, halted under cover of Cemetery Hill, followed by the remainder of the regiment. The Hussars then occupied this hill and tried to gain ground to the west. But they were ordered to stop their attack to admit of further artillery preparation and the 14th Lancers were despatched to occupy the plateau to the west of Cemetery Hill, where General Norton proceeded to establish his headquarters. About 10 a.m. A/337th Battery came into action 2,000 yards to the south-east of Cemetery Hill and about 11.30 a.m. the enemy made an ineffectual attempt to advance. Just before midday our guns increased their fire to cover an attack, but, as the enemy at once disclosed more machine guns, the assault was again postponed. To prevent the enemy moving round his left flank and joining the Turkish Tigris Group, General Norton pushed out the 14th Lancers further to the westward and moved the 13th Lancers up into the gap between the 14th and Cemetery Hill.

At 12.30 p.m. General Norton ordered the 13th Hussars to move forward to the assault at 1.20 p.m. under cover of a heavy bombardment, which started at 12.55 p.m. At the hour laid down, the Hussars, 239 sabres strong, in columns of wings with extended files, galloped straight for the bluff. As soon as the leading squadrons emerged from the cover of Cemetery Hill the Turks opened a heavy machine gun fire, which was fortunately ill-directed and ineffective owing apparently to the demoralising accuracy of our gunfire. The intervening ground was flat and open except for a deep dry watercourse which ran right across the front about half way and which, unnoticeable from any distance, was unexpected. Fortunately, however, it caused little delay and the regiment reached the dead ground without a single man having been

hit.* Dismounting and fixing bayonets, the Hussars swarmed up the almost precipitous slopes led by their Colonel.† The shells of both the supporting batteries were bursting with great accuracy along the crest and the barrage was not lifted till the Hussars were within a few yards of the top, while the Vickers guns also kept up a heavy fire. Largely as a result of this effective covering fire, the Hussars incurred only seven casualties in the short burst of close fighting which ensued after they reached the top. At 1.45 p.m. the Turks began to surrender and by 2 p.m. the 13th were in complete possession of the plateau, having taken about 730 prisoners and 12 machine guns.

In the meantime the 13th and 14th Lancers had come up on the enemy's flank and, pursuing for some distance, they took two guns and about 260 more prisoners, which made a total of 985 officers and men captured, i.e. the whole of the Turkish 13th Regiment. Having thus cleared General Cassels' northern front effectively, the 7th Cavalry Brigade swung round and by dusk had dug itself in on an extended position about four miles north-west of Huwaish facing southward so as to block the retreat of any Turks attempting to escape past General Cassels.

The Turkish guns which had been in action against General Cassels the previous day were still silent, having possibly withdrawn to oppose the 17th Division.‡ General Cassels could see no sign of the latter's advance, but just before 3 p.m. he received a message from General Fanshawe§ saying that the "zero" hour for the 17th Division attack would not be before 3.30 p.m. Soon afterwards, hearing sound of gun-fire to the southward, General Cassels directed "W" and C/337th Batteries to join in what was evidently the bombardment of the enemy's main position.‖ At 3.30 p.m. he received an air report which gave him a very clear idea of the respective positions of the Turks and our own forces; and soon afterwards he ordered the Light Armoured Motor Brigade to take up a position about six miles west of Huwaish which would close the only exit left open to the enemy.

At 3 p.m. the 159th Siege Battery joined General Sanders and came into action. The 1/5th Royal West Kent Regiment

* One man was hurt by his horse falling and two horses were wounded.
† Lieutenant-Colonel J. J. Richardson, D.S.O.
‡ General Cassels considers it more probable that the guns had run out of ammunition.
§ 18th Division Headquarters were at Tulul-al-Aqr.
‖ General Cassels was not in direct communication with the 17th Division.

was also on its way from the Little Zab to join him, having been ordered forward from there at 7 a.m. after airmen had reported no signs of any Turkish movement from the direction of Altun Köpri.

At 4.20 p.m. General Cassels learnt from an air report that the enemy's position was unchanged and that the 17th Division guns were still carrying out a bombardment. About 5 p.m. he saw two Very lights which had been fired on the west flank of the main Turkish position, but had no idea what they indicated; at 5.15 p.m. he was joined by the 1/3rd Gurkhas; and at dusk he was still without any information in regard to the result of the 17th Division attack. He decided that, during the night, he would actively engage the enemy facing him and that his guns should bombard the area to the south-west, across which the enemy might try to effect his escape. He directed General Norton to do the same, but heard that the latter's guns were practically without ammunition. At 10 p.m., however, he heard from Corps Headquarters that the 17th Division had not met with complete success, that the situation there would not be clear till the morning and that, although the 17th Division would hold what it had gained, it had no hope of making progress during the night.

At dusk, there were still no indications of any enemy movement down the Little Zab and the headquarters 55th Infantry Brigade, the 1/5th East Surrey Regiment, two sections 249th Machine Gun Company and B/337th Field Battery were on their way there from Fat-ha.* Consequently the remaining battalion and machine gun sections of the 54th Infantry Brigade left the Little Zab at 7 p.m. to join General Sanders.

The details, given in the different war diaries and in all other accounts, of the 17th Division operations after midday on the 29th October are very conflicting and it is consequently only possible to be certain of the general trend and results of the fighting. The extended front, the broken nature of the ground, the exhaustion of men and animals and the shortage of cable† for communication seem to have been the main reasons for this uncertainty, which persisted till well after dark.

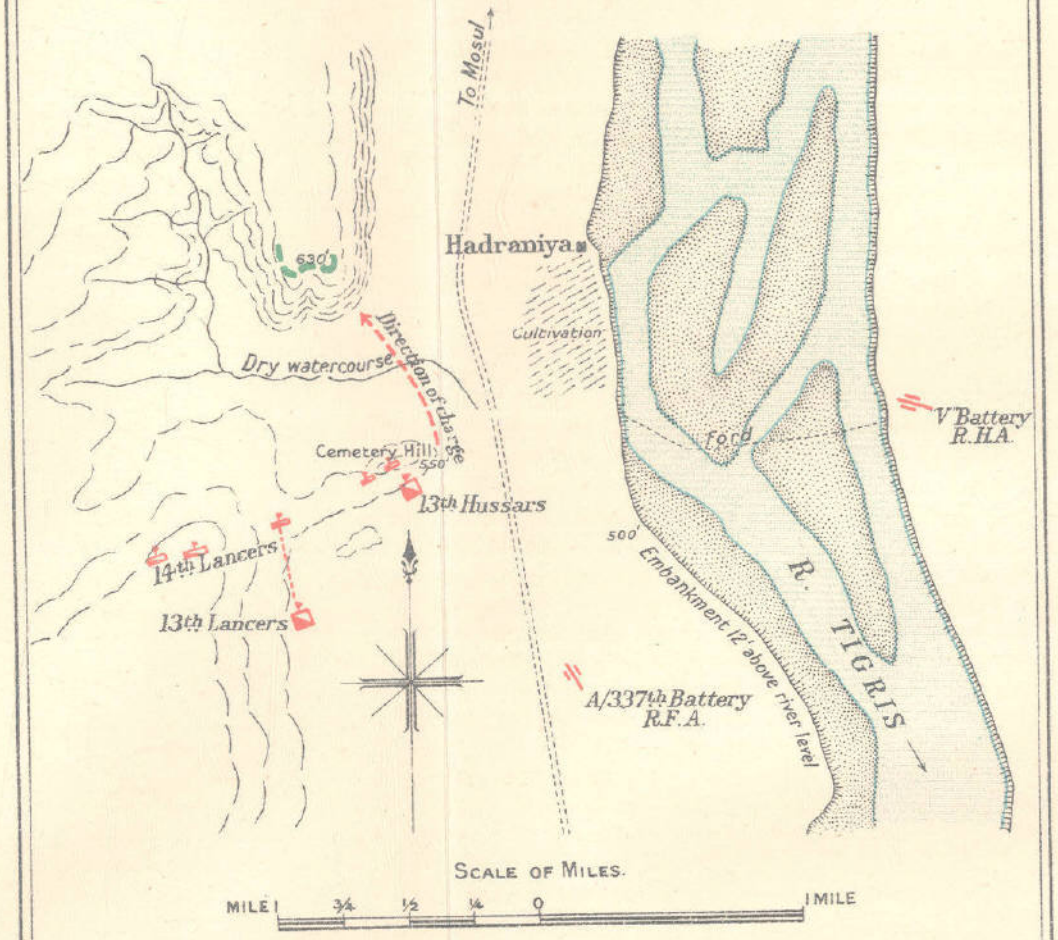
By midday the leading ranks of the Highland Light Infantry and 1/10th Gurkhas had gained positions within about four hundred yards of the enemy's trenches, but the greater part of these two battalions seem to have been about one thousand

* Under orders issued by General Cobbe at 8 a.m.
† Only one cable wagon had come up to the front and cable had to be laid by hand.

SKETCH MAP TO ILLUSTRATE ACTION BY 7TH CAVALRY BRIGADE NEAR HADRANIYA.

29th October, 1918.

Approximate British positions at 12.30 p.m. shown in Red.....
do. Turkish do. shown in Green.....



PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

yards further back. Their men had become somewhat scattered and they covered a frontage of about two miles, with a gap between the Highlanders and the Gurkhas and another gap further westward where the left company of the Gurkhas, in feeling for the enemy's right flank, had lost touch. The 14th Sikhs were about half a mile in rear of the Gurkha centre, the 45th Sikhs were near the road over a mile to the right rear of the Highland Light Infantry and the 34th Infantry Brigade was on the road half a mile in rear of the 45th Sikhs. The strength of the enemy force holding the trenches in front of the 17th Division was uncertain and it was not till later that it was estimated at about 4,000 infantry and six batteries of artillery.

General Leslie, the numbers of whose available attacking force amounted to about 3,000 rifles and 34 guns, decided to organise an assault on the enemy's left front on a frontage of eight hundred yards. The 45th Sikhs were to lead the attack, with their right on the edge of the plateau above the road, and were to pass through the Highland Light Infantry, with the 34th Infantry Brigade following them in support to confirm success. The eighteen field guns and howitzers were to bombard the frontage of assault from " zero " hour till the assaulting infantry were within one hundred yards of the position and were then to lift three hundred yards for three minutes, the signal for the " lift " being given by the discharge of rockets and by forward observation officers. The mountain guns were to bombard the portion of the enemy's line not being assaulted ; and the four heavy guns were to carry out counter-battery work. A message was also sent giving " zero " hour as 3.30 p.m. and asking for co-operation by the guns of the 18th Division on the Tigris left bank.

Ground reconnaissance and artillery registration took longer than had been anticipated, and eventually " zero " hour was fixed at 4 p.m. In regard to artillery registration, the forward observing officers found it difficult to discern the enemy's trenches clearly or to arrange communication back from the front ; no aeroplane was available till too late for observation work ; and there was a shortage of gun ammunition due, in the first place, to the transport difficulties. Further, apparently by an oversight, the fact that it had been found necessary to postpone " zero " hour from 3.30 p.m. to 4 p.m. was not communicated to the 18th Division. Consequently its guns and those with General Cassels stopped firing at 3.30 p.m.

During the early afternoon the 45th Sikhs and 34th Infantry Brigade, moving up on to the plateau, concentrated about a

mile south of the Highland Light Infantry with the field artillery in position to their rear and the mountain artillery about a mile to the west. At 4 p.m., when the artillery bombardment commenced, the 45th Sikhs started to advance, on a frontage of eight hundred yards, from a point about three thousand yards from the enemy's trenches. The 114th Mahrattas, on a frontage of five hundred yards, followed the Sikhs at a distance of about a thousand yards and in rear of the Mahrattas came the 112th Infantry, the 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment being kept back as Brigade Reserve. The strength of these four battalions were approximately :—45th Sikhs 530 rifles, 114th Mahrattas 520 rifles, 112th Infantry 350 rifles, and West Kents 300 rifles.

The Sikhs at once came under heavy shell fire, which, however, had little effect. At about 4.45 p.m., as they passed through the left of the Highland Light Infantry, the 45th came under machine gun fire also. Two ravines ran right across the front ; and while traversing the first of these the Sikhs lost direction by inclining too much to the left, arriving about 5 p.m. at the crest line on the north side of the first ravine, in front of the 1/10th Gurkha line and between it and some of the Gurkha patrols. The two leading companies 114th Mahrattas were close in rear of the 45th Sikhs, with the other two Mahratta companies some six hundred yards further back. Visibility was bad and much dust was flying about. As the Sikh line topped the crest our bombardment ceased, the enemy machine gun fire increased, some Very lights* were fired and suddenly about 1,000 Turkish infantry rose from their trenches and swept down on the Sikhs. The latter, widely extended, and the two leading Mahratta companies were driven back. But the two rear Mahratta companies stood firm and stopped the Turkish advance, which further westward had also been stopped by the 1/10th Gurkhas reinforced by the 14th Sikhs.

In the growing darkness there was considerable confusion, but the 114th Mahrattas, well handled by their commanding officer,† regained the crest line north of the ravine. In the meantime, the 112th Infantry, unable to see what had happened owing to the clouds of dust, had continued to advance and, passing to the left of the Mahrattas, pushed on under the impression that our first line was still in front of them. They encountered no opposition until they got near the second ravine,

* As these lights were not fired by our infantry they must have been fired by the enemy.

† Lieutenant-Colonel C. E. H. Wintle.

which was held by Turks. But these fled precipitately and the 112th, pushing on across the ravine, charged and captured some Turkish trenches about 350 yards north of the ravine, the enemy again retiring rapidly. It was by this time almost dark; the battalion found itself under hostile fire from three directions; and beyond a small party of 45th Sikhs which had joined in the last assault, there was no sign of any of the other infantry of the division. As a further advance was obviously out of the question, the 112th consolidated their position and took steps to get into touch with 34th Brigade headquarters and with the 114th Mahrattas to the right rear.

The various reports received by dark at 17th Division headquarters were conflicting and it was some time before anything definite concerning the situation could be learnt from the infantry brigade commanders, who took some time themselves before they could ascertain what had occurred. It was, however clear to General Leslie that the attack had not met with complete success. The field gun ammunition was practically exhausted and firing was still going on—in fact it continued throughout the night. About 6.30 p.m. orders were issued for the infantry to maintain the positions they had gained and to reorganise as soon as possible.

This reorganisation was gradually completed. The Highland Light Infantry, 14th Sikhs, 114th Mahrattas and 112th Infantry formed the first line, in this order from the right; the 2nd Royal West Kent Regiment and 1/10th Gurkhas formed supports in rear of the 114th Mahrattas and 112th Infantry respectively; and the 45th Sikhs provided the reserve behind the centre of the line.

Although the 17th Division had failed to capture the enemy's position, it had pinned him to his ground and had thus partly achieved its object. Its exhausted officers and men had responded finely to the call upon them and their casualties, amounting to about 500* out of 3,000 engaged, attest their gallantry.

Throughout the day General Cobbe had received but few situation reports from the 17th Division and had been mainly dependent on his air reports to keep him in general touch with the situation.

At daybreak on the 30th October, when white flags were seen to be flying all along the enemy's front opposite the

* 45th Sikhs 186, 114th Mahrattas 163, 1/10th Gurkhas 64, 112th Infantry 46, 14th Sikhs 27, Highland Light Infantry 23.

17th Division, the whole of the Turkish Tigris group surrendered, its commander, Ismail Hakki Bey, giving himself up to Lieutenant-Colonel Shoubridge, 112th Infantry, at 7.30 a.m.

Soon after 8 a.m. General Cassels, whose force was advancing southwards, learnt that the whole enemy force had surrendered and ordered the 7th Cavalry and Light Armoured Motor Brigade under General Norton to sweep northwards at once and capture any stray enemy bodies. This task these brigades proceeded to carry out with energy, dash and skill. They came upon an enemy detachment near Qaiyara, about sixteen miles north of Huwaish, where, by means of an encircling movement and a bold charge by the 14th Lancers, some 200 Turks, 10 machine guns and a camel gun were captured. Moving on again, a paddle steamer, much material and many stores were captured at Qaiyara. The 13th Lancers then sighted a convoy moving north. They galloped after it and captured about 1,000 men of the Turkish 14th Regiment. General Norton's force bivouacked for the night at Qaiyara, having suffered only seven casualties during the day.

Between the 18th and 30th October General Cobbe's force captured 11,322 prisoners, 51 guns and 130 machine guns, besides three steamers and much ammunition and other war material. The total British casualties during the same period were 1,886, of which 1,504 were incurred by the 17th Division.

Although the difficulties of supply of food, water and ammunition had proved to be very much greater than had been anticipated and although some temporary deviations from his plan had occurred, General Cobbe's hopes of destroying the greater part of the Turkish forces covering Mosul had been fulfilled in the most striking manner. The Turks had been outmanœuvred and surrounded, with the result that their Sixth Army had almost ceased to exist. In fact, but for the armistice, its remnants must soon either have surrendered or retreated, for they could not have hoped to hold Mosul.

The daring and brilliant leadership of Generals Cassels and Norton and the gallantry in action of their brigades; the excellent work of the armoured cars; the fine marching and skilful co-operation of General Fanshawe's division; the dogged endurance and courage of General Leslie's men; the energy and resource of the staff and adminstrative services, hampered throughout by the shortage of transport, the bad roads, and the distance from railhead; all had contributed to the complete success which had been gained.

Ismail Hakki Bey gave the following information after his surrender. His orders had been to resist the British advance and to fall back if compelled to do so, but not to retire north of Sharqat before the 31st October. His own original intention had been to withdraw gradually without getting his force seriously involved to Qaiyara, where he would be nearer his base and where our numbers would have been reduced by the extension of our communications. He would thus be in a more favourable position to offer battle.

On the 25th October he heard that the 5th Division, on its way to reinforce him, should reach Sharqat on the 26th evening or 27th morning. But after General Cassels got astride his line of communication he received practically no news. The German wireless station had recently left him for Mosul; the only two aeroplanes remaining were declared by their German pilots to be incapable of taking the air; and he had only a handful of cavalry. Thus his means of communication and of obtaining information were greatly restricted.

The heavy firing to the north on the 29th October led him to send out officers to try and establish touch with what was evidently the 5th Division engaged with our cavalry. But although these officers failed to get through, his hopes of the 5th Division breaking through General Cassels led him to abandon the idea he had formed of marching westward into the desert on the night 29th/30th to try and reach the Tigris again about Qaiyara. By the 30th morning, however, he realised that there was no hope and he surrendered.

Immediately after the surrender, General Cobbe, under instructions from General Marshall, took steps to exploit his victory to the full by pushing forward two cavalry brigades, supported by an infantry brigade group, to complete the destruction of the Turkish Sixth Army and to occupy Mosul. This force* was placed under the command of General Fanshawe.

Owing, however, to supply difficulties the infantry brigade group could not move forward at once. General Cassels with the 7th and 11th Cavalry and the Light Armoured Motor Brigades was, therefore, ordered to push on as soon as possible, feeding on the country, while General Fanshawe with the

* 7th and 11th Cavalry Brigades; Light Armoured Motor Brigade; one squadron 32nd Lancers; A/337th and C/336th Field Batteries; one section 2/86th Heavy Battery; 54th Infantry Brigade; No. 8 Company Sappers and Miners (less two sections); a motor W/T Station and No. 40 Combined Field Ambulance (less one section).

remainder of his force was directed to advance from Qaiyara on the 2nd November.

A portion of the Turkish 2nd and 5th Divisions had already been captured and it was estimated that, including the remainder of these divisions, the following Turkish forces were at, or on their way back to, Mosul:—At Mosul about 170 sabres, 1,650 rifles and 32 guns, and on the way there from Altun Köpri about 130 sabres, 1,500 rifles and 12 guns. To delay the movement of the latter body, one squadron 32nd Lancers pushed up the left bank of the Tigris early on the 31st October to destroy the bridge over the Great Zab at Quwair,* where the Altun Köpri-Mosul road crossed that river. But on arrival there about midday the 32nd Lancers found that they were unable to effect their object as the bridge was defended by about 400 infantry with 8 guns. They, therefore, returned having taken 10 prisoners and having incurred a few casualties. Early that day General Lewin's column occupied Altun Köpri without opposition.

General Cassels had to get his transport across the Tigris at the Hadraniya ford and some necessary stores across the Huwaish ferry. This and other arrangements for the move on Mosul took a little time, so that it was not till the evening of the 31st October that the 7th and 11th Cavalry and the Light Armoured Motor Brigades were concentrated at Qaiyara. Advancing on the 1st November, General Cassels' advanced troops were met in the morning at Hammam Ali, twelve miles south of Mosul, by a flag of truce sent by Ali Ihsan Pasha, commanding the Turkish Sixth Army, with a letter to General Marshall regarding armistice negotiations; and General Cassels was told by the Turkish officers that the armistice had become operative at noon on the 31st October.

At 2.30 p.m., as General Cassels' force was settling down to bivouac at Hammam Ali, he received a message (dropped by aeroplane) from 1st Corps Headquarters to say that an armistice had been signed with the Turks, with effect from noon on the 31st October, and that hostilities were to cease.

* Seven miles above the Tigris junction.

CHAPTER XLVI.

CONCLUSION.

THE terms of the Armistice, which had been drawn out from a purely naval and military point of view and were not intended to bear any relation to the territorial settlement to be imposed by the Allies at the Peace Conference, were as follows :

"CONDITIONS OF AN ARMISTICE AGREED TO AND CONCLUDED BETWEEN

Vice-Admiral The Honourable Sir SOMERSET ARTHUR GOUGH-CALTHORPE, British Commander-in-Chief of the Mediterranean Station, acting under authority from the British Government, in agreement with their Allies,

AND

His Excellency RAOUF BEY, Turkish Minister of Marine,
His Excellency RECHAD HIKMET BEY, Turkish Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs,
Lieutenant-Colonel SAADULLAH BEY, Turkish General Staff, acting under authority from the Turkish Government.

ONE.—Opening of Dardanelles and Bosphorus and secure access to the Black Sea.

Allied occupation of Dardanelles and Bosphorus forts.

TWO.—Positions of all minefields, torpedo tubes and other obstructions in Turkish waters to be indicated and assistance given to sweep or remove them as may be required.

THREE.—All available information as to mines in the Black Sea to be communicated.

FOUR.—All Allied prisoners of war and Armenian interned persons and prisoners to be collected in Constantinople and handed over unconditionally to the Allies.

FIVE.—Immediate demobilisation of the Turkish army except for such troops as are required for surveillance of frontiers and for the maintenance of internal order. (Number of effectives and their disposition to be determined later by the Allies after consultation with the Turkish Government).

SIX.—Surrender of all war vessels in Turkish waters or in waters occupied by Turkey ; these ships to be interned at such Turkish port or ports as may be directed, except such small

vessels as are required for police or similar purposes in Turkish territorial waters.

SEVEN.—The Allies to have the right to occupy any strategical points in the event of a situation arising which threatens the security of the Allies.

EIGHT.—Free use by the Allied ships of all ports and anchorages now in Turkish occupation and denial of their use by the enemy. Similar conditions to apply to Turkish mercantile shipping in Turkish waters for purposes of trade and the demobilisation of the army.

NINE.—Use of all ship repair facilities at all Turkish ports and arsenals.

TEN.—Allied occupation of the Taurus tunnel system.

ELEVEN.—Immediate withdrawal of Turkish troops from North-West Persia to behind the pre-war frontier has already been ordered and will be carried out.

Part of Trans-Caucasia has already been ordered to be evacuated by Turkish troops, the remainder to be evacuated if required by the Allies after they have studied the situation there.

TWELVE.—Wireless telegraphy and cable stations to be controlled by the Allies, Turkish Government messages excepted.

THIRTEEN.—Prohibition to destroy any naval, military, or commercial material.

FOURTEEN.—Facilities to be given for the purchase of coal and oil fuel and naval material from Turkish sources after the requirements of the country have been met.

None of the above material to be exported.

FIFTEEN.—Allied control officers to be placed on all railways, including such portions of Trans-Caucasian railways now under Turkish control, which must be placed at the free and complete disposal of the Allied authorities, due consideration being given to the needs of the population.

This clause to include Allied occupation of Batum. Turkey will raise no objection to the occupation of Baku by the Allies.

SIXTEEN.—Surrender of all garrisons in Hejaz, Asir, Yemen, Syria, and Mesopotamia to the nearest Allied Commander ; and the withdrawal of troops from Cilicia, except those necessary to maintain order, as will be determined under clause Five.

SEVENTEEN.—Surrender of all Turkish officers in Tripolitania and Cyrenaica to the nearest Italian garrison. Turkey guarantees to stop supplies and communications with these officers if they do not obey the order to surrender.

EIGHTEEN.—Surrender of all ports occupied in Tripolitania and Cyrenaica, including Misurata, to the nearest Allied garrison.

NINETEEN.—All Germans and Austrians, naval, military and civilian, to be evacuated within one month from Turkish dominions: those in remote districts as soon after as may be possible.

TWENTY.—Compliance with such orders as may be conveyed for the disposal of the equipment, arms and ammunition, including transport, of that portion of the Turkish army which is demobilised under clause Five.

TWENTY-ONE.—An Allied representative to be attached to the Turkish Ministry of Supplies in order to safeguard Allied interests. This representative to be furnished with all information necessary for this purpose.

TWENTY-TWO.—Turkish prisoners to be kept at the disposal of the Allied Powers. The release of Turkish civilian prisoners and prisoners over military age to be considered.

TWENTY-THREE.—Obligation on the part of Turkey to cease all relations with the Central Powers.

TWENTY-FOUR.—In the case of disorder in the six Armenian *vilayets* the Allies reserve to themselves the right to occupy any part of them.

TWENTY-FIVE.—Hostilities between the Allies and Turkey shall cease from noon, local time, on Thursday, 31st October, 1918.

Signed in duplicate on board His Britannic Majesty's Ship "AGAMEMNON" at Port Mudros, Lemnos, the 30th October, 1918.

(*Signed*) ARTHUR CALTHORPE.
HUSSEIN RAOUF.
RECHAD HIKMET.
SAADULLAH."

Intimation that an armistice had been signed was received by General Marshall from the War Office on the 1st November, but the detailed terms were not received by him till next day. In the meantime, however, reports had reached him that the Turkish troops were evacuating Mosul and that, in consequence, there was a danger of the lawless elements there creating trouble. He, therefore, sent orders for General Cassels to push on at once to Mosul in the interests of law and order.

This order reached General Cassels just before midnight 1st/2nd November. On the previous afternoon he had received from the commander of the Turkish 5th Division a letter requesting him to return with his force to Qaiyara, the point which it had reached at noon on the 31st October. General Cassels immediately went forward in a car to see this Turkish officer and found him with a force of about one infantry regiment and a few guns in a position astride the road some five miles south of Mosul. General Cassels explained that he had only just heard of the armistice and could not withdraw from Hammam Ali. When he returned to Hammam Ali at 6 p.m. he reported what had occurred and added that he did not see his way to advancing on Mosul without fighting. About two and a half hours later Colonel Leachman, the political officer who had accompanied the bearers of the letter from Ali Ihsan Pasha to General Fanshawe's headquarters, returned and handed General Cassels orders from General Fanshawe that he was to remain at Hammam Ali until further orders and that Colonel Leachman was to proceed to Mosul to interview Ali Ihsan and was to report the result as soon as possible. As the order from General Headquarters to push on to Mosul had obviously been despatched before General Cassels' report sent at 6 p.m. had been received, he asked at 1.35 a.m. on the 2nd for confirmation. This he received at 9.45 a.m., with a modification indicating that the location of our troops near Mosul would suffice.

In the meantime Colonel Leachman had left at 6.30 a.m. for Mosul, with a letter to Ali Ihsan in which General Cassels said that he had orders to advance and occupy Mosul, that he intended to move at noon and hoped to avoid all conflict with Turkish troops. He also requested Ali Ihsan to withdraw his troops at least five miles clear of Mosul, leaving only sufficient guards in the town to prevent disorder till they could be relieved. Colonel Leachman arrived back at 11.50 a.m. and said that, although Ali Ihsan had no intention of evacuating Mosul, he did not intend to fight and had no objection to General Cassels' force advancing to the hills, south of and commanding Mosul, which hills he would evacuate.

Preceding his advancing force, General Cassels left at once to interview Ali Ihsan, as the result of which he sent off the following report at 5 p.m.

"Have just returned after concluding, with Ali Ihsan, an arrangement which under circumstances prevailing

this morning is satisfactory from every point of view. I am to advance to a line mutually agreed upon within about two miles of Mosul, which Turks will continue to occupy for the present giving us every facility towards ensuring maintenance of law and order which at present is quite satisfactory. In addition have made preliminary arrangements for purchase from Turks direct of supplies to meet our requirements as far as available. To-night I hold hills commanding Mosul and plain in which it lies and will take up forward line to-morrow. Interview throughout most friendly."

The situation was, however, altered by the receipt of the following order from General Marshall.

"Under Clause 7 of Armistice conditions, which follow this telegram, Allies have right to occupy any strategical points and War Office have ordered the occupation of Mosul.* This order should be carried out and not limited to location of troops near Mosul as laid down in my former order. Please also note that Clause 16 orders surrender of all garrisons in Mesopotamia to nearest Allied commander."

General Cassels accordingly issued orders for an advance on Mosul next day and for its occupation. In view of the change in the situation, General Cassels went ahead of his troops early next morning to see Ali Ihsan again. At noon he reported that he was at Mosul with his headquarters and that his troops occupied tactical points surrounding the city and all the main approaches. General Cassels foresaw delay in obtaining literal compliance with Clauses 7 and 16 of the Armistice terms, which Ali Ihsan said he had not yet received. General Cassels also said that relations with Ali Ihsan, in whom he had complete trust, were perfectly friendly and there seemed to be no reason for undue haste.

General Cobbe arrived at Mosul by aeroplane at 1.30 p.m. and paid a visit to Ali Ihsan, giving him General Marshall's reply to his letter of the 1st November. In his letter General Marshall made it quite clear that Clauses 7 and 16 of the Armistice terms were to be complied with. But Ali Ihsan replied that he was unable to do so till he received orders to that effect from his own Government.

* This order and the Armistice terms were sent by the War Office on 31st October but did not reach Baghdad till 2nd November.

At 6.30 p.m. Ali Ihsan visited General Cassels and said that he had just received the terms of the Armistice from his Government, from whom he must receive definite orders that Mosul was included under Clause 7: further that, although Clauses 5 and 20 applied to his force, which was a field army and not a garrison, Clause 16 did not apply. A few hours later General Cassels received a message sent by General Headquarters saying that as conditions in Mosul were satisfactory General Marshall agreed that there was no necessity for undue haste in making the Turks comply with the terms of the Armistice of which they were apparently ignorant. The War Office was being requested to have the full details sent to the Turks at once, especially as regarded Clause 16 and the surrender of Mosul, about which the War Office instructions were perfectly clear and were as stated in General Marshall's letter to Ali Ihsan.

General Fanshawe arrived at Mosul early on the 4th November and took over command from General Cassels. Meanwhile Admiral Calthorpe (Naval Commander-in-Chief, Mediterranean) had telegraphed to London that the Turkish Government objected to our occupation of Mosul under Clauses 7 and 16 of the Armistice terms. On the 6th November he received orders from the Admiralty to request the Turkish Government to issue orders to Ali Ihsan to evacuate Mosul under Clause 7. Further, though under Clause 16 Ali Ihsan should undoubtedly surrender with his garrison, H.M. Government was prepared to concede this point provided he handed over his arms under Clause 20 and removed his force to such place as General Marshall might direct. As regards Clause 5, continued the telegram, it was not considered necessary that any Turkish troops should be present, for maintenance of internal order, in the Mosul *vilayet* or where General Marshall did not require them. Admiral Calthorpe was to point out to the Turkish Government that failure to comply, within such period as might be specified by General Marshall, would involve the seizure of Mosul by our arms.

This telegram was repeated to General Marshall, but did not reach him till the 8th November. He had reached Mosul on the 7th and had at once given Ali Ihsan instructions for the complete evacuation by his troops of the Mosul *vilayet*. The withdrawal was to commence on the 8th and the *vilayet* of Mosul was to be clear of Turkish troops by the 15th. Units and formations would be allowed to take their arms, equipment

and ammunition with them,* but all arms and war material in depots and magazines were to be handed over to General Fanshawe. There were also detailed instructions on other necessary points. Ali Ihsan, who said that he had not received instructions from his Government, agreed to carry out these orders under protest.

On the 9th November Admiral Calthorpe telegraphed to the Admiralty that the Turkish Government had ordered their commandant at Mosul to evacuate the town, hand over his arms and remove his troops to such place as the British General might direct. With these orders the commandant at Mosul† complied and our troops took over the entire occupation of Mosul on the 10th November, the Turkish troops withdrawing to Nisibin for disbandment.

Clause 4 of the Armistice terms stipulated for the collection of all British prisoners of war at Constantinople. But, for the majority of the prisoners, who were working in the Taurus and Amanus mountains or on the Baghdad railway line east of the Euphrates, this would have involved considerable hardship and delay. Consequently Generals Allenby and Marshall considered it unnecessary to adhere strictly to this Clause. On the 1st November Lieutenant-Colonel E. H. Keeling, who had been taken prisoner as one of the Kut garrison and who had escaped from Kastamuni, left Baghdad with orders to visit the camps in Upper Mesopotamia and arrange for the evacuation of our men by whatever route seemed best.‡

During October there had been few incidents of importance elsewhere in Mesopotamia. The Turkish detachment on the Euphrates withdrew towards Aleppo during the latter half of the month and at the end of October our troops advanced, occupying Ana without opposition by the 1st November.

Details of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 19th October, 1918, are given in Appendix XLVI. From this it will be seen how much the size of the force had expanded, especially in the matter of administrative units. Its total ration strength, excluding enemy prisoners of war, was over 414,000, of which about 217,000 were officers and other ranks in combatant and administrative units, while the balance were "followers." Only about 112,000, however, were "fighting troops," i.e., a little over a quarter of the total ration strength.

* Local conditions rendered this necessary.

† Ali Ihsan had resigned his command and gone to Nisibin.

‡ An interesting account of Colonel Keeling's experiences in carrying out these orders is given in his book "Adventures in Turkey and Russia."

Of the followers over 71,000 were in Labour Corps and about 42,000 were employed by the Inland Water Transport. The majority of the followers were Indians, and the number of men locally recruited amounted to between 30,000 and 40,000, while there were nearly 6,000 Chinese, over 1,000 men from Mauritius and 300 from the West Indies.

Before concluding this narrative, a brief reference to events during October, 1918, in Persia and Trans-Caspia is necessary. In North-West Persia, the frequent reconnaissances on the Kazvin-Mianeh line, which were undertaken by our aeroplanes and armoured cars, ascertained that the Turks were withdrawing from the Kuflan Kuh. Our troops, however, at this time were suffering considerably from an epidemic of influenza; and owing to this and to the difficulty of maintenance, it was decided not to pursue the Turks. On the Bijar line the Turkish troops in contact with ours began to withdraw early in October and here also influenza prevented the maintenance of a British advance. On the Sehneh line the Turks were found to have withdrawn to Saqqiz.

Our measures to gain control of the Caspian had progressed satisfactorily. We established naval fitting-out and repairing bases at Enzeli and Krasnovodsk; and by the end of the month we had five small armed ships available for service. These were commanded by British officers assisted by British ratings, but the sailing masters, mates, boatswains, quartermasters and engine room complement were almost entirely Russian; and the ships flew the old Russian naval ensign.

During October, Captain Washington, R.N., who succeeded Commodore Norris incapacitated by an accident, reported that he would be ready at the beginning of November to secure complete control of the Caspian. On the 2nd November, however, he received a telegram, sent on the 29th October by the Admiralty, saying that our object was to retain such control of the Caspian as would enable us to prevent any communication by water between its shores by forces hostile to us and to help any forces friendly to us.

After the armistice with Turkey General Marshall was instructed by the War Office to occupy Baku. It was the policy of H.M. Government, he was told, to police the area between the Caspian and the Black Sea in such a way as to maintain order and enforce the terms of the Armistice, pending the final settlement at the Peace Conference of the various territorial questions involved.

For some weeks past it had appeared as if the Turks, in their attempts to restore Azerbaijan to the territorial unity it possessed before Russia annexed the northern portion in 1828 and to attach it to Turkey, were placing Turkish officers in command of the local forces with the object of posing as subjects of the new State and of remaining in Azerbaijan when the Turkish forces withdrew.* Our suspicions in regard to Turkish intentions were fully confirmed when, on the 1st November, Nuri Pasha changed his title of General Officer Commanding Caucasus Islam Army to that of Commander-in-Chief Azerbaijan Army and at the same time announced that all the ranks of the Turkish Army in Azerbaijan would be regarded as in the service of that republic and no longer in the service of Turkey. Under this pretext of a separate state, the Turkish and local forces also continued hostilities against Bicharakoff at Petrovsk.

Nuri Pasha, when informed of our intention to occupy Baku, at first tried to confuse the issue by referring us to the Azerbaijan Republic. But his evasions were useless and on the 16th November arrangements were made by General Thomson at Enzeli with representatives from Baku for the evacuation of the Turks, the withdrawal of the local forces and the occupation of the town on the 17th by a combined force of British and Russians. Captain Washington with his five ships had reached Petrovsk on the 6th November with a letter informing Bicharakoff of our intention to occupy Baku and requesting his co-operation, which was desirable to avoid any risk of mistrust in regard to our intentions on the part of the local inhabitants. Bicharakoff agreed and reached Enzeli with his troops and three gunboats on the 12th November. On the 17th he and his force accompanied General Thomson with part of the North Persia Force and the British armed flotilla to Baku.

The British and Indian troops in North Persia had been set a difficult and a thankless task. But they had carried it out in a manner worthy of their best traditions, and their discipline and behaviour had so favourably impressed the Persians that it brought about among them a considerable reaction of feeling in our favour. Their presence consequently did much to restore British prestige in the country and thus proved of considerable value to Sir Percy Cox and his diplomatic and political assistants.

* On the 16th October H.M. Government gave the Persian Government an assurance that they would not entertain any proposal that the Turks might make regarding the cession of any part of Persian Azerbaijan.

In Trans-Caspia, the local force in co-operation with the small Indian contingent undertook an offensive against the Bolsheviks in October. On the 14th the Bolshevik position at Dushak was captured with considerable loss to the enemy, mainly owing to the gallantry of the 19th Punjabis. The enemy fled, pursued by the 28th Light Cavalry, while the greater part of the Trans-Caspian force dispersed to plunder. At this stage the enemy, reinforced, made a vigorous counter-attack, which the Trans-Caspian force was in no condition or was unwilling to face. As a result the Indian troops had also to retire. The 19th Punjabis incurred 186 casualties, including all their British officers, and the 28th Light Cavalry 17 casualties.* But the Bolsheviks, whose casualties were estimated at about 1,000, were evidently much disheartened, as they began to retire four days later, followed up by the Trans-Caspian force and the Indian contingent, which occupied Merv on the 1st November.

In South Persia, where the situation had improved since July, it was found necessary in October to despatch, from Shiraz, a column of some 1,400 Indian troops under Colonel Orton to deal with the chief leader of disaffection, who had again managed to collect a considerable following. On the 23rd and 24th October a sharp action ensued, about seventy miles south of Shiraz, which had most successful and decisive results. In the meantime the preparations for opening up the trade route between Bushire and Shiraz, by operations from the former place, had been delayed by a severe outbreak of influenza among the British force.

The total British casualties during the campaign in Mesopotamia amounted to 92,501. Of these 14,814 were killed or died of wounds, 12,807 died of disease, 51,386 were wounded and 13,494 were taken prisoner or were missing.

Of the Turkish casualties we have no accurate knowledge, though they are believed to have totalled at least double the British casualties; and our actual captures amounted to 45,500 officers and men, 250 guns and immense quantities of war material of all descriptions.

In concluding this account of the campaign it is necessary to point out that, although little has been said in these pages of the work of the administrative units, the results achieved were not due solely to the skill, leadership, gallantry and endurance of the fighting troops. The officers and men of the

* The total strength of the 19th was about 500 rifles and that of the 28th Light Cavalry two weak squadrons.

different administrative services and departments had many and constant problems to solve and great difficulties to overcome, to enable them to provide the fighting troops with all the varied requirements of a modern army. Separate official histories have been published describing the work of the Medical and Veterinary services. But there were other services and departments, whose hard, patient and devoted work deserves full recognition as contributing in no small degree to our success; and there were also the political officers, whose able and sympathetic administration of the occupied territories, with their turbulent populations, did so much towards maintaining the security of our long line of communications.

APPENDIX XL.

Distribution of the troops of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 27th May, 1917.

TIGRIS FRONT.

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS.—BAGHDAD.

Cavalry Division. (Tigris left bank, close to the north of Baghdad.)

6th Cavalry Brigade.	14th Hussars. 21st Cavalry. (At Samarra, temporarily attached to Ist Corps.) 22nd Cavalry. 15th Machine Gun Squadron. 6th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop. 6th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
7th Cavalry Brigade.	13th Hussars. 13th Lancers. 14th Lancers. (At Diltawa, temporarily attached to IIIrd Corps.) 16th Machine Gun Squadron. 7th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop. 7th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
Divisional Troops.	"S" and "V" Batteries, R.H.A.=12 guns. Cavalry Division Ammunition Column. Field Troop, R.E., and Field Troop, 2nd Sappers and Miners. Signal Squadron. (Provisional.) One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron. Cavalry Division Supply Column. Nos. 119 and 131 Combined Cavalry Field Ambulances. No. 30 Sanitary Section. Nos. 4 and 5 Mobile Veterinary Sections.

IST CORPS. Headquarters.—Baghdad.

3rd Division. (Headquarters.—Tigris right bank, just south of Baghdad.)

7th Infantry Brigade.	1st Connaught Rangers. 27th Punjabis. 91st Punjabis. 2/7th Gurkhas. No. 131 Machine Gun Company. 7th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.	Falluja, *less* 91st Punjabis at Bustan and three companies 27th Punjabis in posts at Nukhta, Mufraz and Radwaniya respectively.

8th Infantry Brigade.	1st Manchester Regiment. 47th Sikhs. 59th Rifles. 2/124th Baluchistan Infantry. No. 132 Machine Gun Company. 8th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.	Tigris right bank, on railway line of communication southward from Samarra station as far as Sumaika. Brigade headquarters at Balad.
9th Infantry Brigade.	2nd Dorsetshire Regiment. 93rd Infantry 105th Mahrattas. 1/1st Gurkhas. No. 133 Machine Gun Company. 9th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.	Tigris right bank, on railway line of communication south of Sumaika and in area just south-west of Baghdad. Two companies at Musaiyib (on Euphrates). Brigade headquarters near Kadhimain.
Artillery.	4th Brigade, R.F.A. (7th, 14th and 66th Batteries)=18 guns.	Balad, *less* 66th Battery at Falluja and Bustan.
	215th Brigade, R.F.A. (A and B Batteries)=8 guns.	Near Divisional Headquarters.
	524th Howitzer Battery, R.F.A. =4 guns.	One section, Balad; one section, Falluja.
	B/69th Howitzer Battery, R.F.A. =4 guns.	Balad.
	Three small arm ammunition sections.	
Engineers and Pioneers.	18th Company, Sappers and Miners.	Near Kadhimain.
	20th Company, Sappers and Miners.	With 8th Brigade, in Balad area.
	21st Company, Sappers and Miners.	Falluja and Bustan.
	34th Sikh Pioneers	Near Divisional Headquarters, *less* one company with 7th Division at Samarra.

3rd Divisional Signal Company.
3rd Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
3rd Division Supply Column.
Nos. 110, 111, 112, 113 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 11 Sanitary Section.
No. 3 Mobile Veterinary Section.

7th Division.—On Tigris right bank, north of Samarra station (except where otherwise stated).

19th Infantry Brigade.	1st Seaforth Highlanders. 28th Punjabis. 92nd Punjabis. 125th Rifles. No. 134 Machine Gun Company. 19th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
21st Infantry Brigade.	2nd Black Watch.—Samarra, on Tigris left bank. Guides Infantry. 20th Punjabis. 1/8th Gurkhas.—Samarra, on Tigris left bank. No. 135 Machine Gun Company. 21st Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

28th Infantry Brigade.	2nd Leicestershire Regiment. 51st Sikhs. 53rd Sikhs. 56th Rifles. No. 136 Machine Gun Company. 28th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
Artillery.	9th Brigade, R.F.A. (19th, 20th and 28th Batteries)=18 guns. 56th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and D Batteries) = 16 guns. D/69 Howitzer Battery, R.F.A. = 4 guns. Three small arm ammunition sections.
Engineers and Pioneers.	1st, 3rd and 4th Companies, Sappers and Miners. 121st Pioneers.

7th Divisional Signal Company.
7th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
7th Division Supply Column.
Nos. 127, 128, 129, 130 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 12 Sanitary Section.
No. 2 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Corps Troops.

32nd Lancers (less two squadrons) ..	One squadron, Samarra; one squadron, Falluja.
2/86th Battery, R.G.A. (60-pounders)=4 guns.	With 7th Division.
157th Battery, R.G.A. (60-pounders)=4 guns. No. 789 Mechanical Transport Company, A.S.C. (Caterpillar tractors.) 159th Siege Battery, R.G.A. (6-inch howitzers) = 4 guns. No. 788 Mechanical Transport Company, A.S.C. (Caterpillar tractors.)	At Shumran.
Nos. 133, 134, 135 Trench Mortar Batteries..	At Kut.
No. 59 Anti-aircraft Section	Baghdad area.
No. 93 Anti-aircraft Section	Samarra, with 7th Division.
No. 208 Anti-aircraft Section	Shumran.

1st Corps Signal Company.
No. 1 Printing Section.
No. 1 Lithograph Section.

Attached.	Half section, Field Searchlight Company. Three pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron. One wagon station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron. No. 3 Combined Field Ambulance. (Convalescent Depot.)

III[RD] CORPS. Headquarters.—Baghdad.

On Tigris left bank, north of Baghdad, in area bounded on north by the line Baquba–Sindiya and on east and west by Diyala and Tigris rivers. The 36th Brigade formed the garrison of Baghdad city.

13th Division.—Headquarters at Sindiya.

38th Infantry Brigade.	6th King's Own Royal Regiment (Lancaster). 6th East Lancashire Regiment. 6th Prince of Wales's Volunteers (South Lancashire) 6th Loyal Regiment (North Lancashire). No. 38 Machine Gun Company. 38th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

39th Infantry Brigade.
- 9th Royal Warwickshire Regiment.
- 7th Gloucestershire Regiment.
- 9th Worcestershire Regiment.
- 7th North Staffordshire Regiment.
- No. 39 Machine Gun Company.
- 39th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

40th Infantry Brigade.
- 8th Cheshire Regiment.
- 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers.
- 4th South Wales Borderers.
- 5th Wiltshire Regiment.
- No. 40 Machine Gun Company.
- 40th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

"D" Squadron, 1/1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry.
13th Divisional Cyclist Company.

Artillery.
- 55th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and D Batteries) = 16 guns.
- 66th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and D Batteries) = 16 guns.
- A/69th Howitzer Battery, R.F.A. = 4 guns.
- 72nd Howitzer Battery, R.G.A. = 4 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 71st, 72nd and 88th Field Companies, R.E.
- 8th Welch Regiment (Pioneers).

13th Divisional Signal Company.
13th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
10th Field Bakery.
31st Field Butchery.
13th Division Supply Column.
39th, 40th and 41st British Field Ambulances.
No. 28 Sanitary Section.
No. 24 Mobile Veterinary Section.

14th Division.—Headquarters at Baquba.

35th Infantry Brigade.
- 1/5th Buffs (East Kent Regiment).
- 37th Dogras.
- 102nd Grenadiers.
- 2/4th Gurkhas.
- No. 185 Machine Gun Company.
- 35th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

36th Infantry Brigade. (Garrison of Baghdad city.)
- 1/4th Hampshire Regiment.
- 26th Punjabis.
- 62nd Punjabis.
- 82nd Punjabis.
- No. 186 Machine Gun Company.
- 36th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

37th Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Norfolk Regiment.
- 67th Punjabis.
- 1/2nd Gurkhas.
- 2/9th Gurkhas.
- No. 187 Machine Gun Company.
- 37th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Artillery.
- 13th Brigade, R.F.A. (2nd, 8th and 44th Batteries) = 18 guns.
- C/69th Howitzer Battery, R.F.A. = 4 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 12th, 13th and 15th Companies, Sappers and Miners.
- 128th Pioneers. (Temporarily on Tigris right bank, with 3rd Division.)

14th Divisional Signal Company.
14th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
14th Division Supply Column.
Nos. 20, 21, 22, 135 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 13 Sanitary Section.
No. 1 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Corps Troops.
Two squadrons, 32nd Lancers.
No. 134 Howitzer Brigade, R.F.A. (60th and 61st Batteries) = 12 guns.
2/104th Battery, R.G.A. (60-pounders) = 4 guns.
Nos. 136, 137, 138 Trench Mortar Batteries.—At Kut.
Nos. 80 and 92 Anti-aircraft Sections.
IIIrd Corps Signal Company.
No. 2 Printing Section.
No. 2 Lithograph Section.

Attached. (Convalescent Depot.)
- Two pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- No. 20 British Field Ambulance.
- Three sections, No. 1 Indian Field Ambulance.

ARMY TROOPS.—In Baghdad area, except where otherwise stated.
No. 14 Kite Balloon Section, R.N.A.S.—Basra.
No. 30 Squadron, Royal Flying Corps.
Independent Divisional Ammunition Column.
No. 1 Bridging Train.
No. 2 (Mobile) Bridging Train.—Samarra.
Malerkotla Sappers and Miners Company.
Tehri-Gahrwal Sappers and Miners Company.
One section, Field Searchlight Company.
Army Signal Company.
Headquarters 1st (Anzac) Wireless Signal Squadron, with one wagon station. (One wagon station was temporarily with the Russians at Qasr-i-Shirin.)
"A," "B," "C," "D," "E," "F," "G," "H," "I," "J," Stokes Mortar Batteries.—At Kut.
No. 13 Light Armoured Motor Battery.—At Samarra.
No. 14 Light Armoured Motor Battery.
32nd Sikh Pioneers.—*En route* from Basra.
64th Pioneers.
Army Troops Supply and Transport Company.
4th, 5th and 6th Camel Corps.
No. 33 Motor Ambulance Convoy (with transport of No. 773 Mechanical Transport Company, A.S.C.).
Nos. 783 and 784 Mechanical Transport Companies, A.S.C. (Ford vans).

15th Division.—Assembling on Tigris Front.

Headquarters.—Qarada camp, on Tigris left bank about three miles south of Baghdad.

42nd Infantry Brigade. (Qarada camp.)
- 1/4th Dorsetshire Regiment.
- 1/5th Gurkhas.
- 2/5th Gurkhas.
- 2/6th Gurkhas.
- No. 130 Machine Gun Company.
- 42nd Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Qarada camp.
- One squadron, 12th Cavalry.
- Headquarters Divisional Artillery.
- 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. ("A" Battery) = 4 guns.
- Headquarters Divisional Engineers.
- No. 8 Lithograph Section (attached).
- 15th Divisional Signal Company (less two sections).
- 15th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company (less detachments).
- 15th Division Supply Column.
- Half No. 23 and No. 105 Combined Field Ambulances.
- No. 16 Sanitary Section.
- No. 6 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Amara, *en route* to Tigris front.
- 34th Infantry Brigade:
  - Brigade headquarters.
  - 31st Punjabis.
  - 112th Infantry.
  - 114th Mahrattas.
  - No. 129 Machine Gun Company.
  - 34th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
- 12th Cavalry (less three squadrons).
- C/222nd Battery, R.F.A. = 4 guns.
- Divisional Ammunition Column.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.
- 2/39th Gahrwalis (12th Infantry Brigade).
- One section, 15th Divisional Signal Company.
- Detachment 15th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
- Half No. 23 and No. 19 Combined Field Ambulances.

Basra, *en route* to Tigris Front.
- 448th, 450th and 451st Field Companies, R.E.
- 48th Pioneers.
- 12th Infantry Brigade:
  - 1/5th Queen's Royal Regiment (West Surrey).
  - 43rd Erinpura Regiment.
  - 90th Punjabis.
  - No. 128 Machine Gun Company.
  - 12th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Nasiriya, under orders for Tigris Front.
- 2nd Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment (34th Brigade).
- Detachments, 15th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
- Detachments, 15th Division Supply Column.
- No. 108 Combined Field Ambulance.
- No. 27 Casualty Clearing Station.

EUPHRATES FRONT.

NASIRIYA.
- Headquarters, Euphrates Front.
- Two squadrons, 12th Cavalry.
- 26th Mountain Battery = 6 guns.
- Volunteer Battery, less detachments (six 15-pounders and one 5-inch gun) = 7 guns.
- 9th Company, Sappers and Miners.
- "B" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.

- 1/4th Somerset Light Infantry.
- 6th Jats.
- 1/10th Gurkhas.
- 84th Punjabis.
- No. 24 Combined Field Ambulance.
- No. 31 Sanitary Section.
- "S" Company, Supply and Transport (forming).
- Attached from 15th Division:
  - B/222nd Battery, R.F.A. = 4 guns.
  - 77th Howitzer Battery, R.G.A. = 4 guns.
  - Part of 15th Divisional Ammunition Column.
- One section, Field Searchlight Company.
- Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
- Detachment, Works Company.
- "M" Stokes Mortar Battery.
- No. 2 Camel Corps.
- Detachment, No. 6 Labour Corps.
- Advanced Supply Depot, Supply and Transport.
- No. 83 Combined Stationary Hospital.
- No. 8 Advanced Depot of Medical Stores.
- Detachment, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy (three cars).

KHAMISIYA.
- Detachment, Volunteer Battery (one 15-pounder).
- 42nd Deoli Regiment (less one company).

SUQ ASH SHUYUKH.
- Detachment, 113th Infantry.

BENI SAAD.
- Detachment, Volunteer Battery (one 15-pounder).
- One company, 42nd Deoli Regiment.

JUNCTION CAMP.
- Detachment, Volunteer Battery (one 15-pounder).
- 113th Infantry (less detachments).

AKAIKA.
- One company, 113th Infantry.

KARUN FRONT.

AHWAZ.
- Headquarters.
- 23rd Cavalry (less two squadrons).
- One section, 21st Mountain Battery = 2 guns.
- Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery (15-pounders) = 2 guns.
- 8th Rajputs.
- 97th Infantry (less one company).
- "C" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron (less one pack station).
- Detachment, No. 596 Mechanical Transport Company, A.S.C.
- No. 4 Indian Field Ambulance (two sections).
- No. 5 Combined Field Ambulance (modified).
- No. 30 Casualty Clearing Station.

SHUSH.
- Two squadrons, 23rd Cavalry.
- One pack station, "C" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.

TEMBEH.
- One company, 97th Infantry.

TIGRIS DEFENCES.

No. 1 Section.

QURNA (with detachments at Kurmat Ali, Kubaish, Sakrikiya, Ezra's Tomb and Qala Salih).
- 44th Merwara Infantry.

AMARA.
Headquarters Tigris Defences.
Headquarters No. 1 Section, Tigris Defences.
Half squadron, 10th Lancers.
Anglo-Indian Battery (less detachments), two 15-pounder = 2 guns.
1/4th Devonshire Regiment.
36th Sikhs.
45th Sikhs.
No. 2 Section, Line of Communication Signal Company.
No. 9 Combined Field Ambulance (modified).

No. 2 Section.

MUDELIL.
One company, 4th Rajputs.
ALI GHARBI.
One company, 4th Rajputs.
SHAIKH SAAD.
Headquarters No. 2 Section, Tigris Defences.
10th Lancers (less three squadrons).
C/215th Battery, R.F.A. (less one section) = 2 guns.
1st Highland Light Infantry.
4th Rajputs (less two companies).
9th Bhopal Infantry.
One pack station, "A" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
"N" Company, Pack Pony Corps.
Two armoured cars.
No. 8 Combined Field Ambulance (modified).

No. 3 Section.

WADI.
1 etachment, Anglo-Indian Battery (one 15-pounder) = 1 gun.
One company, 14th Sikhs.
ARAB VILLAGE.
14th Sikhs (less three companies).
KUT AREA.
Half squadron, 10th Lancers.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery (one 15-pounder) = 1 gun.
Half section, Field Searchlight Company.
2nd Rajputs.
Two companies, 14th Sikhs.
SHUMRAN (to be withdrawn).
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery (one 15-pounder) = 1 gun.
Two companies, 119th Infantry.
BUGHAILA.
Headquarters No. 3 Section, Tigris Defences.
One squadron, 10th Lancers.
One section, C/215th Battery, R.F.A. = 2 guns.
One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
96th Infantry.
119th Infantry (less two companies).
"M" Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 6 Combined Field Ambulance (modified).

No. 4 Section.

SHARQI.
One company, 1/6th Gurkhas.
AZIZIYA.
Headquarters No. 4 Section, Tigris Defences.
One squadron, 10th Lancers.
One 4-inch post gun = 1 gun.

One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
1st Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry.
1/6th Gurkhas (less three companies).
One armoured car.
"L" Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 7 Combined Field Ambulance (modified).
ZOR.
One section, 10th Lancers.
One company, 1/6th Gurkhas.
LAJJ.
Three sections, 10th Lancers.
One company, 1/6th Gurkhas.
CTESIPHON.
Two companies, 87th Punjabis.
DIYALA.
87th Punjabis (less two companies).

EUPHRATES DEFENCES.

FAO.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battalion.
Detachment, 73rd Carnatic Infantry.
Detachments of Royal Artillery and Royal Engineers details.
Half section, Field Searchlight Company.
BASRA.
Headquarters Euphrates Defences.
No. 3 Section, Line of Communication Signal Company.

No. 1 Section.

Headquarters No. 1 Section, Euphrates Defences.
One section, R.F.A., 18-pounder (Base Depot).
24th Punjabis (less detachments).
SHAIBA.
Headquarters Defences Reserves.
Patiala Lancers (less two squadrons).
One section, 21st Mountain Battery = 2 guns.
1/6th Devonshire Regiment (less two platoons).
"Q" Company, Supply and Transport (less detachments).

No. 2 Section.

SHAIBA STATION.*
One platoon, 24th Punjabis.
NUKHAILA.*
Detachment, 24th Punjabis.
RATAWI.*
Headquarters No. 2 Section, Euphrates Defences.
One company, 24th Punjabis.
GHABISHIYA.*
One company, 24th Punjabis.
No. 2 Armoured Train.

No. 3 Section.

LUQAIT.*
Headquarters No. 3 Section, Euphrates Defences.
One squadron, Patiala Lancers (less one troop).
99th Infantry (less three companies).
Detachment, "Q" Company, Supply and Transport.
JALEEB.*
One troop, Patiala Lancers.
One company, 99th Infantry.

KUT AL AMARA.
Detachments, No. 5 and No. 10 Labour Corps.
Detachment, No. 6 Porter Corps.
SHUMRAN.
Post Headquarters.
No. 3 Bridging Train.
AZIZIYA.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Detachment, Egyptian Labour Corps.
One wagon station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
Detachment, 48th Pioneers.
Detachment, Advanced Supply Depot.
Detachment, 19th Casualty Clearing Hospital.
Detachment, 14th Sanitary Section.
BAGHDAD. (Advanced Base).
Headquarters Advanced Base.
One company, Anglo-Indian Battalion.
Army Ammunition Park.
Advanced Signal Park.
Nos. 2, 3, 4 and 11 Labour Corps.
1st, 2nd (three companies), 3rd, 4th, 5th (detachments), 6th (one company) and 8th Porter Corps.
Advanced Supply Depot.
Detachment, No. 1 Line of Communication Supply Company, A.S.C.
Mysore Transport Company.
Advanced Transport Depot.
Headquarters Baghdad Works Directorate.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Detachment, Advanced Remount Depot.
Nos. 7 and 16 Field Veterinary Sections.
Detachments, Ordnance Depot.
Rest Camp.
Nos. 15, 16 and 20 Casualty Clearing Hospitals.
Nos. 23 and 31 British Stationary Hospitals.
Nos. 61 and 70 Indian Stationary Hospitals.
Officers' Hospital.
British Convalescent Depot.
Infectious Hospital.
No. 46 Sanitary Section.
Officers' Convalescent Depot.
Convalescent Depot.
Detachment, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy (nine cars).
Nos. 5 and 6 Advanced Depots of Medical Stores.
No. 19 Casualty Clearing Station (Jadida).

OTHER UNITS ON LINE OF COMMUNICATIONS.

BASRA.
246th, 257th, 269th Siege Batteries, R.G.A.= 12 guns (with Nos. 901, 902 and 903 Mechanical Transport Companies, A.S.C. attached).
116th Mahrattas.
Aircraft Park, R.F.C.
One company, 2nd Garrison Battalion, Essex Regiment.
Band, 97th Infantry.
AMARA.
527th Howitzer Battery, R.F.A.= 4 guns.
Advanced Echelon, Aircraft Park.

APPENDIX XLI.

A comparison between General Maude's estimate of the strength in rifles, sabres and machine guns of the Turkish Sixth Army on the 15th August, 1917, and the Order of Battle of that Army on the same date as given in the Turkish General Staff publication "Yilderim."* (General Maude gave no estimate of Turkish artillery strength.)

As estimated by General Maude.	As stated in the Turkish publication "Yilderim."
Euphrates Front (Ramadi). 64th Regiment. 181st Regiment. Three gendarmerie battalions. 100 sabres, 31st Cavalry. Technical troops. Total :— 100 sabres, 3,200 rifles, 18 machine guns.	*Euphrates Group.* 64th Regiment, 181st Regiment = 6 battalions with 8 machine guns. Two battalions of gendarmes. One cavalry squadron. Twelve guns. Technical troops.
Tigris Front. (a) *About Tikrit.* 14th Division. { 142nd Regiment. 166th Regiment. One cavalry squadron. 51st Division. { 7th Regiment. 9th Regiment. One cavalry squadron. 52nd Division. { 37th Regiment. 43rd Regiment. One cavalry squadron. 31st Cavalry. Total :— 600 sabres, 8,500 rifles, 36 machine guns.	*XVIII Corps.* 14th Division. { 3rd Regiment (3 battalions and 8 machine guns). 142nd Regiment (2 battalions and 6 machine guns). 180th Regiment (1 battalion and 6 machine guns). 116th Regiment (3 battalions and 4 machine guns). One cavalry squadron. Nine guns. 51st Division. { 7th Regiment (3 battalions and 6 machine guns). 9th Regiment (3 battalions and 3 machine guns). 44th Regiment (3 battalions and 6 machine guns). One cavalry squadron. Sixteen guns. 52nd Division. { 37th Regiment (3 battalions and 10 machine guns). 43rd Regiment (3 battalions and 6 machine guns). One cavalry squadron. Nine guns.

* "Yilderim," by Lieutenant-Colonel Hussain Hasni Amir Bey. Published by the Turkish General Staff. Translated by Captain G. O. de R. Channer, M.C., Indian Army.

(b) *On line of Diyala.*

6th Division.	16th Regiment. 18th Regiment. Irregulars (500). One cavalry squadron.	100 sabres; 2,900 rifles; 12 machine guns.
	13th Cavalry. 1st Lancers. 4th Depot Cavalry.	= 1,200 sabres.

Corps Troops (excluding technical).	One cavalry squadron. 31st Cavalry. Twelve guns. Four machine guns.
6th Division (XIII Corps).	16th Regiment (3 battalions and 6 machine guns). 18th Regiment (3 battalions and 6 machine guns). 1/156th Regiment (with 2 machine guns). 2/156th Regiment (with 2 machine guns). One cavalry squadron. Sixteen guns.
Cavalry Brigade.	1st Cavalry Regiment (with 4 guns). 13th Cavalry Regiment (with 4 guns). One field battery (4 guns). Two frontier battalions. One battalion, Persian gendarmerie.
Corps Troops (XIII Corps) (excluding technical).	1st Regiment (4 battalions and 4 machine guns). One troop cavalry. One storm company, 31st Cavalry Regiment. Sixteen guns. Eight machine guns.

(c) *Persian Front, from Sulaimaniya southward.*

2nd Division.	1st Regiment. 5th Regiment. 6th Regiment. One cavalry squadron.	= 500 sabres; 11,700 rifles; 36 machine guns.
	3rd Regiment. 44th Regiment. 3/64th Regiment. 3/156th Regiment. 3/36th Regiment. Seven frontier battalions. 11th Depot Regiment. 33rd Cavalry.	

Sulaimaniya Group.

2nd Division. (XIII Corps.)	5th Regiment (4 battalions and 16 machine guns). 6th Regiment (4 battalions and 16 machine guns). One Persian gendarmerie battalion (with 3 machine guns). One frontier battalion. 3/156th Regiment (with 4 machine guns). 33rd Cavalry Regiment. One squadron, Persian gendarmerie, with 2 guns. Fifteen guns.

(d) *Mosul.*

Two battalions, 36th Reserve Regiment = 1,200 rifles, 4 machine guns.

General Maude also estimated that possibly the following had joined the Sixth Army:—

9th Division.	46th Regiment. 144th Regiment. "Albanians."	= 10,800 rifles; 36 machine guns.
	17th Regiment. 26th Regiment. 145th Regiment.	

Also, possibly, the 50th Division.

Mosul Group.

22nd Regiment (3 battalions and 1 machine gun company).
One battalion at Ruwandiz.
Four guns.

Above does not include the 46th Division, which had arrived in the Sixth Army area. Location not stated, but it was independent of the XIII and XVIII Corps.

46th Division.	144th Regiment (3 battalions and 12 machine guns). 145th Regiment (3 battalions and 12 machine guns). 191st Regiment (3 battalions and 6 machine guns). One cavalry squadron. Twelve guns.

There were also 25 guns with "Army Troops."

APPENDIX XLII.

Copy of Letter from Mustapha Kemal to Enver Pasha, dated 30th September, 1917.

I beg to forward the following observations on the general situation. They are submitted to Your Excellency, who is responsible for the direction of the country's destiny, after deep consideration and not in any spirit of panic or pessimism.

1. The general state of the country should be considered before everything else. The war has been brought home to our people more than to any other country. The link between the people and its Government has been broken. Those that remain in their homes are fortunate in escaping the attention of the central authority, for though the people—women, cripples or deserters—have not enough to live on, the civil and military administrations are compelled to be more and more severe in their levies of supplies. The Government finds it impossible to control the general situation, which is sinking into anarchy. The measures it takes in the name of the people are opposed to the latter's rights, and the population is becoming more and more discontented.

The weakness of the civil administration has been further increased by want, corruption, profiteering, inferior officials, and the breakdown of justice. The evils are apparent in every part of the country. There are strong indications of disaster in ordinary trade and the provision of supplies. Consequently, if the war continues, the greatest danger by which we are confronted is the probable internal dissolution of the Empire, threatened as it is in every direction.

2. The military situation gives no sign of an early cessation of the war. Our allies are intent on a peace obtained by the aid of military forces, and will have no discussion as to terms. The Germans' possibilities are limited, and they can only say to their enemies: "Come, try and conquer us." The Entente Powers have shown that they will not make peace separately, and it is obvious that they will continue the war, as long as we can hold out, in the hope of saving their own countries and obtaining favourable terms. The war, therefore, is likely to continue for a considerable time. Our side does not hold the key to peace, but somehow we have to win.

3. The military situation of Turkey is as follows. Our forces are very weak. Compared with what they were at the beginning of the war, the strength of many armies has decreased by eighty per cent. The resources of the country in man power cannot bring them up to strength. Fifty per cent. of the 54th Division which was sent to me was composed of immature youths of 17 to 20 or unfit men of 45 to 55.

The battalions of another of the best divisions left Stamboul 1,000 strong and arrived at Aleppo with 500 each. The reason of this is the unsatisfactory lot of the people and the state of the civil administration. My illustration shows that even if all our resources were collected we should not be sufficiently strong. It is unnecessary to mention the deficiencies in the corps of officers in quality and quantity.

The situation at all the points is as follows:—

In the West we are not in contact with the enemy. But, as Stamboul is on one of the maritime highways of the world and is our richest province, it is quite probable that the enemy will strike at it from the west. In the Caucasus the situation is one of stalemate, and it is impossible for us to make headway. The internal situation of Russia and the Russian dependence on Europe makes an offensive impossible. But if for some reason they did advance, we are not in a position to hinder or threaten them. The Russians

do what they can with the means at their disposal, and they have halted against their will. In Iraq the British have gained their objectives. Consequently I am of opinion that there is no political, economic or military reason for a further advance on their part. However, if they continue northwards and are successful, the addition of Mosul to our toll of losses would not be a very severe blow to the country. It may be said that such an event would not affect the general situation, so on this point we can only wait and see.

On the Hejaz and Sinai fronts the enemy has not yet attained his political and military objectives, and, as we know, is making every preparation to achieve his purpose. To create a Moslem power subservient to Britain, to form a Christian state in Palestine under British influence, to tear from Turkey her most prosperous provinces as well as to destroy her last religious predominance, are the British aims. For us this means that our life itself is to be extinguished. Thus the exigencies of the military situation require us to be ready for an attack in the West and to forestall the enemy's advance which he is preparing on the borders of Syria. In the present state of affairs it is useless to think of the recapture of Baghdad with our last reserves. The nearest enemy, the most powerful and most prepared, is in Sinai. He cannot be ignored.

Secondly, the Baghdad project is physically impossible. The effectives of the divisions which would carry out the venture are weak and low in value. After two months' marching they would be nothing more than a rabble—to use a slight exaggeration. Our *shakturs* and camels cannot compare with the enemy's railways and ships to Baghdad. Finally, one of the surest indications of the futility of the plan is that after two days' marching regiments would melt away.

What are my deductions from this short study of the situation? One stage of the war is finished and we cannot alter the past. I do not see the good of writing of the greatest perils before us out of pure pessimism; while there is life and hope, we must search for a road out of our troubles.

In my opinion the decisions we should take to-day are:—

(*a*) Internally strengthen the administration, and security of life. Officers for the gendarmerie, reorganisation as far as possible of justice, commerce and food supplies, to check corruption, or at least to confine it to its narrowest limits, so that the country will have a firm and healthy base from which to work. If a prolongation of the war brings more trouble and calamity to us, we shall at any rate have our country and people behind us. We must not allow them to be a broken reed.

(*b*) Our military policy should be defensive, and every possible reserve should be religiously nursed. Not a single reserve should be permitted to serve outside the Empire. The question as to whether the Sinai front can be best secured by attack or defence cannot be decided to-day. The enemy in that quarter is superior to us in men and means. It is practically impossible to expect all our reinforcements in Sinai before some months have passed. It is probable that the enemy will try to gain a decision against the troops now in front of him before others arrive. Besides, while we are despatching troops to the front, the British can also call upon more reinforcements with the aid of their perfected communications. Consequently even if the enemy does not attack now, it is within the bounds of possibility that we should be still more inferior after our concentration. Thus, as it is impossible to say when our troops from Aleppo will arrive at the Sinai front, it is essential that orders be issued for the immediate despatch of the Seventh Army. To exactly determine at the moment how these troops will be finally employed with the utmost economy is impossible, from a study of maps, from a military point of view. When the Seventh Army has been sent south the best way out of all our difficulties is as follows:—

Up to now all Syria and Hejaz have been under the orders of a Musalman, and the Sinai operations have been entrusted independently to another Musalman. The good of the country requires this system of command. I am satisfied that Falkenhayn's advent, his management of the coming events,

the confirmation of von Kress's position, and lastly the dominating influence of the Germans are opposed to the interests of the State. I do not suppose we shall be deprived of a voice in questions regarding the life of the people, nor that, in the execution of his duty, Falkenhayn will do anything prejudicial to the interests of the State. But if the defence of Sinai is carried out by two armies under the orders of von Kress and the Seventh Army Commander respectively, and Falkenhayn is in supreme command, the interests of the country will not be well served. All difficulties would be avoided if General Falkenhayn comes under the orders of the man who is in command of Syria and Hejaz. By this arrangement, the senior official would be a Turk responsible to our Government, and having in his hands all internal political and administrative matters. Falkenhayn would exercise a command restricted to military questions only, while the lines of communication, administration of the districts, supplies and areas behind the front, would be under one of our own race.

With regard to my remaining in command of the Seventh Army, till now I have been an independent army commander. If the interests of the country require it, I should not object if relegated to an inferior position. But there is a delicate point to be considered first. When the Seventh Army has been despatched, future operations will tend to mingle my troops with those of von Kress. It would be bad policy to allocate troops to each commander and it would be preferable to put them all as they arrive under von Kress. In that case my Army Headquarters would become superfluous and von Kress would gradually assume command of all troops in the field. If the situation in the future develops in this way, and the interest of the country requires it, I am resigned to my role as a spectator. My duty will be to command without demur the smallest part of the front where my troops may intervene. That is to say, if my troops are to act independently I shall command. This point must be decided.

If the administration of Syria is not handed over to Falkenhayn, Your Excellency can trust me not to obstruct the Germans in any way. Though it is necessary to escape from the predicament in which we find ourselves in company with Germany, I am opposed to their policy of taking advantage of our misfortune and the prolongation of the war to turn us into a German colony and exploit all our resources. Our Government must be jealous and independent like the Bulgarians. I assure you that when the Germans understand that we mean to guard our independence, they will respect us more than the Bulgarians. To continually keep oneself in the background will not inspire respect or justice in any ally, especially the Germans. The more we give the more they will grasp. Falkenhayn, even now, is bold enough to say that he is a German before everything and that German interests come first. In Aleppo and Syria and on the Euphrates it is impossible to be blind to what German policy and German interests mean. If a German commander is in a position to order Turks to die by thousands, it is obvious that the interests of the State are not being watched. From the day on which Falkenhayn arrived, he sent German lieutenants to the chiefs of the tribes to establish direct relations—"The Arabs are enemies of the Turks. We can gain their friendship as we are neutral," said Falkenhayn to me, an army commander. He understood from the very first that the Iraq project was hopeless, so he has adopted the exploitation of the country as his aim. In truth, he has taken all Arabia under German protection, and has now begun the second phase of his plan. Abandoning his Iraq objective, he now discusses the chance of an offensive in Sinai. What will it be in two months, attack or defence? The talk of an offensive is only an alluring pretext by which the Germans hope to seize Syria and Arabia. If in two months the offensive is unfavourable and the defence of Palestine with all the troops proves feasible, there is no doubt we shall be very indebted to Falkenhayn if he gains a great success. But in that case the Government and country will pass from our hands and we shall become a German colony. To this end Falkenhayn is wasting the gold in our Treasury and shedding the blood

of the last Turks whom Anatolia can produce. In fact to-day the most vital question is to enquire what is going on in the civil administration or among the people. Our interest is the protection of the country and if even a corner of it is given over to the influence and administration of the foreigner, the life of the Empire is being destroyed.

Such are my views. I feel a load off my mind now that I have ventilated them.

MUSTAPHA KEMAL,
Commander Seventh Army.

30th September, 917.

APPENDIX XLIII.

Distribution of the troops of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 18th November, 1917.

TIGRIS FRONT.

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS.—BAGHDAD.

Cavalry Division.—(Headquarters at Sadiya, Tigris right bank).

6th Cavalry Brigade.
- 14th Hussars.
- 21st Cavalry.
- 22nd Cavalry.
- 15th Machine Gun Squadron.
- No. 2 Field Troop, 2nd Sappers and Miners.
- 6th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

7th Cavalry Brigade.
- 13th Hussars.
- 13th Lancers.
- 14th Lancers.
- 16th Machine Gun Squadron.
- 7th Cavalry Brigade Field Troop, R.E.
- 7th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Divisional Troops.
- Headquarters, Cavalry Divisional Artillery.
- "S" and "V" Batteries, R.H.A.
- Cavalry Division Signal Squadron.
- Three pack stations, 1st (Australia and New Zealand) Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Cavalry Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
- Nos. 119 and 131 Cavalry Combined Field Ambulances.
- No. 30 Sanitary Section.
- Nos. 4 and 5 Mobile Veterinary Sections.

11th Cavalry Brigade (forming).
- 7th Hussars.*
- 23rd Cavalry.
- Guides Cavalry.
- 25th Machine Gun Squadron (*to be formed*).
- "W" Battery, R.H.A.*
- No. 5 Field Troop, 1st Sappers and Miners (*to be formed*).
- 11th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop (*forming*).
- 11th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.*
- No. 152 Cavalry Combined Field Ambulance.*
- No. 8 Mobile Veterinary Section (*at Basra*).

1st Corps.—(Headquarters at Samarra).

3rd Division. (Headquarters at Samarra.)

7th Infantry Brigade.
- 1st Connaught Rangers.
- 27th Punjabis.
- 91st Punjabis.
- 2/7th Gurkhas.
- No. 131 Machine Gun Company.
- 7th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

* Not yet arrived from India.

8th Infantry Brigade.
- 1st Manchester Regiment.
- 47th Sikhs.
- 59th Rifles.
- 2/124th Baluchistan Infantry.
- No. 132 Machine Gun Company.
- 8th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

9th Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Dorsetshire Regiment.
- 93rd Infantry.
- 105th Mahrattas.
- 1/1st Gurkhas.
- No. 133 Machine Gun Company.
- 9th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Artillery.
- 4th Brigade, R.F.A. (7th, 14th, 66th and B/69th Batteries) =22 guns.
- 8th Brigade, R.F.A. (372nd, 373rd, 374th and 72nd Batteries)=22 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 18th, 20th and 21st Companies, 3rd Sappers and Miners.
- 1/34th Sikh Pioneers.

3rd Divisional Signal Company.
No. 271 Machine Gun Company (*at Basra*).
3rd Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 110, 111, 112 and 113 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 11 Sanitary Section.
No. 3 Mobile Veterinary Section.
Attached. "A," "B" and "C" Light Trench Mortar Batteries.*

7th Division. (Headquarters at Samarra.)

19th Infantry Brigade.
- 1st Seaforth Highlanders.
- 28th Punjabis.
- 92nd Punjabis.
- 125th Rifles.
- No. 134 Machine Gun Company.
- 19th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

21st Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Black Watch.
- 1st Guides Infantry.
- 20th Punjabis.
- 1/8th Gurkhas.
- No. 135 Machine Gun Company.
- 21st Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

28th Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Leicestershire Regiment.
- 51st Sikhs.
- 53rd Sikhs.
- 56th Rifles.
- No. 136 Machine Gun Company.
- 28th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Artillery.
- 9th Brigade, R.F.A. (19th, 20th, 28th and D/69th Batteries) =22 guns.
- 56th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and 527th Batteries) =22 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 1st, 3rd and 4th Companies, 1st Sappers and Miners.
- 121st Pioneers.

* Each consisted of four 3-inch Stokes Mortars.

7th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 272 Machine Gun Company (*at Basra*).
7th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 127, 128, 129 and 130 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 12 Sanitary Section.
No. 2 Mobile Veterinary Section.
Attached. "D," "E" and "F" Light Trench Mortar Batteries.*

Corps Troops (Ist Corps).
32nd Lancers.
Ist Corps Heavy Artillery Brigade (60-pounder guns).
2/86th and 157th Heavy Batteries, R.G.A.=8 guns.
1st Corps Siege Artillery Brigade (6-inch howitzers) (159th, 246th and 257th Siege Batteries, R.G.A.)= 12 guns.
Nos. 788, 789, 901 and 902 Mechanical Transport Companies. (Caterpillar Tractors.)
Nos. 133, 134 and 135 Medium Trench Mortar Batteries.†
Ist Corps Signal Company.
No. 1 Printing Section.
No. 1 Lithograph Section.

Attached.
- Nos. 59 and 93 Anti-aircraft Sections.
- No. 2 Mobile Bridging Train and detachment No. 3 Bridging Train.
- One section, Field Searchlight Company.
- One wagon station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- No. 40 Motor Ambulance Convoy.

IIIrd Corps. (Headquarters at Baquba.)

13*th Division.* (Headquarters at Abu Saida.)

38th Infantry Brigade.
- 6th King's Own Royal Regiment (Lancaster).
- 6th East Lancashire Regiment.
- 6th Prince of Wales's Volunteers (South Lancashire).
- 6th Loyal Regiment (North Lancashire).
- No. 38 Machine Gun Company.
- 38th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

39th Infantry Brigade.
- 9th Royal Warwickshire Regiment.
- 7th Gloucestershire Regiment.
- 9th Worcestershire Regiment.
- 7th North Staffordshire Regiment.
- No. 39 Machine Gun Company.
- 39th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

40th Infantry Brigade.
- 8th Cheshire Regiment.
- 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers.
- 4th South Wales Borderers.
- 5th Wiltshire Regiment.
- No. 40 Machine Gun Company.
- 40th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

13th Divisional Cyclist Company.

Artillery.
- 55th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and 60th Batteries‡)=24 guns.
- 66th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and 61st Batteries‡)=24 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

* Each consisted of four 3-inch Stokes Mortars.
† Each consisted of four 2-inch trench mortars.
‡*Note.*—The 60th and 61st Batteries were each equipped with six howitzers instead of the normal four in a howitzer battery.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 71st, 72nd and 88th Field Companies, R.E.
- 8th Welch Pioneers.

13th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 273 Machine Gun Company (*at Basra*).
13th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
10th Field Bakery.
31st Field Butchery.
Nos. 39, 40 and 41 British Field Ambulances.
No. 28 Sanitary Section.
No. 24 Mobile Veterinary Section.
Attached. "G," "H" and "I" Light Trench Mortar Batteries.

14*th Division.* (Headquarters at Shahraban.)

35th Infantry Brigade.
- 1/5th Buffs.
- 37th Dogras.
- 102nd Grenadiers.
- 2/4th Gurkhas.
- No. 185 Machine Gun Company.
- 35th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

36th Infantry Brigade.
- 1/4th Hampshire Regiment.
- 26th Punjabis.
- 62nd Punjabis.
- 82nd Punjabis.
- No. 186 Machine Gun Company.
- 36th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

37th Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Norfolk Regiment.
- 1/67th Punjabis.
- 1/2nd Gurkhas.
- 2/9th Gurkhas.
- No. 187 Machine Gun Company.
- 37th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Artillery.
- 13th Brigade, R.F.A. (2nd, 8th, 44th and C/69th Batteries) =22 guns.
- 30th Brigade, R.F.A. (384th, 385th, 386th and A/69th Batteries)= 22 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 12th, 13th and 15th Companies, 2nd Sappers and Miners.
- 128th Pioneers.

14th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 274 Machine Gun Company (*at Basra*).
14th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 20, 21, 22 and 135 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 13 Sanitary Section.
No. 1 Mobile Veterinary Section.
Attached. "J," "K," "L" Light trench mortar batteries.

Corps Troops (IIIrd Corps).
12th Cavalry.
IIIrd Corps Heavy Artillery Brigade (60-pounder guns) (2/104th and 177th Heavy Batteries, R.G.A.) = 8 guns.
IIIrd Corps Siege Artillery Brigade (6-inch howitzers) (269th, 384th and 387th Siege Batteries, R.G.A.) = 12 guns.
Nos. 903, 967,* 968,* 969 Mechanical Transport Companies. (Caterpillar tractors.)

**En route* from Basra.

Nos. 136, 137, 138 Medium Trench Mortar Batteries.
IIIrd Corps Signal Company.
No. 2 Printing Section.
No. 2 Lithograph Section.

Attached.
- One section, 26th Mountain Battery = 2 guns.
- Nos. 80 and 92 Anti-aircraft Sections.
- No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train (less detachments).
- Half section, Field Searchlight Company.
- Two pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Convalescent Depot:
  - No. 20 British Field Ambulance.
  - Three sections, No. 1 Indian Field Ambulance.
- No. 39 Motor Ambulance Convoy.

15th Division (Headquarters at Falluja).

12th Infantry Brigade.
- 1/5th Queen's Royal Regiment (West Surrey).
- 2/39th Garhwal Rifles.
- 1/43rd Erinpura Regiment.
- 90th Punjabis.
- No. 128 Machine Gun Company.
- 12th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

42nd Infantry Brigade.
- 1/4th Dorsetshire Regiment.
- 1/5th Gurkhas.
- 2/5th Gurkhas.
- 2/6th Gurkhas.
- No. 130 Machine Gun Company.
- 42nd Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

50th Infantry Brigade.
- 1st Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry.
- 6th Jats.
- 24th Punjabis.
- 1/97th Infantry.
- No. 256 Machine Gun Company (*at Baghdad*).
- 50th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

"D" Squadron, 1/1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry.

Artillery.
- 215th Brigade, R.F.A. (1086th, 1088th, 2/1st Notts, 524th Batteries) = 22 guns.
- 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (375th, 1070th, 1072nd, 77th Batteries) = 22 guns.
- Three small arm ammunition sections.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 448th, 450th and 451st Field Companies, R.E.
- 48th Pioneers.

15th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 275 Machine Gun Company (*at Basra*).
15th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 23, 34, 105 amd 108 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 16 Sanitary Section.
No. 6 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Attached.
- One squadron, 10th Lancers.
- No. 118 Anti-aircraft Section.
- Detachment, No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train.
- Half section, Field Searchlight Company.
- Two pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- "M," "N," "O," Light Trench Mortar Batteries.

17th Division (Headquarters at Baghdad).

34th Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment.
- 31st Punjabis.
- 1/112th Infantry.
- 114th Mahrattas.
- No. 129 Machine Gun Company.
- 34th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

51st Infantry Brigade.
- 1st Highland Light Infantry.
- 1/2nd Rajputs.
- 14th Sikhs.
- 1/10th Gurkhas.
- No. 257 Machine Gun Company.
- 51st Brigade Supply and Transport Company (*forming*).

52nd Infantry Brigade.
- 1/6th Hampshire Regiment.
- 45th Sikhs.
- 84th Punjabis.
- 1/113th Infantry.
- No. 258 Machine Gun Company.
- 52nd Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

One squadron, 10th Lancers.

Artillery.
- 220th Brigade, R.F.A. (1064th, 1066th Batteries)* = 12 guns (*en route from Basra*).
- 221st Brigade, R.F.A. (1067th, 1068th Batteries)† = 12 guns (*en route from Basra*).
- Three small arm ammunition sections (*en route from Basra*).

Engineers and Pioneers.
- Sirmur Sapper and Miner Company.
- Malerkotla Sapper and Miner Company.
- Tehri-Gahrwal Sapper and Miner Company.
- 1/32nd Sikh Pioneers.

17th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 276 Machine Gun Company (*at Basra*).
Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company (*to be formed*).
Nos. 3, 19, 35 and 36 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 1 Sanitary Section.
No. 7 Mobile Veterinary Section (*en route from Basra*).

18th Division.

This division had begun to be formed; but the bulk of its units (most of which were to come from India) had not yet arrived in Mesopotamia on the 18th November, 1917. The following of its units were in Mesopotamia (all at Basra):—

Nos. 207, 238 and 239 Machine Gun Companies.
336th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C, and D Batteries)‡ = 24 guns.
337th Brigade, R.F.A. (A, B, C and 341st Batteries)‡ = 24 guns.
2nd, 8th and 19th Companies, 1st Sappers and Miners.
249th Machine Gun Company.

Baghdad Garrison.

49th Bengalis.
116th Mahrattas.
119th Infantry.
Attached—No. 208 Anti-aircraft Section.

* 403rd Howitzer Battery of this brigade was due shortly from England.
† 404th Howitzer Battery of this brigade was due shortly from England. Each of these batteries was equipped with six howitzers.
‡ D/336th and 341st were six-gun howitzer batteries.

Army Troops.

Nos. 59 and 93 Anti-aircraft Sections* (*with Ist Corps*).
Nos. 80 and 92 Anti-aircraft Sections (*with IIIrd Corps*).
No. 118 Anti-aircraft Section (*with 15th Division*).
No. 208 Anti-aircraft Section† (*with Baghdad garrison*).
Railway Anti-aircraft Section‡ (*attached Advanced Base*).
Independent Divisional Ammunition Column.
Nos. 1 and 2 Mobile Bridging Trains (*attached to Ist and IIIrd Corps and 15th Division*).
No. 3 Bridging Train (*detachment with Ist Corps*).
Field Searchlight Company (*Headquarters at Basra. Detachments as shown elsewhere*).
Nos. 5 and 8 Lithograph Sections.
Nos. 5 and 6 Printing Sections.
Army Signal Company.
Headquarters 1st (Australia and New Zealand) Wireless Signal Squadron, with three wagon stations (*One wagon station with Russians at Kermanshah*).
Wireless Press Station.
31st Wing, Royal Flying Corps: Nos. 30 and 63 Squadrons; No. 23 Kite Balloon Company§ (Nos. 51 and 52 Sections).
No. 6 Light Armoured Motor Battery (less two sections).
No. 13 Light Armoured Motor Battery.
No. 14 Light Armoured Motor Battery (less two sections).
No. 15 Light Armoured Motor Battery.
64th Pioneers.
"A" to "O" Light Trench Mortar Batteries (*distributed among divisions*).
Army Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 729, 730, 783, 784, 815, 818, 953, 954 and 971 Mechanical Transport Companies (Ford vans).
No. 976 Mechanical Transport Company (Packards and Fiats).
Detachment, No. 596 Mechanical Transport Company (Peerless lorries).
Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5 Mule Columns.
4th, 5th and 6th Camel Corps.
No. 33 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
No. 39 Motor Ambulance Convoy (*attached IIIrd Corps*).
No. 40 Motor Ambulance Convoy (*attached Ist Corps*).
Nos. 11 and 12 X-ray Units.
Western Persia Survey Party (*with Russians*).

NASIRIYA FRONT.

NASIRIYA.
Headquarters, Nasiriya Front.
14th Mountain Battery = 6 guns.
Volunteer Battery (seven 15-pounders and one 5-inch gun) = 8 guns.
Patiala Lancers (less two squadrons).
9th Company, Sappers and Miners.
"B" Troop, 2nd (Line of Communication) Wireless Signal Squadron (less one pack station).
Nasiriya Front Signal Company.
1/4th Somerset Light Infantry.
13th Rajputs (less six platoons).
1/42nd Deoli Regiment.

* Each consisted of two 13-pounder guns.
† Consisted of two 12-pounder guns.
‡ Consisted of four 2-pounder pom-poms.
§ This Company had recently arrived in Mesopotamia, but was still deficient of much of its necessary stores and equipment, and no balloon could as yet take the air.

95th Infantry.
104th Rifles.
No. 2 Indian Machine Gun Company (less one section).
"S" Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 24 Combined Field Ambulance.
No. 31 Sanitary Section.
Veterinary Detachment.

Other Units:
One section, Field Searchlight Company.
Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Company.
Advanced Supply Depot.
No. 83 Combined Station Hospital.
No. 8 Advanced Depot of Medical Stores.

BENI SAAD.
Detachment, Volunteer Battery (two 15-pounders) = 2 guns.
One pack station, "B" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
One company, 13th Rajputs.

SUQ ASH SHUYUKH.
Two platoons, 13th Rajputs.

KARUN FRONT.

AHWAZ.
Headquarters, Karun Front.
5th Cavalry (less two squadrons).
One section, 21st Mountain Battery = 2 guns.
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Company.
Two sections, Machine Gun Squadron.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery (two 15-pounders) = 2 guns.
8th Rajputs (less one company).
Section, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
"C" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron (less one pack station).
Detachment, No. 695 Mechanical Transport Company.
No. 29 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).
"O" Company, Supply and Transport.

SHUSH.
Two squadrons, 5th Cavalry.
One pack station, "C" Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.

TEMBEH.
One company, 8th Rajputs.

TIGRIS DEFENCES.

No. 1 Section.

QURNA (with detachments in posts between Basra and Amara, both exclusive).
44th Merwara Infantry.

AMARA.
Headquarters Tigris Defences.
Headquarters No. 1 Section Tigris Defences.
Anglo-Indian Battery (less three sections) (15-pounders) = 2 guns.
1/4th Devonshire Regiment.
36th Sikhs (less 1½ companies).
No. 2 Section, Line of Communication Signal Company.
Headquarters No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
No. 33 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).

MUDELIL.
One and a half companies, 36th Sikhs (less detachments of one platoon each at four marching posts).

No. 2 Section.

ALI GHARBI.
One company, 2/6th Devonshire Regiment (less one platoon at a marching post).
SHAIKH SAAD.
One squadron, 10th Lancers.
One section, 26th Mountain Battery=2 guns.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery=1 gun.
2/6th Devonshire Regiment (less one company).
4th Rajputs (less two companies, one of which was distributed in four marching posts).
Section No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
One pack station, "A" Troop 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
No. 32 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).
42nd Mule Corps.
Headquarters Mobile Column.
WADI.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery=1 gun.
One company, 4th Rajputs.
HANNA.
One platoon, 126th Baluchistan Infantry.
SUWADA.
One platoon, 126th Infantry.
KUT.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battery=2 guns.
Two searchlight sets.
9th Bhopal Infantry.
One armoured car.
BUGHAILA.
Headquarters No. 2 Section, Tigris Defences.
Headquarters Mobile Column.
10th Lancers (less three squadrons).
26th Mountain Battery (less two sections)=2 guns.
Section, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
126th Baluchistan Infantry (less two platoons).
96th Infantry.
"M" Company, Supply and Transport (*forming*).
"N" Company, Supply and Transport (Pack-pony Corps) (less detachments).
No. 30 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).

No. 3 Section.

AZIZIYA.
Headquarters No. 3 Section, Tigris Defences.
Headquarters Mobile Column.
One squadron, 10th Lancers.
One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
2/7th Hampshire Regiment.
1/6th Gurkhas (less 3¾ companies).
Section, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
"L" Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 31 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).

Distributed among eight railway stations (and marching posts) between Kut (exclusive) and Diyala (inclusive).
Three and three-quarter companies, 1/6th Gurkhas.
87th Punjabis (less 1¼ companies).
One 4-inch post gun (at Diyala)= 1 gun.

At two posts (Cassels' Post and Coningham's Post) between Diyala and Baquba.
One and a quarter companies, 87th Punjabis.

EUPHRATES DEFENCES.

FAO. (Examination Service.)
Artillery detachment, with one 18-pounder and two 4-inch guns.
Detachment, 108th Infantry.
Half section, Field Searchlight Company.
BASRA AND SHAIBA.
Headquarters Euphrates Defences.
No. 3 Section, Line of Communication Signal Company.
Headquarters Defences Reserves.
One squadron, Patiala Lancers.
One section, 21st Mountain Battery= 2 guns.
1/6th Devonshire Regiment (less two platoons).
"Q" Company, Supply and Transport (less detachments).

No. 1 Section.

BASRA.
Headquarters No. 1 Section, Euphrates Defences.
One section, R.F.A. (18-pounder). Base Depot.*
108th Infantry (less two companies and Fao detachment).

Distributed among Shaiba, Nukhaila, Ratawi and Ghabishiya railway stations.
Two companies, 108th Infantry.
No. 2 Armoured Train.

No. 2 Section.

TEL EL LAM.
Headquarters No. 2 Section, Euphrates Defences.
One squadron, Patiala Lancers (less one troop).
21st Mountain Battery (less two sections)=2 guns.
Two platoons, 1/6th Devonshire Regiment.
99th Infantry (less three companies).
Section No. 2 Indian Machine Gun Company.
No. 1 Armoured Train.
Detachment "Q" Company, Supply and Transport.

Distributed among the railway stations at Luqait, Jaleeb, Tel Maghiya and Safar.
Three companies, 99th Infantry.
One troop, Patiala Lancers.
Detachment "Q" Company, Supply and Transport.

UNITS TEMPORARILY AT BASRA.

11th Lancers (*for Tigris Defences*).
15th Mountain Battery= 6 guns (*for Tigris Defences*).
Headquarters, 101st Heavy Artillery Brigade.
392nd, 394th, 395th, 396th Siege Batteries, R.G.A.=16 guns.

LINE OF COMMUNICATION UNITS.

Base Section.

BASRA.
3rd Echelon, General Headquarters.
Headquarters Inspector-General of Communications.
Base Headquarters.
Headquarters of Directorates of Inland Water Transport, Port Administration and Conservancy, Sea Transport.
No. 8 Printing Section.
No. 10 Printing Section (with 3rd Echelon).

* Included two 18-pounder guns and twelve 4-inch Stokes trench mortars.

No. 1 Works Company.
Reclamation Section.
Base Park Company (less detachments).
Headquarters Electrical and Mechanical Section.
No. 2 Electrical and Mechanical Company (less detachments).
Nos. 1, 5, 6, 7, 9 Labour Corps.
Nos. 21, 22, 23, 24, 30 Local Labour Corps.
Mauritius Labour Corps.
Sierra Leone Labour Corps (for Inland Water Transport).
No. 2 Porter Corps.
Detachment, No. 10 Porter Corps.
Headquarters 2nd (Line of Communication) Wireless Signal Squadron.
" E " Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron (on river ships).
Headquarters and No. 1 Section Line of Communication Signal Company.
Signal Service Park and Depot.
Aircraft Park, R.F.C.
79th Carnatic Infantry (less detachments).
80th Carnatic Infantry (less detachments).
83rd Wallajahbad Light Infantry.
Nos. 1, 2 and 3 British Base Depots.
Nos. 1, 2 and 3 Indian Base Depots.
Indian General Base Depot.
Supply Reinforcement Depot.
Base Supply Depot.
Base Transport Depot, " A " to " G " Companies.
Base Mechanical Transport Depot (No. 695 Mechanical Transport Company) (less detachments).
Repair Workshops (No. 962 Mechanical Transport Company).
Detachment, No. 596 Mechanical Transport Company.
No. 1 (Lucknow) and No. 2 (Cawnpore) Bullock Corps.
Headquarters Military Forwarding Officer.
Nos. 3, 33, 40, British General Hospitals.
Nos. 8, 9, 10, 20, 22, 25, 27, Indian General Hospitals.
Officers' Hospital.
British and Indian Convalescent Depots (Mohammerah).
Isolation Hospital.
Nos. 10, 19, 27, 29 and 99 Sanitary Sections.
Base Depot of Medical Stores.
No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy (less 27 cars) (No. 656 Mechanical Transport Company).
Medical Reinforcement Camp.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
Headquarters Base Remount Depot.
One remount squadron.
Military Prisoners' Syce Corps.
Veterinary Convalescent Depot.
Nos. 6 and 18 Field Veterinary Sections.
No. 2 Base Depot Veterinary Stores.
Base Ordnance Depot.
Nos. 35, 55 and 111 Companies, Army Ordnance Corps.
Indian Ordnance Detachments (two companies).
No. 35 Ordnance Mobile Workshop.
Base Post Office.
Base Stationery Depot.
Prisoners of War Camp.

NAHR UMAR.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Detachment, 80th Carnatic Infantry.
No. 10 Porter Corps (less detachments).
No. 29 Local Labour Corps.

Qurna Section.

QURNA.
Headquarters, Administrative Post.
One company, 85th Burma Infantry.
Detachments of Base Park Depot, No. 1 Works Company, No. 2 Electrical and Mechanical Company.
No. 27 Local Labour Corps.
" J " Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 57 Combined Stationary Hospital.
Intermediate Supply Depot.

QALA SALIH.
85th Burma Infantry (less one company).

Amara Section.

AMARA.
Headquarters, Administrative Post.
No. 2 Works Company (less detachments).
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Company.
Detachment, Base Park Company.
Nos. 25 and 36 Local Labour Corps.
" A " Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron (less one pack station).
Advanced Depot, Royal Flying Corps.
122nd Infantry (less two companies).
Depot, Machine Gun Corps.
British and Indian Depots.
Light Trench Mortar School.
Officers' Rest Camp.
Ordnance Detachments.
" I " Company, Supply and Transport.
Intermediate Supply Depot.
British and Indian Convalescent Depots.
Isolation Hospital.
Nos. 1, 2 and 32 British General Hospitals.
Nos. 12, 21, 23, and 42 Indian General Hospitals.
Fifteen cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
No. 3 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.
Headquarters, River Sick Convoy Unit.
Nos. 17 and 46 Sanitary Sections.
Headquarters Remount Depot.
Two remount squadrons (less two sections).
Nos. 1 and 9 Field Veterinary Sections.
Military Forwarding Office (sub-depot).

Kut Section.

SHAIKH SAAD.
Detachment, Base Mechanical Transport Depot.
No. 7 Porter Corps.
Detachment, No. 101 Sanitary Section.
Detachment, Madras Gardeners.

KUT.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Detachment, No. 2 Electrical and Mechanical Company.
Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
One lorry station, " D " Troop, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
No. 8 Labour Corps (less detachments).
Detachments, Nos. 10 and 11 Labour Corps.
No. 31 Local Labour Corps (*forming*).
Two companies, 122nd Infantry.
Rest Camp.
Detachment, " N " Company, Supply and Transport.

Intermediate Supply Depot.
Nos. 5, 6 and 7 Porter Corps.
Detachment, Mysore Transport Corps.
Military Forwarding Office (sub-depot).
No. 133 British General Hospital.
No. 24 Indian General Hospital (less detachments).
No. 7 Advanced Depot of Medical Stores.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
No. 101 Sanitary Section (less detachments).
Ordnance detachments.

AZIZIYA.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Headquarters Advanced Supply Depot.
Detachment, No. 2 Labour Corps.
Detachment, No. 24 Indian General Hospital.
Detachment, No. 101 Sanitary Section.

Advanced Base Section.

BAGHDAD (Advanced Base).
Headquarters Advanced Base.
Headquarters Directorate of Railways.
Two railway armoured cars.
Army ammunition park.
Advanced signalling park.
Advanced Echelon, Aircraft Park
No. 3 Works Company.
300th Electrical and Mechanical Company, R.E., and Works Depot.
Engineer Field Park.
Inland Water Transport Workshops.
Nos. 2, 3, 4 (less detachment), 10 (one company), 11 (less detachments).
12, 26, 28, 32 and 35 Labour Corps.
One company, Anglo-Indian Battalion.
73rd Carnatic Infantry (less detachment).
Rest Camps.
Advanced Supply Depot.
Nos. 312 and 313 Depot Units of Supply.
No. 1 Line of Communication Supply Company (less detachment).
Advanced Transport Depot.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Assistant Military Forwarding Office, Advanced Base.
Nos. 1, 3, 4 and 8 Porter Corps (less detachments).
British and Indian War Gifts Depot.
Mysore Imperial Service Transport Corps.
Nos. 23 and 31 British Stationary Hospitals.
Nos. 61 and 70 Indian Stationary Hospitals.
Officers' Hospital.
Officers' Convalescent Depot.
Combined Convalescent Depot.
Isolation Hospital.
Nos. 5 and 6 Advanced Depots, Medical Stores.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
Nos. 15, 16 (less detachments), 27, 30 Casualty Clearing Stations.
Twelve cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
Nos. 14 and 100 Sanitary Sections.
Ceylon Sanitary Section.
Advanced Remount Depot.
Two and a half remount squadrons.
Advanced Depot, Veterinary Stores.
Veterinary Hospital.
Nos. 7, 10, 12, 16 Field Veterinary Sections.

Advanced Ordnance Depot.
Nos. 34, 49 and 50 Ordnance Mobile Workshops.
Advanced Stationary Depot.
Attached { Railway anti-aircraft section. / No. 596 Mechanical Transport Company (less Detachments).

BAQUBA.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Detachment, 73rd Carnatic Infantry.
Detachment, No. 10 Labour Corps.
Detachment, No. 3 Porter Corps.

SADIYA.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Detachment, No. 11 Labour Corps.
Detachment, No. 5 Porter Corps.
Detachment, No. 16 Casualty Clearing Station.

SAMARRA.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Detachments, Nos. 4, 11 and 33 Labour Corps and of No. 1 Line of Communication Supply Company.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Detachment, No. 3 Porter Corps.
No. 19 Casualty Clearing Station.

APPENDIX XLIV.

Principal officers serving with the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 1st December, 1917.

General Officer Commanding-in-Chief	Lieut.-General Sir W. R. Marshall.
Chief of the General Staff	Major-General H. R. Hopwood.*
Brigadier-General, General Staff (Operations).	Brig.-General R. A. Cassels.
Brigadier-General, General Staff (Intelligence).	Brig.-General W. H. Beach.
Major-General, Royal Artillery	Major-General C. M. Ross-Johnson.
Engineer-in-Chief	Major-General J. C. Rimington.
Deputy Adjutant-General	Major-General F. F. Ready.
Deputy Quartermaster-General	Major-General the Hon. A. R. M. Stuart-Wortley.
Inspector-General of Communications	Major-General Sir G. F. MacMunn.
Deputy Inspector-General of Communications.	Brig.-General E. L. Sullivan.
Director of Ordnance Services	Brig.-General Sir C. M. Mathew.
Director of Works	Colonel E. C. Ogilvie (officiating).†
Director of Remounts	Brig.-General G. L. Holdsworth.
Director of Supply and Transport	Brig.-General P. C. J. Scott.
Base Commandant (Basra)	Brig.-General D'A. C. Brownlow.
Director of Railways	Brig.-General G. Lubbock.
Deputy Adjutant General, 3rd Echelon	Brig.-General W. N. Campbell.
Director of Inland Water Transport	Brig.-General R. H. W. Hughes.
General Officer Commanding Ist Corps	Lieut.-General Sir A. S. Cobbe.
Brigadier-General, General Staff, Ist Corps.	Brig.-General L. H. R. Pope-Hennessy.
Deputy Adjutant and Quartermaster-General, Ist Corps.	Brig.-General C. Rattray.
Brigadier-General, Royal Artillery, Ist Corps.	Brig.-General G. F. White.
General Officer Commanding 3rd Division.	Major-General A. R. Hoskins.
C.R.A., 3rd Division	Brig.-General H. R. Peck.
General Officer Commanding 7th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General S. R. Davidson.
General Officer Commanding 8th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General S. M. Edwardes.
General Officer Commanding 9th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General C. C. Luard.
General Officer Commanding 7th Division.	Major-General V. B. Fane.
C.R.A., 7th Division	Brig.-General A. D. Musgrave.
General Officer Commanding 19th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General E. J. M. Wood.
General Officer Commanding 21st Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General G. A. J. Leslie.
General Officer Commanding 28th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General C. H. Davies.
General Officer Commanding IIIrd Corps.	Major-General Sir R. G. Egerton.
Brigadier-General, General Staff, IIIrd Corps.	Brig.-General T. Fraser.

* Was succeeded on 17th December by Major-General W. Gillman.

† Brig.-General E. Stokes-Roberts (Director of Works) died on 22nd November, 1917.

Deputy Adjutant and Quartermaster General, IIIrd Corps.	Brig.-General M. E. Willoughby.
Brigadier-General, Royal Artillery, IIIrd Corps.	Brig.-General R. A. Bright.
General Officer Commanding 13th Division.	Major-General Sir W. de S. Cayley.
C.R.A., 13th Division	Brig.-General W. P. L. Davies.
General Officer Commanding 38th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General J. W. O'Dowda.
General Officer Commanding 39th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General T. A. Andrus.
General Officer Commanding 40th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General A. C. Lewin.
General Officer Commanding 14th Division.	Brig.-General W. M. Thomson.
C.R.A., 14th Division	Brig.-General H. T. A. Mackay.
General Officer Commanding 35th Infantry Brigade.	Lieut.-Colonel G. M. Morris (officiating).
General Officer Commanding 36th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General H. F. B. Champain.
General Officer Commanding 37th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General T. R. Maclachlan.
General Officer Commanding Cavalry Division.	Major-General L. C. Jones.
General Officer Commanding 6th Cavalry Brigade.	Brig.-General P. H. Holland-Pryor.
General Officer Commanding 7th Cavalry Brigade	Brig.-General C. E. G. Norton.
General Officer Commanding 15th Division.	Major-General Sir H. T. Brooking.
C.R.A., 15th Division	Brig.-General F. R. Patch.
General Officer Commanding 12th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General F. P. S. Dunsford.
General Officer Commanding 42nd Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General F. G. Lucas.
General Officer Commanding 50th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General A. W. Andrew.
General Officer Commanding 17th Division.	Major-General W. Gillman.*
C.R.A., 17th Division	Brig.-General L. A. Smith.
General Officer Commanding 34th Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General A. G. Wauchope.
General Officer Commanding 51st Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General R. J. T. Hildyard.
General Officer Commanding 52nd Infantry Brigade.	Brig.-General F. A. Andrew.
Commanding, Baghdad Garrison	Brig.-General E. H. Boome.
Commanding, Nasiriya Front	Brig.-General E. C. Tidswell.
Commanding, Karun Front	Brig.-General L. N. Younghusband.
General Officer Commanding Tigris Defences.	Brig.-General H. H. Austin.
General Officer Commanding Euphrates Defences.	Brig.-General F. R. E. Lock.
Administrative Commandant, Amara Section.	Brig.-General H. E. C. B. Nepean.
Civil Commissioner	Sir P. Z. Cox.

* Became Chief of the General Staff to General Marshall early in December, 1917. He was succeeded in command of the 17th Division by Brig.-General G. A. J. Leslie (from 21st Brigade).

APPENDIX XLV.

Distribution of the Troops of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 30th March, 1918.

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS - Baghdad.

Ist CORPS - Headquarters at Samarra.

17th Division - Headquarters at Samarra.

34th Infantry Brigade.	2nd Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment. 31st Punjabis. 1/112th Infantry. 114th Mahrattas. No. 129 Machine Gun Company. 34th Light Trench Mortar Battery (*forming*). 34th Small-arm Ammunition Section. 34th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
51st Infantry Brigade.	1st Highland Light Infantry. 1/2nd Rajputs. 14th Sikhs. 1/10th Gurkhas. No. 257 Machine Gun Company. 51st Light Trench Mortar Battery (*forming*). 51st Small-arm Ammunition Section. 51st Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
52nd Infantry Brigade.	1/6th Hampshire Regiment. 45th Sikhs. 84th Punjabis. 1/113th Infantry. No. 258 Machine Gun Company. 52nd Light Trench Mortar Battery. 52nd Small-arm Ammunition Section. 52nd Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
Artillery.	220th Brigade, R.F.A. (1064th, 1066th and 403rd Batteries) = 18 guns. 221st Brigade, R.F.A. (1067th, 1068th and 404th Batteries) = 18 guns.
Engineers and Pioneers.	Sirmur Sappers and Miners. Malerkotla Sappers and Miners. Tehri-Gahrwal Sappers and Miners. 1/32nd Sikh Pioneers.

17th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 276 Machine Gun Company.
17th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 3, 19, 35 and 36 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 1 Sanitary Section.
No. 7 Mobile Veterinary Section.

18th Division - Headquarters at Akab.

53rd Infantry Brigade.	1/9th Middlesex Regiment. 1/89th Punjabis. 1/3rd Gurkhas. 1/*7th Gurkhas* (*at Falluja, temporarily attached to 15th Division*). No. 207 Machine Gun Company. 53rd Light Trench Mortar Battery (*to be formed*). 53rd Small-arm Ammunition Section (*forming*). 53rd Brigade Supply and Transport Company. *Attached* :— Two sections, Field Searchlight Company. One squadron, Patiala Lancers. Two squadrons, 10th Lancers. One section, 14th Light Armoured Motor Battery. 5th and 8th Companies, Sappers and Miners. No. 37 Combined Field Ambulance.	The 53rd Infantry Brigade and attached troops were temporarily detached to the vicinity of Najaf on the Euphrates.
54th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment. 25th Punjabis. 1/39th Garhwalis. 52nd Sikhs. No. 238 Machine Gun Company. 54th Light Trench Mortar Battery (*to be formed*). 54th Small-arm Ammunition Section (*forming*). 54th Brigade Supply and Transport Company (*forming*).	
55th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th East Surrey Regiment. 1/10th Jats. 1/94th Infantry. 116th Mahrattas. No. 239 Machine Gun Company. 55th Light Trench Mortar Battery (*to be formed*). 55th Small-arm Ammunition Section (*forming*). 55th Brigade Supply and Transport Company (*forming*).	
Cavalry	- *Two squadrons 10th Lancers—(attached to 53rd Infantry Brigade).*	
Artillery.	336th Brigade, R.F.A. ("A," "B," "C" and "D" Batteries) = 22 guns. 337th Brigade, R.F.A. ("A," "B," "C" and 341st Batteries) = 22 guns.	
Engineers and Pioneers.	2nd Field Company, Sappers and Miners. *5th and 8th Field Companies, Sappers and Miners (attached to 53rd Infantry Brigade).* 106th Pioneers (less two companies).	

18th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 249 Machine Gun Company.
18th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company (*forming*).
No. 37 Combined Field Ambulance (attached to 53rd Infantry Brigade).
Nos. 38, 39 and 40 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 22 Sanitary Section.
No. 12 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Corps Troops, Ist Corps.
32nd Lancers.
Ist Corps Heavy Artillery :—
"A" Group (2/86th Heavy Battery; 246th and 392nd Siege Batteries) = 12 guns.
"B" Group (157th Heavy Battery; 159th and 257th Siege Batteries) = 12 guns.
Nos. 788, 789, 901 and 902 Mechanical Transport Companies (caterpillar tractors).
"X," "Y" and "Z" Medium Trench Mortar Batteries.
Ist Corps Signal Company.
No. 1 Printing Section.
No. 1 Litho Section.
No. 50 Ordnance Mobile Workshop.
Ist Corps Troops Supply and Transport Company.

Attached.
- 63rd Squadron, R.F.C.
- 51st Kite Balloon Section, R.F.C.
- 22nd Cavalry.
- Nos. 59 and 93 Anti-aircraft Sections.
- No. 3 Bridging Train.
- Detachment, No. 7 Bridging Train.
- One wagon station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- No. 12 Mobile X-ray Unit.

3rd Division.
This division (late of the Ist Corps) was in process of movement to Basra, preparatory to departure from Mesopotamia to Egypt.

IIIrd CORPS - Headquarters at Baquba.

13th Division - In area west of the Diyala and east of the Tigris rivers. Headquarters at Delli Abbas.

38th Infantry Brigade.
- 6th King's Own Royal Regiment (Lancaster).
- 6th East Lancashire Regiment.
- 6th Prince of Wales' Volunteers (South Lancashire).
- 6th Loyal Regiment (North Lancashire).
- No. 38 Machine Gun Company.
- 38th Light Trench Mortar Battery.
- 38th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 38th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Occupying Jabal Hamrin from the Diyala to the Sakaltutan pass. Brigade headquarters north-east of Delli Abbas.

39th Infantry Brigade.
- 9th Royal Warwickshire Regiment.
- 7th Gloucestershire Regiment.
- 9th Worcestershire Regiment.
- 7th North Staffordshire Regiment.
- No. 39 Machine Gun Company.
- 39th Light Trench Mortar Battery.
- 39th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 39th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Occupying the Windiya-Sindiya line. Brigade headquarters at Diltawa.

40th Infantry Brigade.
- 8th Cheshire Regiment.
- 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers.
- 4th South Wales Borderers.
- 5th Wiltshire Regiment.
- No. 40 Machine Gun Company.
- 40th Light Trench Mortar Battery.
- 40th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 40th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

About Seraijik.

Artillery.
- 55th Brigade, R.F.A. ("A," "B," "C" and 60th Batteries) = 24 guns.
- 66th Brigade, R.F.A. ("A," "B," "C" and 61st Batteries) = 24 guns.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 71st, 72nd and 88th Field Companies, R.E.
- 8th Welch Pioneers.

13th Divisional Cyclist Company.
13th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 273 Machine Gun Company.
13th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
10th Field Bakery.
31st Field Butchery.
39th, 40th and 41st British Field Ambulances.
No. 28 Sanitary Section.
No. 24 Mobile Veterinary Section.

14th Division - In area east of the Diyala, with detachments extending into Persia as far as Kermanshah. Divisional headquarters near Qizil Ribat.

35th Infantry Brigade.
- 1/5th Buffs (East Kent Regiment).
- 37th Dogras.
- 102nd Grenadiers.
- 2/4th Gurkhas.
- No. 185 Machine Gun Company.
- 35th Light Trench Mortar Battery.
- 35th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 35th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Headquarters at Shahraban.

36th Infantry Brigade.
- 1/4th Hampshire Regiment.
- 26th Punjabis.
- 62nd Punjabis.
- 82nd Punjabis.
- No. 186 Machine Gun Company.
- 36th Light Trench Mortar Battery.
- 36th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 36th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Headquarters at Qasr-i-Shirin. Small detachments as far eastward as Kermanshah. One platoon 1/4th Hampshire *en route* to General Dunsterville at Hamadan.

37th Infantry Brigade.
- 2nd Norfolk Regiment.
- 1/67th Punjabis.
- 1/2nd Gurkhas.
- 2/9th Gurkhas.
- No. 187 Machine Gun Company.
- 37th Light Trench Mortar Battery.
- 37th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 37th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Headquarters near Qizil Ribat.

Artillery.
- 13th Brigade, R.F.A. (2nd, 8th, 44th and C/69th Batteries) = 22 guns.
- 30th Brigade, R.F.A. (384th, 385th, 386th and A/69th Batteries) = 22 guns.

Engineers and Pioneers.
- 12th, 13th and 15th Companies, Sappers and Miners.
- 128th Pioneers.

14th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 274 Machine Gun Company.
14th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 20, 21, 22 and 135 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 13 Sanitary Section.
No. 1 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Corps Troops, IIIrd Corps.
12th Cavalry.
IIIrd Corps Heavy Artillery.
"C" Group (2/104th Heavy, 269th and 394th Siege Batteries) = 12 guns.
"D" Group (177th Heavy, 384th and 387th Siege Batteries) = 12 guns.
Nos. 903, 967, 968, 969 Mechanical Transport Companies (caterpillar tractors).
Nos. 136, 137 and 138 Medium Trench Mortar Batteries.
IIIrd Corps Signal Company.
No. 2 Printing Section.
No. 5 Litho Section.
No. 49 Ordnance Mobile Workshop.
IIIrd Corps Troops Supply and Transport Company.

Attached.
30th Squadron, R.F.C. (less two flights).
6th Cavalry Brigade (less 22nd Cavalry and headquarters and two sections, 15th Machine Gun Squadron).
26th Mountain Battery.
Nos. 80 and 92 Anti-aircraft Sections.
No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train (less detachments).
Two wagon and two pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
No. 39 Motor Ambulance Convoy.

CAVALRY DIVISION - Headquarters at Sadiya.

6th Cavalry Brigade - Attached to IIIrd Corps. Brigade headquarters at Shahraban.
14th Hussars.
21st Cavalry.
22nd Cavalry (attached 1st Corps).
15th Machine Gun Squadron (*headquarters and two sections attached 11th Cavalry Brigade*).
No. 2 Field Troop, Sappers and Miners.
6th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Attached.
"S" Battery, R.H.A. = 6 guns.
One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.

7th Cavalry Brigade.
13th Hussars.
13th Lancers.
14th Lancers.
16th Machine Gun Squadron.
7th Cavalry Brigade Field Troop, R.E.
7th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Cavalry Divisional Troops.
"S" Battery, R.H.A. (attached 6th Cavalry Brigade) = 6 guns.
"V" Battery, R.H.A. = 6 guns.
"S" and "V" Battery Ammunition Columns.
Cavalry Divisional Signal Squadron.
One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
Cavalry Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 119 and 131 Combined Cavalry Field Ambulances.
No. 30 Sanitary Section (less detachment).
Nos. 4 and 5 Mobile Veterinary Sections.

11th CAVALRY BRIGADE - Attached 15th Division.

7th Hussars.
Guides Cavalry.
23rd Cavalry.
25th Machine Gun Squadron (*forming*).
"W" Battery, R.H.A. = 6 guns.
"W" Battery Ammunition Column.
No. 5 Field Troop, Sappers and Miners.
11th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop.
11th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
No. 152 Cavalry Combined Field Ambulance.
Detachment, No. 30 Sanitary Section.
No. 8 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Attached.
"M" Anti-aircraft Section.
Headquarters and two sections, 15th Machine Gun Squadron.
One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.

15th DIVISION - On the Euphrates, between Falluja and Ana. Divisional headquarters at Khan Baghdadi.

12th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th Queen's Royal Regiment (West Surrey). 2/39th Garhwalis. 1/43rd Erinpura Regiment. 90th Punjabis. No. 128 Machine Gun Company. 12th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 12th Small-arm Ammunition Section. 12th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.	Brigade headquarters at Haditha.
42nd Infantry Brigade.	1/4th Dorsetshire Regiment. 1/5th Gurkhas. 2/5th Gurkhas. 2/6th Gurkhas. No. 130 Machine Gun Company. 42nd Light Trench Mortar Battery. 42nd Small-arm Ammunition Section. 42nd Brigade Supply and Transport Company.	Headquarters at Khan Baghdadi.
50th Infantry Brigade.	1st Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry. 6th Jats. 24th Punjabis. 1/97th Infantry. No. 256 Machine Gun Company. 50th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 50th Small-arm Ammunition Section. 50th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.	Headquarters near Khan Baghdadi.
Cavalry.	"D" Squadron, 1/1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry. 10th Lancers (less two squadrons).	
Artillery.	215th Brigade, R.F.A. (1086th, 1088th, 816th* and 524th Batteries) = 22 guns. 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (375th, 1070th, 1072nd and 77th Batteries) = 22 guns.	

* The name of the 2/1st Notts Battery, R.H.A., was changed in February, 1918, to 816th Battery, R.F.A.

Engineers and Pioneers:
- 448th, 450th and 451st Field Companies, R.E.
- 48th Pioneers.

15th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 275 Machine Gun Company.
No. 34 Ordnance Mobile Workshop.
15th Divisional Troops Supply and Transport Company.
Nos. 23, 34, 105 and 108, Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 16 Sanitary Section.
No. 6 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Attached to 15th Division.
- 11th Cavalry Brigade.
- Two flights, 30th Squadron, R.F.C.
- No. 52 Kite Balloon Section.
- 395th Siege Battery, R.G.A. = 4 howitzers.
- No. 118 Anti-aircraft Section.
- Independent Divisional Ammunition Column.
- Nos. 8, 13 and 14 (less one section) Light Armoured Motor Batteries.
- 19th Company, Sappers and Miners.
- Detachment, No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train.
- No. 2 Mobile Bridging Train.
- No. 8 Litho Section.
- Two pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- 1/7th Gurkhas.
- No. 1 Combined Field Ambulance.
- No. 27 Casualty Clearing Station.
- No. 12 Mobile X-ray Unit.
- No. 33 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
- No. 40 Motor Ambulance Convoy (less ten cars).

56th INFANTRY BRIGADE - *En route* to the Hilla area.

1/4th Somerset Light Infantry.
1/42nd Deoli Regiment.
95th Infantry.
104th Rifles.
56th Light Trench Mortar Battery (*to be formed*).
56th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

Attached.
- Patiala Lancers (less one squadron).
- Euphrates 13-pounder Q.F. Section.
- 14th Mountain Battery.
- 9th Company, Sappers and Miners (less two sections).
- No. 2 Indian Machine Gun Company (less one section).
- No. 2 L. of C. Signal Company.
- One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
- No. 30 Combined Field Ambulance (modified).
- No. 31 Sanitary Section (less detachment).

KARUN FRONT - Headquarters at Ahwaz.

Ahwaz—
5th Cavalry (less two squadrons).
One section, 21st Mountain Battery = 2 guns.
One section, Anglo-Indian Battery (15-pounders) = 2 guns.
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Section.
One section, Machine Gun Squadron.
8th Rajputs (less two companies).
Section, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
Karun Front Signal Section.
One lorry and one pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.

Detachment, No. 695 Mechanical Transport Company.
No. 29 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).
"O" Company, Supply and Transport.

Shush—
Two Squadrons, 5th Cavalry.
One pack squadron, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.

Tembeh (Maidan-i-Naftun oilfields)—
One company, 8th Rajputs.

Band-i-Qir—
One company, 8th Rajputs.

ARMY TROOPS.

(At Baghdad, unless otherwise stated.)

31st Wing Royal Flying Corps.	30th Squadron (less two flights)	*attached III*rd *Corps.*
	Two flights, 30th Squadron	*attached 15th Division.*
	63rd Squadron	*attached Ist Corps.*
	No. 23 Balloon Company. — 51st Kite Balloon Section.	*attached Ist Corps.*
	No. 23 Balloon Company. — 52nd Kite Balloon Section.	*attached 15th Division.*
Euphrates (2 guns),	13-pounder Q.F. Section	*attached 56th Infantry Brigade.*
395th Siege Battery, R.G.A. (4 6-inch howitzers).		*attached 15th Division.*
396th Siege Battery, R.G.A. (4 6-inch howitzers).		
26th Mountain Battery (6 guns)		*attached III*rd *Corps.*
Nos. 59 and 93 Anti-aircraft Sections		*attached Ist Corps.*
Nos. 80 and 92 Anti-aircraft Sections		*attached III*rd *Corps.*
No. 118 Anti-aircraft Section		*attached 15th Division.*
No. 208 Anti-aircraft Section		*attached Advanced L. of C. Defences.*
"M" Anti-aircraft Section		*attached 11th Cavalry Brigade.*
"N" Anti-aircraft Section		*attached Advanced L. of C. Defences.*
"O" Anti-aircraft Section, "P" Anti-aircraft Section		*forming.*
"R" Anti-aircraft Section		*attached Advanced L. of C. Defences.*
Independent Divisional Ammunition Column.		*attached 15th Division.*
9th Company, Sappers and Miners (less two sections).		*attached 56th Infantry Brigade.*
Two sections, 9th Company, Sappers and Miners.		*attached Euphrates Defences.*
19th Company, Sappers and Miners		*attached 15th Division.*
No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train		*attached III*rd *Corps, less detachment with 15th Division.*
No. 2 Mobile Bridging Train		*attached 15th Division.*
No. 3 Bridging Train		*attached Ist Corps.*
No. 7 Bridging Train (half train)		*attached Ist Corps.*
Field Searchlight Company		*Headquarters at Basra; detachments as shown elsewhere.*

64th Pioneers.
No. 2 Litho Section.
Nos. 5 and 6 Printing Sections.
Cinema Company.
Disciplinary Military Labour Company *attached Advanced Section L. of C.*
Army Signal Company and Cable and Airline Sections.
Headquarters 1st (Australia and New Zealand) Wireless Signal Squadron (with one wagon and one pack station).

No. 4 General Headquarters Wireless Observation Group.
Headquarters Light Armoured Motor Brigade.

No. 6 Light Armoured Motor Battery	*One car at Hamadan.* *One car at Kermanshah.* *Two cars at Khaniqin.* *Four cars at Baghdad.*
No. 7 Light Armoured Motor Battery (less four cars).	*at Basra.*
No. 8 Light Armoured Motor Battery ..	*attached 15th Division.*
No. 13 Light Armoured Motor Battery	*attached 15th Division.*
No. 14 Light Armoured Motor Battery	*Three sections attached 15th Division.* *One section attached 53rd Infantry Brigade.*
No. 15 Light Armoured Motor Battery	*attached 1st Corps.*
No. 2 Indian Machine Gun Company ..	*attached 56th Infantry Brigade, except for one section.*

Army Troops Supply and Transport Company.
"L" Company, Supply and Transport.
"N" Company, Supply and Transport (Pack Pony Corps).

No. 1 Mechanical Transport Column (Nos. 818, 971 and 1014 Companies).	*Bulk with 15th Division.*
No. 2 Mechanical Transport Column (Nos. 784, 815 and 954 Companies).	*Baquba–Khaniqin.*
No. 3 Mechanical Transport Column (Nos. 729, 730 and 783 Companies).	*Headquarters at Baghdad. Detachments at Khaniqin and with Dunsterforce.*
No. 4 Mechanical Transport Column (Nos. 596, 953 and 976 Companies).	*Headquarters at Baghdad.*
No.1013 Mechanical Transport Company	*With 15th Division.*
No.1014 Mechanical Transport Company	*With 15th Division.*
No.1015 Mechanical Transport Company	*En route to Baghdad.*
No.1016 Mechanical Transport Company	*With 15th Division.*
No.1017 Mechanical Transport Company	*En route to Baghdad.*
No.1018 Mechanical Transport Company	*Baghdad.*
No.1019 Mechanical Transport Company	*Basra.*
No.1020 Mechanical Transport Company	*Basra.*
No.1023 (Burma) Mechanical Transport Company.	*Headquarters at Hilla.*
Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4 and 5 Mule Columns.	
3rd, 4th, 5th and 6th Camel Corps.	
No. 1 Combined Field Ambulance ..	*attached 15th Division.*
No. 30 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).	*attached 56th Brigade.*
No.33 Motor Ambulance Convoy ..	*attached 15th Division.*
No. 39 Motor Ambulance Convoy ..	*attached III rd Corps.*
No 40 Motor Ambulance Convoy (less 10 cars).	*attached 15th Division.*
Two sections, No. 20 British Field Ambulance.	*attached Advanced Base.*
No. 11 Mobile X-ray Unit	*at Samarra.*
No. 12 Mobile X-ray Unit	*attached 15th Division.*
Water Examination Unit.	
No. 31 Sanitary Section	*attached 56th Brigade, less Detachment with Euphrates Defences.*

LINES OF COMMUNICATION.

ADVANCED LINE OF COMMUNICATION DEFENCES - (Headquarters at Baghdad).

4th Rajputs.
36th Sikhs.
80th Carnatic Infantry.
96th Infantry.
119th Infantry.
Railway Armoured Motor Battery.
"P" Company, Supply and Transport.
Attached. { No. 208 Anti-aircraft Section.
"N" and "R" Anti-aircraft Sections.

Note.—On the 3rd January, 1918, the designation of "Baghdad Garrison" was changed to "Advanced L. of C. Defences," and its role was extended to include the defence of railways radiating forward from Baghdad up to railheads inclusive, and along the Diyala river between Diyala Post (exclusive) and Baquba (inclusive).

On the 30th March, 1918, the troops of the Advanced L. of C. Defences provided detachments garrisoning three stations on the Baghdad–Falluja railway, ten stations on the Baghdad–Samarra railway and its offshoot to Sadiya, and six stations on the Baghdad–Baquba–Shahraban railway.

TIGRIS DEFENCES - (Headquarters at Amara).

No. 1 Section.—From Kurmat Ali to Amara, inclusive. Section headquarters at Amara.

44th Merwara Infantry.
Detachments, 9th Bhopal Infantry.
1/4th Devonshire Regiment.
2/7th Hampshire Regiment.
Anglo-Indian Battery (less three sections).
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company (less three sections).
No. 33 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).

No. 2 Section.—From Ali Gharbi to Imam Mahdi, inclusive. Section headquarters at Kut, where also was the bulk of the troops.

2/6th Devonshire Regiment.
9th Bhopal Infantry (less detachments in No. 1 Section).
1/6th Gurkhas.
49th Bengalis.
11th Lancers and Machine Gun Section.
15th Mountain Battery.
Two sections, Anglo-Indian Battery.
Two searchlight sets.
One section, No. 1 L. of C. Signal Company.
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
One armoured car.
Two sections, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
"M" Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 32 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).

No. 3 Section.—From Imam Mahdi (exclusive) to Diyala (inclusive). Section headquarters at Aziziya.

126th Baluchistan Infantry.
87th Punjabis.
No. 31 Combined Field Ambulance (*modified*).

EUPHRATES DEFENCES - (Headquarters at Nasiriya).

No. 1 Section.—From Shaiba along the Basra-Nasiriya railway to Tel el Lam. Section headquarters at Shaiba.

One troop, Patiala Lancers.
21st Mountain Battery (less two sections).
108th Infantry.
Two armoured trains.
Detachments, "Q" Company, Supply and Transport.

No. 2 Section.—Headquarters at Nasiriya. Small detachments at Suq ash Shuyukh and Mazliq.

One squadron (less one troop), Patiala Lancers.
Volunteer Battery (nine 15-pounders and one 5-inch gun).
1/6th Devonshire Regiment.
99th Infantry.
Two platoons, 13th Rajputs.
One pack and one lorry station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
One section, No. 1 L. of C. Signal Company.
One section, No. 2 Indian Machine Gun Company.
" Q " Company, Supply and Transport (less detachments).
No. 24 Combined Field Ambulance (less one section).
Attached. - One section, 9th Company, Sappers and Miners.
One section, Field Searchlight Company.

No. 3 Section.—Headquarters at Samawa. Small detachments at Shinafiya and Darraji.

One squadron, Patiala Lancers.
One section, 21st Mountain Battery.
13th Rajputs (less two platoons).
Two pack stations, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
Detachment, " Q " Company, Supply and Transport.
One section, No. 24 Combined Field Ambulance.
Attached - One section, 9th Company, Sappers and Miners.

ADMINISTRATION.

Headquarters of Inspector-General of Communications at Basra.

Base Section.

Fao—
Details, Royal Artillery (with one 18-pounder and one 4-inch gun).
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Section.
Attached - One section, Field Searchlight Company.
Basra—
3rd Echelon, General Headquarters.
Headquarters, Line of Communications.
Headquarters, Base.
Headquarters, Directorate of Inland Water Transport.
Headquarters, Directorate of Port Administration and Conservancy.
Headquarters, Directorate of Sea Transport.
One section, R.F.A. (18-pounder)—Base Depot.
Headquarters, Works Directorate (L. of C. and Base).
Headquarters, Engineer Field Park and No. 47 Base Park Company.
No. 1 Works Company.
Reclamation Section.
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Company, R.E.
Electrical and Mechanical Composite Company, R.E. (less detachments).
Headquarters 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron (detachments as shown elsewhere).
Nos. 32 to 37 ship stations, River section (on river ships).
Signal Service Park and Depot.
Headquarters and two sections, No. 1 L. of C. Signal Company.

Base Section—*cont.*

Aircraft Park, R.F.C.
79th Carnatic Infantry.
83rd Wallajabad Light Infantry.
2/9th Delhi Infantry (less detachment).
One company, 85th Burma Infantry.
Two companies, 106th Pioneers—*attached.*
Nos. 1, 2 and 3 British Base Depots.
Nos. 1, 2, 3 and 4 Indian Base Depots.
No. 5 Indian Base Depot (Followers).
Indian General Base Depot.
Supply Personnel Reinforcement Depot.
Base Supply Depot.
Base Transport Depot (" A," " B," " C," " D," " E " and " G " Companies).
Base Mechanical Transport Depot (No. 695 M.T. Company)—(less detachments).
Base M.T. Repair Workshops (No. 962 M.T. Company).
No. 1 (Lucknow) and No. 2 (Cawnpore) Bullock Corps.
Headquarters Military Forwarding Officer.
Nos. 3, 33 and 40 British General Hospitals.
Nos. 8, 9, 10, 20, 22, 25 and 27 Indian General Hospitals.
Officers' Hospital.
Two British convalescent depots (one at Mohammerah).
Indian Convalescent Depot (Mohammerah).
Isolation Hospital.
Nos. 10, 19, 27 and 29 Indian and 99 British Sanitary Sections.
Base Depot of Medical Stores.
No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy—less 27 cars (No. 656 M.T. Company).
Medical Reinforcement Camp.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
Nos. 1 and 3 (*forming*) Hospital Trains.
Headquarters Base Remount Depot.
No. 1 Remount Squadron.
No. 1 Indian Syce Corps.
Nos. 1 (less detachments), 5, 7, 9 and 21 Labour Corps.
Nos. 21, 22, 23, 24 and 30 Local Labour Corps.
Mauritius Labour Battalion.
Sierra Leone Labour Corps (for Inland Water Transport).
No. 2 Porter Corps.
Veterinary Convalescent Depot.
Nos. 2, 6 and 18 Field Veterinary Sections.
No. 2 Base Depot Veterinary Stores.
Base Ordnance Depots.
Nos. 30, 55 and 111 Companies, Army Ordnance Corps.
Indian Ordnance detachments (two companies).
No. 35 Ordnance Mobile Workshop.
Military Accounts Department.
Base Post Office.
Base Stationery Depot.
Prisoners of War Camp.
Nahr Umar—
Headquarters, Administrative Post.
Detachment, Works Directorate and Electrical and Mechanical Section.
Detachment, 2/9th Delhi Infantry.
Detachments, Nos. 1 and 6 Labour Corps.
Nos. 29, 37 and 39 (local) Labour Corps.
Nos. 10, 11 and 12 (Jail) Porter Corps.
No. 57 Combined Station Hospital (less detachment).

Nasiriya Section.

Nasiriya—
- Headquarters Administrative Section.
- Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
- Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Section.
- Detachment, Inland Water Transport, R.E.
- Detachment, 10th Porter Corps.
- Advanced Supply Depot.
- Expeditionary Force Canteen.
- Military Forwarding Office, Sub-Depot.
- No. 83 Combined Stationary Hospital.
- Detachment, No. 31 Sanitary Section.
- No. 8 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.

Qurna Section.

Qurna—
- Headquarters Administrative Section.
- Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
- Detachment, No. 2 Works Company.
- Detachment, Works Directorate and Electrical and Mechanical Section.
- No. 27 Local Labour Corps.
- Intermediate Supply Depot.
- "J" Company, Supply and Transport.
- Detachment, No. 57 Combined Station Hospital.

Amara Section.

Qala Salih—
- One company, 85th Burma Infantry.

Amara—
- Headquarters Administrative Section.
- No. 2 Works Company (less detachments).
- Detachments, Works Directorate and Electrical and Mechanical Section.
- Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
- One lorry station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Advanced Depot, Royal Flying Corps.
- 85th Burma Infantry (less two companies).
- No. 2 (Indian) Railway Construction Battalion.
- No. 3 (British) Railway Construction Battalion.
- Nos. 25 and 36 Local Labour Corps.
- British and Indian depots.
- Ordnance detachments.
- "I" Company, Supply and Transport.
- Intermediate Supply Depot.
- British and Indian Convalescent Depot.
- Isolation Hospital.
- Nos. 1, 2 and 32 British General Hospitals.
- Nos. 12, 21, 23 and 42 Indian General Hospitals.
- Ten cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
- No. 3 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.
- Headquarters, River Sick Convoy Unit.
- Nos. 17 and 46 Sanitary Sections.
- Headquarters Remount Depot.
- Nos. 4 and 6 Remount Squadrons.
- Nos. 1 and 9 Field Veterinary Sections.
- Military Forwarding Office (Sub-depot).

Kut Section.

Shaikh Saad—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Detachment, Base Mechanical Transport Depot.
- Detachment, No. 10 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 7 Porter Corps.
- Detachment, No. 101 Sanitary Section.
- Detachment, Madras Gardeners.

Kut Section—*cont.*

Kut al Amara—
- Headquarters Administrative Section.
- Detachment, Works Directorate and Electrical and Mechanical Section.
- Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
- One lorry station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Two companies, 122nd Infantry.
- Rest Camp.
- Detachment, "N" Company, Supply and Transport.
- Intermediate Supply Depot.
- Detachment, Mysore Transport Corps.
- No. 10 Labour Corps (less detachments).
- Detachments, Nos. 4, 8, 11 and 31 (local) Labour Corps.
- Nos. 5, 6 and 7 (less detachments) Porter Corps.
- Military Forwarding Office (Sub-depot).
- No. 133 British General Hospital.
- No. 24 Indian General Hospital.
- Five cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
- Nos. 2 and 4 (*forming*) Hospital Trains.
- No. 7 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.
- Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
- No. 101 Sanitary Section (less detachments).
- Ordnance detachments.

Aziziya—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Detachment, Works Directorate.
- Headquarters, Advanced Supply Depot.
- Detachment, No. 4 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 5 Porter Corps.
- Post Hospital.
- Detachment, No. 101 Sanitary Section.

Advanced Section.

Baghdad—
- Headquarters, Advanced Section L. of C.
- Army Ammunition Park.
- Advanced Signal Park.
- Advanced Echelon, Aircraft Park.
- Headquarters Works Directorate and Electrical and Mechanical Section.
- No. 3 Works Company.
- 300th Electrical and Mechanical Company, R.E.
- Inland Water Transport, R.E., Workshops.
- Engineer Field Parks, Advanced Base (right and left banks).
- One company, Anglo-Indian Battalion.
- 73rd Carnatic Infantry (less detachments).
- Machine Gun Corps Centre.
- Stokes Mortar School.
- Physical and Bayonet Training School (*forming*).
- Signal School.
- School of Cookery.
- Rest Camps (right and left bank).
- Advanced Supply Depot.
- Nos. 312 and 313 Depot Units of Supply.
- No. 1 L. of C. Supply Company (less detachments).
- Advanced Transport Depot ("F" and "H" Companies, Supply and Transport).
- Mysore (Imperial Service) Transport Corps.
- No. 2 (less detachment), 3, 10 (one company), 11 (less detachment), 26, 28, 32, 35 and 40 Labour Corps.
- Nos. 1, 3 (less detachments), 4 (less detachments) and 8 Porter Corps.

Advanced Section—*cont.*

- Expeditionary Force Canteens (right and left banks).
- Military Forwarding Offices (right and left banks).
- British and Indian War Gifts Depot.
- Nos. 23 and 31 British Stationary Hospitals.
- Nos. 61 and 70 Indian Stationary Hospitals.
- No. 65 British General Hospital.
- No. 39 Indian General Hospital.
- No. 7 Hospital Train.
- Officers' Hospital.
- Officers' Convalescent Depot.
- Combined Convalescent Depot.
- Isolation Hospital.
- Advanced Section Depot Medical Stores.
- Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
- Nos. 16 (less detachments) and 30 Casualty Clearing Stations.
- Twelve cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
- Nos. 14 and 100 Sanitary Sections.
- Ceylon Sanitary Company.
- Advanced Remount Depot.
- Nos. 2, 3 and 5 Remount Squadrons.
- Advanced Depot Veterinary Stores.
- Veterinary Hospital.
- Nos. 7, 10, 12 and 16 Field Veterinary Sections.
- Advanced Ordnance Depot.
- Advanced Stationary Depot.

Falluja—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
- No. 12 and detachment, No. 4 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 3 Porter Corps.

Dhibban—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- No. 8 and detachment, No. 2 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 3 Porter Corps.
- No. 15 Casualty Clearing Station.
- No. 6 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.

Sadiya—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Two sections, No. 20 British Field Ambulance.

Samarra—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
- Detachments, 4th and 11th Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 3 Porter Corps.
- No. 19 Casualty Clearing Station, with No. 11 Mobile X-ray Unit attached.
- Expeditionary Force Canteen.

Baquba Road—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Detachment, 73rd Carnatic Infantry.
- 122nd Infantry (less 2½ companies).
- Detachment, No. 10 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 3 Porter Corps.
- Expeditionary Force Canteen.
- No. 20 Casualty Clearing Station (less detachment).

Abu Saida—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Detachment, No. 11 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 16 Casualty Clearing Station.

Advanced Section—*cont.*

Shahraban—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.

Ruz—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Detachment, No. 11 Labour Corps.
- Detachment, No. 20 Casualty Clearing Station.
- No. 5 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.

Table Mountain—
- Headquarters Administrative Post.
- Detachment, No. 11 Labour Corps.

APPENDIX XLVI.

Distribution of the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 19th October 1918.

GENERAL HEADQUARTERS .. .. Baghdad.

IST CORPS .. .. .. On the Tigris, at and north of Tikrit.

17th Division—

34th Infantry Brigade.	2nd Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment. 1/112th Infantry. 114th Mahrattas. No. 129 Machine Gun Company. 34th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 34th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
51st Infantry Brigade.	1st Highland Light Infantry. 14th Sikhs. 1/10th Gurkhas. No. 257 Machine Gun Company. 51st Light Trench Mortar Battery. 51st Small-arm Ammunition Section.
52nd Infantry Brigade.	1/6th Hampshire Regiment. 1/113th Infantry. 45th Sikhs. No. 258 Machine Gun Company. 52nd Light Trench Mortar Battery. 52nd Small-arm Ammunition Section.
Artillery.	220th Brigade R.F.A. (1064th, 1066th, 403rd* and Anglo-Indian Battery)† = 22 guns. 221st Brigade R.F.A. (1067th, 1068th, 404th* and Volunteer Battery†). = 22 guns. X/17 Medium Trench Mortar Battery.
Engineers and Pioneers.	Malerkotla Sapper and Miner Company. Tehri-Garhwal Sapper and Miner Company. *Sirmur Sapper and Miner Company (attached IIIrd Corps).* 1/32nd Sikh Pioneers.
	17th Divisional Signal Company. No. 276 Machine Gun Company. 17th Divisional Train. Nos. 3, 19, 35 and 36 Combined Field Ambulances. No. 1 Sanitary Section. No. 7 Mobile Veterinary Section.

18th Division—

53rd Infantry Brigade.	1/9th Middlesex Regiment. 1/3rd Gurkhas. 1/7th Gurkhas. No. 207 Machine Gun Company. 53rd Light Trench Mortar Battery. 53rd Small-arm Ammunition Section.
54th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment. 52nd Sikhs. 1/3th Garhwalis. No. 238 Machine Gun Company. 54th Light Trench Mortar Battery 54th Small-arm ammunition Section.

* Six-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.
Four-gun 18-pounder battery.

55th Infantry Brigade.	1/5th East Surrey Regiment. 116th Mahrattas. 87th Punjabis. No. 239 Machine Gun Company. 55th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 55th Small-arm ammunition Section.
Artillery.	336th Brigade R.F.A. ("A," "B," "C" and "D"* Batteries) = 22 guns. 337th Brigade R.F.A. ("A," "B," "C" and 341st* Batteries) = 22 guns. X/18 Medium Trench Mortar Battery.
Engineers and Pioneers.	2nd, 6th and 8th Companies, Sappers and Miners. 106th Pioneers (attached IIIrd Corps).
	18th Divisional Signal Company. No. 249 Machine Gun Company. 18th Divisional Train. Nos. 37, 38, 39 and 40 Combined Field Ambulances. No. 22 Sanitary Section. No. 12 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Corps Troops, Ist Corps.

	32nd Lancers and machine gun section. Ist Corps Signal Company. No. 1 Printing Section. No. 1 Litho Section. Ist Corps Troops Supply and Transport Company. Nos. 50 and 61 Ordnance Mobile Workshops.
Attached.	63rd Squadron, Royal Air Force (less half flight). Half flight, 72nd Squadron, Royal Air Force. 7th Cavalry Brigade = 6 guns. 11th Cavalry Brigade = 6 guns. 56th Infantry Brigade. 74th Brigade R.G.A. (2/86th Heavy and 159th Siege Battery) = 8 guns. 101st Brigade, R.G.A. (157th Heavy, 246th, 257th and 395th Siege Batteries) = 16 guns. No. 2 Indian Mountain Artillery Brigade = 12 guns. Independent Divisional Ammunition Column. Nos. 59 and 118 and "O" Anti-aircraft Sections. 8th and 14th Light Armoured Motor Batteries. 448th and 450th Field Companies, R.E. One section, Field Searchlight Company. Detachment, No. 1 (Mobile) Bridging Train, Sappers and Miners. No. 2 (Mobile) and No. 3 Bridging Train, Sappers and Miners. No. 1 Weldon Bridging Section, Sappers and Miners. No. 67 Motor Airline Section. No. B. X. Cable Section. One cable section, Army Signal Company. One wagon and one motor station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron. One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron. Nos. 40 and 45 Motor Ambulance Convoys. No. 33 (Local) Labour Corps.

*Four-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.

IIIrd Corps .. .. .. Headquarters near Shahraban.

13th Division—Headquarters at Delli Abbas. The division covered a large area west of the Diyala river, from about Delli Abbas as far north as Tauq.

38th Infantry Brigade.	6th King's Own Royal Regiment (Lancaster). 6th East Lancashire Regiment. 6th Prince of Wales' Volunteers (South Lancashire). 6th Loyal Regiment (North Lancashire). No. 38 Machine Gun Company. 38th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 38th Small-arm Ammunition Section. *Attached*—2/7th Hampshire Regiment.	About Delli Abbas.
40th Infantry Brigade.	8th Cheshire Regiment. 8th Royal Welch Fusiliers. 4th South Wales Borderers. 5th Wiltshire Regiment. No. 40 Machine Gun Company. 40th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 40th Small-arm Ammunition Section.	Much split up. In Tauq-Kifri-Qara Tepe area.
Artillery.	55th Brigade, R.F.A. (" A," " B," " C " and 60th* Battery) = 24 guns. 66th Brigade, R.F.A. (" A " " B," " C " and 61st* Battery) = 24 guns. X/13 Medium Trench Mortar Battery.	
Engineers and Pioneers.	71st and 88th Field Companies, R.E. 8th Welch Regiment (Pioneers).	

13th Divisional Cyclist Company.
13th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 273 Machine Gun Company.
13th Divisional Train.
10th Field Bakery.
31st Field Butchery.
Nos. 39 and 41 British Field Ambulances.
No. 28 Sanitary Section.
No. 24 Mobile Veterinary Section.

14th Division—Headquarters at Mirjana, near Qizil Ribat. The division was located east of the Diyala river and distributed from Shahraban northward to Khaniqin.

35th Infantry Brigade	1/5th Buffs (East Kent Regiment). 37th Dogras. 102nd Grenadiers. No. 185 Machine Gun Company. 35th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 35th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
37th Infantry Brigade.	2nd Norfolk Regiment. 82nd Punjabis. 2/9th Gurkhas. No. 187 Machine Gun Company. 37th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 37th Small-arm Ammunition Section.

*Six-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.

56th Infantry Brigade.	*1/4th Somerset Light Infantry.* *104th Rifles.* *1/42nd Deoli Regiment.* *No. 2 Indian Machine Gun Company.* *56th Light Trench Mortar Battery.* *56th Small-arm Ammunition Section.* *56th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.* — Attached to Ist Corps
Artillery.	30th Brigade, R.F.A. (384th, 385th, 386th and A/69th* Battery) = 22 guns. X/14 Medium Trench Mortar Battery.
Engineers and Pioneers.	13th Company, Sappers and Miners. *12th and 15th Companies, Sappers and Miners.* *128th Pioneers.* — With Persian L. of C.

14th Divisional Signal Company.
No. 247 Machine Gun Company.
14th Divisional Train.
Nos. 21, 22, 23 and 135 Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 13 Sanitary Section.
No. 1 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Corps Troops, IIIrd Corps.

12th Cavalry and machine gun section.
IIIrd Corps Signal Company.
No. 2 Printing Section.
No. 5 Litho Section.
IIIrd Corps Troops Supply and Transport Company
Nos. 35 and 49 Ordnance Mobile Workshops.

Attached.

30th Squadron, Royal Air Force (less one flight).
One flight, 72nd Squadron, Royal Air Force.
6th Cavalry Brigade = 6 guns.
64th Pioneers.
38th Brigade, R.G.A. = 12 guns.
Nos. 80, 92, " M " and " P " Anti-aircraft Sections.
No. 1 (Mobile) Bridging Train, Sappers and Miners (less detachment).
No. 2 Weldon Bridging Section, Sappers and Miners.
Sirmur Sappers and Miners Company.
106th Pioneers.
13th Light Armoured Motor Battery.
One wagon and three pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
No. 39 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
Nos. 5, 10, 11 and 14 (Indian) Labour Corps.
No. 14 Porter Corps.
Nos. 38, 42, 44, 46, 47, 48, 49 and 50 (Local) Labour Corps.

15th Division .. .. .. Euphrates line. Headquarters at Ramadi.

12th Infantry Brigade (Headquarters at Hilla).	1/5th Queen's Royal Regiment (West Surrey). 1/43rd Erinpura Regiment. 90th Punjabis. No. 128 Machine Gun Company. 12th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 12th Small-arm Ammunition Section.

* Four-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.

42nd Infantry Brigade (Headquarters at Ramadi).	1/4th Dorsetshire Regiment. 1/5th Gurkhas. 2/5th Gurkhas. No. 130 Machine Gun Company. 42nd Light Trench Mortar Battery. 42nd Small-arm Ammunition Section.
50th Infantry Brigade (Headquarters at Hit).	1st Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry. 6th Jats. 1/97th Infantry. No. 256 Machine Gun Company. 50th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 50th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
Artillery.	215th Brigade R.F.A. (1086th, 1088th, 816th and 524th* Battery) = 22 guns. 222nd Brigade, R.F.A. (375th, 1070th, 1072nd and 429th* Battery) = 22 guns. X/15 Medium Trench Mortar Battery.
Engineers and Pioneers.	*448th and 450th Field Companies, R.E.—With 1st Corps.* 451st Field Company, R.E. *48th Pioneers—With Persian L. of C.*
	15th Divisional Signal Company. No. 275 Machine Gun Company. 15th Divisional Train. No. 34 Ordnance Mobile Workshop. Nos. 34, 105 and 108 Combined Field Ambulances No. 16 Sanitary Section. No. 6 Mobile Veterinary Section.
Attached.	Half flight, 63rd Squadron, R.A.F. 22nd Cavalry (less two squadrons) and machine gun section. 10th Lancers and machine gun section. 177th Heavy Battery, R.G.A. = 4 guns. 14th Mountain Battery = 6 guns. No. 93 Anti-Aircraft Section. 19th Company, Sappers and Miners. No. 7 Bridging Train. One section, Field Searchlight Company. No. 8 Litho Section. No. 1 L. of C. Signal Company (less three sections). Two pack stations, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron. One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron. No. 2 L. of C. Signal Company (less one section). 7th Light Armoured Motor Battery (less three sections). No. 27 Casualty Clearing Station. No. 12 Mobile X-Ray Unit. No. 1 Combined Field Ambulance. No. 31 Sanitary Section (less detachment). Nos. 3 and 5 Porter Corps. Nos. 8 and 12 (Indian) Labour Corps. No. 34 (Local) Labour Corps. No. 1 Disciplinary Military Labour Company.

* Four-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.

6TH CAVALRY BRIGADE.

Attached III rd Corps.

21st Cavalry.
11th Lancers (less one squadron).
Patiala Lancers (less two squadrons).
15th Machine Gun Squadron.
"S" Battery, R.H.A. = 6 guns.
No. 2 Field Troop, Sappers and Miners.
6th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop.
6th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
No. 131 Combined Cavalry Field Ambulance.
Detachment, No. 30 Sanitary Section.
No. 5 Mobile Veterinary Section.

7TH CAVALRY BRIGADE.

Attached Ist Corps.

13th Hussars.
13th Lancers.
14th Lancers.
16th Machine Gun Squadron.
"V" Battery, R.H.A. = 6 guns.
7th Cavalry Brigade Field Troop, R.E.
7th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop.
7th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
No. 119 Combined Cavalry Field Ambulance.
Detachment, No. 30 Sanitary Section.
No. 4 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Attached—One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.

11TH CAVALRY BRIGADE.

Attached Ist Corps.

7th Hussars.
Guides Cavalry.
23rd Cavalry.
25th Machine Gun Squadron.
"W" Battery, R.H.A. = 6 guns.
No. 5 Field Troop, Sappers and Miners.
11th Cavalry Brigade Signal Troop.
11th Cavalry Brigade Supply and Transport Company.
No. 152 Combined Cavalry Field Ambulance.
Detachment, No. 30 Sanitary Section.
No. 8 Mobile Veterinary Section.

Attached—One pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.

NORTH PERSIA FORCE.

Headquarters at Kazvin.

36th Infantry Brigade.	14th Hussars and machine gun section. 1/4th Hampshire Regiment. 1/2nd Gurkhas. 1/6th Gurkhas. 36th Sikhs. No. 186 Machine Gun Company. 36th Light Trench Mortar Battery. 36th Small-arm Ammunition Section. 36 Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

39th Infantry Brigade.
- 9th Royal Warwickshire Regiment.
- 7th Gloucestershire Regiment.
- 9th Worcestershire Regiment.
- 7th North Staffordshire Regiment.
- No. 39 Machine Gun Company.
- *39th Light Trench Mortar Battery—Attached Bombing and Light Mortar School.*
- 39th Small-arm Ammunition Section.
- 39th Brigade Supply and Transport Company.

- 13th Brigade, R.F.A. (2nd, 8th, 44th, and C/69* Battery) = 22 guns.
- 21st Mountain Battery = 6 guns.
- 72nd Field Company, R.E.
- "A," "B" and "C" Squadrons, Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade.
- North Persia Force Signal Company.
- No. 20 Combined Field Ambulance.
- No. 40 British Field Ambulance.
- Dunsterforce Armoured Car Brigade Medical Unit.
- "L" Company, Supply and Transport.

Attached—
- One flight, 30th Squadron, R.A.F.
- 1½ flights, 72nd Squadron, R.A.F.
- One wagon and one pack station, 1st Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Three pack and four lorry stations, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
- One station, No. 5 Wireless Signal Squadron R.E.
- 6th Light Armoured Motor Battery (less one section).
- 15th Light Armoured Motor Battery.
- Detachment, No. 16 Casualty Clearing Station.
- Detachment, No. 33 Motor Ambulance Convoy.

PERSIAN LINE OF COMMUNICATION.

Headquarters at Hamadan.

- "D" Squadron, 1/1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry.
- 26th Punjabis.
- 62nd Punjabis.
- 26th Mountain Battery = 6 guns.
- One wagon station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Special supply section.
- Two sections, No. 20 British Field Ambulance.
- No. 31 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
- No. 32 Combined Field Ambulance.
- No. 1 British General Hospital.

Attached—
- 5th, 12th, 15th and 61st Companies, Sappers and Miners.
- 48th Pioneers.
- 128th Pioneers.
- No. 33 Motor Ambulance Convoy (less detachment)
- No. 41 Sanitary Section and Divisional Disinfection Section.
- Field Remount Section.
- Nos. 41, 43 and 55 (Local) Labour Corps.

* Four-gun 4·5-inch howitzer battery.

KARUN FRONT.

Headquarters at Ahwaz.

- 5th Cavalry and machine gun section.
- 31st Mountain Battery (less one section) — 4 guns.
- 8th Rajputs.
- Section, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
- Karun Front Section, Sappers and Miners.
- Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Section.
- Karun Front Signal Section.
- One cabinet station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
- Two pack stations, 2nd Wireless Signal Section.
- Detachment, No. 695 Mechanical Transport Company, A.S.C.
- "O" Company, Supply and Transport.
- No. 29 Combined Field Ambulance.
- Ahwaz Post Hospital.

ARMY TROOPS.

At Baghdad, except as otherwise noted.

31st Wing, Royal Air Force*—Headquarters.

30th Squadron	*Attached IIIrd Corps and North Persia Force.*
63rd Squadron	*Attached 1st Corps and 15th Division.*
Headquarters 72nd Squadron.	
½ flight, 72nd Squadron	*Attached 1st Corps.*
1 flight, 72nd Squadron.	*Attached IIIrd Corps.*
1½ flights, 72nd Squadron	*Attached North Persia Force.*
Aircraft Park.	
10th Lancers	*Attached 15th Division.*
22nd Cavalry (less two squadrons)	*Attached 15th Division.*
14th Mountain Battery	*Attached 15th Division.*
No. 2 Mountain Artillery Brigade (25th and 34th Batteries)	*Attached 1st Corps.*
Nos. 59, 80, 92, 93, 118 and 208 Anti-aircraft Sections	*Attached as shown elsewhere.*
"M," "N," "O," "P," "R" Anti-aircraft Sections	*Attached as shown elsewhere.*
Independent Divisional Ammunition Column	*Attached 1st Corps.*
38th Brigade, R.G.A.	*Attached IIIrd Corps.*
2/104th Heavy Battery.	
269th Siege Battery.	
No. 903 M.T. Company.	
384th Siege Battery	
No. 968 M.T. Company.	
74th Brigade, R.G.A.	*Headquarters attached 1st Corps.*
177th Heavy Battery.	
No. 969 M.T. Company	*Attached 15th Division.*
2/86th Heavy Battery	*Attached 1st Corps.*
159th Siege Battery.	
No. 788 M.T. Company	*Attached 1st Corps.*

* NOTE.—No. 23 Balloon Company was in process of being withdrawn from Mesopotamia overseas.

101st Brigade, R.G.A.	*Attached Ist Corps.*
157th Heavy Battery.	
No. 789 M.T. Company.	
246th Siege Battery.	
No. 901 M.T. Company.	
257th Siege Battery.	
No. 902 M.T. Company.	
395th Siege Battery.	
No. 1028 M.T. Company.	
9th Company, Sappers and Miners.	
19th Company, Sappers and Miners	*Attached 15th Division.*
52nd Company, Sappers and Miners	*Attached Advanced Defences.*
61st Company, Sappers and Miners	*Attached Persian L. of C.*
No. 1 Weldon Bridging Section	*Attached Ist Corps.*
No. 2 Weldon Bridging Section	*Attached IIIrd Corps.*
No. 1 Mobile Bridging Train	*Attached IIIrd Corps.*
No. 2 Mobile Bridging Train	*Attached Ist Corps.*
No. 3 Bridging Train	*Attached Ist Corps.*
No. 7 Bridging Train	*Attached 15th Division.*
Field Searchlight Company	*Headquarters at Basra; detachments as shown elsewhere.*

Nos. 5 and 6 Printing Sections, Sappers and Miners.
No. 2 Litho Section, Sappers and Miners.
Two field survey companies.
Cinema company.
Headquarters 1st (Australia and New Zealand) Wireless Signal Squadron, with one motor station. (*Remaining stations distributed elsewhere*).
No. 4 G.H.Q. Wireless Observation Group.
No. 5 Wireless Section, R.E.
Army Signal Company.

Attached to Army Signal Company.
- No. 63 Airline Section.
- No. 67 Motor Airline Section.
- BX Cable Section.
- DA Cable Section.
- DB Cable Section.

64th Pioneers	*Attached IIIrd Corps.*
Disciplinary Military Labour Company	*Attached 15th Division.*

Light Armoured Motor Brigade—

No. 6 L.A.M. Battery	*With North Persia Force.*
No. 7 L.A.M. Battery (less three Sections)	*With 15th Division.*
No. 8 L.A.M. Battery	*With Ist Corps.*
No. 13 L.A.M. Battery	*With IIIrd Corps.*
No. 14 L.A.M. Battery	*With Ist Corps.*
No. 15 L.A.M. Battery	*With North Persia Force.*

Army Troops Supply and Transport Company.

"L" Company, Supply and Transport	*Attached North Persia Force.*

"N" Company, Supply and Transport.
No. 26 Ordnance Mobile Workshop.
No. 1 Mechanical Transport Column
(729, 783, 971, 1023, 1024 Companies).
No. 2 Mechanical Transport Column
(596, 730, 784, 815, 954, 976, 1016, 1019, 1054, 1055 Companies).
No. 3 Mechanical Transport Column
(808, 1013, 1015, 1018, 1020 Companies).
No. 4 Mechanical Transport Column
(953, 1014, 1017 Companies).
Nos. 2, 3, 4 and 5 Mule Columns.
3rd, 4th, 5th and 6th Camel Corps.

No. 1 Combined Field Ambulance	*Attached 15th Division.*
No. 33 Motor Ambulance Convoy	*Attached Persian L. of C.*
No. 39 Motor Ambulance Convoy	*Attached IIIrd Corps.*
No. 40 Motor Ambulance Convoy	*Attached Ist Corps.*
No. 45 Motor Ambulance Convoy	*Attached Ist Corps.*
No. 11 Mobile X-Ray Unit	*Attached Advanced Defences.*
No. 12 Mobile X-Ray Unit	*Attached 15th Division.*
Water Examination Unit.	
No. 31 Sanitary Section	*Attached 15th Division and Euphrates Defences.*

LINES OF COMMUNICATION.

ADVANCED DEFENCES.

(Headquarters at Baghdad, with detachments garrisoning the railway lines Baghdad—Table Mountain, Baghdad—Tikrit, Baghdad—Dhibban, Baghdad—Hilla).

1/4th Rajputs.
80th Carnatic Infantry.
1/94th Infantry.
1/96th Infantry.
1/119th Infantry.
Railway Armoured Motor Battery.
"P" Company, Supply and Transport.

Attached
- No. 208 Anti-aircraft Section.
- "N" and "R" Anti-aircraft Sections.
- 52nd Company, Sappers and Miners.

JELUS' REFUGEE CAMP, BAQUBA.

No. 42 Indian General Hospital and Disinfection Station.
No. 2 British General Hospital.

Attached
- One squadron, 11th Lancers.
- One squadron, Patiala Lancers.
- 1/4th Devonshire Regiment.

ADMINISTRATION AND DEFENCES.*

FAO AND KHARAQ ISLAND.
Headquarters, Administrative Post.
Detachment, 2/9th Delhi Infantry.
Royal Artillery details, with three guns.
Two platoons, 83rd Wallajahbad Light Infantry.
One cabinet station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
One section, Field Searchlight Company.
Detachment, No. 1 Works Company.
Detachment, Electrical and Mechanical Section.

Base Section.

BASRA.
Third Echelon, General Headquarters (with Nos. 8 and 10 Printing Sections).
Headquarters, Lines of Communication.
Headquarters, Base.
Headquarters, Inland Water Transport Directorate.
Headquarters, Port Directorate.

* At the beginning of October 1918 the Inspector-General of Communications took over control of defences, in addition to administration, on the Tigris line.

Headquarters, Sea Transport Directorate.
Headquarters, Railway Directorate.
Detachment, Aircraft Park, Royal Air Force.
No. 1 Works Company (less detachments).
No. 4 Works Company.
Headquarters, Engineer Field Park.
47th Base Park Company.
Electrical and Mechanical Section (less detachments).
Electrical and Mechanical Composite Company, R.E.
Headquarters, No. 2 Wireless Signal Squadron, with two stations on river ships and remainder distributed as shown elsewhere.
Basra Radio Station.
Signal Service Park and Depot.
79th Carnatic Infantry.
1/9th Bhopal Infantry.
2/9th Delhi Infantry (less detachment).
Nos. 1, 2 and 3 British Base Depots.
Nos. 1, 3 and 4 Indian Base Depots.
No. 5 Indian Base Depot (Followers).
Supply Personnel Reinforcement Depot.
Base Supply Depot.
Base Transport Depot, with "A" "B," "C," "D," "E" and "G" Companies.
Base Mechanical Transport Depot (No. 695 M.T. Company, less detachments).
Repair Workshops (No. 962 M.T. Company).
No. 1056 L. of C. M.T. Company (less detachments).
No. 1 (Lucknow) and No. 2 (Cawnpore) Bullock Corps.
Headquarters, Military Forwarding Establishment.
Nos. 3, 33 and 40 British General Hospitals.
Nos. 8, 9, 20, 22, 25 and 27 Indian General Hospitals.
Officers' Hospital.
British Convalescent Depots.
Indian Convalescent Depot.
Isolation Hospital.
Nos. 10, 19, 27 and 29 Indian and 99 British Sanitary Sections.
Base Depot of Medical Stores.
No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy (No. 656 M.T. Company, less detachments).
Medical Reinforcement Camp.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
Ambulance Trains, Base.
Headquarters, Base Remount Depot.
No. 1 Remount Squadron.
"A" Remount Syce Company.
No. 1 Military Prisoners' Syce Corps.
Nos. 1, 6, 9 and 19 (Indian) Labour Corps.
Nos. 21, 22, 23, 24, 30 and 37 (Local) Labour Corps.
Detachment, No. 12 Jail Porter Corps.
Mauritius Labour Battalion.
Sierra Leone Labour Corps (for Inland Water Transport).
Nos. 2 and 10 Porter Corps.
Nos. 4 and 5 Prisoners of War Labour Corps.
Veterinary Convalescent Depot.
Nos. 2, 6 and 8 Field Veterinary Sections.
Base Depot Veterinary Stores.
Storehouse and Workshop Sections, Ordnance.
Military Accounts Depot.
Base Stationery Depot.
Prisoners of War Camp.

NAHR UMAR.
Headquarters, Administrative Post.
83rd Wallajahbad Light Infantry (less detachments).
Detachments, Works Directorate.
Nos. 29 and 39 (Local) Labour Corps.
No. 11 Jail Porter Corps.
Nos. 2 and 3 Turkish Prisoner of War Corps.
No. 57 Combined Station Hospital (less detachments).

Qurna Section.

QURNA.
Headquarters, Administrative Post.
Two companies, Nabha Imperial Service Infantry (less detachments).
Detachment, Engineer Field Park.
Detachments, No. 2 Works Company and Electrical and Mechanical Section.
No. 27 (Local) Labour Corps.
Intermediate Supply Depot.
Detachment, No. 57 Combined Station Hospital.

CENTRAL CONTROL STATION.
Detachment, 85th Burma Rifles.

Amara Section.

AMARA.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
2/6th Devonshire Regiment.
44th Merwara Infantry.
85th Burma Rifles (less 2½ platoons).
No. 2 Works Company (less detachments) and other detachments from Works Directorate.
Detachment, 4th Camel Corps.
British and Indian Depots.
Ordnance detachments.
"I" Company, Supply and Transport.
Intermediate Supply Depot.
Detachment, Military Forwarding Establishment.
British and Indian Convalescent Depot.
Isolation Hospital.
No. 32 British General Hospital.
Nos. 12 and 21 Indian General Hospital.
Five cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
No. 3 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.
Detachment, No. 1056 M.T. Company.
Headquarters, River Sick Convoy Unit.
Nos. 17 and 46 Sanitary Sections.
Headquarters, Remount Depot.
Nos. 4 and 6 Remount Squadrons.
"B" and "F" Syce Companies.
Nos. 1 and 9 Field Veterinary Stores.
River Irrigation.
Grass and Dairy Farms.
Central Laboratory.
Inland Water Transport. Construction and Repair Workshops.
Nos. 25 and 36 (Local) Labour Corps.
Detachment, Madras Gardeners.

ALI GHARBI.
Headquarters Administrative Post.
Two platoons, 85th Burma Rifles.
Post Hospital.

Kut Section.

KUT AL AMARA.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
49th Bengalis.
126th Baluchis.
15th Mountain Battery
Two searchlight sets.
One armoured car.
One section, No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company.
" M " Company, Supply and Transport.
Detachments from Works Directorate.
Rest Camp.
Intermediate Supply Depot.
No. 4 Labour Corps.
No. 1 Prisoners of War Labour Corps.
Nos. 6 and 7 Porter Corps.
No. 31 (Kurdish) Labour Corps.
Detachment, Military Forwarding Establishment.
No. 133 British General Hospital.
No. 24 Indian General Hospital.
Two cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
No. 101 Sanitary Section (less detachment).
Ordnance detachments.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Dairy Farm.

DIYALA.

122nd Infantry (less three companies).

Advanced Section.

BAGHDAD.

Headquarters Advanced Section.
Headquarters Advanced Base.
Detachment, Anglo-Indian Battalion.
73rd Carnatic Infantry (less detachments).
Two platoons, 122nd Infantry.
Army Ammunition Park.
Advanced Signal Park.
Aircraft Park.
One section, No. 1 Line of Communication Signal Company.
No. 2 Line of Communication Signal Company—Attached 15th Division.
Headquarters Works Directorate.
Headquarters Electrical and Mechanical Section.
Nos. 3 and 6 Works Companies.
300th Electrical and Mechanical Company, R.E.
Inland Water Transport Workshops.
Engineer Field Park, Advanced Base.
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
Machine gun corps centre.
Infantry school.
Physicial and bayonet training school.
Musketry school.
Signal school.
School of Cookery.
Bombing and Light Mortar School (with 39th Light Trench Mortar Battery, attached).
Combined Depots, Advanced Base.
Advanced Supply Depots.
No. 1 Line of Communication Supply Company (less detachments).

Advanced Transport Depot (" F " and " H " companies, Supply and Transport).
Nos. 2 and 11 (Indian) Labour Corps.
Nos. 26, 28, 32, 35 and 40 (Local) Labour Corps.
Nos. 1, 4, 8 and 12 Porter Corps.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Detachment, Military Forwarding Establishment.
British and Indian War Gifts Depot.
Mysore Imperial Service Transport Corps.
Nos. 23 and 31 British Stationary Hospitals.
Nos. 61 and 70 Indian Stationary Hospitals.
No. 65 British General Hospital.
No. 23 Indian General Hospital.
Fourteen cars, No. 23 Motor Ambulance Convoy.
Ambulance Trains, Advanced Base.
Officers' Hospital.
Officers' Convalescent Depot.
Combined Convalescent Depot.
Isolation Hospital.
Advanced Base Depot Medical Stores.
Depot, River Sick Convoy Unit.
No. 27 Casualty Clearing Station and No. 12 Mobile X-Ray Unit—Attached 15th Division.
Nos. 14 and 100 Sanitary Sections.
Ceylon Sanitary Company.
Advanced Remount Depot.
Nos. 2 (less detachment), 3 and 5 Remount Squadrons.
" C " (less detachment), " D " and " E " Syce Companies.
Advanced Depot Veterinary Stores.
Veterinary Hospital (Nos. 7, 10, 12 and 16 Field Veterinary Sections).
Veterinary Convalescent Depot.
Detachment, Storehouse and Workshops Sections, Ordnance.
Advanced Stationary Depot.

HILLA.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
No. 30 Combined Field Ambulance.
No. 145 (Jail) Labour Corps.

DHIBBAN.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
No. 6 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.
No. 34 (Local) Labour Corps.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.

SADIYA.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
Post Hospital.

SAMARRA.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.

TIKRIT.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
No. 19 Casualty Clearing Station and No. 11 Mobile X-Ray Unit (attached).
No. 30 Casualty Clearing Station.
No. 7 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.

BAQUBA ROAD.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Post Hospital.

ABU SAIDA.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
One platoon, 122nd Infantry.
Post Hospital.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
No. 50 (Local) Labour Corps.

SHAHRABAN.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
Post Hospital.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.

RUZ.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
1¼ Companies, 122nd Infantry.
No. 5 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.
Post Hospital.
No. 46 (Kurdish) Labour Corps.
No. 7 and 18 (Indian) Labour Corps.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.

TABLE MOUNTAIN.

Headquarters Administrative Post.
No. 16 Casualty Clearing Station (less detachment).
No. 20 Casualty Clearing Station.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.

Euphrates Section (Administration only).

SHAIBA.

Detachments, Mauritius and No. 1 (Indian) Labour Corps.

LUQAIT.

Post Hospital.

TEL EL LAM.

Detachment, Advanced Supply Depot.
Post Hospital.

NASIRIYA.

Headquarters, Administrative Section.
Detachments from Works Directorate.
Inland Water Transport.
Detachment, No. 27 (Local) Labour Corps.
No. 52 (Local) Labour Corps.
Advanced Supply Depot.
Expeditionary Force Canteen.
Detachment, Military Forwarding Establishment.
No. 83 Combined Stationary Hospital.
Detachment, No. 31 Sanitary Section.
No. 8 Advanced Depot Medical Stores.

DARRAJI.

Detachment, Inland Water Transport.
Detachment, Advanced Supply Depot.
Post Hospital.

SAMAWA.

Detachment, Inland Water Transport.
Detachments from Works Directorate.
Detachment, Advanced Supply Depot.
Post Hospital.
No. 20 (Indian) Labour Corps.

WAAR.

Detachment, Inland Water Transport.
Post Hospital.

EUPHRATES DEFENCES.

Base Mobile Column.

Headquarters Mobile Column.
One section, 31st Mountain Battery.
1/6th Devonshire Regiment.
108th Infantry.
No. 1 Indian Machine Gun Company (less two sections).
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
No. 33 Combined Field Ambulance.
"Q" Company, Supply and Transport (less detachments).

No. 1 Section Euphrates Defences. (Headquarters Nasiriya).

NASIRIYA.
Headquarters Euphrates Defences.
One squadron, 22nd Cavalry.
1/99th Infantry.
One section, Field Searchlight Company.
No. 24 Combined Field Ambulance (less one section).
Detachment, "Q" Company, Supply and Transport.
LUQAIT.
No. 2 Armoured Train.
TEL EL LAM.
No. 1 Armoured Train.
RAILHEAD.
Two platoons, 13th Rajputs.

No. 3 Section, Euphrates Defences. (Headquarters Samawa).

DARRAJI.
One platoon, 13th Rajputs.
SAMAWA.
Two troops, 22nd Cavalry.
13th Rajputs (less 2¾ companies).
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
Detachment, "Q" Company, Supply and Transport.
WAAR.
Two troops, 22nd Cavalry.
Two companies, 13th Rajputs.
One pack station, 2nd Wireless Signal Squadron.
One section, No. 24 Combined Field Ambulance.

APPENDIX XLVII.

Principal Officers with the Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force on the 1st November, 1918.

General Officer Commanding-in-Chief—Lieut.-General Sir W. R. Marshall.

Chief of General Staff	Major-General W. Gillman.
Brig.-General, General Staff (Intelligence)	Brig.-General W. H. Beach.
Deputy Quartermaster-General	Major-General Hon. R. Stuart-Wortley.
Deputy Adjutant-General	Major-General F. F. Ready.
Engineer-in-Chief	Major-General J. C. Rimington.
Major-General, Royal Artillery	Major-General Sir C. M. Ross-Johnson.
Director of Ordnance Services	Brig.-General Sir C. M. Matthew.
Director of Works	Brig.-General C. H. Roe.
Director of Remounts	Brig.-General G. L. Holdsworth.
Deputy Adjutant-General, 3rd Echelon	Brig.-General W. M. Campbell.
Director, Supply and Transport	Brig.-General P. C. J. Scott.
Inspector-General of Communications	Major-General Sir G. F. MacMunn.
Deputy Inspector-General of Communications	Brig.-General H. C. Sutton.
Director of Railways	Brig.-General G. Lubbock.
Director of Inland Water Transport	Brig.-General R. H. W. Hughes.
Commanding at Baghdad	Brig.-General E. H. Boome.
Commanding Euphrates Defences	Brig.-General F. R. E. Lock.
Base Commandant	Brig.-General D'A. C. Brownlow.
Inspector-General, Cavalry	Major-General L. C. Jones.

G.O.C. Ist Corps—Lieut.-General Sir A. S. Cobbe.

Brig.-General, General Staff, Ist Corps	Brig.-General L. H. R. Pope-Hennessy.
Deputy Adjutant & Quartermaster-General, Ist Corps	Brig.-General C. Rattray.
C.R.A., Ist Corps	Brig.-General G. F. White.
G.O.C. 17th Division	Major-General G. A. J. Leslie.
C.R.A., 17th Division	Brig.-General L. A. Smith.
G.O.C. 34th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General A. G. Wauchope.
G.O.C. 51st Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General R. J. T. Hildyard.
G.O.C. 52nd Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General F. A. Andrew.
G.O.C. 18th Division	Major-General H. C. Fanshawe.
C.R.A. 18th Division	Brig.-General H. E. Stockdale.
G.O.C. 53rd Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General G. A. F. Sanders.
G.O.C. 54th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General R. W. Nightingale.
G.O.C. 55th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General G. M. Morris.

G.O.C. IIIrd Corps—Lieut.-General Sir R. G. Egerton.

Brig.-General, General Staff, IIIrd Corps	Colonel W. H. Norman (offg.).
Deputy Adjutant & Quartermaster General IIIrd Corps	Brig.-General M. E. Willoughby.
C.R.A. IIIrd Corps	Brig.-General R. A. Bright.
G.O.C. 13th Division	Brig.-General J. W. O'Dowda (offg.).
C.R.A. 13th Division	Brig.-General W. L. P. Davies.
G.O.C. 38th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General J. W. O'Dowda.
G.O.C. 40th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General A. C. Lewin.

G.O.C. 14th Division	Major-General T. Fraser.
C.R.A. 14th Division	Brig.-General H. T. A. Mackey.
G.O.C. 35th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General C. B. L. Clery.
G.O.C. 37th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General T. R. Maclachlan.
G.O.C. 56th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General E. C. Tidswell.
G.O.C. 15th Division	Major-General Sir H. T. Brooking.
C.R.A. 15th Division	Brig.-General F. R. Patch.
G.O.C. 12th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General E. W. Costello.
G.O.C. 42nd Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General F. G. Lucas.
G.O.C. 50th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General A. W. Andrew.
G.O.C. 6th Cavalry Brigade	Brig.-General P. Holland-Pryor.
G.O.C. 7th Cavalry Brigade	Brig.-General C. E. G. Norton.
G.O.C. 11th Cavalry Brigade	Brig.-General R. A. Cassels.
G.O.C. North Persia Force	Major-General W. M. Thomson.
G.O.C. 36th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General H. F. B. Champain.
G.O.C. 39th Infantry Brigade	Brig.-General T. A. Andrus.
G.O.C. Karun Front	Brig.-General L. N. Younghusband.

APPENDIX XLVIII.

List of Indian cavalry, infantry and pioneer regiments which served with the Mesopotamia Force during the War, 1914-1918; giving their titles as they were in 1918 (which have been used in this history) and their present designations (1926).

CAVALRY.

Designation in 1918.	*Present Designation.*
4th Cavalry	2nd Lancers (Gardner's Horse).
5th Cavalry	3rd Cavalry.
7th Lancers	18th King Edward's Own Cavalry.
10th Lancers	4th Duke of Connaught's Own Hodson's Horse.
11th Lancers / 12th Cavalry	5th King Edward's Own Probyn's Horse.
13th Lancers	6th Duke of Connaught's Own Lancers (Watson's Horse).
14th Lancers / 15th Lancers	20th Lancers.
16th Cavalry	6th Duke of Connaught's Own Lancers (Watson's Horse).
21st Cavalry (Frontier Force)	11th Prince Albert Victor's Own Cavalry (Frontier Force).
22nd Cavalry (Frontier Force)	12th Cavalry (Frontier Force).
23rd Cavalry (Frontier Force)	11th Prince Albert Victor's Own Cavalry (Frontier Force).
32nd Lancers	13th Duke of Connaught's Own Bombay Lancers.
33rd Light Cavalry	17th Queen Victoria's Own Poona Horse.
Guides Cavalry (Frontier Force)	10th Queen Victoria's Own Corps of Guides Cavalry (Frontier Force).

INFANTRY AND PIONEERS.

Designation in 1918.	*Present Designation.*
2nd Rajputs	1st Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment.
3rd Brahmans	Disbanded.
4th Rajputs	2nd Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment.
6th Jats	1st Royal Battalion, 9th Jat Regiment.
7th Rajputs	3rd Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment.
8th Rajputs	4th Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment.
9th Bhopal Infantry	4th Battalion, 16th Punjab Regiment.
10th Jats	3rd Battalion, 9th Jat Regiment.
11th Rajputs	5th Battalion, 7th Rajput Regiment.
12th Pioneers	2nd Battalion, 2nd Bombay Pioneers.
13th Rajputs	10th Battalion, 6th Rajputana Rifles.
14th Sikhs	1st Battalion, 11th Sikh Regiment.
20th Infantry	2nd Battalion, 14th Punjab Regiment.
22nd Punjabis	3rd Battalion, 14th Punjab Regiment.
24th Punjabis	4th Battalion, 14th Punjab Regiment.
25th Punjabis	1st Battalion, 15th Punjab Regiment.
26th Punjabis	2nd Battalion, 15th Punjab Regiment.
27th Punjabis	3rd Battalion, 15th Punjab Regiment.
28th Punjabis	4th Battalion, 15th Punjab Regiment.
31st Punjabis	2nd Battalion, 16th Punjab Regiment.
32nd Sikh Pioneers	2nd Battalion, 3rd Sikh Pioneers.

34th Sikh Pioneers	3rd Royal Battalion, 3rd Sikh Pioneers.
36th Sikhs	4th Battalion, 11th Sikh Regiment.
37th Dogras	1st Battalion, 17th Dogra Regiment.
39th Garhwal Rifles	18th Royal Garhwal Rifles.
41st Dogras	3rd Battalion, 17th Dogra Regiment.
42nd Deoli Regiment	Disbanded.
43rd Erinpura Regiment	Disbanded.
44th Merwara Infantry	Disbanded.
45th Sikhs	3rd Battalion, 11th Sikh Regiment.
47th Sikhs	5th Battalion, 11th Sikh Regiment.
48th Pioneers	4th Battalion 2nd Bombay Pioneers.
49th Bengalis	Disbanded.
51st Sikhs (Frontier Force)	1st Battalion, 12th Frontier Force Regiment.
52nd Sikhs (Frontier Force)	2nd Battalion, 12th Frontier Force Regiment.
53rd Sikhs (Frontier Force)	3rd Battalion, 12th Frontier Force Regiment.
56th Rifles (Frontier Force)	2nd Battalion, 13th Frontier Force Rifles.
59th Rifles (Frontier Force)	6th Royal Battalion, 13th Frontier Force Rifles.
62nd Punjabis	1st Battalion, 1st Punjab Regiment.
64th Pioneers	2nd Battalion, 1st Madras Pioneers.
66th Punjabis	2nd Battalion, 1st Punjab Regiment.
67th Punjabis	1st Battalion, 2nd Punjab Regiment.
73rd Carnatic Infantry	1st Battalion, 3rd Madras Regiment.
76th Punjabis	3rd Battalion, 1st Punjab Regiment.
79th Carnatic Infantry	Disbanded.
80th Carnatic Infantry	Disbanded.
82nd Punjabis	5th Battalion, 1st Punjab Regiment.
83rd Wallajahbad Light Infantry	Disbanded.
84th Punjabis	10th Battalion, 1st Punjab Regiment.
85th Burma Rifles	3rd Battalion, 20th Burma Rifles.
87th Punjabis	5th Battalion, 2nd Punjab Regiment.
89th Punjabis	1st Battalion, 8th Punjab Regiment.
90th Punjabis	2nd Battalion, 8th Punjab Regiment.
91st Punjabis	3rd Battalion, 8th Punjab Regiment.
92nd Punjabis	4th Battalion, 8th Punjab Regiment.
93rd Burma Infantry	5th Battalion, 8th Punjab Regiment.
94th Infantry	1st Battalion, 19th Hyderabad Regiment.
95th Infantry	10th Battalion, 19th Hyderabad Regiment.
96th Infantry	2nd Battalion, 19th Hyderabad Regiment.
97th Infantry	3rd Battalion, 19th Hyderabad Regiment.
99th Infantry	Disbanded.
101st Grenadiers	1st Battalion, 4th Bombay Grenadiers.
102nd Grenadiers	2nd Battalion, 4th Bombay Grenadiers.
103rd Mahrattas	1st Battalion, 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.
104th Rifles	1st Battalion, 6th Rajputana Rifles.
105th Mahrattas	2nd Battalion, 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.
106th Hazara Pioneers	1st Battalion, 4th Hazara Pioneers.
107th Pioneers	1st Battalion, 2nd Bombay Pioneers.
108th Infantry	3rd Battalion, 4th Bombay Grenadiers.
110th Mahrattas	3rd Battalion, 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.
112th Infantry	Disbanded.
113th Infantry	10th Battalion, 4th Bombay Grenadiers.

114th Mahrattas	10th Battalion, 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.
116th Mahrattas	4th Battalion, 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.
117th Mahrattas	5th Royal Battalion 5th Mahratta Light Infantry.
119th Infantry	2nd Battalion, 9th Jat Infantry.
120th Infantry	2nd Battalion, 6th Rajputana Rifles.
121st Pioneers	10th Battalion, 2nd Bombay Pioneers.
122nd Infantry.	3rd Battalion, 6th Rajputana Rifles.
125th Rifles	5th Battalion, 6th Rajputana Rifles.
126th Baluchistan Infantry ..	2nd Battalion, 10th Baluch Regiment.
128th Pioneers	3rd Battalion, 2nd Bombay Pioneers.
1st Gurkha Rifles	1st King George's Own Gurkha Rifles.
2nd Gurkha Rifles	2nd King Edward's Own Gurkha Rifles.
3rd Gurkha Rifles	3rd Queen Alexandra's Own Gurkha Rifles.
4th Gurkha Rifles	4th Prince of Wales's Own Gurkha Rifles.
5th Gurkha Rifles (Frontier Force)	5th Royal Gurkha Rifles (Frontier Force).
6th Gurkha Rifles	6th Gurkha Rifles.
7th Gurkha Rifles	7th Gurkha Rifles.
8th Gurkha Rifles	8th Gurkha Rifles.
9th Gurkha Rifles	9th Gurkha Rifles.
10th Gurkha Rifles	10th Gurkha Rifles.
Guides Infantry (Frontier Force)	5th Battalion, 12th Frontier Force Regiment.

ABBREVIATIONS USED IN INDEX.

Bn.	Battalion.
C.F.A.	Combined Field Ambulance.
C.G.S.	Chief of the General Staff.
C.G.S.I.	Chief of the General Staff, India.
C.I.G.S.	Chief of the Imperial General Staff.
C.-in-C.	Commander-in-Chief.
C. of S.	Chief of Staff.
D.C.I.G.S.	Deputy Chief of the Imperial General Staff.
D.I.W.T...	Director of Inland Water Transport.
D.M.I.	Director of Military Intelligence.
E.E.F.	Egyptian Expeditionary Force.
G.H.Q.	General Headquarters.
H.Q.	Headquarters.
I.A.	Indian Army.
I.E.F.	Indian Expeditionary Force.
I.O.	India Office.
I.W.T.	Inland Water Transport.
K.B.Co.	Kite Balloon Company.
L.A.M.B.	Light Armoured Motor Brigade/Battery.
L. of C.	Lines of Communication.
M/G.	Machine Gun.
M.T.	Mechanical Transport.
R.A.F.	Royal Air Force.
R.F.C.	Royal Flying Corps.
S. & M.	Sappers and Miners.
S.N.O.	Senior Naval Officer.
S. of S.	Secretary of State.
U.S. for F.A.	Under Secretary for Foreign Affairs.
W.O.	War Office.
W/T.	Wireless Telegraphy.

Note.—For divisions, brigades, regiments, battalions, etc., *see under* "Artillery;" "Cavalry;" "Infantry."

INDEX.

A

Abadeh.
Brit. besieged detachment relieved, 208.

Abu Alik.
Brit. occupy, 149.

Abu Gharaib.
Brit. occupy, 149.

Administration, Civil.
Development of, 26–7.

Admiralty.
Orders to secure control of Caspian, 250, 329.

Afghanistan.
Situation in, (May 1917), 6, (June 1918), 185; effect in, of Russian collapse, 99, 102; attitude of Amir of, 139, 185; activities of enemy agents in, 185.

Africa, East.
And reinforcements for Mesopotamia, 6, 18, 46; wastage of Indian units in, 18*n*.

Agamemnon, H.M.S. (battleship).
Armistice terms with Turkey signed on board, 324.

Aga Petross.
Jelu leader, 206.
Ahmed Bey.
Surrenders at Ramadi, 59.
Ain Dibs.
In Turkish position, 264; Turkish force at, 265; Brit. reach, 297.
Ain Nukhaila pass.
Brit. occupy, (18 Oct. 1918), 266.
Aircraft, British.
Shortage of, 5; reinforcements, 17, 48, 99; effect of heat on, 23; loss of, 48, 84*n*; in Persia, 120*n*, 195; destroyed by order, 246. *See also* "Raids, Air, British"; "Reconnaissances, British"; "Royal Air Force"; "Royal Flying Corps."
———, German.
In Turco-German force, 8; 28*n*.
———, Russian.
In Baku, 239.
———, Turkish.
Activities of, (June 1917), 28, (Dec.), 99, (Jan. 1918), 108; action of Daur, 77*n*; strength of, 108*n*, (June), 176; withdraw from Euphrates front, 122; captured in Kirkuk, 165; reinforced, 175; disappear after 20 Oct., 288.
———, ———, Flying Detachments.
No. 2.—With 14th Div., 258.
No. 13.—Kirkuk line, 258.
Ajaimi, Shaikh of Muntafik.
Attitude of, 73.
Aleppo.
Turkish G.H.Q. at, 13, 14; conference at, 13; enemy concentrating at, 40, 41, 265; Turkish Euphrates detachment withdraw towards, 328.
Alexandropol.
Turks occupy, (18 May, 1918), 171.
Alexeieff, General.
Brit. assistance to, 105; activities of, 212, 218*n*.
Ali Ihsan Pasha.
Commands Turkish Sixth Army, 207, 213, 265; and armistice, 321; and occupation of Mosul, 325–7; resigns command, 328*n*.
Allenby, Gen. Sir E. H. H., G.C.M.G., K.C.B.
Assumes command in Palestine, 19; captures Beersheba, 74, 78*n*; conference in Egypt, 113; correspondence with C.I.G.S., (14 March 1918), 138–9; victory of, in Palestine, 252; and advance to Aleppo, 259; and armistice terms, 328. *See also* "Palestine."
Altun Köpri.
Brit. demonstrate towards, 165–6; Turks hold bridgehead at, 291; Brit. occupy, (30 Oct. 1918), 321.
Amanus range.
Railway tunnel through the, completed, 41.
Ammunition, British.
Adequacy of, 46; assistance to Jelus, 191, 195, 201; expenditure of, 318.
———, Turkish.
Shortage of, 1; destroyed by explosion, 41; captured, 59, 136, 158, 165, 319.
Ana.
Brit. reach, 135, withdraw from, 136; Turks re-occupy, 145; Brit. occupy, 328.
Anaiza, Shaikhs of the. (Group of Arab Tribes). *See under* "Arabs."

Andrew, Brig.-Gen. A. W., C.M.G.
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 124–36.
Arabia.
Strength of Turks in, 62; Turkish force in, to form Fourth Army, 64.
Arabs.
Anaiza, 20, 21.
Dulaim, 20.
Arabs and Kurds.
Activities of, 7, 11, 15, 20, 21, 25, 60*n*, 112, 146, 309; exploitation of, suggested, 9, Gen. Maude's views on, 10–11, 20; plans for co-operation of, 20, 21, 173–4, 178–9; German propaganda amongst, 73.
Ardebil.
Reported Turkish occupation of, 251.
Argo (Caspian steamer).
Commandeered, 205; evacuation of Baku, 246–7.
Armenia. *See* "Trans-Caucasia."
Armenian (Caspian steamer).
Evacuation of Baku, 246–7.
Armenians.
In Baku, fighting value of, 217, 217*n*, 219, 239, disposition of, 240, 241, retreat from Wolf's Gap, 242, 244; attitude of, 255.
Armistice.
Between Turkey and Russia, 97; Bulgaria asks for an, 254; Allied terms with Turkey, drafted, 262, Allies ready to discuss, 263, effected, (31 Oct. 1918), 321, terms of, 322–4. *See also* "Peace."
Armoured cars. *See under* "Artillery, British, Light Armoured Motor Brigade/Batteries."
Army Corps, German.
"Asiatic Corps."—Composition of, in Turco-German force, 8; 62; detailed for Palestine, 63.
—— ——, Indian.
Ist.—Strength and disposition of, (end May 1917), 11, (end Sept.), 45*n*, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (June), 178; action of Daur, 74–8, Tikrit, 78–84; withdraws to Samarra, 84; 17th Div. replaces 7th in, 97; 18th Div. replaces 3rd in, 115, 139; demonstration by, on Tigris front, 122; role of, in advance on Kirkuk, 163, 166; advance up Tigris, 261–321.
IIIrd.—Strength and disposition of, (end May 1917), 11, (end Sept.), 45*n*, (Oct.), 67, (2 Dec.), 89, 90, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (March), 120, (June), 178; detachment of, occupy Balad Ruz, 15, 67; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 67–70, third, 89–96, casualties, 93; demonstration by, on the Jabal Hamrin, 122; provides flanking column for advance up Tigris, 261; composition of, 266*n*.
—— ——, Turkish.
Ist (Caucasus).—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; disposition of, (29 Aug. 1918), 220.
IIIrd.—In Turco-German force, 8.
IVth.—Details to join Sixth Army, 259.
IVth (Caucasus).—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; reported intentions of, 220; disposition of, (29 Aug. 1918), 220.
VIth.—Disposition of, 62.
VIIth.—Disposition of, 62.
XIIIth.—Strength and disposition of, (May 1917), 1, (Oct.), 67, 71, (Jan. 1918), 108, (April), 145, (2 May), 163; supplies of, affected by loss of Mandali, 61–2; H.Q. at Kifri, 89; apparently disbanded, 213.
XVth.—In Turco-German force, 8.
XVIIIth.—Strength and disposition of, (May 1917), 1, (Nov.), 84, (Jan. 1918), 108, (April), 145, (2 May), 163; diversion down Tigris by, 71–2; apparently disbanded, 213.

Artillery, British.
Gen. Maude asks for more, 7; reorganisation and total strength of, 48; heavy, reorganised, 101, 140; reorganised, 175. *See also* "Guns, British."
———, ———, Anti-aircraft, Sections.
Formed by guns of river craft, 140.
"M."—Operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6.
No. 80.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70.
No. 92.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
No. 118.—Arrives, 47; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
No. 208.—Baghdad, 47.
———, ———, Brigades, Field.
4th.—Affair of 22/24 Oct. 1917, 71–2; action of Daur, 75–8, Tikrit, 80–4.
8th.—In 15th Div., 47*n*.
13th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 94–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in Persia, 220*n*, 251, 252*n*.
55th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
56th.—Action of Daur, 75–8.
66th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70.
215th.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6, action of, 50–9; Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
220th.—Allocated to 17th Div., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321, casualties, 285*n*.
221st.—Allocated to 17th Div., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
222nd.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
336th.—Amara, 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
337th.—Amara, 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
———, ———, ———, Garrison (Heavy).
38th.—In IIIrd A.C., 175, composition, 175*n*.
74th.—In 15th Div., 175; composition, 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
101st.—In Ist A.C., 175; composition, 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
———, ———, ———, Light Armoured Motor.
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; advance up Tigris, 269–321; in rear of Turkish Sharqat position, 289; affair of 27 Oct., 1918, 296; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
———, ———, Batteries, Field.
2nd.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; in Persia, 220, 221, 252*n*.
8th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; Khaniqin, 152*n*; in Persia, 178*n*, 191, 201, 251*n*; defence of Baku, 224–6, 226*n*, 227, 232*n*, 241, 245.
44th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in Persia, 219, 251*n*; Trans-Caspia, 231, 253, affair of Kaakha, 250.
B/55.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
C/56th.—Action of Daur, 75–8.
60th.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
61st.—Operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
66th.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
A/66th.—With Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
B/66th.—Operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6.
A/69th (How.).—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70.
C/69th.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in Persia, 219, 252*n*.
72nd.—In 8th Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9.

Artillery, British, Batteries, Field—*cont.*
77th.—In 222nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9.
A/336th.—Battle of Sharqat, 308–21.
B/336th.—Battle of Sharqat, 308–21.
C/336th.—Battle of Sharqat, 308–21; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
D/336th.—Advance up Tigris, 268–321.
A/337th.—Advance up Tigris, 227–321; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
B/337th.—Battle of Sharqat, 315–21.
C/337th.—Advance up Tigris, 272–321.
341st.—In 337th Bde., 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 277–321.
372nd.—In 8th Bde., 47*n*.
373rd.—In 8th Bde., 47*n*.
374th.—In 8th Bde., 47*n*.
375th.—In 222nd Bde., 47*n*.
403rd (How.).—Advance up Tigris, 278–321, casualties, 285*n*.
404th (How.).—Advance up Tigris, 278–321.
524th (How.).—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6, action of, 50–9.
527th (How.).—Amara, 11.
1064th.—In 220th Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 282–321.
1066th.—In 220th Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 282–321.
1067th.—In 221st Bde., 48*n*.
1068th.—In 221st Bde., 48*n*.
1070th.—In 222nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9.
1072nd.—In 222nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 124–36.
1086th.—Action of Ramadi, 50–9.
1088th.—Action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 128–36, casualties, 128*n*.
——— ——— ———, Garrison (Heavy).
2/86th.—Action of Daur, 75–8; in 101st Bde., 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
2/104th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, in 38th Bde., 175*n*.
157th.—Action of Daur, 75–8; in 101st Bde., 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
159th.—In 101st Bde., 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
177th.—In 74th Bde., 175*n*.
246th (Siege).—Basra, 11; action of Ramadi, 50–9; in 101st Bde., 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
257th (Siege).—Basra ,11; action of Daur, 75–8; in 74th Bde., 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
269th (Siege).—Basra, 11; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; in 38th Bde., 175*n*.
384th (Siege).—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in 38th Bde., 175*n*.
395th (Siege).—Action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; in 74th Bde., 175*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
——— ——— ———, Horse.
"S."—Mandali, 61; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; Qasr-i-Shirin, 104.
"V."—Action of Ramadi, 50–9; Daur, 76–8; third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 90–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; advance up Tigris, 273–321.
"W."—Arrive, 100; action of Khan Baghdadi, 127–36; advance up Tigris, 275–321.
——— ——— ———, Light Armoured Motor.
No. 6.—Arrives, 47; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; action of Daur, 75–8; in Persia, 104*n*, 144, 176*n*, 183, 251, 252*n*.
No. 8.—Action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; advance up Tigris, 268–321.

Artillery, British, Batteries, Light Armoured Motor—*cont.*
No. 13.—Action of Ramadi, 50–9; raid on Hit, 59–60; action of Daur, 75–8, Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
No. 14.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6; Mandali, 61; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; action of Daur, 75–8; Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
No. 15.—Arrives, 47; action of Daur, 75–8; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.

————, Indian, Brigade, Mountain.
2nd.—Advance up Tigris, 268–321.

———— ————, Batteries, Mountain.
21st.—In Persia, 178, 178*n*, 202, 219, 221*n*, 222, 251, 252*n*.
25th.—Advance up Tigris, 268–321.
26th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; in Persia, 104*n*, 120*n*, 178*n*, 251; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6, casualties, 158*n*, action against Sinjabis, 158–9.
31st.—Arrives, 175; section with Bakhtiari chief, 186, 186*n*.
34th.—Advance up Tigris, 268–321.

————, Turkish.
Accurate fire of, 23.

Astrakhan.
Germans advance towards, 172; reported occupation of, 218*n*.

Auja.
Turkish force at, 74; strong position near, 77; Brit. occupy, (3 Nov. 1917), 78.

Austria-Hungary.
Condition of, (Dec. 1917), 97; asks U.S.A. to arrange Peace Conference, 252–3.

Austrians.
With Turks, 38, 40; with Jangalis, 200.

Azerbaijan.
Enemy intentions against, 41, 144, 159, 181; situation in, (Oct. 1918), 330.

Aziziya bridge.
Brit. shell, 24, capture, 58.

Aziziya canal.
Description of, 53.

Aziziya ridge.
Brit. capture, 56.

B

Baghdad.
Enemy plans for recovery of, 7–9, 12–14, 62, 207, realise impossibility of recapturing, 65; strength of Brit. garrison at, (end Sept. 1917), 45*n*, 47; Turkish air raids over, (25 Jan. 1918), 108; conference at, (5 Oct.), 261.

Baghdad (Turkish steamer).
Retires above Adhaim, 140.

Baiburt.
Turks occupy, 112.

Bakhtiaris.
Relations with, 186, 208.

Baku.
Tartars driven from, 171; situation at, (May 1918), 172, (Aug.), 210–11, 215–16, 217, 222, (1 Sept.), 231–2, (9th), 237–8, (13th), 240; question of advance to, 177, 179, 182, 196–7, 198–9; forces in, 181, 199, 205, 215, 232; Turks denied access to, 177, 184, 184*n*; Bolsheviks' anti-Brit. attitude re., 182, 190, 196; importance of, 190, 233; Turks advance on, 191, 195, 202, 203, strength of, 199, 230, 239–40; authorities at, seek Brit. assistance, 198, 202; conditions in, 199, 215–16, 222; *coup d'etat* of 26 July, 202; Centro-Caspian Govt., 202, 205, 206; Brit. reach, (4 Aug.), 204, force in, 210, 212, 228*n*, 232, 232*n*, 238; defence of, (4 Aug.–14 Sept.), 204–6, 209–10, 210–13, 215–33, 236–47; German occupation of, preferred, 206*n*, 237; Brit. policy re., 212; supplies in, 215, 216; description of, 216; Turkish attack, (6 Sept.), 224–8, (14th), 240–5; ineptitude of local authorities, 229–30; reinforced by Gen. Bicharakoff, 238, disposition of force under, 240, 241, 244; Brit. withdrawal from, 246–7; W/T at, put out of action, 248; W.O. order occupation of, 329, preliminaries to, 330; reoccupation of (17 Nov.), 330. *See also* "Armenians"; "Bolsheviks"; "Caspian, The."

Balad Ruz.
Brit. occupy, 15, 61, 67; supply depot at, 39.

Balakhani (Baku).
Oilfields at, 216.

Balalij.
Brit. reach, 297.

Balkans, The.
Allied advance in, 252, 254.

Band-i-Adhaim.
Affair near, (8/12 May 1917), 2–3.

Baquba.
Jelu refugee camp formed at, 206.

Baratoff, General N. N.
Succeeds Gen. Pavloff, 17; orders to, 36; state of troops under, 109; and "Dunsterforce," 117.

Barrow, Gen. Sir E. G., G.C.B., G.C.S.I. (Mil. Sec. I.O.).
And Report of Mesopotamia Commission, 31.

Basra.
Capacity of port at, 26, development of, 46, 174, 257.

Battine, Lt.-Col. R. St. C., D.S.O. (21st Cavalry).
At Krasnovodsk, 205, 211.

Batum.
Russians evacuating, 138; Turks occupy, (15 April 1918), 144; Germans reported landing at, 199.

Beersheba.
Brit. capture, (31 Oct. 1917), 74, 78*n*.

Beg Surab, Col.
Defence of Baku, 241.

Bibi Eibat, (Baku).
Oilfields at, 216.

Bicharakoff, Lt.-Col.
Russian detachment under, to join Brit., 85; third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 90–6; condition of force under, 94, 94*n*, 109; illness of, 95*n*; remains with Brit., 98; leaves for Kermanshah, 99, 103–4; unavailing efforts of, 107; arrives Baghdad, (11 Feb. 1918), 109; and "Dunsterforce," 117*n*, 179, 182; to command Baku—Gilan front, 172; meets Gen. Dunsterville, 172; visits Baku, 183; appointed to command Red Army in Caucasus, 183; leaves Enzeli for Kura river, 190, retires from, 195–6; given supreme command in Baku, 202; moves from Baku, 203; engaged with Daghestanis, 212; at Derbend, 217*n*; captures Petrovsk, 232, at, 330; troops under, arrive Baku, 238; controls Caspian fleet, 250; and occupation of Baku, 330.

Binagadi (Baku).
Oilfields at, 216.
Bitlis.
Russians evacuate, 7.
Bitumen.
Wells opened in the Euphrates valley, 257.
Black Sea.
Germans seize part of Russian fleet in, 145; enemy in command of, 180.
Black Town (Baku).
Main oil refineries at, 216.
Blockade, British.
Reduces Turks' local supplies, 46.
Bokhara.
Situation in, (June 1918), 185.
Bollington, Capt. J., M.C. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 240, 242, 243.
Bolsheviks.
Propaganda in Persia, 99; Enzeli under control of, 111; and "Dunsterforce," 117; activities of, 118, 185; attitude of, in Caucasus, 142, 172, 255; seek Brit. assistance, 145; and Baku, 182, 184, 202, 213, prefer German occupation, 206*n*, 237; anti-Brit. attitude of, 182, 190; in open alliance with Germany, 194–5; situation of, in Turkestan, 204; leaders arrested at Enzeli, 205, 205*n*; defeat Trans-Caspian forces, 210; actions at Kaakha, 250, Dushak, 331. *See also* "Baku"; "Caspian, The"; "Petroff M."
Bourne, Lt.-Col. W. FitzG. (6th Jats).
Action of Ramadi, 52–9.
Brest-Litovsk.
Peace negotiations opened at, 97, concluded, 112, indefinite provisions of, 117–18.
Bridges, Lt.-Col. E. J., M.C. (14th Hussars).
Column under, moves into Persia, 104, 117.
Bridges, British.
On the Tigris, at Sadiya, 11, 39*n*, Samarra, 39*n*, Baghdad, 39*n*, Kurmat Ali, 49, at Fat-ha, 288; Diyala, at Baquba, 39*n*, near Qizil Ribat, 93, 94*n*; Euphrates, at Falluja, 39*n*, 51, Madhij, 52; 100; Aziziya Canal, 53; in the Jabal Hamrin action area, 70*n*, 93, 94*n*; in Kurdistan, 148*n*; across the Little Zab, 287.
———, Turkish.
Across the Narin, destroyed, 94*n*; at Wadi Haqlan, 136*n*; in Kurdistan, 163*n*; across the Tigris, 264, 265, at Humr, 280, 283; over the Great Zab, 321.
Bridging Trains, British.
Action of Ramadi, 50–9; advance up the Tigris, 258–321.
——— ———, No. 1.
Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 91–6; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
——— ———, No. 2.
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
Brodrick, Lt.-Col. The Hon. A. G. (5th Queens).
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 133–6.
Brooking, Major-Gen. Sir H. T., K.C.B.
Commands 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 49–59; to operate against Hit, 116, occupies Hit and Sahiliya, 121; action of Khan Baghdadi, 121–36.
Brusiloff, General.
Appointed C.-in-C., Russian armies, 14, succeeded by Gen. Korniloff, 36; failure of offensive of, in Europe, 32.
Bulgaria.
Condition of, (Dec. 1917), 97.

Bulgarians.
With Turks, 38.
Burhanieh (Turkish steamer).
Retires above Adhaim, 140.
Bushell, Capt. E. J. N. (Warwicks).
Defence of Baku, 241, 244.

C.

Caddisfly (river gunboat).
Charts Tigris between Tikrit and Samarra, 140, 140*n*.
Camps, Turkish.
At Daur, 76; air raids on, 84.
Capper, Col. A. S., D.S.O. (39th Horse).
In Persia, 119.
Caspian, The.
Under Bolshevik control, 118; control of fleet in, 120, 172*n*, 173, 182, 183, 212; scheme for securing command of, 167–70, 222, 230; question of control of, 190, 194, 199, 202, 209, 212, 249, 329; situation east of, 185; number of steamers available on, 196, 250, 329; Centro-Caspian Govt. formed, 202; attitude of fleet in, 204*n*, 248, 249; steamers at Brit. disposal, 232, 248; orders to secure control of, 250; fleet under Bicharakoff's control, 250; German endeavour to purchase fleet, 255. *See also* "*Argo*"; "*Armenian*"; "*Kursk*"; "*President Kruger*."
Cassels, Brig.-Gen. R. A., C.B., D.S.O.
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 122–36; advance up Tigris, 269–321; moves towards Mosul, 320, ordered to occupy, 324–5, reaches, 326.
Casualties, British and Indian.
Attack on Ramadi, 24, 25; caused by heat, 25; 25 Sept., 5 Oct., 1917, 48; action of Ramadi, 53, 54, 55, 58, 59, 60*n*; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 70; third, 92, 93, 95, 96; action of Daur, 77–8; 3 Nov., 78; action of Tikrit, 82, 83, 84; 84*n*; caused by air raids, 108; action of Khan Baghdadi, 125*n*, 128*n*, 130, 136; operations in Kurdistan, 151, 157, 158, 158*n*, 166; affair of Resht, 200; defence of Baku, 218, 223, 223*n*, 224, 226, 227–8, 229, 245, 246, 246*n*; advance up the Tigris, 276, 277, 281, 284, 284*n*, 285, 285*n*, 286, 288*n*, 296, 302, 304; Sharqat, 307, 314, 318, 318*n*; 18/30 Oct. 1918, 319; 30 Oct., 321; Dushak, 331; total, 331.
———, Russian.
Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 96; Dushak (Bolshevik), 331.
———, Turkish.
Raid on Ramadi, 26, action of, 57, 59; Daur, 78; Tikrit, 83, 84; third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 95, 96; Khan Baghdadi, 136; operations in Kurdistan, 151, 158, 165; attack on Baku, 224, 246, 246*n*; total, 331.
Caucasus.
Effect in, of Brest-Litovsk Peace Treaty, 112; attitude of Bolsheviks in, 142; situation in, (May 1918), 171, 172–3, (29 Aug.), 220; question of "Dunsterforce" going to, 173; Germans in, 195, 247–8, 254, 255; Turkish plans in, 207; factor in peace negotiations, 208; Brit. policy in, 233–8; Turkish troops withdraw from, 261, 261*n*. *See also* "Russian Caucasus Army"; "Turkey, Army, (Caucasus)."
Cavalry, British.
Charges of the 13th Hussars, 150–1, 313–14; fight dismounted, 155, 302, 313, 314; charge of the 14th Lancers, 319.

Cavalry, British, Regiments.—
1st Hertfordshire Yeomanry.—"D" Squadron. In 15th Div., 47*n* action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; in Persia, 251.
7th Queen's Own Hussars.—Arrive, 100; action of Khan Baghdadi, 131–6; advance up Tigris, 275–321, casualties, 276, 302, 304*n*; counter-attack by, 301–2.
13th Hussars.—Action of Tikrit, 83–4, casualties, 83; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; charges of the, 150–1, 313–14; battle of Sharqat, 310–21, fight dismounted, 314, casualties, 314.
14th (King's) Hussars.—Action of Ramadi, 56–9; in Persia, 104, 144, 172*n*, 178*n*, 183, 191, 201, 202, 219, 251, 252*n*, 256; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; action against Sinjabis, 158–9; check Turks pursuing Jelus, 206.

———, Indian, Division.
Strength and disposition of, (end Sept. 1917), 45*n*, (15 Jan. 1918), 107; affair of 22/23 Oct. 1917, 71–2; action of Daur, 74–8, casualties, 77, 3 Nov., 78; action of Tikrit, 80–4, casualties, 83, 84*n*; Sadiya, 84; third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 89–96; divisional organisation ceases, 174.

———, ———, Brigades.
6th.—Action of Ramadi, 50–9, Daur, 76–8, Tikrit, 81–4; in Persia, 117; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; composition, 256; disposition, (Oct. 1918), 261*n*.
7th (Meerut).—Mandali, 61; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 90–6; action of Daur, 76, Tikrit, 81–4; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58; advance up Tigris, 261–321; disposition, (Oct. 1918), 261*n*; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
11th.—To be formed, 43, 86, nearly complete, 100; Baghdad, 107; action of Khan Baghdadi, 122–36; advance up Tigris, 261–321; disposition, (Oct. 1918), 261*n*; in rear of Turkish Sharqat position, 289, 290; operations of, (27 Oct.), near Huwaish, 296; casualties, (28th), 304; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.

———, ———, Regiments.
Queen Victoria's Own Corps of Guides (Frontier Force) (Lumsden's) Cavalry.—Action of Khan Baghdadi, 129–36; advance up Tigris, 290–321, casualties, 304*n*.
10th Duke of Cambridge's Own Lancers (Hodson's Horse).—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6; in 17th Div., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
11th King Edward's Own Lancers (Probyn's Horse).—Arrive, 100; in 6th Cav. Bde., 256.
12th Cavalry.—In IIIrd Corps, 48; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 92–6; Qasr-i-Shirin, 104*n*; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
13th Duke of Connaught's Lancers (Watson's Horse).—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 69–70, action of Daur, 76–8, Tikrit, 83–4; advance up Tigris, 271–321.
14th Murray's Jat Lancers.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; advance up Tigris, 271–321; charge of the, 319.
21st Prince Albert Victor's Own Cavalry (Frontier Force) (Daly's Horse).—Action of Ramadi, 56–9; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6, casualties, 158*n*; in 6th Cav. Bde., 256.
22nd Sam Browne's Cavalry (Frontier Force).—Action of Ramadi, 56–9; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6, fight dismounted, 155, casualties, 158*n*; on Euphrates front, 256.

Cavalry, Indian, Regiments—*cont.*
23rd Cavalry (Frontier Force).—Action of Khan Baghdadi, 131–6; advance up Tigris, 277–321, attack by, (27 Oct. 1918), near Huwaish, 296, casualties, 296.
28th Light Cavalry.—Trans-Caspia, 250; action of Dushak, 331.
32nd Lancers.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6; in Ist Corps, 48; affair of 24 Oct. 1917, 72; action of Daur, 75–8; advance up Tigris, 268–321; one sq., in force to to occupy Mosul, 320*n*; casualties, 30 Oct. 1918, 321.
Patiala Lancers.—In 6th Cav. Bde., 256.

———, Turkish (Iraq Cavalry Brigade).
Reported movements of, 108, 108*n*; strength and disposition, (June 1918), 176.

———, ———, Regiments.
1st Composite.—On Euphrates, 258.
31st.—On L. of C., 258.

Cayley, Major-Gen. Sir W. de S., K.C.B., C.M.G.
Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 91–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.

Cemetery Hill (Hadraniya).
Brit. occupy, 313.

Central Asia.
Fears of a *Jahad* in, 250.

Centro-Caspian Government.
Formed, 202; attitude of, 205, 206.

Chamberlain, The Rt. Hon. J. Austen, P.C., M.P. (S. of S. for India, May 1915–July 1917).
Correspondence with Viceroy, (29 June 1917), 18; resignation of, 30.

Champain, Brig.-Gen. H. B., C.M.G.
Commands troops in N. Persia, 222*n*.

Chelmsford, Lord, (Viceroy of India, April 1916—).
Correspondence with S. of S. for India, (29 June 1917), 18, (25 June 1918), 185–6.

Chief of the Imperial General Staff. *See* "Robertson, Gen."; "Wilson, Gen."

Chinese.
Number with I.E.F. "D"., 329.

Clutterbuck, Lt.-Col. C. H. (125th Rifles).
Liaison officer with Gen. Bicharakoff, 172, 202, 203; reports of, on situation at Baku, 236–7, 238.

Coal.
Mines in Kurdistan, 152; oil substituted for, 174; from Kifri mines, 257.

Cobbe, Lt.-Gen. Sir A. S., V.C., K.C.B., D.S.O.
Operations against Ramadi, 21; affair of 22/23 Oct. 1917, 71–2; action of Daur, 74–8, Tikrit, 78–84; acting G.O. Comdg., I.E.F. "D"., 210*n*; correspondence with C.I.G.S., (12 Aug. 1918), 210, (14th), 212, (22nd), 219, (28th, 31st), 230, with Gen. Dunsterville, (20 Aug.), 218–19; attends conference at Baghdad, 261; advance up Tigris, 261–321, plans and preparations, 266, disposition of force, (25 Oct.), 282; arrives Mosul, 326. *See also* "Operation Orders"; "Plans of Operation."

Commander-in-Chief, East Indies Squadron. *See* "Gaunt, Rear-Ad."

Commissions.
Vincent-Bingley, 29, 29*n*. *See also* "Mesopotamia Commission."

Committee of Union and Progress.
Pan-Turkish ambitions of, 208; waning influence of, 262.

Communications, British.
Satisfactory working of, 46; development of, summer and autumn, 1917, 141. *See also* "Railways."
————, ————, field.
Attack on Ramadi, 23, 24; telephonic, action of Tikrit, 81, 82; rain impedes, 164; telegraphic, with Dunsterforce, breakdown, 189; difficulties of, 274, 274*n*, 285*n*, 298, 309, 315; breakdown of frequent, 295.
————, Turkish.
Difficulties of, 12–13, 46; Ramadi-Hit, 53–4; down the Euphrates, 136–7.
————, ————, field.
Cut, action of Ramadi, 53–4, 60, Khan Baghdadi, 129, operations in Kurdistan, 149; advance up the Tigris, 289, 290.
Conferences.
At Constantinople, 5; Aleppo, 13, 14; Allied, at Paris, 15, 19, 262; between Gen. von Falkenhayn, Enver and Djemal Pashas, 63; Gen. von Falkenhayn and Halil Pasha, 70–1; Gen. Smuts in Egypt, 113, 113*n*; Generals Marshall and Brooking, 121; Gen. Brooking prior to action of Khan Baghdadi, 123; at Baku, 228, 229; at Baghdad, (5 Oct. 1918), 261.
Coningham, Col. F. E., C.M.G., D.S.O. (10th Gurkhas).
Advance up the Tigris, 278–321.
Constantinople.
Conference at, 5; Turkish 10th (Caucasus) Div., ordered to, 252.
Cotton.
Possible purchase of, in Trans-Caspia, 188, 188*n*.
Counter-attacks, Brit.
By Gen. Cassels, 301–2.
————, Turkish.
Action of Tikrit, 82.
Cox, Lt.-Col. Sir P. Z., K.C.I.E., K.C.S.I. (Chief Political Officer).
And Arab policy, 9–10, 11, 20; to assume title of Chief Commissioner, 27; control of Middle Euphrates area, 89; arrives Tehran, (15 Sept. 1918), as Brit. Minister, 253–4, 254*n*; interview with Persian Premier, 255; value to, of troops in Persia, 330.
Craig, Lieut. J. L. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 224.
Crawford, Capt. (temp. Col.), J. D., D.S.O., M.C. (89th Punjabis).
Action of Ramadi, 59; commands armoured cars with "Dunsterforce," 179*n*; at Baku, 216.
Crimea.
German advance towards, 145.
Crocker, Lt.-Col. H. E., C.M.G., D.S.O. (8th Cheshire).
Operations in Kurdistan, 148–58, 162–6.
Crossing, Capt. W. L. (M.G.C.).
With "Dunsterforce," 203*n*.

D.

Daghestan. *See* "Trans-Caucasia."
Damascus.
Brit. capture, (1 Oct. 1918), 261.
Darb-al-Khail pass.
Brit. occupy, (18 Oct., 1918), 266.
Daur.
Turkish force at, 74; action of, (2 Nov. 1917), 74–8.
Dayrell, Major W. S. D.S.O. (72nd Punjabis).
Defence of Baku, 241, 242.

Deane, Lt.-Col. D., D.S.O. (12th Cavalry).
Operations in Kurdistan, 156–8, 164–6; advance up the Tigris, 291–321.
Delli Abbas.
Affair near, (8/12 May 1917), 2–3; Turkish force at, 67.
Demonstrations.
By Ist and IIIrd Corps, (March 1918), 122.
Desertions, Russians, 7.
————, Turkish.
Ramadi, 26; 66, 86, 146; Khan Baghdadi, 122.
Dhibban.
Brit. occupy, (7/8 July 1917), 22; force at, 50; railhead at, 121.
Diary.
Of principal events, v–vii.
Direction, loss of.
By 13th Lancers, action of Daur, 76–7; 45th Sikhs, battle of Sharqat, 317.
Dirty Volcano.
Baku position, 216, 217; attack on, (26 Aug. 1918), 223–4.
Diyala, river.
Attempted crossing, (8/12 May 1917), 2–3; Russians leave the, 7; Brit. cross, (3 Dec.), 92; Turks leave, 115. *See also* "Bridges."
Djemal Pasha. (Comdg. Fourth Army).
Attends Conference at Aleppo, 13; reported movements of, 40; relations with Gen. von Falkenhayn, 63–4.
Double Hill.
Brit. occupy, 54, 56. *See also* "Middle Hill."
Duff, Gen. Sir B., G.C.B., G.C.S.I., K.C.V.O., C.I.E.
And Report of Mesopotamia Commission, 31.
Dulaim Arabs. *See under* "Arabs."
Dunsford, Brig.-Gen. F. P. S.
Action of Ramadi, 52–9.
"Dunsterforce."
Inception of, 98–9; conditions along route of, 105–6; activities of, (March 1918), 116–17, (April), 143–4, (May), 173–4, (June), 178–9; strength of, 116*n*, 144, 178*n*; operations of, part of general policy, 166; support to, from I.E.F. "D", 167–8; and proposal to go to Baku, 173; reinforced, 174; role of, 181–2; and Baku, 182–3; achievements of, 186; broken up, 249. *See also* "North Persia Force."
Dunsterville, Major-Gen. L. C., C.B.
Inception of force under, 98–9; arrives Baghdad, 104; appointment of and instructions to, 105; leaves Baghdad for Enzeli, (27 Jan. 1918), 106, reaches Kermanshah, 107, Hamadan, 110, leaves, (15 Feb.), 110, reaches and leaves Enzeli, 111, returns to Hamadan (25th), 111, at Hamadan, 119, 120, visits Kazvin and Tehran, 172, Kazvin, 179; Enzeli, 205; meets Sir C. Marling at Kazvin, 110–11; correspondence with C.I.G.S., (26 Feb.), 112–13, (March), 116–17, (9 Sept.), 237–8; with Gen. Marshall, (1 June), 178, (14th), 183, (18th), 183–4, (28th), 188, (3 July), 190–1, (1 Sept.), 231–2, (9th), 236, (17th), 249, with Gen. Cobbe, (20 Aug.), 218–19; concludes agreement with Bicharakoff, 117; under Gen. Marshall while in Persia, 119, 185–6; instructions to, (1 April), 142, (27 May, 1 June), 173, (11 Aug.) to proceed to Baku, 211, to evacuate Baku, 231; on success of 25 April, 158–9; visits Baghdad, 197; sends party to Baku, 203–4; moves towards Derbend, 204; and Baku, 182–3, 205–6, 245*n*; and troops for Krasnovodsk, 211; arrives Baku, (17 Aug.), 216; attends Council of War in Baku, 228, 229; responsible for Krasnovodsk, 231; and evacuation of Baku, 246–7; recalled by Gen. Marshall, 249.
Dushak (Trans-Caspia).
Action of, (14 Oct. 1918), 331.

Dust; sand.
Attack on Ramadi, 24, 25; action of Khan Baghdadi, 130, 136; screen of, raised by gunfire, 130*n*; advance up the Tigris, 289; battle of Sharqat, 317.

E.

East Persia Cordon.
India to take over control of, 103; role of, 103*n*.
Egerton, Major-Gen. Sir R. G., K.C.B.
Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 91–6; commands IIIrd Corps, 86; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6. *See also* "Operation Orders."
Egypt.
Opinion in, on Arab co-operation, 20; 7th Div. transferred to, 97.
Egyptian Expeditionary Force.
Question of co-operation of, with I.E.F. "D", 32, 42. *See also* "Palestine."
Elizabetopol.
Tartar Govt. set up at, 112.
Emergency Rations.
Orders to eat, 165; consumed, 287. *See also* "Rations."
Engineers, Corps of Royal, Companies, Field.
71st.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
72nd.—In Persia, 221*n*, 251, 252*n*.
88th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
448th.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9; advance up the Tigris, 268–321.
450th.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; advance up the Tigris, 268–321.
451st.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9; raid on Hit, 59–60; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
———, ———, Troop, Field.
7th (Cav. Bde.).—Operations in Kurdistan, 146–58.
Enver Pasha (Turkish Minister for War).
And recovery of Baghdad, 9, 13, 207; moves Turkish G.H.Q. to Aleppo and holds conference, (24 June 1917), 13; relations with Gen. von Falkenhayn, 63; letter from Mustapha Kemal, 64–5, App. XLII, 348–51; views of, on general situation, 207; waning influence of, 207*n*; resigns from Turkish Cabinet, 262.
Enzeli.
"Dunsterforce" reaches and leaves, 111, Gen. Bicharakoff reaches, 183; road to, secured by "Dunsterforce," 184; W.O. order occupation of, 201; question of seaplane base at, 202; Brit. retire from Baku to, 247; evacuation of, ordered and countermanded, 249*n*; naval repair base, 329.
Equipment, Turkish.
Shortage of, 146, 158*n*.
Erzinjan.
Turks occupy, 112.
Eski Baghdad.
Turks evacuate, 72.
Euphrates detachment, Turkish.
Strength and disposition of, (May 1917), 1, (May 1918), 162*n*, (June), 176, (30 Sept.), 258; action of Ramadi, 49–62; withdraw, 265, 328.

Euphrates river.
Projected enemy advance down the, 32–9, 41; strength and disposition of Brit. force on the, (end of Sept. 1917), 45*n*, (6 April 1918), 136, (March), 139, (Oct.), 261*n*; operations up the, (March), 121–36; Brit. policy on the, 167, 168. *See also* "Bridges"; "Middle Euphrates."
Euphrates Valley Canal, 23, 23*n*, 51; crossing secured, 52.
Exhaustion of troops.
Advance up the Tigris, 288; Sharqat, 307, 318.

F.

Falkenhayn, General von.
To command Turco-German force "Yilderim," 8, 14, Turkish Sixth, Seventh and Eighth Armies, 64; visits Turkish H.Q., (May 1917), 9, 13; preparations for offensive, 12–14; at Jerablus, 13; reported intentions of, 32, 38, 66; reported movement of, 40, 62, 63; relations with Turks, 63–4; memo. of 9 Aug. 1917, 65; affair of 22/24 Oct., 71–2.
Falluja.
Brit. force concentrate at, 22, 50*n*; reported enemy objective, 41.
Famine.
In Persia, 116–17, 117*n*, 119, 170; caused by Turks, 165.
Fane, Major-Gen. Sir V. B., K.C.I.E., C.B.
Affair of 24 Oct. 1917, 72; action of Daur, 75–8, Tikrit, 81–4.
Fanshawe, Major-Gen. H. D., C.B.
Acting G.O.C., I.E.F. "D", 193; correspondence with C.I.G.S., (15 July 1918), 196, (18th), 196–7, (19th), 197, 198, (20th), 198–9, (23rd, 25th), 201, (29th), 203; advance up the Tigris, 267–321; force under, to occupy Mosul, 320, arrives, 327. *See also* "Cobbe, Gen."; "Marshall, Gen."
Fat-ha.
Turkish force at, 74, 258, 265; air raid on, 84; Turkish position at, importance of holding, 265; Brit. enter, 271.
Fat-ha gorge.
Turkish position at, 261; description of, 263–5; action of the, 269–82.
Faviell, Lt.-Col. W. F. O., D.S.O. (Worcestershire).
Commands Brit. infantry at Baku, 222–7, 242–5; estimates Turkish casualties, 246*n*.
First Knoll, 52. *See also* "Lake Knoll"; "Lower Knoll."
Floods.
Below average in 1917, 11; control of, [illegible]21*n*, 26; in the Jabal Hamrin action area, 93, 94; caused by rain [illegible]6*n*. *See also* "Water."
Followers, Indian.
Number with I.E.F. "D," 328–9.
Food. *See* "Supplies."
Foreign Office.
And Arab policy, 9.
Fraser, Major-Gen. T., C.B., C.S.I., C.M.G.
Acting C.G.S. to Gen. Marshall, 113*n*; commands 14th Div., 249*n*.
Freeland, Major-Gen. H. F. E., C.B., D.S.O., M.V.O.
Reports on communications, 141.

G.

Gas, poison.
Probable use of, 49.
Gaunt, Rear-Ad. E. F. A., C.B., C.M.G. (C.-in-C. East Indies Squadron).
And naval control of the Caspian, 202.
Georgia. *See* "Trans-Caucasia."

Germans.
With Turks, 38, 40, 66; relations with Turks, 13, 64–5, 181, 184, 185; captured, Khan Baghdadi, 136; advance of, towards the Caucasus, 145, 171, 172, 177, reported intention to withdraw, 254; with Jangalis, 183, 200; staff with Turkish Sixth Army relieved, 265. *See also* "Caucasus"; "Trans-Caucasia."
Germany.
Activities of Agents of, 7, 137, 142, 181, 185, 186; condition of, (Dec. 1917), 97; appreciation of aims of, 138–9; influence in Persia, discredited, 158. *See also* "Missions."
Gillman, Brig.-Gen. W., C.M.G., D.S.O.
Commands 17th Div., 48*n*; C.G.S. to Gen. Marshall, 113*n*; conference in Egypt, 113, 113*n*; visits Tehran, 255.
Goltz, Col. von der.
And German forces in Caucasus, 247–8; visits Baku and returns to Germany, 254–5.
Gough-Calthorpe, Vice-Ad. The Hon. Sir Somerset A., K.C.B., C.V.O. (C.-in-C. Mediterranean).
Conference in Egypt, 113; Brit. representative to arrange armistice with Turkey, 263, concludes terms with Turkey, 322–4; and occupation of Mosul, 327, 328.
Great Britain.
Govt. of, consider offensive through Palestine, 19, decide to withdraw one div. from Mesopotamia, 97, policy, in Mesopotamia, 113, in Persia, Mesopotamia and Palestine, 114–15, Persia, 118, 142–3, 233–8, Near East, 138–9, 329, Trans-Caucasia, 173, 179–80, Caucasus, 233–8, pending peace settlement, 329; strength of armies of, 97; and Russian collapse, 98; division of responsibility in Near East, 185–6; and Palestine success, 259; and occupation of Mosul, 324–7. *See also* "House of Commons."
Great Zab, The.
Turkish force on, 321.
Grey, Brig.-Gen. W. H., C.B.
Succeeded as D.I.W.T. by Gen. Hughes, 11, 11*n*.
Guns, British.
Number of, 48.
——, Turkish.
Mounted in barges, 54, 56, sunk, 57; captured at action of Ramadi, 58, 59, third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 93, Hit, 121*n*, Khan Baghdadi, 130, 133, 136, Kurdistan, 151, 157, 158, battle of Sharqat, 314, 319; total, captured by Brit. 1917, 108, during campaign, 331.

H.

Habbaniya Canal. *See* "Euphrates Valley Canal."
Habbaniya Escape. *See* "Euphrates Valley Canal."
Habbaniya Hill, 51.
Habbaniya lake, 23, 51.
Haditha.
Brit. reach, 133; Turks reoccupy, 145.
Hadraniya.
Turkish force near, 302–3, cavalry action against, 312–14.
Haidar Pasha railway station.
Explosion at, 41, 65.
Haldane, Lt.-Col. C. L., C.M.G. (7th Gurkhas).
Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
Halil Pasha (Commanding Sixth Army).
Attends conference at Aleppo, 13; to command in the Caucasus, 207–8.

Hamadan.
"Dunsterforce" reaches and leaves, (15 Feb. 1918), 110, returns, (25th), 111, force at, 172*n*, 178*n*; Russians leave, 120.
Hamidiya (Turkish steamer).
Retires above Adhaim, 140; stranded, 284*n*.
Hamilton, Lord George.
Chairman of Mesopotamia Commission, 29.
Hammam Ali.
Gen. Cassels receives news at, of armistice, 321.
Hammar lake.
Dredging of, 257.
Hanmer, Lt.-Col. L. A. G. (21st Cavalry).
Operations in Kurdistan, 155, killed, 157.
Hardinge of Penshurst, Lord, K.G., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E.
And Report of Mesopotamia Commission, 30–1.
Harunabad.
Russians withdraw to, 7.
Havelock, Major B. A. J. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 241, 244, killed, 245.
Hildyard, Brig.-Gen. R. J. T., C.M.G., D.S.O.
[illegible]dvance up the Tigris, 285–321.
[illegible]ndiya Barrage.
Repairs to weir, 27–8.
Hit.
Brit. attempt raid on, (night 1/2 Oct. 1917), 59–60; Turkish force at, (Feb. 1918), 115, 116; importance of, 115, 168; Brit. occupy, (9 March), 121.
Hobart, Major P. C. S., D.S.O., M[illegible] (R.E.).
Taken prisoner, 133*n*, rescued, 135, 135*n*.
Hogg, Lt.-Col. J. McK. T. (2/39th Garhwalis).
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 124–36.
Holland-Pryor, Brig.-Gen. P., D.S.O., M.V.O.
Action of Ramadi, 56–9; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6.
Hopwood, Major-Gen. H. R., C.S.I.
Meets Gen. Smuts in Egypt, 113*n*.
Horse Shoe Lake, 51.
House of Commons.
Debate (12 July 1917), on Report of Mesopotamia Commission, 30.
Hughes, Brig.-Gen. R. H. W., C.S.I., C.M.G., D.S.O. (R.E.).
Succeeds Gen. Grey as D.I.W.T., 11, 11*n*.
Humr.
In Turkish position, 264; Turkish force at, 265; Turks evacuate, 296.
Hussain Hasni Amir Bey, Col.
C. of S., Ninth Army, 207.
Huwaish.
Brit. at, in rear of Turkish Sharqat position, 289–90; Brit. cavalry operations near, (27 Oct. 1918), 296.
Huwaislat.
Turks evacuate, 72.

I.

Ice.
Provision of, 22.
India.
Situation in, (May 1917), 6–7; effect in, of Russian collapse and revolution, 18, 102; release of Brit. territorials from, 19; recruiting in, 19*n*, 46, 255–6; and Report of Mesopotamia Commission, 31; security of, 42, 43, 139, 194; further assistance from, 96, 97, 175; Gen. Staff views on general situation, 191–2.

India, Government of.
Views of, on situation, (June 1917), 18; and formation of new units, 17, 19, 96.

Indian Army and Army in India.
Shortage of Brit. officers in, 17; wastage of Indian units in E. Africa, 18*n*; titles of I.A. units in 1918 and 1926, App. XLVIII, 402–4.

Indian Defence Force, The.
Creation of, 19*n*.

Indian Expeditionary Force "D."
Strength and distribution of, (May 1917), 1, (27th), 11, App. XL, 333–44, (end Sept.), 33, 44*n*/45*n*, (18 Nov.), 86, 86*n*, App. XLIII, 352–65, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (30 March), 139, App. XLV, 368–83, (beginning Oct.), 261*n*, (19 Oct.), 328–9, App. XLVI, 384–99; mission of, 19, 32, 87–8; question of co-operation of, with E.E.F., 32, 42, 113, 259, 260; list of principal officers with the, (1 Dec. 1917), 86, App. XLIV, 366–7, (1 Nov. 1918), App. XLVII, 400–1; changes in organisation, (March), 139–41, (April), 174–5; discussion as to future activities of, 166–70, 259–61; and calls for Western Front, 175; reductions in, 255, 266.

Infantry, British, Divisions.
13th.—Disposition, (Oct. 1917), 67, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (Oct.), 261*n*; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 67–70, third, 89–96; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; composition, 256.

————, ————, Brigades.
38th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 90–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in 13th Div., 256.
39th.—Ordered to Persia, 189; in Persia, 197, 197*n*, 201, 203, 251; disposition, (22 Aug. 1918), 219; defence of Baku, 222, (effective strength, (31 Aug.–1 Sept.), 228*n*), 232*n*, 238.
40th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 90–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in 13th Div., 256; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.

————, ————, Regiments.
Queen's Royal (West Surrey) 1st/5th Bn.—In 12th Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 57–9, Khan Baghdadi, 124–36.
Buffs (East Kent Regiment), 1st/5th Bn.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92–6.
King's Own (Royal Lancaster), 6th Bn.—Operations in Kurdistan, 156–58, 162–6, casualties, 158*n*.
Royal Warwickshire, 9th Bn.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; defence of Baku, 218–19, 222, (effective strength, 228*n*), 229, 232*n*, 240–5, casualties, 229, 246; in Persia, 251, 251*n*, Trans-Caspia, 253.
Norfolk, 2nd Bn.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
Leicestershire, 2nd Bn.—Action of Daur, 77–8.
Cheshire, 8th Bn.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 93–6; operations in Kurdistan, 148–58, 162–6.
Royal Welch Fusiliers, 8th Bn.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 93–6; operations in Kurdistan, 155–8, 162–6, casualties, 158*n*.
South Wales Borderers, 4th Bn.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 93–6; operations at Kurdistan, 156–8, 162–6; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
Gloucestershire, 7th Bn.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; location of, 219, 219*n*, 220, 221*n*, 222; in Persia, 251, 252*n*.
Worcestershire, 9th Bn.—Location of, 219, 220, 221*n*; defence of Baku, 222, 224, (effective strength, 228*n*), 232*n*, 238, 240, 244, casualties, 246; in Persia, 251, 251*n*, 252*n*.
East Lancashire, 6th Bn.—Operations in Kurdistan, 156–8, 164–6.

Infantry, British, Regiments—*cont.*
East Surrey Regiment, 1st/5th Bn.—In 55th Bde., 100*n*; battle of Sharqat, 315–21.
Hampshire, 1st/4th Bn.—In Persia, 104*n*, 119, 120, 120*n*, 172*n*, 178, 178*n*, 184, 184*n*, 202, 203, 219, 221*n*, 251, 251*n*, 252*n*; affair of Resht, 200; defence of Baku, 204, 204*n*, 222, 232*n*; Trans-Caspia, 231.
————, *1st/6th Bn.*—In 52nd Bde., 47*n*; advance up Tigris, 289–321.
————, *2nd/7th Bn.*—Attached 40th Bde., 256*n*.
Dorsetshire, 1st/4th Bn.—In 42nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 54–9, casualties, 55, 59; raid on Hit, 59–60; action of Khan Baghdadi, 128–36.
Welch, 8th Bn. (Pioneers).—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry, 1st Bn.—In 50th Bde., 48*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 130–6.
Loyal North Lancashire, 6th Bn.—Operations in Kurdistan, 156–8, 162–6, casualties, 158.
————, *2nd Bn.*—In 34th Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 278–321; depleted by influenza, 286*n*; Sharqat, casualties, 307.
Queen's Own (Royal West Kent Regiment), 1st/5th Bn.—In 54th Bde., 100*n*; advance up Tigris, 277–321.
Duke of Cambridge's Own (Middlesex Regiment), 1st/9th Bn.—In 53rd Bde., 100*n*; battle of Sharqat, 299–321.
Duke of Edinburgh's (Wiltshire), 5th Bn.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, casualties, 95, operations in Kurdistan, 155–8, 162–6; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
Manchester, 1st Bn.—Action of Tikrit, 81–4, casualties, 84*n*.
Prince of Wales's (North Staffordshire), 7th Bn.—Defence of Baku, 204–5, 216, 218–19, 222–6, (effective strength, 228*n*), 232*n*, 240–5, casualties, 218, 223, 223*n*, 224, 226, 245, 246; in Persia, 251, 251*n*.
Highland Light Infantry, 1st Bn.—In 51st Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 278–321, casualties, 281, 318*n*.
Seaforth Highlanders (Ross-shire Buffs, The Duke of Albany's), 1st Bn.—Action of Tikrit, 82–4, casualties, 82, 84*n*.
Connaught Rangers, 1st Bn.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.

————, Indian, Divisions.
3rd (Lahore).—Affair of 22/23 Oct. 1917, 71–2; action of Daur, 76; disposition, (15 Jan. 1918), 107; transferred to Egypt (March), 115, 139.
7th.—Affair of 24 Oct. 1917, 72; action of Daur, 75–8, Tikrit, 80–4; transferred to Egypt, (Dec.), 97.
14th.—Shahraban, 40, 67; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 89–96; disposition, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (Oct.), 261*n*; in Persia, 201.
15th.—Strength and disposition, (end May 1917), 11, (end Sept.), 45*n*, 47, 47*n*, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (March), 121, (June), 178, (Oct.), 261*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9.
17th.—To be formed, 36; strength and disposition, (end Sept. 1917), 45*n*, 47, 48*n*, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, (Oct.), 261*n*; affair of 22/23 Oct., 71–2; replaces, 7th Div., in 1st Corps 97; artillery of, increased, 256; advance up Tigris, 266–321, casualties, 318.
18th.—To be formed, 47; first units reach Basra, 86; despatch arrangements completed, 96; forming at Baghdad, 100; composition and distribution, (29 Dec. 1917), 100*n*, 101*n*, (15 Jan. 1918), 107, disposition, (Oct.), 261*n*; replaces 3rd Div., in 1st Corps, 115, 139; advance up Tigris, 266–321.
19th.—Proposal to form, 96; decision not to raise, 97*n*.

Infantry, Indian, Brigades,
7th.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
8th.—Affair of 22/24 Oct. 1917, 71–2; action of Daur, 75–8, Tikrit, 80–4.
9th.—Action of Daur, 76–8, Tikrit, 80–4.
12th.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9, casualties, 58; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
19th.—Action of Daur, 77–8, Tikrit, 81–4, casualties, 82.
21st.—Action of Daur, 75–8, Tikrit, 80–4.
28th.—Action of Daur, 77–8, casualties, 78; action of Tikrit, 81–4.
34th.—In 17th Div., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321; strength of, (29 Oct. 1918), 308*n*.
35th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 90–6.
36th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; disposition, (March 1918), 120, 120*n*, (June), 178*n*; in Persia, (Sept.), 251; replaced in 14th Div., by 56th Bde., 256.
37th.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 90–6; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
42nd.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
50th.—Formed, 40; in 17th Div., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 49–59, Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
51st.—In 17th Div., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321, casualties, 288*n*; strength of, (29 Oct. 1918), 308*n*.
52nd.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; attached 18th Div., 107; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
53rd.—In 18th Div., 47; composition and distribution, (29 Dec. 1917), 100*n*; disposition, 139; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
54th.—In 18th Div., 47; composition and distribution (29 Dec. 1917), 100*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321; to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
55th.—In 18th Div., 47; composition and distribution, (29 Dec. 1917), 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
56th.—Formed, 139; allotted to 14th Div., 256*n*; on railway work, 261, 268.
———, ———, Regiments.
2nd Queen Victoria's Own Rajput Light Infantry.—In 51st Bde., 48*n*.
6th Jat Light Infantry.—In 50th Bde., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 130–6.
2nd Bn., 9th (Delhi) Infantry.—Arrive, 100.
1st Bn., 10th Jats.—In 55th Bde., 100*n*.
13th Rajputs.—Arrive Basra, 17.
14th King George's Own Ferozepore Sikhs.—In 50th Bde., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9; advance up Tigris, 281–321, casualties, 284, 284*n*, 318*n*.
19th Punjabis.—Move from Meshed to Persian frontier, 204, 209, 210; actions at Kaakha, 231, Dushak, 331.
20th Duke of Cambridge's Own Infantry (Brownlow's Punjabis).—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 90–6.
24th Punjabis.—In 51st Bde., 48*n*, in 50th, action of Ramadi, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 130–6.
25th Punjabis.—In 54th Bde., 100*n*.
26th Punjabis.—Action against Sinjabis, 158–9; in Persia, 251.
28th Punjabis.—Action of Tikrit, 82–4, casualties, 82, 84*n*.
31st Punjabis.—In 34th Bde., 48*n*.
1st Bn., 32nd Sikh Pioneers.—In 17th Div., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
36th Sikhs.—In Persia, 251.
37th Dogras.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92–6, casualties, 95.
1st Bn., 39th Garhwal Rifles.—In 54th Bde., 100*n*; battle of Sharqat, 301–21.
2nd Bn., 39th Garhwal Rifles.—In 12th Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 56–9, casualties, 59; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.

Infantry, Indian, Regiments—*cont.*
43rd Erinpura.—In 12th Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 52–9; Hit, 123*n*.
45th Rattray's Sikhs.—In 52nd Bde., 47*n*; advance up Tigris, 289–321, lose direction, 317, casualties, 318*n*.
47th Sikhs.—Action of Tikrit, 81–4, casualties, 82, 84*n*.
48th Pioneers.—In 15th Div., 47*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; in Persia, 251.
49th Bengalis.—Arrive Basra, 17; Baghdad, 47.
51st Sikhs (Frontier Force).—Action of Daur, 77–8, casualties, 78*n*.
52nd Sikhs (Frontier Force).—In 54th Bde., 100*n*.
56th Punjabi Rifles (Frontier Force).—Action of Daur, 77–8, casualties, 78*n*.
59th Scinde Rifles (Frontier Force).—Action of Tikrit, 81–4, casualties, 82, 84*n*.
62nd Punjabis.—Khaniqin, 152*n*; in Persia, 251.
67th Punjabis.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92–6.
82nd Punjabis.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in 37th Bde., 256*n*.
83rd Wallajabad Light Infantry.—Arrive Basra, 17.
84th Punjabis.—In 52nd Bde., 47*n*.
85th Burma Infantry.—Arrive Basra, 17.
1st Bn., 89th Punjabis.—In 53rd Bde., 100*n*.
90th Punjabis.—In 12th Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 52–9, casualties, 59; action of Khan Baghdadi, 126–36.
91st Punjabis Light Infantry.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
92nd Punjabis.—Action of Tikrit, 82–4.
93rd Burma Infantry.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
1st Bn., 94th Russell's Infantry.—In 55th Bde., 100*n*.
1st Bn., 97th Deccan Infantry.—In 50th Bde., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9; platoon of, attacked by Arabs, 60*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 130–6.
104th Rifles.—Arrive Basra, 17.
106th Hazara Pioneers.—With 18th Div., 101*n*.
112th Infantry.—In 34th Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 286–321, casualties, 286, 318*n*.
113th Infantry.—In 52nd Bde., 47*n*.
114th Mahrattas.—In 34th Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 285–321, casualties, 285*n*, 318*n*.
116th Mahrattas.—Baghdad, 47; in 55th Bde., 100*n*; advance up Tigris, 270–321.
119th Infantry (The Mooltan Regiment).—Baghdad, 47.
2nd Bn., 124th Duchess of Connaught's Own Baluchistan Infantry.—Action of Tikrit, 81–4, casualties, 82, 84*n*.
125th Napier's Rifles.—Action of Tikrit, 82–4, casualties, 84*n*.
126th Baluchistan Infantry.—Arrive Basra, 17.
128th Pioneers.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; in Persia, 104*n*, 120*n*, 178*n*, 251.
1st Bn., 2nd King Edward's Own Gurkha Rifles (The Sirmoor Rifles).—In Persia, 178, 184, 219, 220, 221*n*, 251, 252*n*; affair of Resht, 200; replaced in 37th Bde., by 82nd Punjabis, 256*n*.
1st Bn., 3rd Queen Alexandra's Own Gurkha Rifles.—In 53rd Bde., 100*n*; battle of Sharqat, 309–21.
2nd Bn., 4th Gurkha Rifles.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92–6, casualties, 95.
1st Bn., 5th Gurkha Rifles (Frontier Force).—In 42nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 54–9, casualties, 54, 55, 59; action of Khan Baghdadi, 130–6.
2nd Bn., 5th Gurkha Rifles (Frontier Force).—In 42nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 54–9, casualties, 55; action of Khan Baghdadi, 128–36.
1st Bn., 6th Gurkha Rifles.—In Persia, 251.

Infantry, Indian, Regiments—*cont.*
2nd Bn., 6th Gurkha Rifles.—In 42nd Bde., 47*n*; action of Ramadi, 53–9, casualties, 53; action of Khan Baghdadi, 128–36.
1st Bn., 7th Gurkha Rifles.—In 53rd Bde., 100*n*; advance up Tigris, 277–321, casualties, 277.
2nd Bn., 7th Gurkha Rifles.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
2nd Bn., 9th Gurkha Rifles.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92–6.
1st Bn., 10th Gurkha Rifles.—In 51st Bde., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 282–321, casualties, 318*n*.

————, German, Regiments.
701st.—In Turco-German force, 8; disposition, 66*n*, 73, 88.
702nd.—In Turco-German force, 8; disposition, 66*n*, 73.
703rd.—In Turco-German force, 8; disposition, 66*n*, 73.
708th.—Disposition, 66*n*.
709th.—Disposition, 66*n*.
710th.—Disposition, 66*n*.

————, Turkish, Divisions.
2nd.—Disposition and strength, 62 ,(Jan. 1918), 108, (April), 146, 147, (2 May), 163, (June), 176, (July), 213, (30 Sept.), 258, (Oct.), 265, 300.
5th.—Strength and disposition, (Sept. 1918), 251, 259, (26 Oct.), 287; to join Sixth Army, 259, confirmed, 265; probable movements of, 281, 291, 300.
5th (Caucasus).—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; disposition, (29 Aug. 1918), 220; opposite Baku, 239, 240, at Baku, 250.
6th.—Strength and disposition, 71, (Jan. 1918), 108, (April), 145, (May), 163, 167*n*, (June), 176, (July), 213, (29 Aug.), 220, (Sept.), 251; third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 89.
9th (Caucasus).—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; disposition, (29 Aug. 1918), 220, (Sept.), 251.
10th (Caucasus).—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; reported movements, 220*n*, 240, 255; at Alexandropol, 251; ordered to Constantinople, 252.
11th (Caucasus).—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; Tabriz, 219, 220; disposition, 250.
12th.—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; disposition, (29 Aug. 1918), 220, (Sept.), 251, 259*n*.
14th.—Affair of 22/23 Oct., 1917, 72; strengthened by units of 52nd Div., 108; strength and disposition, (2 May, 1918), 163*n*, (June), 176, (July), 213, (30 Sept.), 258, (Oct.), 265; action of the Little Zab, 287–321.
15th.—In Ninth Army, 195*n*; disposition, (29 Aug. 1918), 220, opposite Baku, 239, 240, at Baku, 250.
19th.—In Turco-German force, 8.
20th.—In Turco-German force, 8.
24th.—In Turco-German force, 8; for Palestine front, 63.
36th (Caucasus).—Disposition, (29 Aug. 1918), 220, opposite Baku, 239, (Sept.), 250–1.
37th.—At Batum, 251.
46th.—Reinforcements from, reach Mosul, 14; disposition, 62, 63, 66, 207; reported movements, 108, 108*n*.
48th.—Transferred to Fourth Army, 63.
50th.—In Turco-German force, 8; reinforcements from, reach Mosul, 14; disposition, 61, 66, (Jan. 1918), 108, (Feb.), 115; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
51st.—Affair of 22/23 Oct. 1917, 72; action of Daur, 74–8; Tikrit, 79; strengthened by units of 52nd Div., 108; strength and disposition, (2 May 1918), 163*n*, (June), 176; reported broken up, 177.
52nd.—Affair of 22/23 Oct. 1917, 72, Tikrit, 79; reported broken up, 108, 108*n*.
59th.—In Turco-German force, 8.

Infantry, Turkish, Regiments.
1st.—Kirkuk, 62, 258; in 2nd Div., 213; action of the Little Zab, 287–321.
3rd.—In 14th Div., 163*n*.
7th.—In 51st Div., 163*n*, in 14th, 213; disposition, 258, 265; action of the Little Zab, 283–92.
9th.—In 51st Div., 163*n*, in 14th, 213; disposition, 258, 265; action of the Little Zab, 283–92.
13th.—On Tigris, 307*n*; captured, 314.
14th.—On Tigris, 307*n*; captured, 319.
16th.—Disposition, 145, 167*n*; in 6th Div., 213; reported absorbed by 22nd Regt., 259*n*.
18th.—Disposition, 145–6, 167*n*, 258–9; in 2nd Div., 123; Little Zab, 275*n*, action of the, 283–92.
22nd.—Disposition, 145, 167*n*, 259, 265; in 6th Div., 213; action of the Little Zab, 283–92.
24th.—On Euphrates, 176, 258.
37th.—Ordered to Hit, 60; in 14th Div., 163*n*.
43rd.—In 14th Div., 163*n*, 213; disposition, 258, 265; action of the Little Zab, 283–92.
44th.—In 51st Div., 163*n*.
157th.—Ordered to Hit, 60; disposition, (Feb. 1918), 115; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
169th.—Ordered to Hit, 61; disposition, (Feb. 1918), 115; action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36, bn. captured, 130.

Inland Water Transport.
Numbers employed by, (19 Oct. 1918), 329. *See also* "Transport, British, river."

Intelligence, British.
As to enemy movements and dispositions, 1, 5, 7–8, 13–14, 32, 61*n*, 71–2, 73, (Jan. 1918), 108, 108*n*, 112, 115, (April), 144, 145–6, 148, 167, 171, 172, 176, 177, 213, 220, 220*n*, 250–1, 252, 254, 255, 259, 261, 261*n*, 265; as to enemy intentions, 37–8, 40–1, 66, 72–3, 115, 144; as to probable use of gas, 49; as to condition of Turkish armies, 102–3, 146, 146*n*; as to enemy position at Khan Baghdadi, 122; as to enemy approach to Baku, 203, opposite, 239–40; from prisoners of war, 276*n*. *See also* "Reinforcements, Turkish."

————, Turkish.
As to Brit. intentions and movements, 63, 71; re Brit. in Baku, 240.

Irrigation.
Development of, 28; Directorate of, formed, (6 Feb. 1918), 141.

"Islam Army."
Formed in Caucasus, 144, 144*n*, 172; constitution and scope of, uncertain, 195*n*; never approved by Turkish Govt., 208*n*. *See also* "Nuri Pasha."

Ismail Hakki Bey.
Surrenders, 319; information obtained from, 320.

Italian front.
Effect of defeats on, 96.

Ivens, Major H. T. C. (26th Punjabis).
Action against Sinjabi tribe, 158–9.

Izzet Pasha (Commanding Caucasus Army).
Attends Conference at Aleppo, 13; appointed Grand Vizier, 262.

J.

Jabal Hamrin, The.
Turkish force on, (Oct. 1917), 67; importance of, and decision to occupy, 67; second action of, 67–70, third, 89–96, probable effect of, 96; Fat-ha gorge position, 263. *See also* "Qizil Ribat–Jabal Hamrin area."

Jabal Khanuqa, The.
Fat-ha gorge position, 264.

Jabal Makhul, The.
Fat-ha gorge position, 263–4.

Jabal Sinjar, The.
Reconnaissance to, 213–14; Turkish force at, 258.

Jackson's House.
Turkish position near, 54.

Jahad.
Fears of a, in Turkestan and Central Asia, 250.

Jangalis of Gilan.
Activities of, 106, 113, 120, 183; and Mission of "Dunsterforce," 111, 181; famine relief work of, 117*n*; under Bolshevik influence, 118; reduced effectiveness of, 142; Bolsheviks hostile to, 172; affair of Resht, (20 July 1918), 200–1; attitude of, 253, 255. *See also* "Kuchik Khan."

Japan.
Proposed intervention of, in Siberia, 180.

Jarvis, Capt. T. S. W., M.B.E. (Manchesters).
With Gen. Malleson's Mission, 189.

Jelus.
Generic term of Christian tribes, 144*n*; defeat Turkish force near Urmia, 172; Brit. assistance to, 191, 195, 197, 201; Turks practically surround, at Urmia, 195, disaster to, 206.

Jerablus.
Shakturs built at, 12.

Jerusalem.
Turks surrender, (9 Dec. 1917), 99.

Jews, Russian.
Activities of, against Allies, 7.

Jibin Wadi.
Turks driven from the, 81.

Jones, Major-Gen. L. C., C.M.G., M.V.O.
Action of Daur, 75–8.

Julnar (river steamer).
Recaptured, action of Tikrit, 84.

K.

Kaakha (Trans-Caspia).
Actions at, (28 Aug. 1918), 231, (11 and 18 Sept.), 250.

Karind.
Brit. reach, (16 March 1918), 119.

Kars.
Turks capture, 144.

Karun.
Strength of Brit. force on front, (end Sept. 1917), 45*n*.

Kazvin.
Gen. Dunsterville meets Sir C. Marling at, 110–11; Russians occupy, 120.

Keeling, Lt.-Col. E. H., M.C. (R.E.)
And evacuation of Brit. prisoners of war, 328, 328*n*.

Keleks (rafts).
Used on the Euphrates, 12.

Kennion, Lt.-Col. R. L., C.I.E.
Brit. Consul at Kermanshah, 117, 143.

Kerensky, M.
Influence of, on Russian situation, 14.

Kermanshah.
Russians leave, 107, 109; Brit. reach, 107, 119.

Keyworth, Lt.-Col. R. G., D.S.O. (R.A.)
Defence of Baku, 204–5, commands Brit. troops, 205–6, 210, 215, 222, 240–4; decides to evacuate Baku, 245.

Khan Abu Rayan.
Brit. occupy, 116.

Khan Baghdadi.
Turks retire to, 121; action of, (26–27 March 1918), and subsequent pursuit, 121–36.

Khaniqin.
Turkish force at, 61, 67.

Khurasan.
Brit. force in, 209.

Kifri.
Russian attempt against, fails, (8/12 May, 1917), 2–3; air raids on aerodrome at, 84, 90; Turkish XIII Corps H.Q. at, 89; aerodrome moves from, 99*n*; centre of enemy intrigues, 143; Brit. occupy, (28 April 1918), 151. *See also* "Mosul-Kifri-Tikrit area."

Kirkpatrick, Lt.-Gen. Sir G. M., K.C.S.I., C.B., (C.G.S.I.).
Views of, on Russian co-operation, 44*n*.

Kirkuk.
Causes leading up to advance on, 159–62, occupation of, 162–6, Brit. enter, (7 May 1918), 164; description of, 165; Brit. withdraw from, 171; Turkish force at, 258, 276*n*; Brit. occupy, (25 Oct.), 276.

Kite Balloon Companies. *See under* "Royal Air Force."

Korniloff, General.
Succeeds Gen. Brusiloff, 36.

Krasnovodsk.
Brit. Mission to, 188–9, 201, 205, 211, 231; policy re, 212, 213, 231; increased importance of, 248; naval repairing base, 329. *See also* "Trans-Caspia."

Kress, General von.
Comdg. Turkish force in Palestine, 65; Head of German Mission in the Caucasus, 208.

Kuchik Khan.
Chief of the Jangalis, 113, sues for peace, 201, terms settled, 222. *See also* "Jangalis of Gilan."

Kuflan Kuh.
Brit. position on the, 233, evacuated, 238; Turks evacuate, 329.

Kulawand.
Turkish force at, 149; affair of, (27 April 1918), 149–51.

Kurdistan.
Operations in, (April-May 1918), 146–58, 162–6; strength of Turks in, (2 May), 162–3, (21 Oct.), 265; situation in South, (May), 166; Brit. force in, (Oct.), 261, 261*n*.

Kurds. *See* "Arabs and Kurds."

Kurmat Ali.
Floating bridge at, 49.

Kursk (Caspian steamer).
Commandeered, 205; evacuation of Baku, 246–7.

L.

Labour Corps.
Strength of, (19 Oct. 1918), 329.

Lake Knoll.
Gen. Brooking's H.Q. at, 55. *See also* "Lower Knoll"; "First Knoll."

Leachman, Col. G. E., C.I.E. (Sussex).
Advance up the Tigris, 269; and question of occupation of Mosul, 325.

Leave.
Extensive arrangements for, 2, 2*n*, 256–7, 257*n*.
Lenin, M.
Assumes power in Russia, 85, 88; and Baku, 182.
Lenkoran.
Brit. Mission at, 251*n*.
Leslie, Major-Gen. G. A. J., C.B., C.M.G.
Action of Daur, 75–8; advance up the Tigris, 267–321.
Lewin, Brig.-Gen. A. C., C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.
Operations in Kurdistan, 154–8, 162–6; commands troops S. of Caspian, 220, hands over to Gen. Champain, 222*n*; visits Baku, 229; commands column of IIIrd Corps, 261, composition, 266*n*.
Ley, Major J. W., D.S.O. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 218, 224, 225, 240, 242, 243, 245.
Lime.
Manufactured at Hit, 257.
Lines of Communication, British.
Strength on, decreased, 256, 256*n*.
———— — ————, Turkish.
Imperfection of, 1; strength on, (June 1918), 176.
Little Zab, The.
Turkish position at confluence of, with Tigris, 261, description of, 264–5, 283; force at, 265, 283; fordable, 268*n*; Brit. cross, 275–6; action of the, 282–93.
Locker-Lampson, Commr. O. S., C.M.G., D.S.O., M.P. (R.N.V.R.).
To join "Dunsterforce," 105; unit arrives, 179*n*.
Lower Knoll, 51, 52. *See also* "First Knoll"; "Lake Knoll."
Lucas, Brig.-Gen. F. G., D.S.O.
Action of Ramadi, 52–9; reconnoitres towards Hit, 115; action of Khan Baghdadi, 124–36.
Lynch-Staunton, Lt.-Col. R. K., D.S.O. (R.A.).
Mortally wounded, 285.

M.

Macdonald, 2nd Lt. H. (13th Hussars).
Operations in Kurdistan, 157.
Macdonogh, Major-Gen. Sir G. M. W., K.C.M.G., C.B., (D.M.I.).
Correspondence with Gen. Maude, 5.
Machine guns, British, Squadrons.
15th.—Action of Ramadi, 56–9, Khan Baghdadi, 131–6; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; in Persia, 104, 201, 251, 252*n*.
———— ————, ————, Companies.
Seven arrive Basra, 86.
39th.—In Persia, 221*n*.
No. 128.—In 12th Bde., 47*n*.
No. 129.—In 34th Bde., 48*n*; battle of Sharqat, 306–21.
No. 130.—In 42nd Bde., 47*n*.
No. 131.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
No. 133.—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6.
No. 186.—In Persia, 104*n*, 120*n*, 252*n*.
No. 187.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
No. 207.—In 53rd Bde., 100*n*.
No. 238.—In 54th Bde., 100*n*; advance up Tigris, 292–321.
No. 239.—In 55th Bde., 100*n*.
No. 249.—Amara, 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
No. 256.—Allocated to 50th Bde., 48*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 130–6.
No. 257.—Allocated to 51st Bde., 48*n*.

Machine guns, British, Companies—*cont.*
No. 258.—Allocated to 52nd Bde., 47*n*; battle of Sharqat, 294–321.
No. 273.—Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
No. 274.—Khaniqin, 152*n*.
No. 275.—Action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36.
No. 276.—Advance up Tigris, 268–321.
———— ————, Turkish.
Captured, 59, 96, Khan Baghdadi, 130, 132, 133, 136, in Kurdistan, 157, 158, Sharqat, 306, 314, 319.
MacIlwaine, Major A. H., M.C. (R.A.)
Battle of Sharqat, 304–21.
Mackensen, General.
Attends conference at Constantinople, 5; reported visit to Mesopotamia, 13*n*.
Maclachlan, Brig.-Gen. T. R., C.M.G.
Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6.
Madhij.
Brit. occupy, 23, force at, 50, 51; ferry and supply depot at, 51.
Mahomedans.
Unrest amongst, 102.
Mahsuds.
Activities of, 6–7, 17–18.
Malleson, Major-Gen. W., C.B., C.I.E.
Head of Brit. Mission at Meshed, 185; and situation at Baku, 204; activities of, 209–10; and Krasnovodsk, 211, 212, 213, 248, 250; Trans-Caspian detachment, 253.
Mandali.
Suggested subsidising of tribes about, 9–10; Turkish force at, 38, 61, 61*n*; Brit. occupy, 61, 67.
Manganese.
Importance of, to Germany, 208, 255.
Mansuriya.
Brit. occupy, 69.
Man-power, Turkish.
Probable, in Mosul–Kifri–Tikrit area, 4; paucity of, 73.
Mantis (river gunboat).
Provides personnel for the Caspian, 202.
Maps and Plans.
Compiled from aerial photographs, 28; inaccuracy of, 271.
Maqil.
Port facilities at, 26.
Marches.
Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 92; during advance up the Tigris, 276, 294, 296, 304.
————, night.
27 Sept. 1917, action of Ramadi, 52; 28th/29th, of Gen. Norton's column, 61; 1/2 Nov., action of Daur, 76; 26/27 April, Kurdistan, 148-9, 151; Gen. Lewin's column, 267; Gen. Sanders' column, 299. *See also* "Night Operations."
Marling, Sir C. M., K.C.M.G., C.B. (Brit. Minister at Tehran).
Suggestion for protection of Persia, 98; meets Gen. Dunsterville at Kazvin, 110–11; at Tehran, 172; and military operations in Persia, 119; policy of, 161; report of, (9 May 1918), 168; and question of moving troops from Persia, 173; leaves Tehran, 253–4.
Marshall, Capt. W. M. (Political Officer at Najaf).
Murdered, (19 March 1918), 137.

Marshall, Lieut.-Gen. Sir W. R., K.C.B.
Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 67–70, plan for, 68, third action, 89–96; succeeds Gen. Maude as C.-in-C., 86; correspondence with C.I.G.S., (22 Nov. 1917), 87–8. (3 Jan. 1918), 103–4, (24th), 107, (2, 6, 9 Feb.), 109, (13th, 15th), 110, (31 Jan., 3 and 21 Feb.), 113–14, (1, 3, 6 March), 114–15, (7th), 117, (9th–13th), 118–19, (early March), 120–1, (11th–12th), 121, 121*n*, (14th), 138–9, (28th), 139, (29 April), 159, (2 May), 160–1, (10th), 166–7, (12th), 167–8, (18th, 21st), 168–9, (24th), 169, (25th), 169–70, (27th–28th), 170, (24th, 27th, 1 June), 173, (4th), 179, (6th), 179–80, (9th), 180–2, (12th), 182, (13th), 182–3, (18th), 183–4, (28th), 186–8, (30th), 188, (2 July), 188–9, (4th), 189–90, (5th), 190–1, (6th), 192, (1 Sept.), 230–1, (4th), 231–2, (28 Aug.), 233–4, (5 Sept.), 235–6, (10th), 236–7, (11th, 12th), 238, (16th), 248, (17th), 248–9, (18th), 249, (23rd), 253, (2 Oct.), 259, (4th, 5th, 6th), 260, (1 Nov.), 324, with C.-in-C. India, (27 May), 174; (6 July), 192, (10 Sept.), 236–7, with Gen. Dunsterville, (1 June), 178, (14th), 183, (18th), 183–4, (28th), 188, (3 July), 190–1, (1 Sept.), 231–2, (9th), 236, 237–8, (17th), 249; responsibilities of, extended, 119, defined, 185–6; decides to attack Hit, 120; action of Khan Baghdadi, 121–36; and Najaf conspiracy, 137; operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6; and question of "Dunsterforce" leaving Persia, 173; appreciation of 9 June, 180–2; instructions to, re Persia and the Caspian, (28 June), 186–8; on leave, 193, returns, 230; holds conference at Baghdad, 261; advance up the Tigris, 261–321; orders occupation of Mosul, 320, 324; receives news of armistice, 324; arrives Mosul, 327; and armistice terms, 328. *See also* "Cobbe, General"; "Fanshawe, General"; "Plans of Operations."

Matthews, Lt.-Col. C. L. (1/4th Hampshires).
Column under in Persia, 104, 115, 178; affair of Resht, 200.

Maude, Lieut.-Gen. Sir F. S., K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.
Prepares for hot season, 1–2; memorandum (7 May 1917), 2; correspondence with C.I.G.S., (8 May), 3, (22nd), 4–5, (29th), 5–6, 9–10, (16th), 9, (1 June), 10–11, (6th), 13, (14th and 16th), 14–15, (18th), 15, (21st), 15, (12 July) 15–16, (16th), 16–17, (22nd), 17, (2nd, 4th), 18, (21st), 19–20, (24 June), 20, (2 Aug.), 33, 34, (5th), 34–5, (6th), 35, (17th), 36, 38, (30th), 38–9, (9th), 42, (9–11 Sept.), 42, (16th), 43, (21st), 44, (24th), 44–5, (29th), 44*n*–45*n*, (26th), 46, (beginning Nov.), 84–5, with Gen. Macdonogh, 5, with Gen. Whigham, 5*n*, 59*n*; views of, on employment of Arabs, (June), 10–11, 20; discounts Russian assistance, 33–4; factors governing plans of, 34–6; asks for reinforcements, 35–6, 44; action of Ramadi, 49–59; occupation of the Jabal Hamrin, 67–70; action of Daur, 74–8, Tikrit, 78–84; death of, 85; succeeded by Gen. Marshall, 86. *See also* "Operation Orders."

Mauritius.
Number of men from, with I.E.F. "D," 329.

McCleverty, Capt. G. M., D.S.O., M.C. (1/2nd Gurkhas).
Affair of Resht, 200.

McCudden's Point, 51, 52.

McDonell, Mr. A. E. R.
Brit. Vice-Consul, Baku, 198, 198*n*, 199, 201*n*.

Mechanical transport. *See* "Transport, mechanical."

Medical Services, British, Motor Ambulance Convoys.
No. 33.—Third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 90.
No. 39.—Arrives, 47.
No. 40.—Arrives, 47; action of Ramadi, 50–9.

———, ———, ———, Combined Field Ambulances.
No. 3.—48*n*.
No. 19.—47*n*.
No. 23.—47*n*.

Medical Services, British, Combined Field Ambulances—*cont.*
Nos. 37, 38, 39, 40.—101*n*.
No. 105.—47*n*.
No. 108—47*n*.
No. 111.—22, 48*n*.

Mediterranean Sea Front.
Strength of Turks upon, 62.

Mensheviks.
And Trans-Caspia, 204, 209, 209*n*.

Merv (Trans-Caspia).
Brit. occupy, (1 Nov. 1918), 331.

Meshed.
Brit. Mission at, 185.

Mesopotamia Commission.
Report of, published June 1917, 28, consideration of, 28–31.

Mianeh.
Brit. force near, 219–20; Turks occupy, (9 Sept. 1918), 233.

Middle East.
W.O. Summary, (25 Sept. 1918), of military situation in, 253–4.

Middle Euphrates.
Designates line Falluja–Nasiriya, strength of force in, 107*n*.

Middle Hill.
Brit. occupy, 54. *See also* "Double Hill."

Missions.
Brit. with Russian G.H.Q., 17; in S. Persia, 18, 142, 174; at Meshed, 185; to Krasnovodsk, 188–9, 201, 205; at Lenkoran, 251*n*; German, in the Caucasus, 208. *See also* "Dunsterforce"; "Dunsterville Gen."; "Malleson, Gen."; "Sykes, Gen."

Moens, Col. A. W. H. M., C.M.G., D.S.O. (52nd Sikhs).
Work of, on Persian L. of C., 206.

Monro, Gen. Sir C. C., G.C.M.G., K.C.B. (C.-in-C. India).
Correpondence with C.I.G.S., (13 May 1917), 6–7, (26 June), 17, (28th), 17–18, (12–18 July), 18; 19, (1–2 Aug.), 32–3, (6 Sept.), 43, (24th), 45, (27th–28th), 46–7, (1, 3 Dec.), 96–7, (4th), 97, (12 Feb. 1918), 110, (21st), 113–14, (1, 3, 6 March), 114–15, (14th), 138–9, (28th), 139, (3 May), 161–2, (10th), 166–7, (15th), 168, (4–12 July), 191–4, (20th, 21st), 199, (14 Aug.), 212, (3 Sept.), 231*n*, (28 Aug.), 233–4, (2 Sept.), 234–5, (10th), 236, with Gen. Marshall (27 May), 174, (6 July), 192, (10th Sept.), 236–7; views of, on proposed advance, 32; and Trans-Caspia detachment, 253.

Montagu, The Rt. Hon. E. S., P.C., M.P. (S. of S. for India, July 1917—).
Correspondence with Viceroy of India, (25 June 1918), 185–6.

Moral, British.
Excellence of, 46, 86.
———, Russian.
State of, 88, 182.
———, Turkish.
State of, 1, 46, 86, 146, 146*n*; in Sixth Army, 66, 176, 265.

Mosul.
Turkish reinforcements to, 5, 14; Russian intentions against, 17, 32, 36; importance of, 32; question of Brit. advance on, 109, 109*n*; Turkish Sixth Army H.Q. at, 162–3, 258; strength of Turkish force at, 162–3, 176, 258, 321; Gen. Marshall orders occupation of, 320, 324, preliminaries to, 325–7; Brit. occupy, (3 Nov. 1918), 326, 328; Turks evacuate, 327–8.

Mosul–Kifri–Tikrit area.
Probable enemy man-power in, 4.

Moth (river gunboat).
Provides personnel for the Caspian, 202.

Motor Ambulances. *See under* "Medical Services."
Motor Batteries, Light Armoured. *See under* "Artillery, British."
Moule, Lieut. G. G. (14th Hussars).
Action of Ramadi, 57.
Mush.
Russians evacuate, 7.
Mushaid Point.
Brit. occupy, 23, 24*n*, 25, withdraw, 25; action of Ramadi, Brit. occupy, 53.
Mushaid Ridge.
Turkish force at, 51; Brit. occupy, 53.
Mushak position. *See* "Little Zab, The."
Mustapha Kemal Pasha.
To command in the Caucasus, 5; attends conference at Aleppo, 13; letter to Enver Pasha, (30 Sept. 1917), 64–5, App. XLII, 348–51, resigns, 64.

N.

Naft Dagh (Kurdistan).
Strong point at, captured by Brit., 156.
Nahr Umar.
Improvements of port facilities at, 26, 49.
Najaf.
Capt. Marshall murdered at, 137.
Nasiriya Front.
Taken over by Euphrates L. of C. Defences, 139.
Navy, The Royal.
Personnel withdrawn, 140; and control of the Caspian, 202, 329. *See also* "*Caddisfly*"; "*Mantis*"; "*Moth*".
Navy, Turkey. *See* "*Baghdad*"; "*Burhanieh*"; "*Hamidiya*."
Nazim Bey.
Commands Turkish 50th Div., 122, captured, 134.
Near East.
Situation in, (March 1918), resulting from collapse of Russia and Rumania, 138–9; division of responsibility in, 185–6.
Nightingale, Brig.-Gen. M. R. W., C.M.G., D.S.O.
Advance up the Tigris, 270–321.
Night Operations.
Action of Ramadi, (28–29 Sept. 1917), 56–7; raid on Hit, (1–2 Oct.), 59–60; in Kurdistan, 148–9, 151, 155, 156; advance up Tigris, 271, (24 Oct. 1918), 275, (28th), 304–5. *See also* "Marches, night."
Nisibin.
Enemy railhead reaches, 41, 46, 66; railhead west of, 88.
Nivelle, General.
Failure of offensive of, in France, 3*n*.
Nixon, Gen. Sir John E., K.C.B.
And Report of Mesopotamia Commission, 31.
Noel, Capt. E. W. C., C.I.E. (R.A.).
Steps to secure release of, 222.
Norris, Commodore D. T. (S.N.O. Persian Gulf).
To command naval operations in the Caspian, 202; arrives Baku, 216; and evacuation of Baku, 247; and question of evacuation of Enzeli, 249*n*; and control of Caspian, 250; incapacitated, 329.

North Persia Force (late "Dunsterforce").
Composition, (16 Sept. 1918), 251, 251*n*, 252*n*; occupation of Baku, 330.
North-West Frontier of India.
Situation on, (May 1917), 6–7; effect of Russian collapse on, 99.
Norton, Brig.-Gen. C. E. G., C.S.I., A.D.C.
Occupies Mandali, 61; operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; advance up the Tigris, 279–321.
Nuri Pasha.
Organises "Islam Army" in Caucasus, 144, 171, 172, 208*n*; claims title of C.-in-C., Azerbaijan Army, 330; reported orders to, 251; at Baku, 251, 254; plans of, 255; and Brit. occupation of Baku, 330. *See also* "Islam Army."

O.

Odessa.
Germans occupy, (13 March 1918), 118, 120.
O'Dowda, Brig.-Gen. J. W., C.M.G.
Operations in Kurdistan, 152–8, 162–6.
Oil.
Wells at Baku, 173, 216, control of, 182, question of destruction of plant, 182, 205, 230; used on railways, 174; importance of, 194, 208, 255; obtainable at Krasnovodsk, 213; development of workings, 257.
Operations.
May–July, 1917, 1–31, Aug.–Sept., 32–65, Oct.–Dec., 66–101, Jan.–March, 1918, 102–41, April–May, 146–58, 162–6, defence of Baku, 204–6, 209–10, 210–13, 215–33, 236–47, advance up Tigris, (Oct.), 258–321. *See also* "Plans of Operations."
———, enemy accounts of, 7–9, 12, 62; "Schlachten des Weltkrieges 1914–18: Yilderim," 8*n*; "Memories of a Turkish Stateman," 8*n*; "Yilderim," 8*n*, 60–2, 70–1, 72, 207–8; "Out of My Life," 8*n*; "Erich von Falkenhayn," 8*n*, 65; "Zwischen Kaukasus und Sinai," 208.
Operation Orders, British.
Gen. Brooking's (27 Sept. 1917), for action of Ramadi, 52, (25 March 1918), Khan Baghdadi, 123–5, 131, 133; Gen. Maude's for attack on Daur, 74; Gen. Cobbe's for action of Daur, 75–6, advance up Tigris, (18 Oct.), 267–8, 269, (25th), 280–1, 282–3, (26th), 291, (27th), 294, (28th), 299–300; Gen. Egerton's for 4 Dec. 1917, 94; Gen. Cayley's for operations in Kurdistan, 153, 155.
Orton, Col. E. F.
Operations under, in S. Persia, 208, 331.

P.

Pai Taq pass.
Russian force at, 15.
Palestine.
Considered a defensive front by Turks, 9; Gen. Allenby assumes command in, 19; Brit. intentions in, 19–20, 114–15, 139; correlation of campaigns in Mesopotamia and in, 42, 88, 108, 113, 259, 260; strength of enemy in, 62, 66*n*, 97; enemy realises importance of, 63–4, intentions in, 72–3; effect of Brit. preparations and offensive in, 66, 102–3, 207; Brit. troops withdraw from, 176; Brit. victory in, 252. *See also* "Egyptian Expeditionary Force."
Pan-Islamic movement.
Unrest caused by, 102.
Pan-Turanian movement.
Brit. policy regarding, 98*n*; unrest caused by, 102.
Paris.
Allied Conferences at, 15, 19, 262.

" Pasha II." *See* " Army Corps, German, Asiatic Corps."
Passchen, von.
Commands Jangali force, 200.
Patch, Brig.-Gen. F. R., C.M.G., D.S.O.
Action of Khan Baghdadi, 126–36.
Pavloff, General.
Disposition of force under, (May 1917), 2; question of co-operation by, 14–15; withdraws bulk of force to Pai Taq, 15; relieved by Gen. Baratoff, 17.
Peace.
Negotiations between Russia and Germany opened at Brest-Litovsk, 97, concluded (March 1918), 112; Turco-German, with Georgia and Armenia, 145; negotiations between Turks and Trans-Caucasian Federation broken off, 176; Germany with Georgia (8 June), 177; Turks with Armenians, 180; Germany makes definite offer to Belgium, 252; Austria asks U.S.A. to arrange Conference, 252–3; Turkish efforts for, 262–3. *See also* " Armistice."
Peebles, Brig.-Gen. E. C., C.B., D.S.O.
Commands 19th Bde., action of Tikrit, 82–4.
Penjwin.
Russians occupy, but evacuate, 15.
Persia.
Situation in, (May 1917), 6, (June), 18, (Dec.), 99, (March 1918), 117–18, (April), 142–3, (May), 168–70, 174, (June), 181, (July), 208, (Sept.), 237; Russian movements in, 7; Turkish ambitions in, 9; strength of Russian force in, 34, 102; enemy intentions against, 41, 41*n*, 67, 144; enemy agents in, 73, 181, 185, 186; probable effect of Russian collapse in, 98, 98*n*, 102; withdrawal of Russians from, 107, 109, 110; Brit. policy in, 108, 109–10, 114–15, 233–8; famine relief work in, 116–17, 117*n*, 119; conditions in, 119–20; Brit. force in, 120*n*, 221, 221*n*, (16 Sept.), 251, 251*n*, 252*n*, 261*n*; question of troops leaving, 173; local rising in south, 174; situation in south, (June 1918), 186, (July), 208–9, (Oct.), 331; Shah dismisses anti-Brit. Govt., 209; attitude of Govt., of, 253; events in, (Oct.), 329–31. *See also* " Missions "; " North Persia Force "; " South Persia Rifles."
Persian gendarmerie.
German intention to utilise, 73.
Petroff, M. (Bolshevik leader).
At Baku, 206; attitude of, 215.
Petrovsk.
Captured by Russian force, 232.
Petty, Lieut. J. (Hampshire).
Defence of Baku, 225, killed, 226.
Photography.
Aerial, 28, 49, 52*n*, 75, 108, 122.
Plans. *See* " Maps."
Plans of operations.
Enemy's, for 1917 offensive, 7–9, 62; Gen. Marshall's for second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68, third, 89, operations in Kurdistan, 146, 147–8; for attack on Daur, 74–5; advance on Kirkuk, 163; advance up the Tigris, 269.
Poti.
Germans land at, (9 June 1918), 177, 180, 199.
President Kruger (Caspian steamer).
Commandeered, 205; takes Gen. Dunsterville to Baku, 216; evacuation of Baku, 246–7.
Press, the Socialist, in Russia.
Propaganda against Allies, 7.
Principal Events.
Diary of, v–vii.

Prisoners of War, captured by British.
Action of Ramadi, 58, 59; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 69, third, 93, 95, 96; in Palestine, 74; action of Daur, 78, Tikrit, 82, 84; total for 1917, 108; at Hit, 121*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 126, 127, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136; operations in Kurdistan, 151, 151–2, 157, 158, 158*n*, 165; at Tauq, 267; in advance up the Tigris, 273, 279, 281; Sharqat, 306, 309, 314; 18–30 Oct. 1918, 319, (30th), 321; total, 331.
———— — ——, ———— — Russians.
Reported return of, to Turkey, 177; enlist in Red Army, 185; in Baku, 218.
———— — ——, ———— — Turks.
Affair of 27 Oct. 1918, 296; Armistice Clause dealing with, 328.
Prjevalski, General.
Comdg. Russian Caucasus Armies, 37; proposed co-operation of, 73–4.
Propaganda.
In Russia, against Allies, 7; German, amongst Arabs, 73; Bolshevik, in Persia, 99, 117; by enemy agents, 102, 142; Turco-Persian, anti-Brit., 207; in Baku, 222, distributed by aircraft, 223.
Pusht-i-Kuh, *Vali* of.
Relations with, 10, 20.

Q.

Qaiyara.
Affair of, (30 Oct. 1918), 319.
Qara Tepe.
Brit. occupy, 149.
Qara Tepe area.
Air raid on, 84; operations in the, 89–96, 146–9.
Qasr-i-Shirin.
Russian force at, 7, 15; Turks occupy, 15, force at, 61.
Qizil-Ribat.
Turks occupy, 15, force at, 61, 67; Brit. occupy, 70.
Qizil Ribat–Jabal Hamrin area.
Turks occupy, 15, force at, 61, 67; operations in the, 67–70, 89–96. *See also* " Jabal Hamrin, The."

R.

Raddatz, General.
Co-operation with, (8–14 May 1917), 2–3; withdraws to Harunabad, 7.
Raids, British.
On Ramadi, (11 July 1917), 22–6, Hit, (night 1–2 Oct.), 59–69.
———, ————, Aerial.
On aerodromes at Kifri, 84, 90, Tuz Khurmatli and Humr, 99, (Jan. 1918), 108; camps at Fat-ha and Qara Tepe, 84.
———, Turkish, Aerial.
On Baghdad, 108.
Railways, British.
Baghdad–Samarra, 5, 26, extension to Tikrit, 168, 174, 214, completed, 234*n*, northward of, 260, 261; Baquba, 5*n*, 49, 49*n*, 67; Dalbandin (Baluchistan), Persian frontier, 18; Kut–Baghdad, completed, (July 1917), 26; Baghdad–Baquba, completed, (July), 26, conversion to metre-gauge completed, 100; Sumaika–Sadiya, completed, (July), 26; Baghdad–Falluja, 26, 49, completed to Falluja, (21 Dec.), 100, Dhibban, (18 Feb. 1918), 116; Baghdad–Musaiyib–Hilla, 26, 141, completed to, 174, 178, opened to Kifl, 214; Basra–Qurna, 49, completed through to Amara, 100; Baquba–Shahraban, completed, (15 Oct. 1917), 49, 49*n*, 67, extended, 100; in existence, (March 1918), 141; Jabal Hamrin–Qizil Ribat, 141, 174, survey beyond Khaniqin, 189, construction to proceed, 214, 233, 234, extension to Kirkuk, 234; progress of, (April, May, 1918), 174, (July–Aug.), 214; priority of construction, 214, 234, 260; Nasiriya–Hilla section, 214, 234; W.O. instructions re., 233, 234.

Railways, Turkish.
Baghdad, 12, 108; to Mosul, 38, 39, 41, 89; lack of material for, 146.
Rainfall.
March 1918, 119, 122, (31 March–3 April), 136*n*, (April), 142, 147, 148, (May), 163, 164.
Ramadi.
Turkish force at, 1, 21, 22, 40–1; attack on, (11 July 1917), 22–6; importance of, 39, 61; action of, (28–29 Sept.), 49–59, Turkish position and strength, 51, 52, 52*n*, attempt to withdraw frustrated, 56–7, enemy force surrenders, 59, enemy account of, 60–2.
Ramadi Ridge.
Brit. reach, 23, withdraw, 25; action of Ramadi, Brit. occupy, 55.
Ramazan.
Mahomedan fasting period, interferes with unloading ships, 26.
Raouf Bey, H. E. (Turkish Minister of Marine).
Signs Armistice terms, 322–4.
Ras-al-Ain.
Enemy force at, 41.
Rations.
Brit. force in Kurdistan on half, 164, 165, further reduced by voluntary contribution, 165; delayed by bad roads, 287*n*; reduced, 288. *See also* "Emergency Rations."
Rawlinson, Col. A., C.M.G. (R.A.).
Defence and evacuation of Baku, 240, 246–7.
Rear guard fighting.
Attack on Ramadi, 25, in Kurdistan, 165; by 9th Warwicks, (1 Sept. 1918), 229.
Rechad Hikmet Bey, H. E. (Turkish U.S. for F.A.).
Signs Armistice terms, 322–4.
Reconnaissances, British.
Of Ramadi, 22; by Col. Haldane, 23; by aircraft, (25 Sept. 1917), 48, action of Ramadi, 51*n*, Daur, 75, Tikrit, 79, (Jan. 1918), 108, (Aug.), over Tabriz, 220, Baku, 223, 246; by Gen. Holland-Pryor, 56, 76; by armoured cars, towards Khaniqin, 70; by cavalry, of Tikrit, 78, 79, in rear of Turks' Sharqat position, 295, of Sharqat position, 305; towards Hit, (18 Feb. 1918), 116; by Gen. Cassels, 134; operations in Kurdistan, 149, 151, 152, 153, 163, 164, 165, 166; the Jabal Sinjar, 213–14; of the Fat-ha–Little Zab area, 266, 268, 290; by Gen. Wauchope, 286; by Gen. Leslie, 288; by Gen. Norton, 312.
————, German.
Of Hit and Karbala, 38.
————, Turkish.
Towards Karbala, (June 1917), 14; third action of the Jabal Hamrin, 90.
Recruiting.
In India, 19*n*, 46, 255–6; number locally enrolled, 329.
Regulator House (Euphrates Valley Canal).
Turks at, 23.
Reinforcements, British and Indian.
Arrival of, 11, 17*n*, (May–Sept. 1917), 47, (Nov.), 86; naval, 202.
————, Turkish.
Reports as to, 5, 14, 38; to the Euphrates, 122, 126. *See also* "Intelligence."
Remounts.
Shortage of, 43*n*.
Resht.
Affair of, (20 July 1918), 200–1.
Retirement; retreat, British.
From Baku, 246–7.

Retirement; retreat, Turkish.
From the Jabal Hamrin, 70, Tikrit, 84, Hit, 121, Khan Baghdadi, 132–6, Kurdistan, 148–9, 151, 157, 158, 164, 165, Fat-ha position, 271, Kirkuk, 276, the Little Zab, 292, 293, 294, Sharqat, 306, 318.
Richardson, Lt.-Col. J. J., D.S.O. (13th Hussars).
Battle of Sharqat, 314.
Roads.
Mosul–Kirkuk–Kifri, 38; Baghdad–Falluja, 50; from Madhij constructed, 52; Madhij–Ramadi, 52; Ramadi–Hit, 59*n*; Pai Taq–Kermanshah, 104, 115, 119; Baghdad–Enzeli, 105–6; to Sahiliya, 122; down Euphrates, improved, 136; Qasr-i-Shirin–Hamadan, security of, 143; to Enzeli secured, 184; Persian, 189, 233, 234, 235; in Fat-ha area, 264, 272, 273, 274, 275, 284, Sharqat area, 305*n*.
Robertson, Gen. Sir W. R., G.C.B., K.C.V.O., D.S.O. (C.I.G.S.).
Correspondence with Gen. Maude, (8 May 1917), 3, (22nd), 4–5, (29th), 5–6, 9–10, (16th), 9, (1 June), 10–11, (6th), 13, (14th and 16th), 14–15, (18th), 15, (21st), 15, (12 July), 15–16, (16th), 16–17, (22nd), 17, (2nd, 4th), 18, (21st), 19–20, (24 June), 20, (2 Aug.), 33, 34, (5th), 34–5, (6th), 35, (17th), 36, 38, (30th), 38–9, (9th), 42, (9–11 Sept.), 42, (16th), 43, (21st), 44, (24th), 44–5, (29th), 44*n*–45*n*, (26th), 46, (beginning Nov.), 84–5, with C.-in-C., India, (13 May 1917), 6–7, (26 June), 17, (28th), 17–18, (12–18 July), 18; 19, (1–2 Aug.), 32–3, (6 Sept.), 43, (24th), 45, (27th–28th), 46–7, (13 Dec.), 96–7, (4th), 97, (12 Feb. 1918), 110, with Gen. Marshall, (22 Nov. 1917), 87–8, (3 Jan. 1918), 103–4, (24th), 107, (2, 6, 9 Feb.), 109, (13th, 15th), 110, (31 Jan., 3 Feb.), 113; views of, on general situation, (Dec. 1917), 96–7; instructions to "Dunsterforce," 104–5; succeeded by Gen. Wilson, (18 Feb. 1918), 113*n*.
Robinson, Capt. S. O. (13th Hussars).
Killed, action of Tikrit, 83.
Rodgerson, Capt. A. P. (39th Garhwalis).
Action of Ramadi, 58.
Royal Air Force.
Operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; action against Sinjabis, 158–9; disposition, (end May 1918), 175; affair of Resht, 200; defence of Baku, 223, 232*n*, 246. *See also "Aircraft, British"*; "Royal Flying Corps."
———— ——— ————, Units.
31st Wing.—Organised, (15 June 1917), 28; disposition (end May 1918), 175.
30th Squadron.—Work of, 28; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; raids on Kifri aerodrome and Qara Tepe, 84, 84*n*, on Tuz Khurmatli and Humr, 99; two flights, action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; operations in Kurdistan, 162–6; disposition, (end May 1918), 175, in Persia, (Sept.), 251; with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*.
"B" Flight.—Action of Ramadi, 50–9.
63rd Squadron.—Earmarked for Mesopotamia, 17, 28; arrives 48; affair of 22–23 Oct. 1917, 71–2; action of Daur, 74–8; raid on Turkish camps, 84; raid on aerodromes at Tuz Khurmatli and Humr, 99; two flights, action of Khan Baghdadi, 122–36; Samarra, 175; with Gen. Cobbe, 267–321.
72nd Squadron.—Arrives, 139; disposition, (end May 1918), 175; defence of Baku, 223; in Persia, 251; one flight, with Gen. Lewin's column, 266*n*; one flight, with Gen. Cobbe, 267–321.
Kite Balloon Companies:—
No. 23.—Reaches Basra, 99; disposition, (end May 1918), 175.
———— ———— Sections:—
No. 51.—In 23rd Kite Balloon Company, 175.
No. 52.—Action of Khan Baghdadi, 123–36; in 23rd Kite Balloon Company, 175.

Royal Flying Corps.
Attack on Ramadi, 22–6, action of, 49–59; work of, (Aug.–Sept. 1917), 49, (Oct.–Nov.), 84, (Jan. 1918), 108, (Feb.), 115, (March), 121; action of Tikrit, 81–4, casualties, 84*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 122–36; designation changed, (1 April), 175*n*. *See also* "Aircraft, British"; "Royal Air Force." *For units see under* "Royal Air Force."
Rumania.
Strength of Turks in, 62; Brit. obligations to, 98*n*; effect in Near East of collapse of, 138–9.
Russell, Lieut. W. O. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 225, 227.
Russia.
Plans in view of possible collapse of, 3–4; situation in, (end May 1917), 7, (Nov.), 85, 88; revolution in, influences Turkish plans, 9, effect of, in India, 18, unrest caused by, 102; republic of, proclaimed, 37; Bolshevik counter-revolution in, (8 Nov.), 85, 88, 111; effect of peace movement by, 96; Armistice with Turkey, 97; factors in disintegration of armies of, 102; effect in Near East of collapse of, 138.
Russian Caucasus Army.
Evacuates Bitlis and Mush, 7; question of co-operation by, 15–17, 18, 32–7, 43, 44, 44*n*, 73–4, 109; strength of, on Persian front, 34, 102, withdrawal of, 107, 109, 110; disintegration of, 111. *See also* "Bicharakoff, Lt.-Col."; "Caucasus."
Ruston, Major A. H. (M.G.C.).
Defence of Baku, 223.
Ruwandiz.
Turkish force at, 259.

S.

Saadullah Bey, Lt.-Col. (Turkish G.S.).
Signs Armistice terms, 322–4.
Sadiya.
Bridgehead, 11.
Sahiliya.
Turkish force at, (Feb. 1918), 115, 116; Brit. occupy, (10 March), 121, concentrate at, 122–3.
Sain Kala.
Brit. reach, 201; 14th Hussars check Turks at, 206.
Sakhlawiya canal.
Reconstructing dam of, 21, 21*n*.; crossed, 50.
Salonika.
Allied advance in, 252.
Samarra.
Turkish force at, 1. *See also* "Baghdad–Samarra railway" *under* "Railways, British."
Sanders, Brig.-Gen. G. A. F.
Battle of Sharqat, 294–321.
Sand. *See* "Dust."
Sappers and Miners.
1st King George's Own, 2nd Company.—Amara, 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
———, *4th Company.*—Action of Daur, 75–8.
———, *5th Company.*—Basra, 101*n*; action of Khan Baghdadi, 131–6; in Persia, 251.
———, *6th Company.*—Advance up Tigris, 268–321.
2nd Queen Victoria's Own, 8th Company.—Baghdad, 101*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321; in force to occupy Mosul, 320*n*.
———, *12th Company.*—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70; in Persia, 178*n*, 251.

Sappers and Miners—*cont.*
2nd Queen Victoria's Own, 13th Company.—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70.
———, *15th Company.*—Second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; in Persia, 251.
3rd, 19th Company.—Arrives, 100.
——, *21st Company.*—Attack on Ramadi, 22–6, action of, 50–9.
Field Troop, No. 2.—Operations in Kurdistan, 146–58, 162–6.
Imperial Service Troops, Malerkotla Company.—In 17th Div., 48*n*; action of Ramadi, 50–9; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
———, *Sirmur Company.*—In 17th Div., 48*n*.
———, *Tehri-Garhwal Company.*—In 17th Div., 48*n*; advance up Tigris, 268–321.
Saqqiz.
Turks evacuate, 329.
Sauj Bulag.
Turkish force at, 201, 248.
Seckt, Gen. von.
C. of S. at Turkish G.H.Q., 207.
Secretary of State for India. *See* "Chamberlain, The Rt. Hon. J. Austen"; "Montagu, The Rt. Hon. E. S."
Sehneh.
Brit. occupy, 195, force at, 202.
Senior Naval Officer, Persian Gulf. *See* "Norris, Commodore"; "Wake, Rear-Ad."
Sevastopol.
Germans occupy, (1 May 1918), 145.
Shahraban.
Turkish force at, 38; Brit. occupy, 40, 61; railway reaches, (Oct. 1917), 49, 49*n*, 67; Gen. Marshall's H.Q. at, 68.
Shaikh Faraja Ridge.
Brit. capture, 58.
Shakturs (native craft).
Used by Turks, 12; captured at Hit, 121*n*, at Ana and Haditha, 135.
Shaoumian, M.
Bolshevik Armenian Chief Commissar, 112.
Sharqat.
Turkish force at, (21 Oct. 1918), 265, (25th), 281–2, (26th) 291, (27th), 298, (28th), 305, 306, (29th), 316; Brit. in rear of Turkish position, 289, 290; battle of, (28–30 Oct.), 293–321, general situation, (28th), 307–8, Turks surrender, 319; Turks concentrate at, 295, 296, 297, position of, at, 306, 311.
Shipping. *See* "Transport, British, Sea."
Shiraz (in Fars).
Gen. Sykes at, 186, 208.
Shoubridge, Lt.-Col. C. A. G., D.S.O. (112th Infantry).
Receives surrender of Ismail Hakki Bey, 319.
Shukri Bey.
Succeeded by Nazim Bey in command of Turkish 50th Div., 122, 122*n*.
Siberia.
Proposed Japanese intervention in, 180.
Sickness.
In Russian Army, 7; R.F.C. reinforcements, 48; great reduction in, 49, 257; Sept.–Oct. 1918, (influenza epidemic), 253*n*, 266, 286*n*, 329, 331.

Sinjabi tribe.
Action against, (25 April 1918), 158–9; submission of chief of, 158.
Smuts, Lt.-Gen. The Rt. Hon. J. C.
Conference in Egypt, 113, 113*n*, 114.
Snow.
Delays "Dunsterforce," 110; during winter 1917–18, 115*n*, (March 1918), 119.
Somerset, Capt. The Hon. N. F., M.C. (Gloucestershire).
Commands L.A.M. Bde., 296.
South Persia Rifles.
Unpopular in Persia, 41*n*; invested in Shiraz, 143.
Spain.
As peace intermediary, 263.
Sparrow, Capt. B. H., M.C. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 223.
Spoils of War.
Captured at action of Ramadi, 59, Tikrit, 84, Khan Baghdadi, 133, 134, 135, 136; destroyed at Ana, 135, 136; in Kurdistan, 151; captured at Qaiyara, 319.
Stafford Hill (defence of Baku), 224, 225, 226, 227, 228.
Stepanoff, Col.
Defence of Baku, 229.
Stokes, Lt.-Col. C. B., C.I.E., (3rd Skinner's Horse).
Flies to Tehran, 108, goes to Baku, 203, 204, at Baku, 210, 212, 245, appointed C. of S., 239.
Stokes Mortar Brigade.
Strength of, (Sept. 1917), 47, 47*n*. *See also* "Trench Mortars, British."
Stores. *See* "Supplies."
Submarine warfare, German.
Effect of, on Brit. shipping, 3*n*, 26.
Sulaimaniya.
Turkish force at, 258–9.
Sultan of Turkey.
And peace proposals, 262.
Supplies, British.
Adequacy of, 39, 46; depots, 39, 51; petrol, 43; development of local resources, 89, 178, 257; arrangements for operations on Euphrates, 122, 122*n*; in Kurdistan, 164, 165; improvement of, 178; local, in Persia, 235; for advance up Tigris, 266. *See also* "Emergency Rations"; "Rations."
———, German.
Importance of oil and manganese, 208, 255.
———, Russian.
Shortage of, 7, 94, 94*n*; Brit. assistance, 15, 17, 32.
———, Turkish.
Shortage of, 1, 146, 158*n*; sufficiency of local, 12; from Euphrates area, 20*n*, Mandali area, 38*n*, 61; Brit. blockade affects local, 46; loss of Mandali affects, 61–2, Ramadi, 66; difficulties of, 103.
Sykes, Brig.-Gen. Sir P. M., K.C.I.E., C.M.G.
Mission under, in S. Persia, 18, 41*n*, 142, 174, 186, 208.
Syria.
Turkish force in, to form Fourth Army, 64; reported Turkish movements to, 112; decisive Eastern theatre, 142*n*.

T.

Talaat Pasha.
Resigns from Turkish Cabinet, 262.
Tabriz.
Turks occupy, (14 June 1918), 183, strength of force at, 184, 207, 219, advance from, 233.

Tartars.
Agree to join in declaration of Trans-Caucasian Federal Republic, 111; set up Government, 112; driven from Baku, 171; activities of, 180.
Tashkend.
Bolsheviks in control of, 185.
Tauq.
Brit. occupy, (18 Oct. 1918), 267.
Taurus range.
Tunnel through, 38, 41.
Taza Khurmatli.
Brit. occupy, (6 May 1918), 163, Turks withdraw to, 267; Brit. re-occupy, (23 Oct.), 170.
Tehran.
Sir Percy Cox arrives at, as Brit. Minister, 253–4, 254*n*.
Tel el Rayan.
Brit. reach, 54.
Tennant, Lt.-Col. J. E., M.C. (R.F.C.).
Commands 31st Wing, R.F.C., 28; taken prisoner, 133*n*, rescued, 135, 135*n*.
Territorials, Brit.
Relieved in India, 19.
Tewfik Effendi, Staff Captain, 60.
Tewfik Pasha.
Appointed Grand Vizier, 262.
Thompson, Major Sir T. R. L., Bt., M.C. (7th Hussars).
Commands L.A.M. Bde., 132; action of Khan Baghdadi, 132–6; advance up the Tigris, 269, taken prisoner, 296.
Thomson, Major-Gen. W. M., C.B., M.C.
Shahraban, 40; second action of the Jabal Hamrin, 68–70, third, 91–6; commands 14th Div., 86; to command in N.W. Persia, 238, 249; redistribution of force under, 252; and occupation of Baku, 330.
Tiflis.
Germans occupy, (9 June 1918), 177, Mission at, 208.
Tigris, river.
Question of advance up the, 17, 32; Brit. force on, (end Sept. 1917), 45*n*, (Oct.), 261*n*; Turkish diversion on the, (22–23 Oct.), 71–2; navigation difficulties of, 140, 140*n*; strength of Turks on, (2 May 1918), 162–3, (June), 176, (30 Sept.), 258; Brit. advance up the, (Oct.), 258–321, cross the, above Sharqat, 289, 290. *See also* "Bridges"; "Floods."
Tigris Corps. *See under separate headings.*
Tikrit.
Turkish force at, 1*n*, 74; Turks retire to, action of Daur, 77, and hold in strength, 78, 79; action of, 79–84; description of, 79–80; Brit. occupy, (12 July 1918), 213. *See also* "Mosul–Kifri–Tikrit area."
Tod, Capt. D. (M.G.C.).
Rescues Col. Tennant and Major Hobart, 135, awarded immediate D.S.O., 135*n*.
Topography.
Area of Daur action, 75, the Jabal Hamrin, 92, Sahiliya–Ana area, 125; area of operations in Kurdistan, 149, 150; Baku and district, 216; Fat-ha–Little Zab area, 263–5, 284; north of Sharqat, 311.
Townshend, Major-Gen. C. V. F., C.B., D.S.O.
As peace emissary, 263.
Training.
Of local units in Baku, 222, 239, 239*n*.
Trans-Caspia.
Situation in, (June 1918), 185, (July), 209; prisoners of war in, 194, 209, 209*n*; activities of opposing forces in, 231; effect in, of fall of Baku, 250; Brit. detachment in, 253; events in, (Oct.), 329–31.

Trans-Caucasia.
Russian movements in, 7; Turkish ambitions in, 9, 118, 118*n*, 181; proclaimed a Federal Republic, by Council of Peoples of Armenia, Georgia, Azerbaijan and Daghestan, 37*n*; Tartars agree to act with, 111, dissolution of, 171; situation in, 111, 117, (April 1918), 144–5, 159, (May), 171, (Aug.), 212; Turkey recognises independence of Georgia and Armenia, (8 June), 177; disposition of Turkish troops in, (Sept.), 250–1; attitude of tribes in, 255; German forces in, 255.
Transport, British.
Satisfactory state of, 46; in Persia, by road and rail, 233; in Kurdistan, 234; ruling factor, 260.
———, ———, Animal.
Camels, 270*n*; mule pack, 274*n*, 278, 288, 288*n*.
———, ———, Land.
Requirements of, 5, 43–4; difficulties of, in Persia, 189. *See also* "Railways."
———, ———, Mechanical.
Attack on Ramadi, 22–6, action of, 50–9, Khan Baghdadi, 123–36, operations in Kurdistan, 147–58, 162–6; requirements of, 43–4; petrol for, obtainable locally, 43; reinforcements arrive, 47, 47*n*, 140, 256; practicability of, in Persia, 221, 233, 233*n*.
No. 729 Company.—22, 59.
No. 730 Company,—59.
No. 783 Company.—59.
No. 784 Company.—59.
No. 815 Company.—47.
No. 818 Company.—47.
No. 911 Company.—*See under* "Medical Services, British," 39th Motor Ambulance Convoy.
No. 953 Company.—47.
No. 954 Company.—47.
No. 968 Company.—47.
No. 969 Company.—47.
No. 970 Company.—*See under* "Medical Services, British," 40th Motor Ambulance Convoy.
No. 971 Company.—47.
No. 976 Company.—47.
———, ———, river. (I.W.T.).
Efficiency of, 11–12, 39; numbers available, (May 1917), 12*n*, (Feb. 1918), 115*n*; action of Ramadi, 50; naval vessels transferred to, 140; changes in, 140–1.
———, ———, sea.
Affects intentions in Palestine, 19; American assistance, 97; tonnage saved by use of oil fuel, 174.
———, Turkish,
Shortage of 12,; difficulties of, 103.
———, ———, river.
State of, 12; sunk or captured, 137.
Trebizond.
Turks occupy, (24 Feb. 1918), 112.
Trenches, Turkish.
Ramadi, 24; "Regulator" system, 51–2; Daur, 75; Tilkrit, 79, 80; Khan Baghdadi, 124, 128; Kurdistan, 150; Fat-ha-Little Zab area, 264, 284; Sharqat, 297, 298, 311.
Trench mortars, British.
2-inch replaced by 6-inch, 256. *See also* "Stokes Mortar Brigade."
Trotski, M.
Assumes power in Russia, 85, 88.

Turco-German force ("Yilderim").
Composition of, 8; friction in, 13, 63; detailed for Palestine, 63.
Turkestan.
Situation in, (May 1917), 6, (June 1918), 185, 189; enemy intentions against, 41; fears of a *Jahad* in, 250.
Turkey.
Preparations for offensive, 7–9, 12–14, 62, 66; Mustapha Kemal's views on condition of, 64–5, App. XLII, 348–51; Armistice with Russia, 97, with Allies, 262–3; intentions of, in Persia, 144, Caucasus, 185; recognise independence of Georgia and Armenia, (8 June 1918), 177; activities of agents of, 185; Armistice terms with, 322–4; and occupation of Mosul, 325–7.
Turkey, Army,
Estimated strength and distribution, 33, 34, 35, 62, 96–7, (Feb. 1918), 114*n*, (April), 145–6, (May), 162, 162*n*, 163, (June), 176–7; condition of, 102–3, 146, 146*n*, 158*n*.
———, ———, (Caucasus).
Strength and disposition, 62, 177, 180, 250–1; operating towards Persia, 144, 220, against Baku, 199, 230, 239–40; advance of, in three directions, 191, on Baku, 191, 195; composition, 195*n*. *See also* "Caucasus."
———, ——— (Second).
Disposition, 62.
———, ——— (Third).
Disposition, 62.
———, ——— (Fourth).
Disposition, 62, 64.
———, ——— (Fifth).
Disposition, 62.
———, ——— (Sixth).
Estimated strength and disposition, (May 1917), 1, 62, (15 Aug.), 38, App. XLI., 345–7, (Jan. 1918), 108, 108*n*, (Feb.), 115, (March), 138, (April), 145–6, (2 May), 162, 162*n*, 163, (June), 176, (July), 213, (30 Sept.), 258–9, (21 Oct.), 265; reports as to state of, 66, 176; genera situation of, (Oct. 1917), 72; to be reinforced, 259; German Staff with, dismissed, 265; surrender, 319. *See also* "Army Corps, Turkish."
———, ———, (Seventh).
In Turco-German force, 8; rumours as to, 40; formed by Reserve, 62, 63; disposition, 66.
———, ——— (Ninth).
Formation and composition, 195, 195*n*; purpose of, 207.
Turkington, Capt. C. H. (N. Staffordshire).
Defence of Baku, 240.
Turkmanchai.
Turks occupy, (7 Sept. 1918), 233.
Turks.
Germans with, 38, 40, 66; relations with Germans, 13, 64–5, 181, 184, 185.
Turner, Lt.-Col. J. F., D.S.O. (R.E.).
Raid on Hit, 60.
Tuz Khurmatli.
Turkish aerodrome at, 99*n*, force at, 146; action of, (29 April 1918), 151–7.

U.

Ukraine.
Virtually annexed by Germany, 145.
Underhill, Lt.-Col. G. E. C. (62nd Punjabis).
Khaniqin, 152*n*.
"Union of Caucasus Mountaineers."
Formation of, under Turkish auspices, 195.

United States of America.
Anticipated strength of Expeditionary force, 97; asked by Austria-Hungary to arrange Peace Conference, 252–3.
Unjana Hill.
Turkish force at, 57, evacuate, 58.
Urmia.
Jelus defeat Turks near, 172; Turks practically surround Jelus at, 195; disaster to Jelus at, 206.
Urmia Brigade.
Formed of Jelus, 206, 219*n*; "Dunsterforce" personnel with, 249; organisation of, 253*n*.

V.

Vadbolski, General.
Orders to, 36.
Vehib Pasha.
To command in Mesopotamia, 5.
Very lights.
Battle of Sharqat, 315, 317.
Vincent-Bingley Commission. *See under* "Commissions."
Vossuq-ed-Douleh.
Appointed Prime Minister of Persia, 209*n*.

W.

Wagstaff, Major L. C., C.I.E., O.B.E. (2nd Rajputs).
In "Dunsterforce," 219, 220.
Wake, Rear-Ad. D. St. A., C.B., C.I.E.
S.N.O. Persian Gulf, 140.
Waring, Lt.-Col. E. H. (90th Punjabis).
Action of Ramadi, 57–9.
War Office.
General Staff, and possible Russian collapse, 3–4; views on general situation, 191–2; orders occupation of Enzeli and Mission to Krasnovodsk, 201; defines Brit. policy in the Caspian, (14 Aug. 1918), 212; and priority of railway construction, 214; orders to secure control of Caspian, 250; orders re detachment in Trans-Caspia, 253; summary of military situation in Middle East, 253–4; orders, (2 Oct.), advance up the Tigris, 259; and occupation of Mosul, 324–7; orders occupation of Baku, 329. *See also* "Macdonogh, Gen."; "Robertson, Gen."; "Wilson, Gen."
Warwick Castle (Defence of Baku), 224–8, 242.
Washington, Capt. B. G., C.M.G., D.S.O., R.N.
Succeeds Commodore Norris on the Caspian, 329; and occupation of Baku, 330.
Wassmuss, (German agent).
Activity of, in Persia, 186.
Water.
In Fat-ha area, 264. *See also* "Floods."
Water supply, British.
Attack on Ramadi, 25, action of, 59, Khan Baghdadi, 136; in Fat-ha–Little Zab area, 266, 268*n*, 270*n*; battle of Sharqat, 307, 307*n*, 308.
Wauchope, Brig.-Gen. A. G., D.S.O.
Advance up the Tigris, 285–321.
Waziristan.
Expedition to, 6–7, 17–18.
Weather.
Preparations for hot season, 1; excessive heat, (June–July, 1917), 21, 21*n*, 49; 67; attack on Ramadi, 24, 25, action of, 50, 59; (Jan. 1918), 104; winter of 1917–18, 115*n*; (March), 119; action of Khan Baghdadi, 136, 136*n*; (April), 142, 144, 158; Kurdistan operations, 147, 148, 163, 164, 165; advance up Tigris, 289; Sharqat, 307.

Western Front.
First importance of, 19–20; events on, (end March 1918), affect Brit. policy in Palestine, 139; effect in Persia of German offensive on the, 143; urgent calls from the, met, 175; Allied progress on, 252.
West Indies.
Number of men from, with I.E.F. "D," 329.
Whigham, Major-Gen. Sir R. D., K.C.B., D.S.O. (D.C.I.G.S.).
Correspondence with Gen. Maude, 5*n*, 59*n*.
Wilhelm II (Emperor of Germany).
Approves Turco-German plans, 12; at Constantinople, 73.
Wilson, Gen. Sir H. H., K.C.B., D.S.O. (C.I.G.S.).
Succeeds Gen. Robertson as C.I.G.S., (18 Feb. 1918), 113*n*; Correspondence with Gen. Dunsterville, (26 Feb. 1918), 112–13, (March), 116–17, (9 Sept.), 237–8, with C.-in-C. India, (21 Feb.), 113–14, (3 May), 161–2, (15th), 168, (4–12 July), 191–4, (20th, 21st), 199, (14 Aug.), 212, (3 Sept.), 231*n*, (28 Aug.), 233–4, (2 Sept.), 234–5, (10th), 236, with Gen. Marshall, (21 Feb.), 113–14, (1, 3, 6 March), 114–15, (7th), 117, (9th–13th), 118–19, (early March), 120–1, (11th, 12th), 121, 121*n*, (14th), 138–9, (28th), 139, (29 April), 159, (2 May), 160–1, (10th), 166–7, (12th), 167–8, (18th, 21st), 168–9, (24th), 169, (25th), 169–70, (27th, 28th), 170, (24th, 27th, 1 June), 173, (4th), 179, (6th), 179–80, (9th), 180–2, (12th), 182, (13th), 182–3, (18th), 183–4, (28th), 186–8, (30th), 188, (2 July), 188–9, (4th), 189–90, (5th), 190–1, (6th), 192, (1 Sept.), 230–1, (4th), 231–2, (28 Aug.), 233–4, (5 Sept.), 235–6, (11th, 12th), 238, (16th), 248, (17th), 248–9, (18th), 249, (23rd), 253, (2 Oct.), 259, (4th, 5th, 6th), 260, (1 Nov.), 324, with Gen. Fanshawe, (15 July), 196, (18th), 196–7, (19th), 197, 198, (20th), 198–9, (23rd, 25th), 201, (29th), 203, with Gen. Cobbe, (12 Aug.), 210, (22nd), 219, (28th, 31st), 230.
Wind.
Attack on Ramadi, 25; during April 1918, 142; advance up Tigris, 289. *See also* "Weather."
Wintle, Lt.-Col. C. E. H., D.S.O. (Mahrattas).
Battle of Sharqat, 317*n*.
Wireless Telegraphy.
Turkish station at Hit, 59, moved to Khan Baghdadi, 60; German, at Haditha, destroyed, 133*n*; Ana station captured, 135; Baku station put out of action, 248. *See also* "Communications, British, field."
Wolf's Gap (Defence of Baku).
Attack on, (14 Sept. 1918), 240–5.
Woulfe-Flanagan, Lt.-Col. R. J. (West Kents).
Battle of Sharqat, 306.

Y.

Yanija Buyuk.
Turkish force at, 152; Brit. capture, 156.
Yemen, *see* "Arabia."
Yezidis, 20, 146, 213–14.
"Yilderim."
Name of Turco-German force, 8. *See also* "Turco-German force, ("Yilderim"); "Turkey Army."

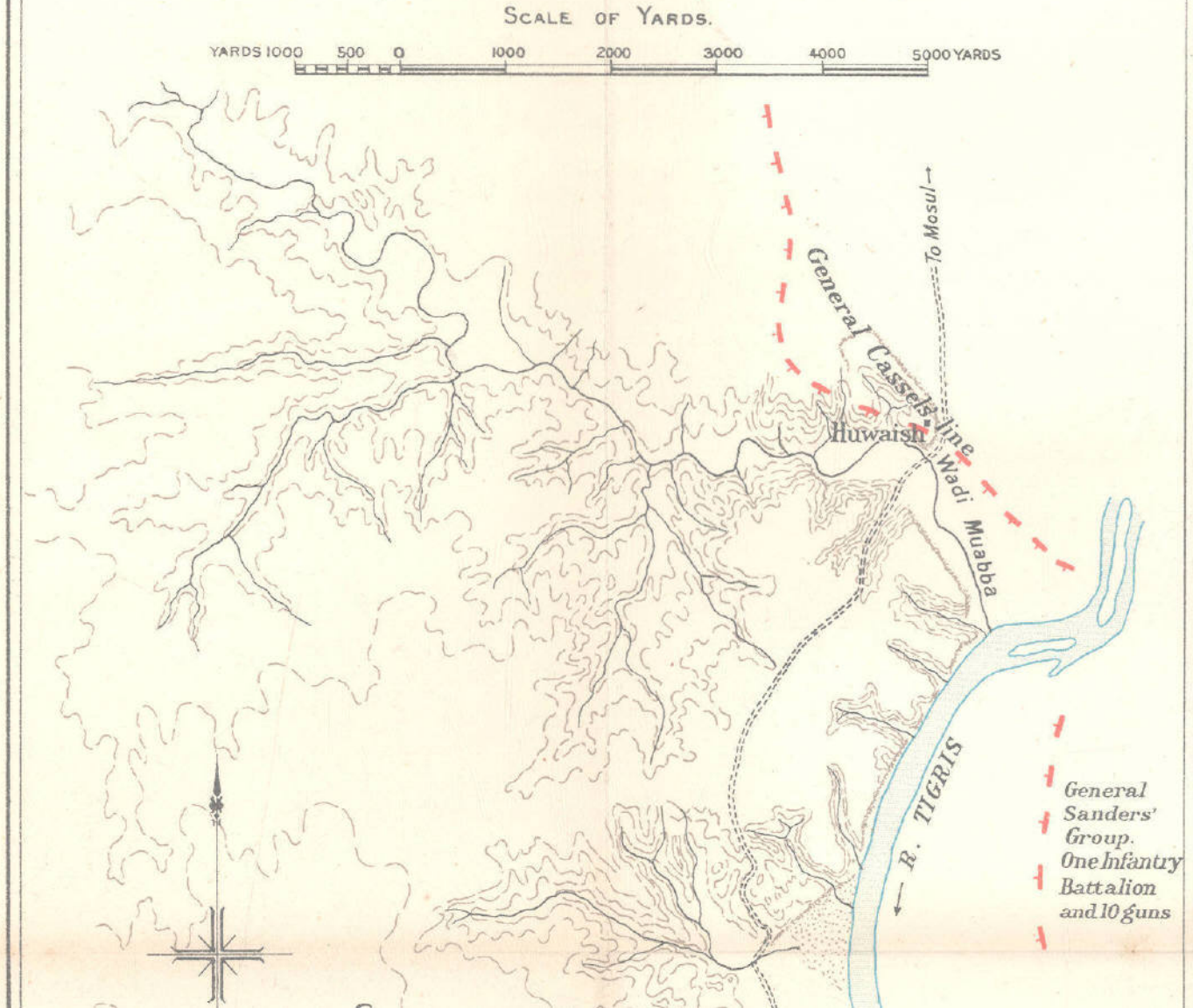
Z.

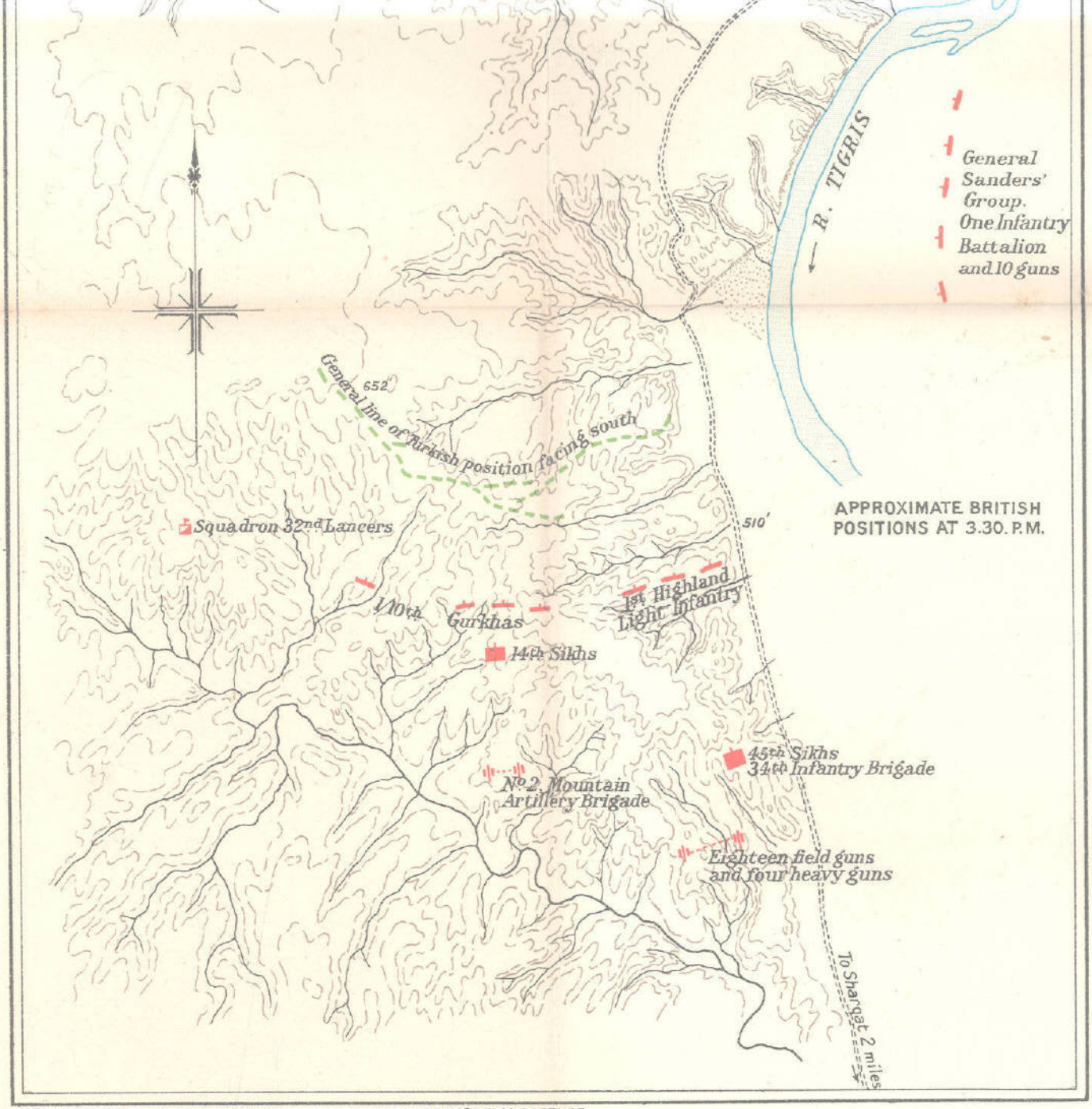
Zenjan.
Brit. force near, 219–20.

Printed by H.M.S.O. Press, Harrow.

TO ILLUSTRATE THE BATTLE OF SHARQAT.

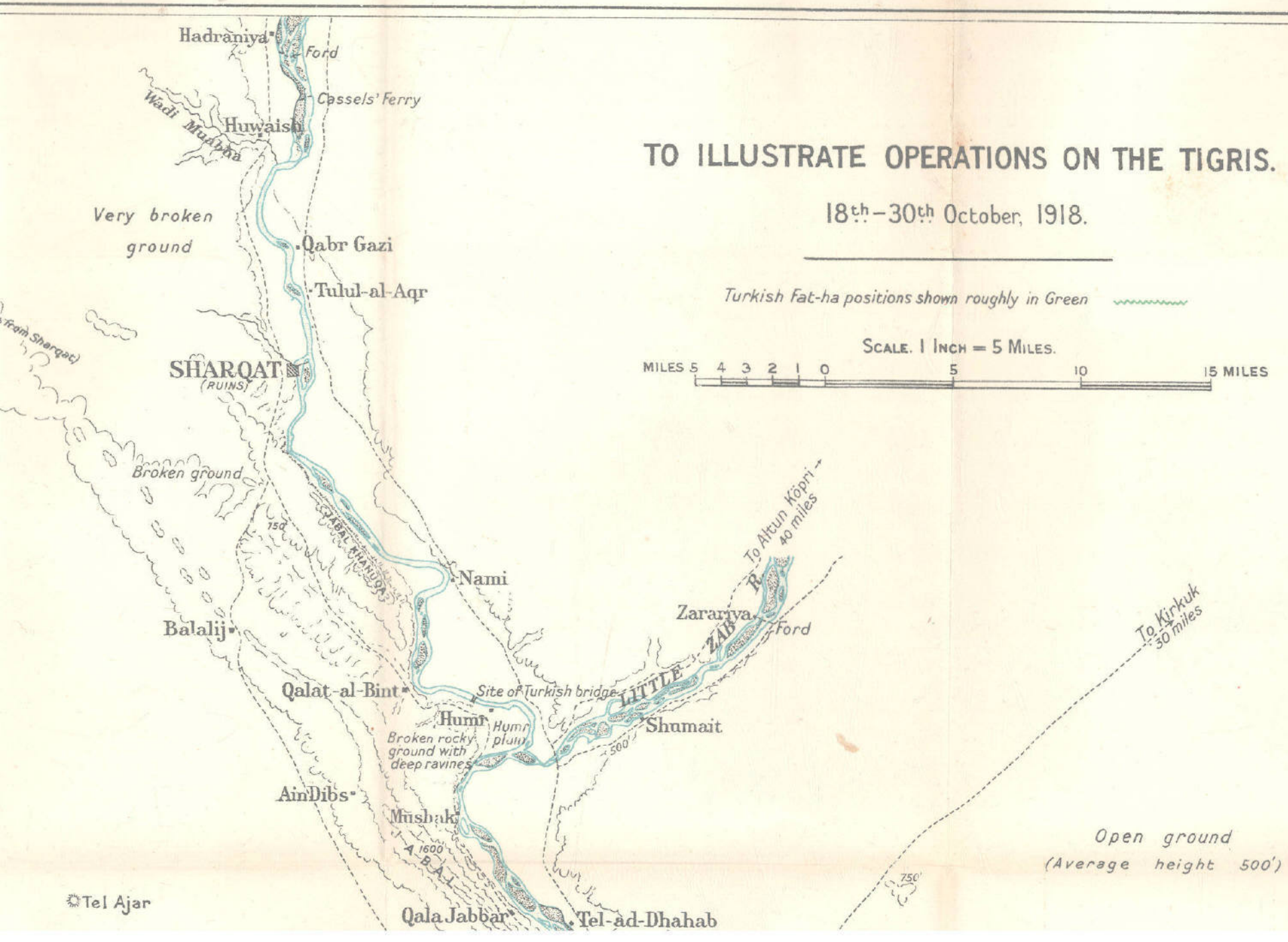
29th October, 1918.





PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.



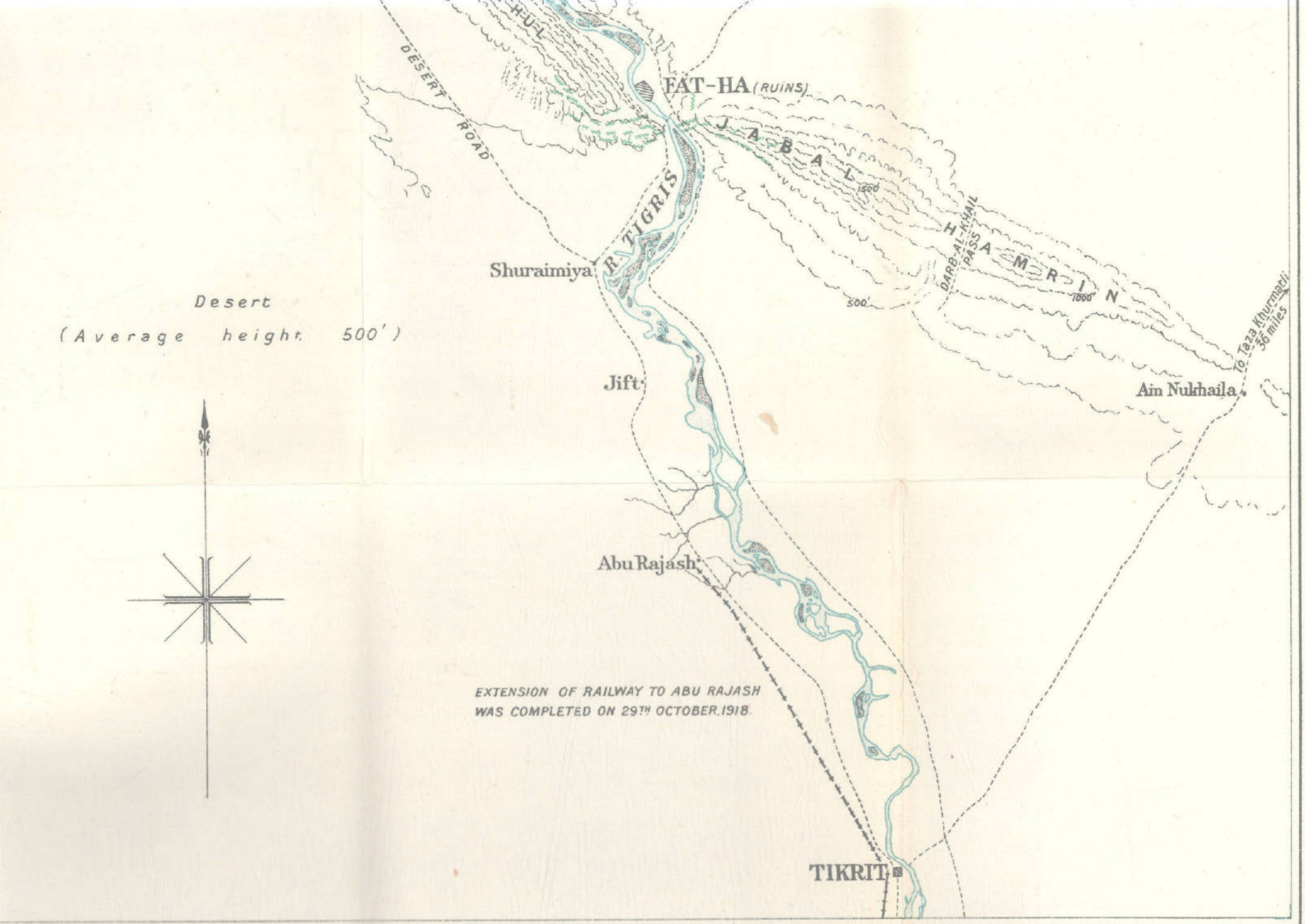
TO ILLUSTRATE OPERATIONS ON THE TIGRIS.

18th–30th October, 1918.

Turkish Fat-ha positions shown roughly in Green ~~~~~

SCALE. 1 INCH = 5 MILES.

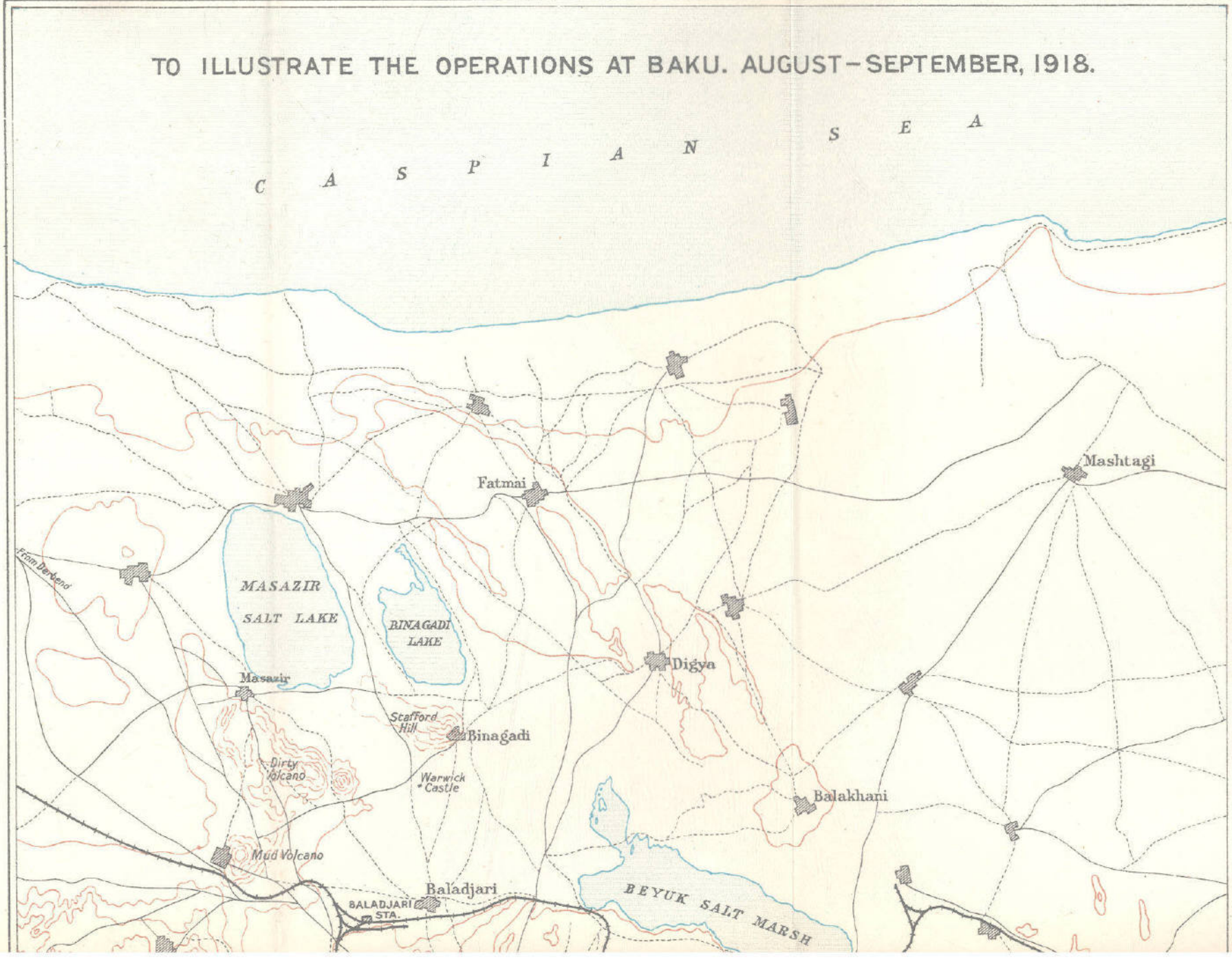
MILES 5 4 3 2 1 0 5 10 15 MILES

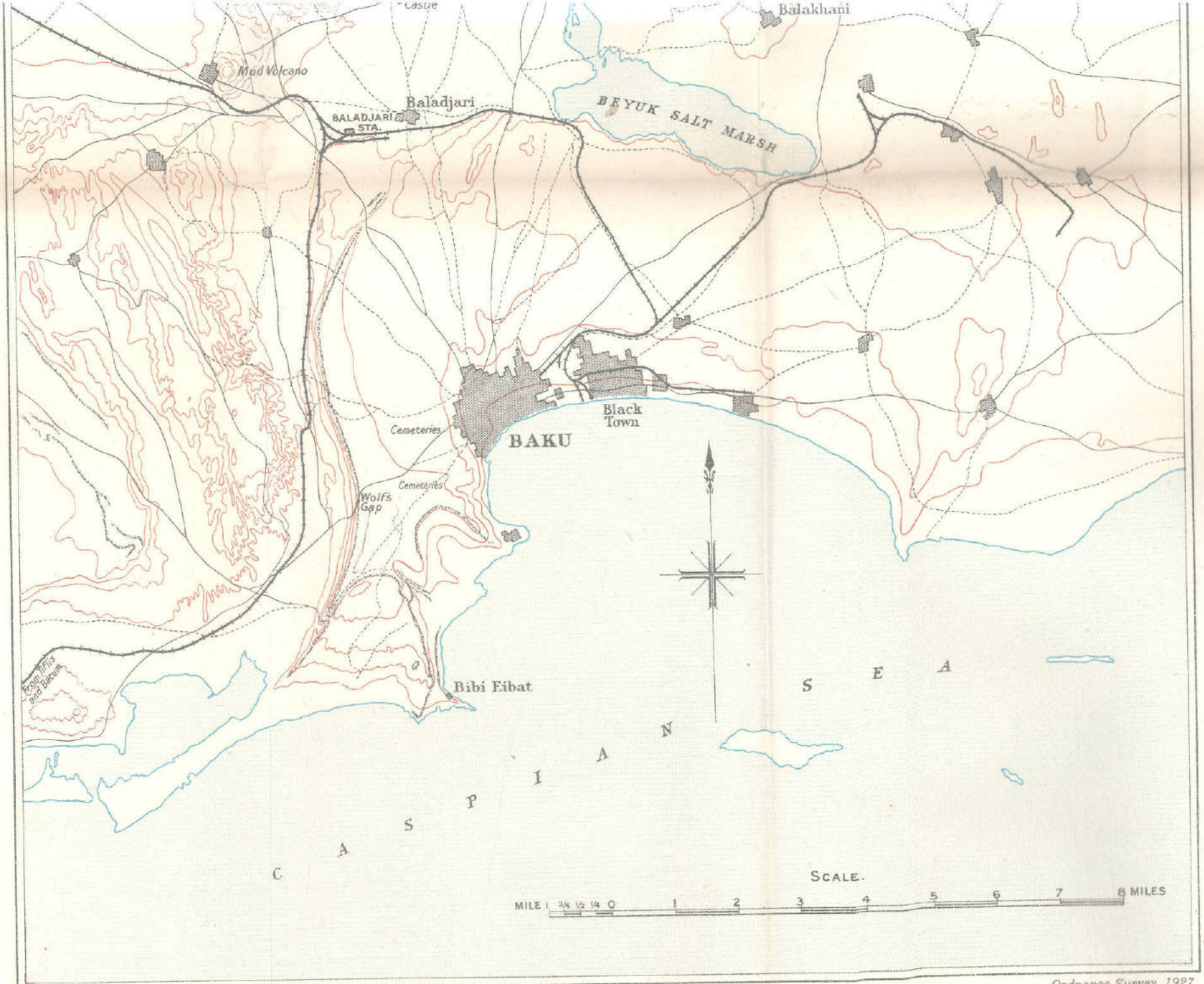


HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

TO ILLUSTRATE THE OPERATIONS AT BAKU. AUGUST–SEPTEMBER, 1918.





Ordnance Survey, 1927.

PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

SKELETON MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE OPERATIONS OF "DUNSTERFORCE," 1918.

Principal routes shown { routes fit for wheeled traffic ——— / routes only fit for pack transport - - - - -

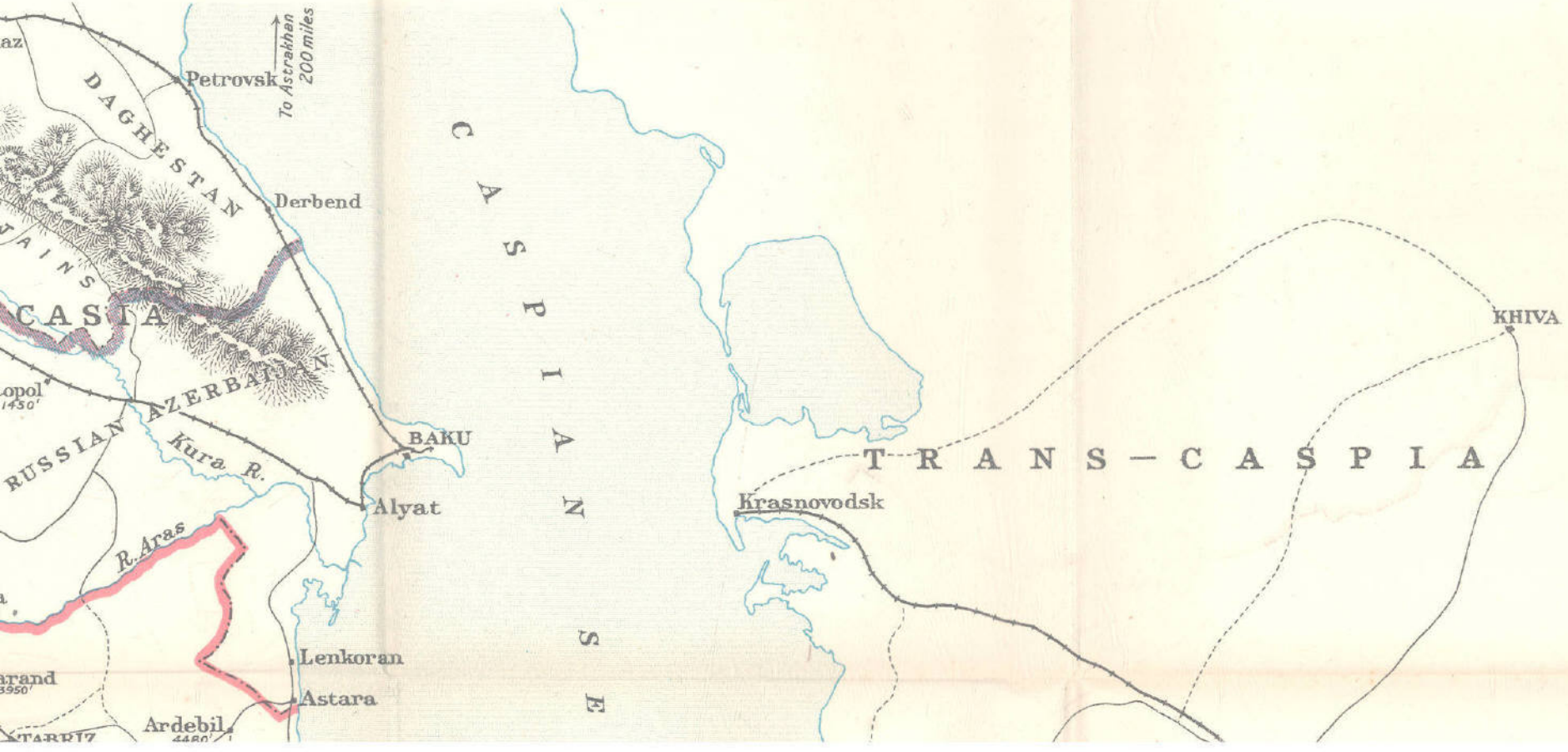
Railways shown

Persian frontier shown in Red

Turco-Caucasian frontier shown in Green

1 INCH = 80 MILES.

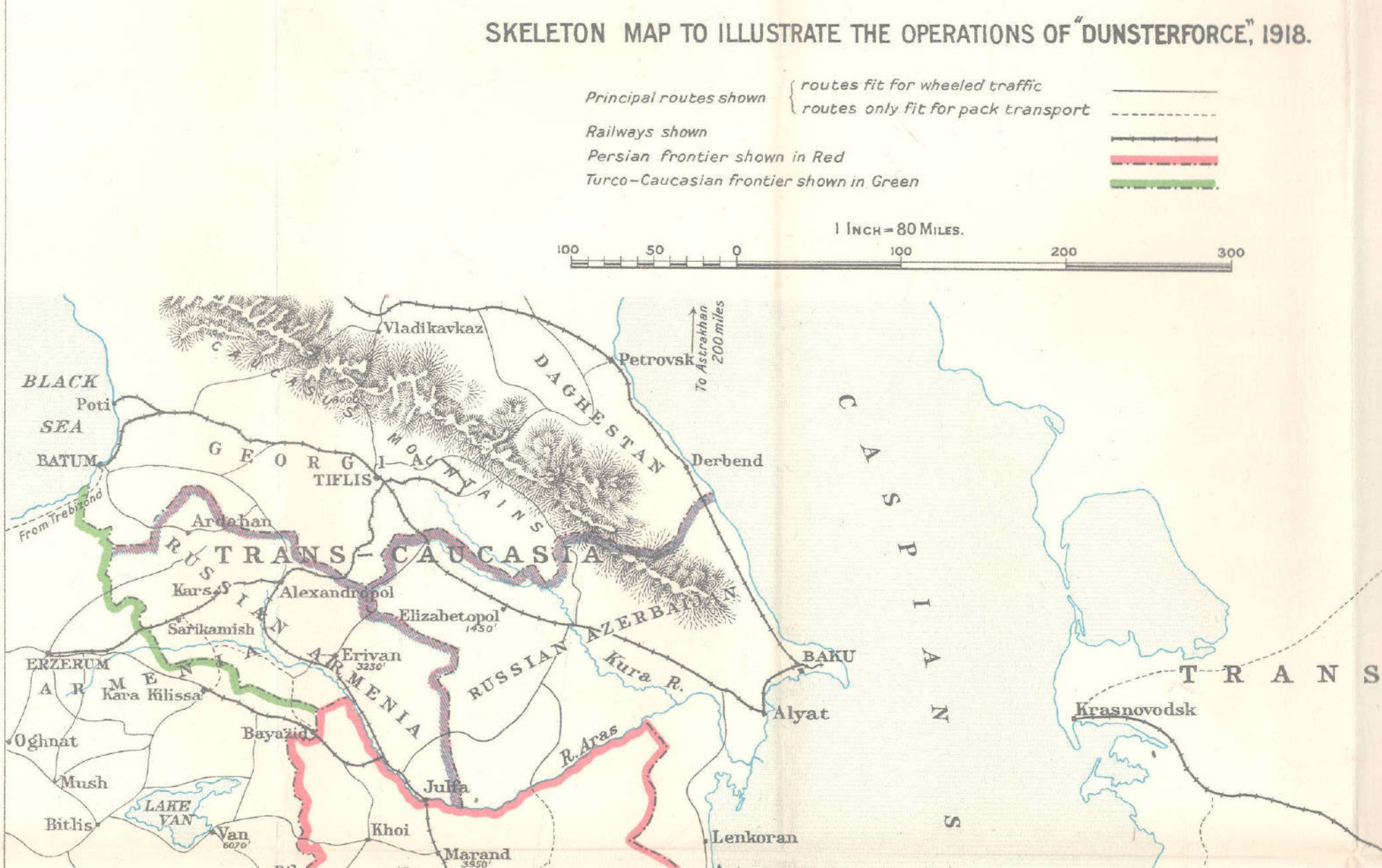
100 50 0 100 200 300



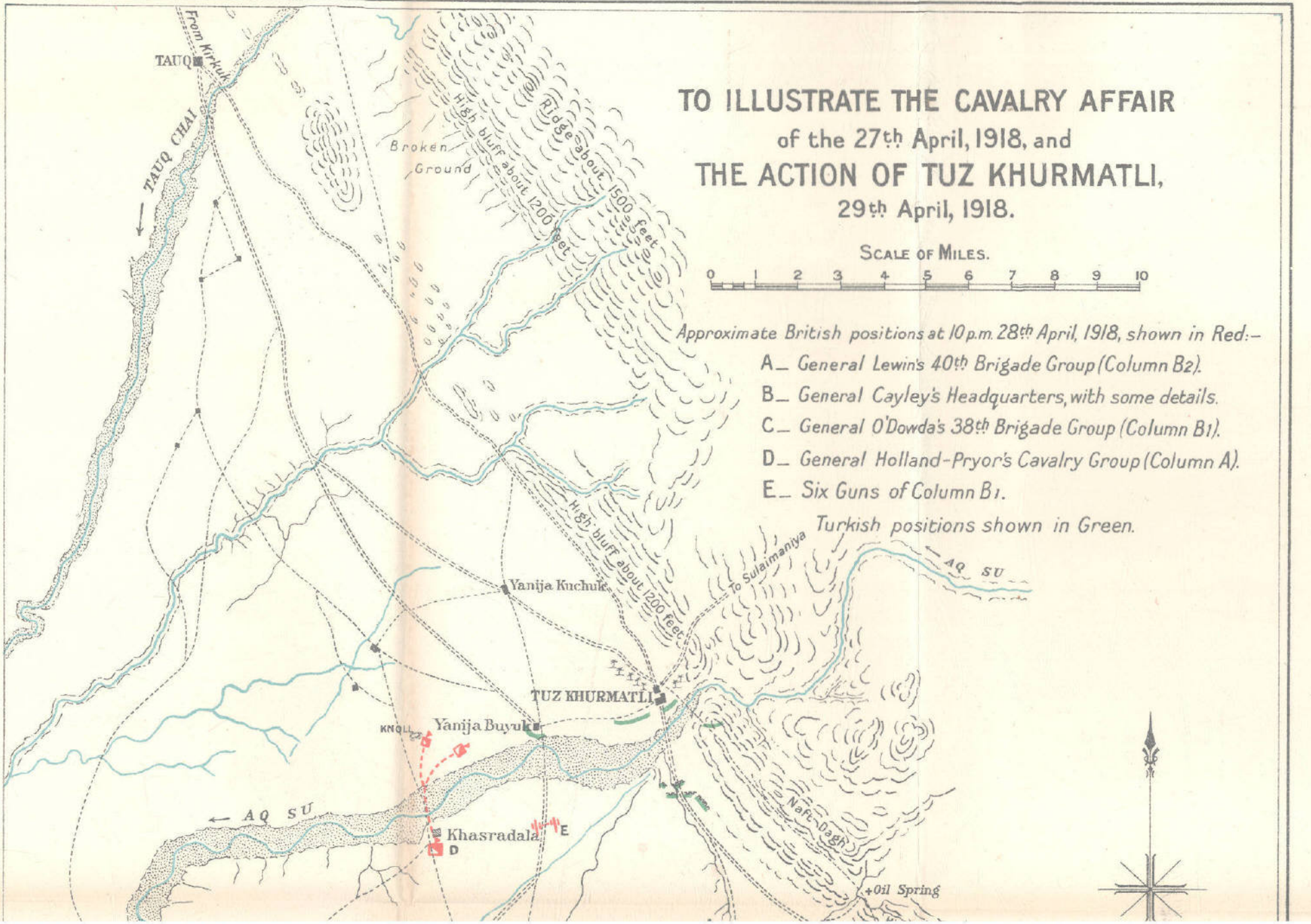
DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

SKELETON MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE OPERATIONS OF "DUNSTERFORCE," 1918.



PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.



TO ILLUSTRATE THE CAVALRY AFFAIR
of the 27th April, 1918, and
THE ACTION OF TUZ KHURMATLI,
29th April, 1918.

SCALE OF MILES.

0 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10

Approximate British positions at 10 p.m. 28th April, 1918, shown in Red:–

A– *General Lewin's 40th Brigade Group (Column B2).*

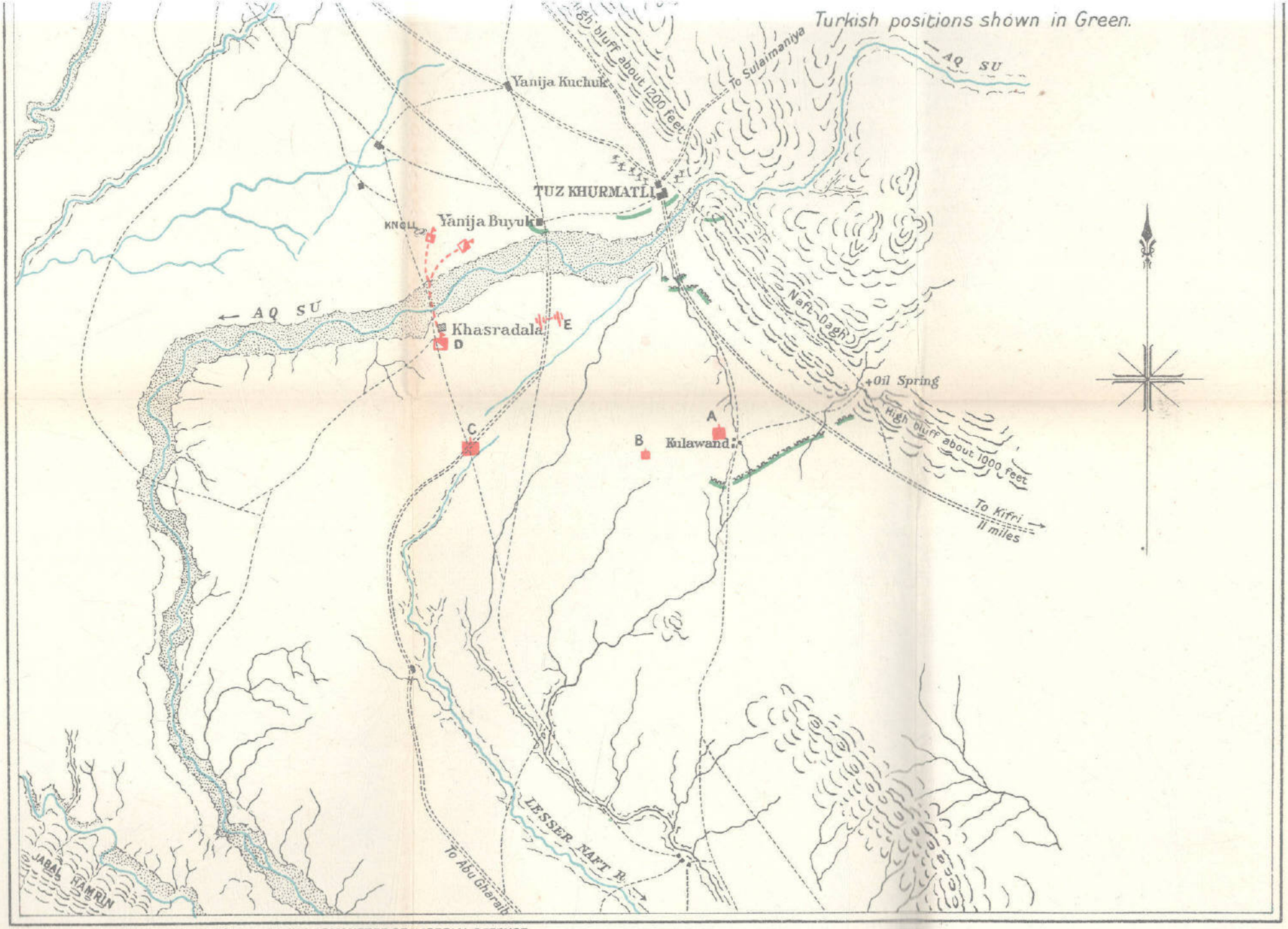
B– *General Cayley's Headquarters, with some details.*

C– *General O'Dowda's 38th Brigade Group (Column B1).*

D– *General Holland-Pryor's Cavalry Group (Column A).*

E– *Six Guns of Column B1.*

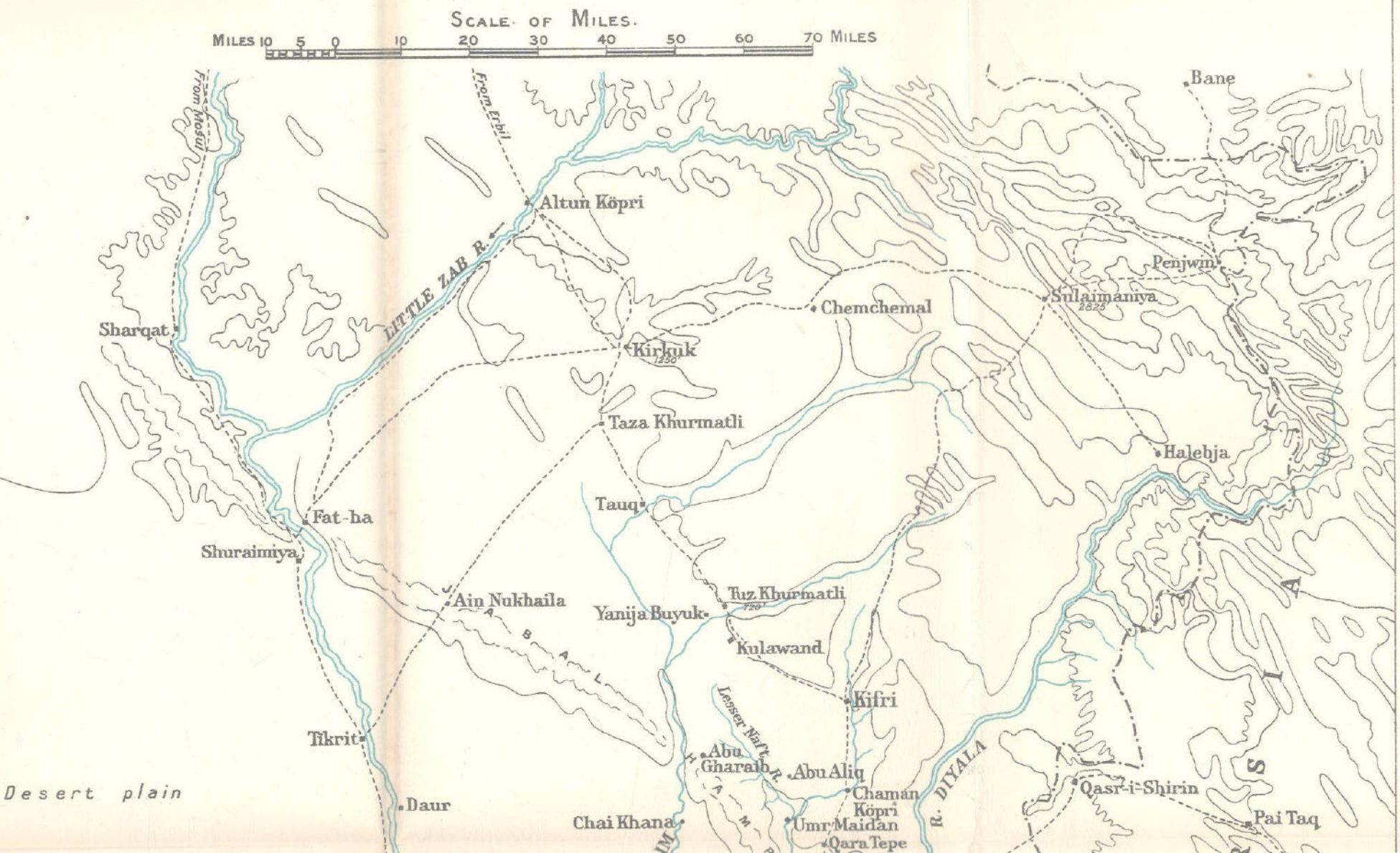
Turkish positions shown in Green.

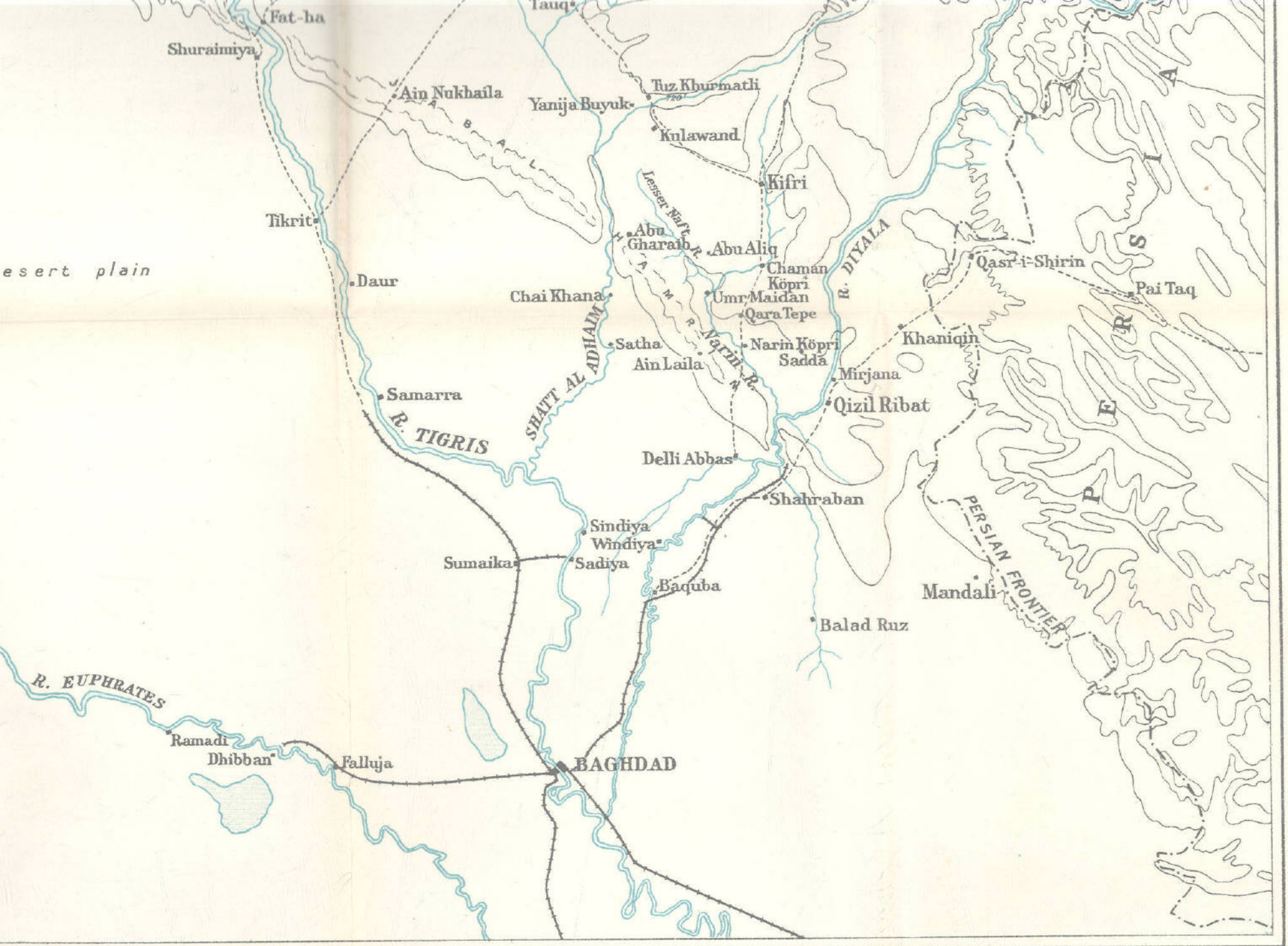


PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

LUSTRATE OPERATIONS IN THE KIFRI-KIRKUK AREA, APRIL AND MAY. 1918.

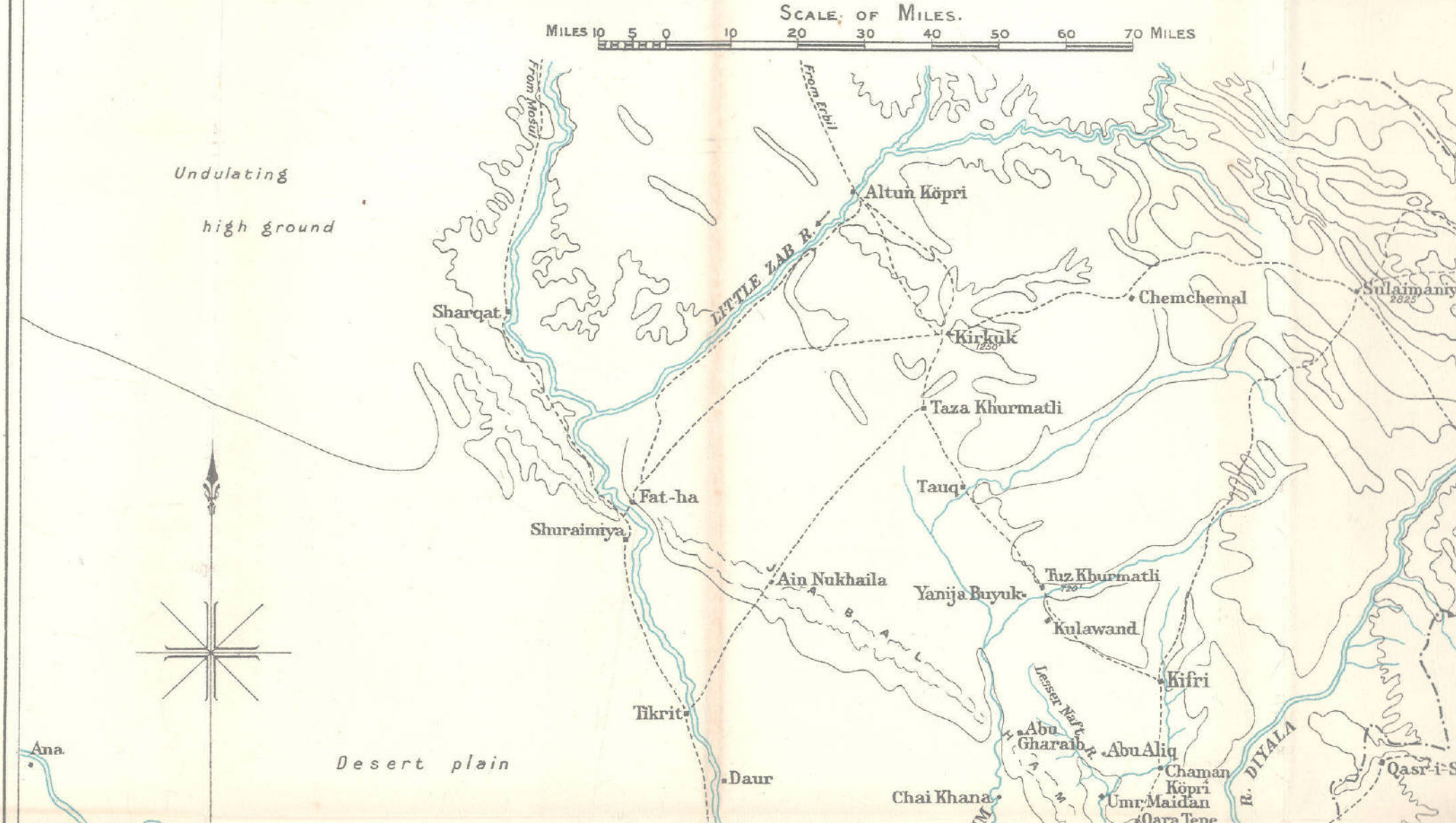


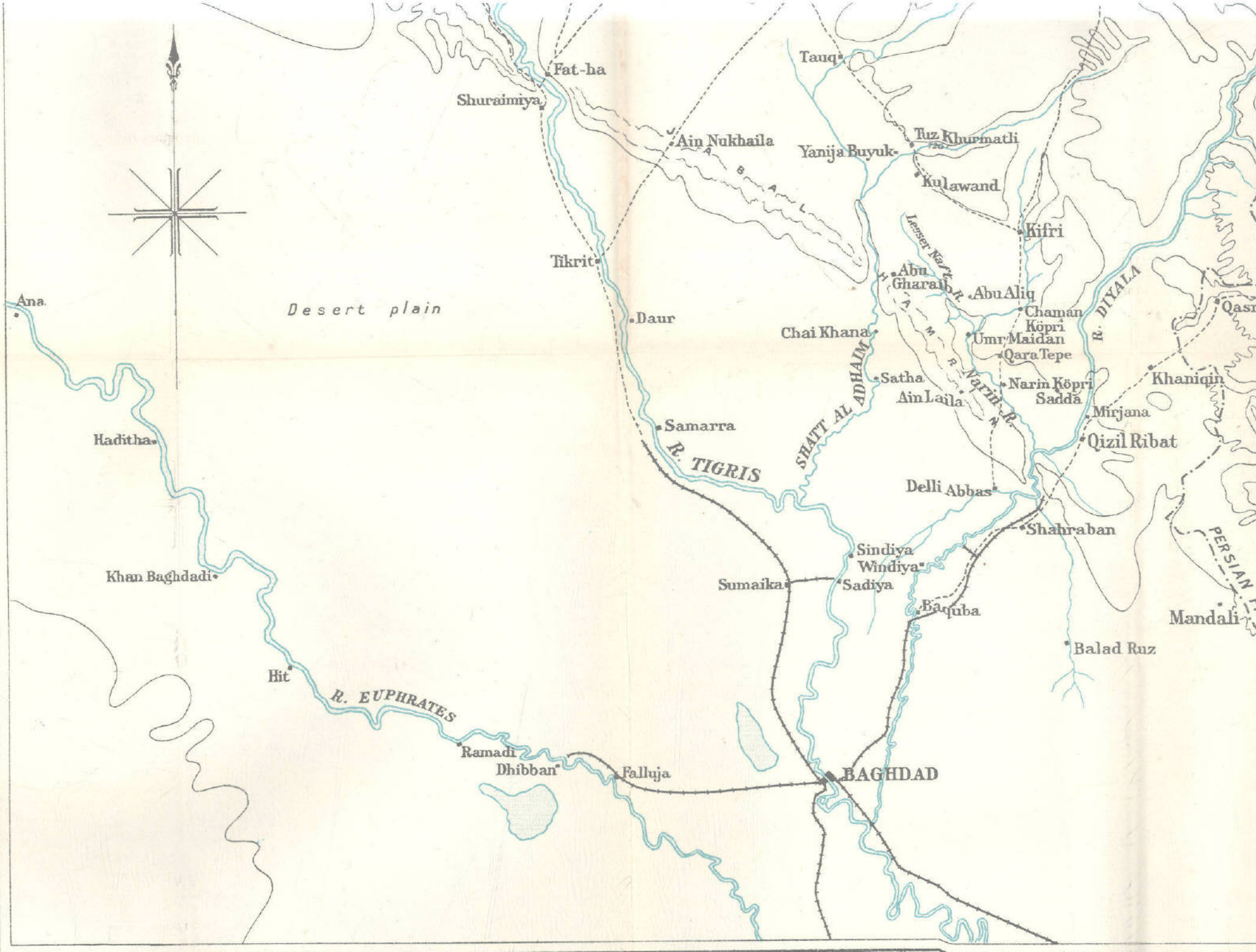


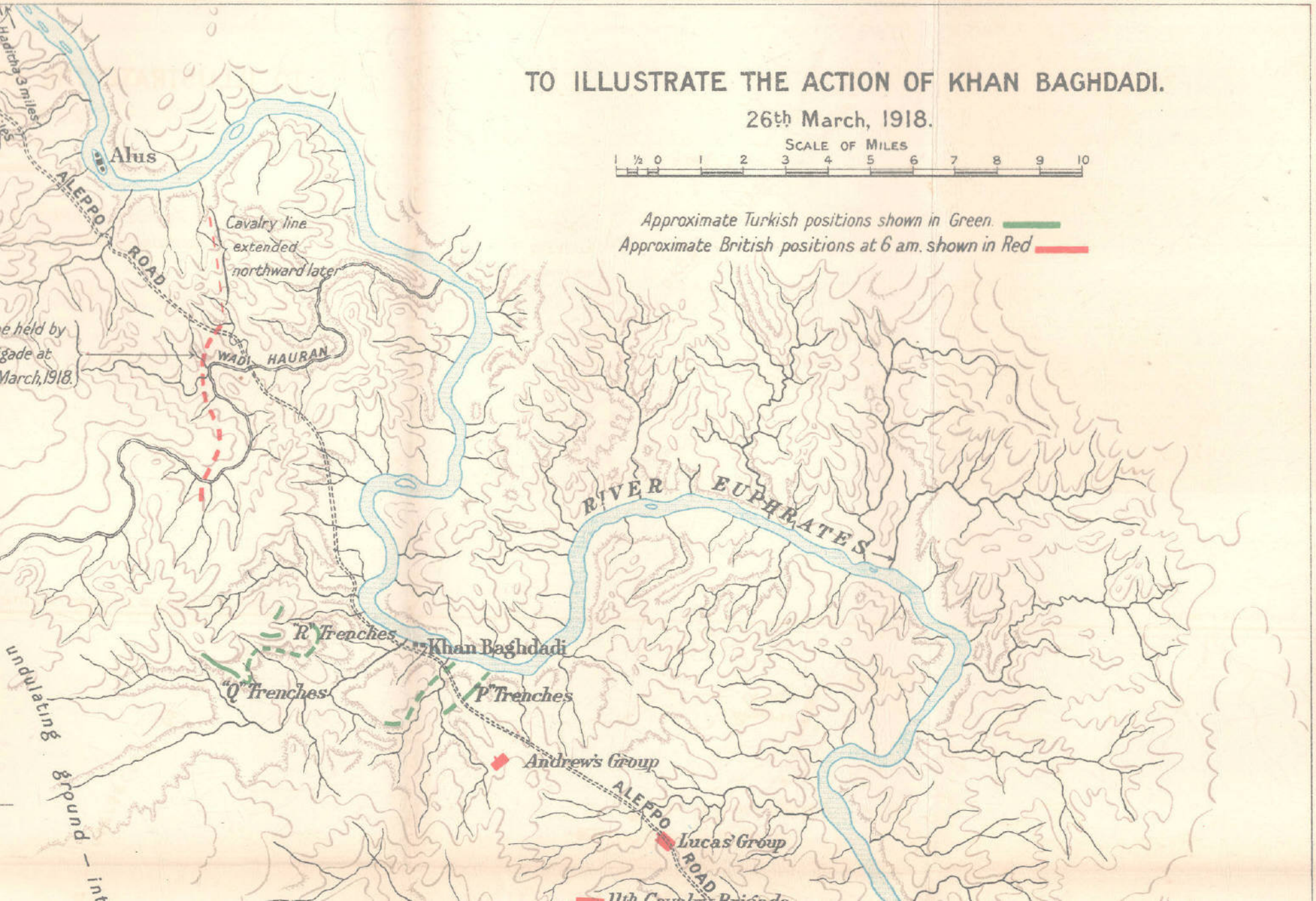
EE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

TO ILLUSTRATE OPERATIONS IN THE KIFRI-KIRKUK AREA, APRIL AND MAY. 1918

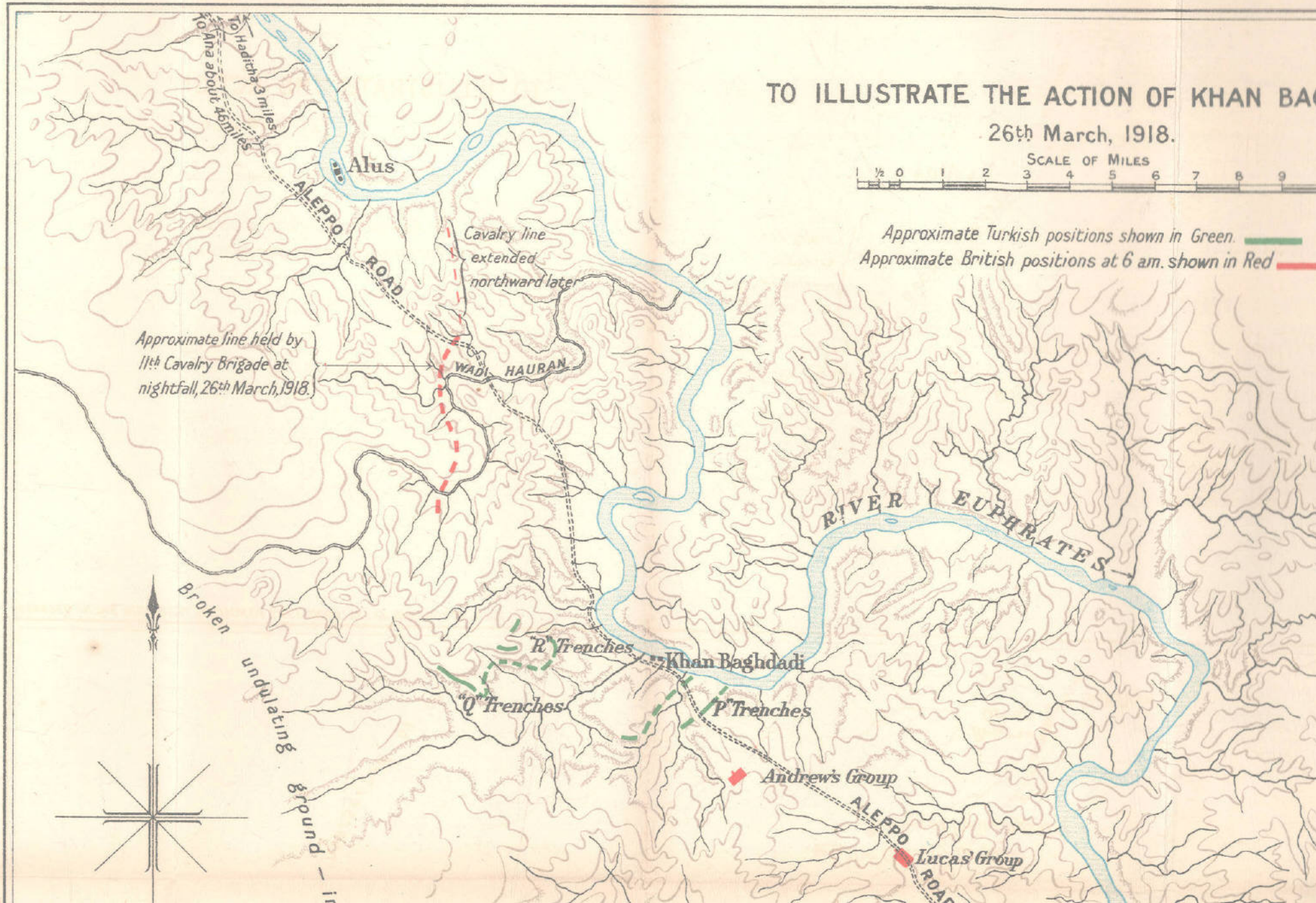


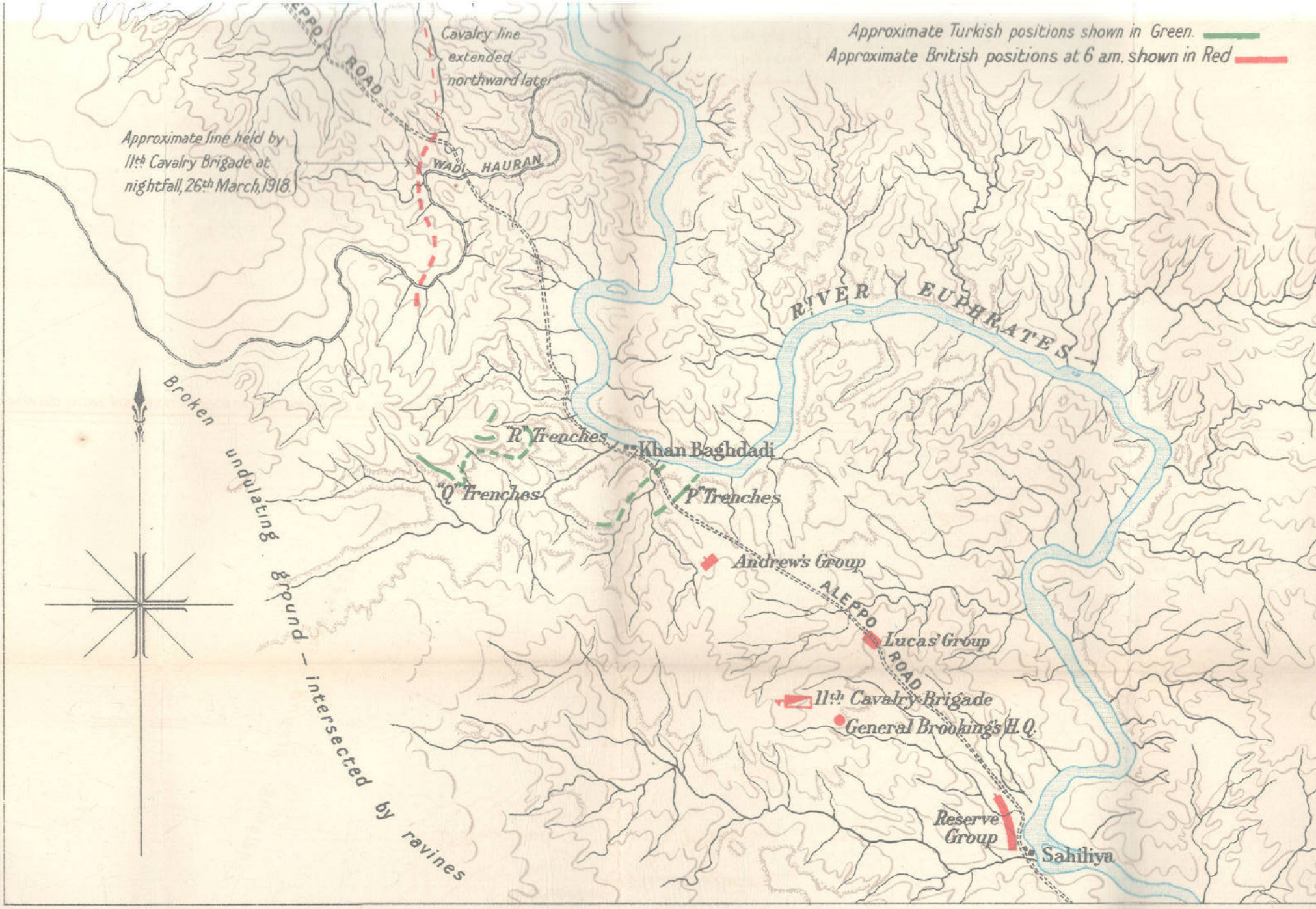

Fat-ha
Shuraimiya
Tauq
Ain Nukhaila
JEBEL HAMRIN
Yanija Buyuk
Tuz Khurmatli
Kulawand
Kifri
Tikrit
Lesser Nart R.
Abu Gharaib
Abu Aliq
Chaman Köpri
Umr Maidan
Qara Tepe
R. DIYALA
Ana
Desert plain
Daur
Chai Khana
Satha
Ain Laila
Narin Köpri
Sadda
Khaniqin
Mirjana
Qizil Ribat
Haditha
Samarra
R. TIGRIS
SHATT AL ADHAIM
Delli Abbas
Shahraban
Sindiya
Windiya
Sadiya
Sumaika
Khan Baghdadi
Baquba
Mandali
PERSIAN
Balad Ruz
Hit
R. EUPHRATES
Ramadi
Dhibban
Falluja
BAGHDAD


TO ILLUSTRATE THE ACTION OF KHAN BAGHDADI.
26th March, 1918.
SCALE OF MILES
1 ½ 0 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
Approximate Turkish positions shown in Green.
Approximate British positions at 6 am. shown in Red
Haditha 3 miles
Alus
ALEPPO ROAD
Cavalry line extended northward later
e held by gade at March, 1918.
WADI HAURAN
RIVER EUPHRATES
"R" Trenches
Khan Baghdadi
"Q" Trenches
"P" Trenches
undulating ground —
Andrew's Group
ALEPPO ROAD
Lucas' Group

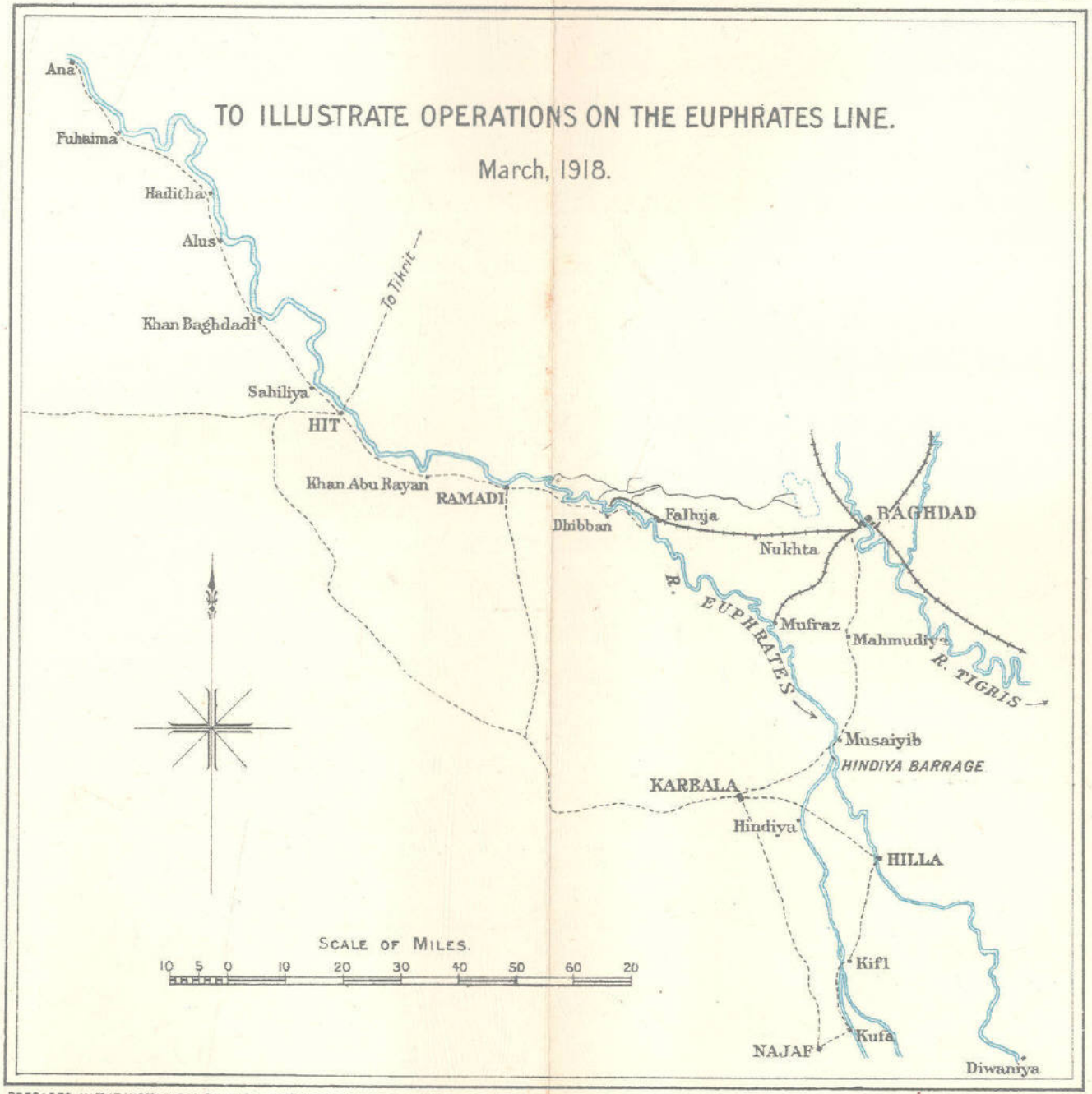
OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.


TO ILLUSTRATE THE ACTION OF KHAN BA
26th March, 1918.
SCALE OF MILES
1 ½ 0 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9
Approximate Turkish positions shown in Green.
Approximate British positions at 6 am. shown in Red
To Ana about 46miles
To Haditha 3 miles
Alus
ALEPPO ROAD
Cavalry line extended northward later
Approximate line held by 11th Cavalry Brigade at nightfall, 26th March, 1918.
WADI HAURAN
RIVER EUPHRATES
Broken undulating ground — in
"R" Trenches
Khan Baghdadi
"Q" Trenches
"P" Trenches
Andrew's Group
ALEPPO
Lucas' Group
ROAD



PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

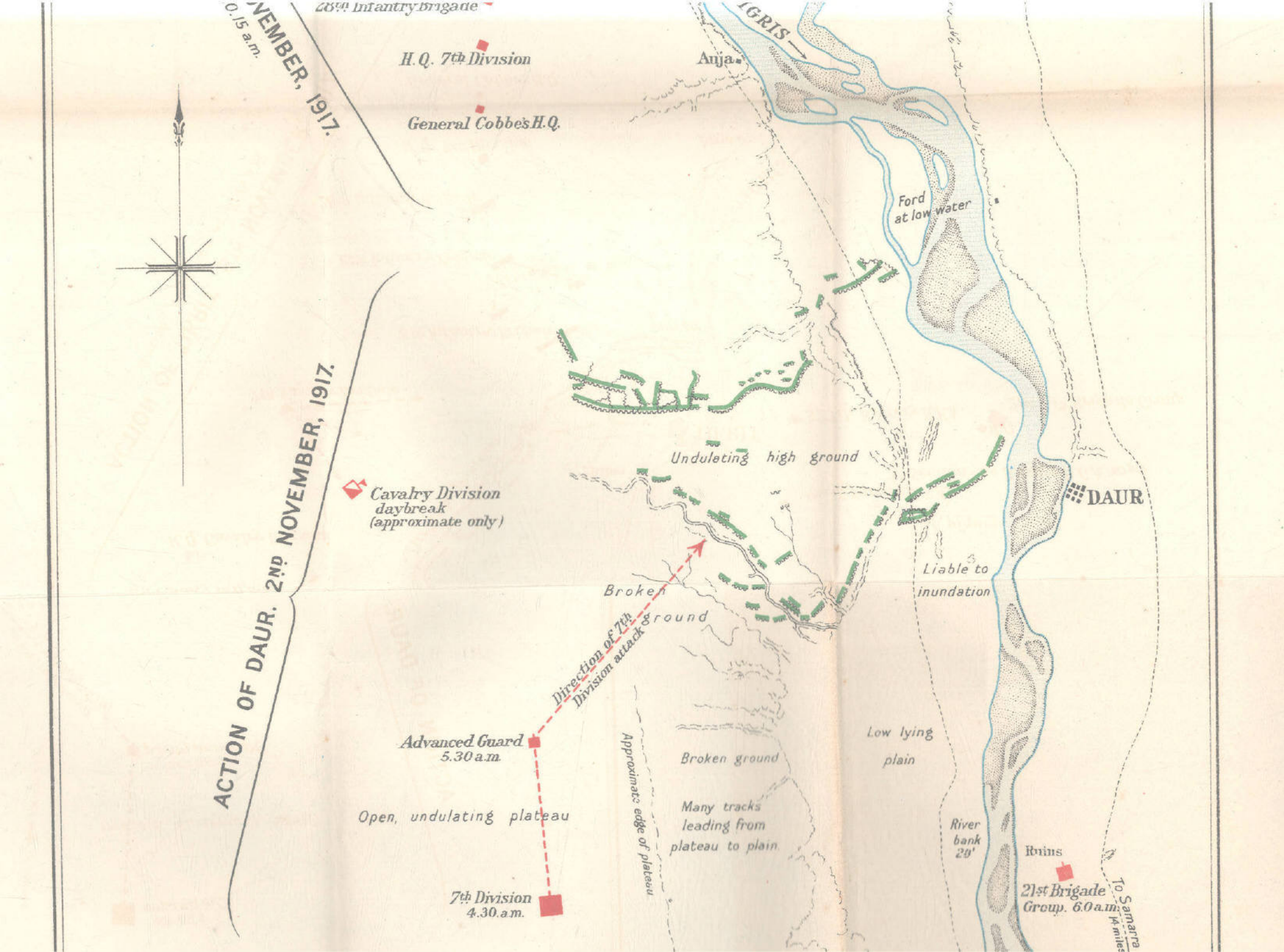


PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

TO ILLUSTRATE THE ACTIONS AT DAUR ON THE 2ND AND TIKRIT ON THE 5TH NOVEMBER, 1917.

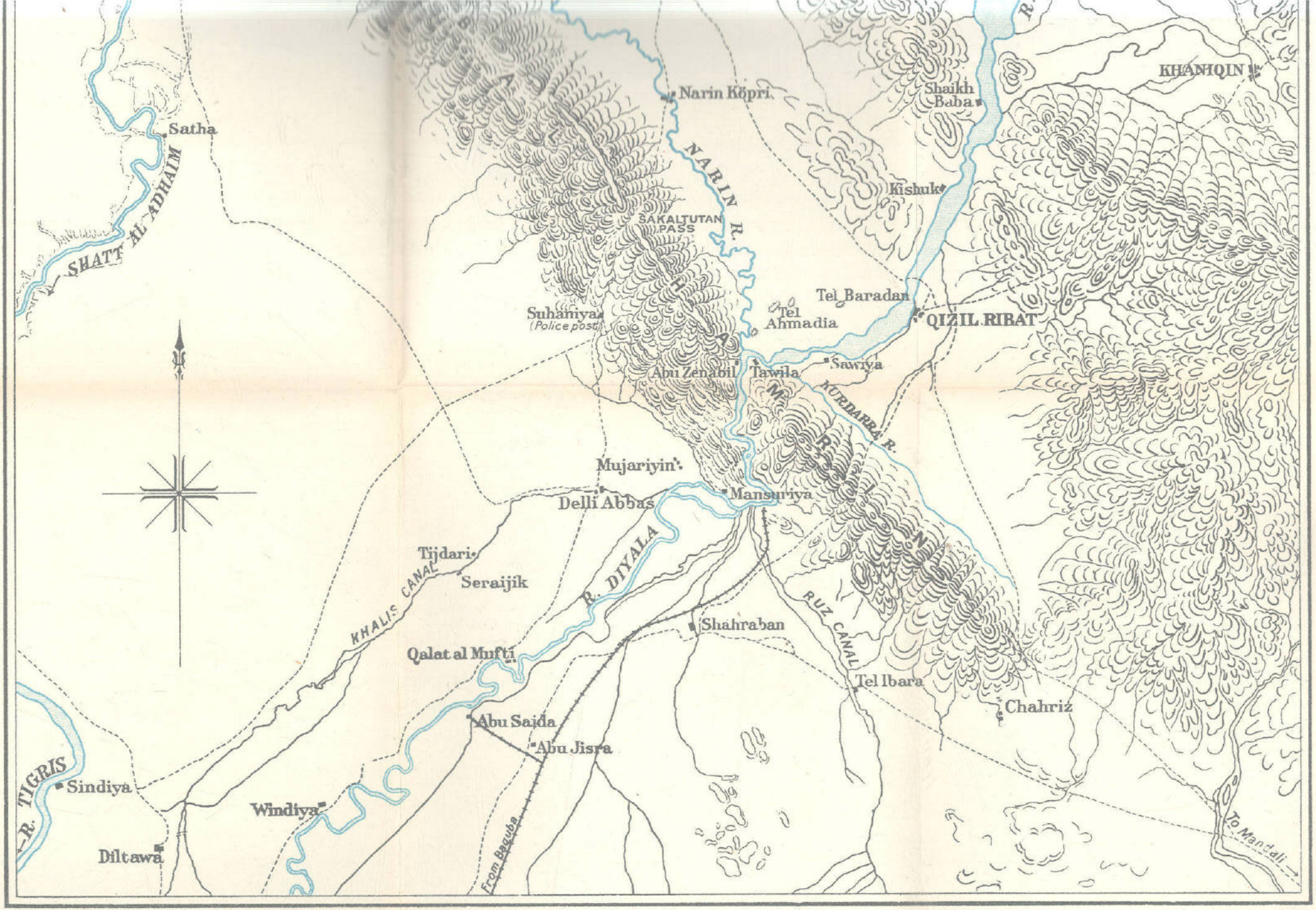
British positions shown in RED. Turkish trenches shown in GREEN.


ACTION OF DAUR. 2ND NOVEMBER, 1917.
NOVEMBER, 1917.
0.15 a.m.
28th Infantry Brigade
H.Q. 7th Division
General Cobbe's H.Q.
Anja
TIGRIS
Ford at low water
Undulating high ground
DAUR
Cavalry Division daybreak (approximate only)
Liable to inundation
Broken ground
Direction of 7th Division attack
Advanced Guard 5.30 a.m.
Approximate edge of plateau
Broken ground
Low lying plain
Open, undulating plateau
Many tracks leading from plateau to plain
River bank 29'
Ruins
21st Brigade Group. 6.0 a.m.
To Samarra
7th Division 4.30 a.m.

TO ILLUSTRATE OPERATIONS IN THE JABAL HAMRIN; OCTOBER AND DECEMBER, 1917.

SCALE OF MILES.
5 0 5 10 15

NOTE. In October the Railway did not extend north of Shahraban.



PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

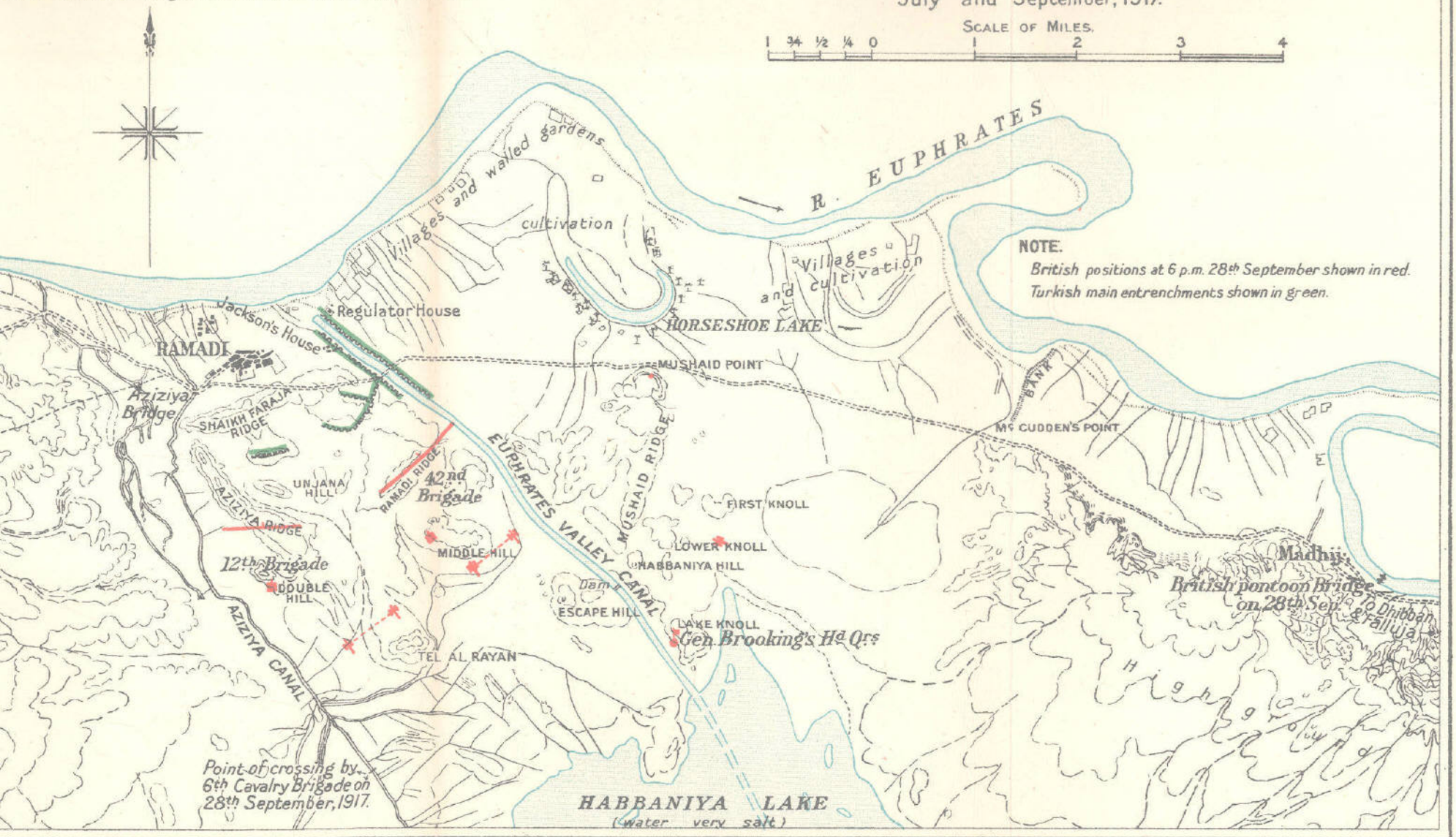
this area north of R. Euphrates much cut up by irrigation channels and
cted with numerous villages. A considerable amount of cultivation.

TO ILLUSTRATE OPERATIONS NEAR RAMADI.

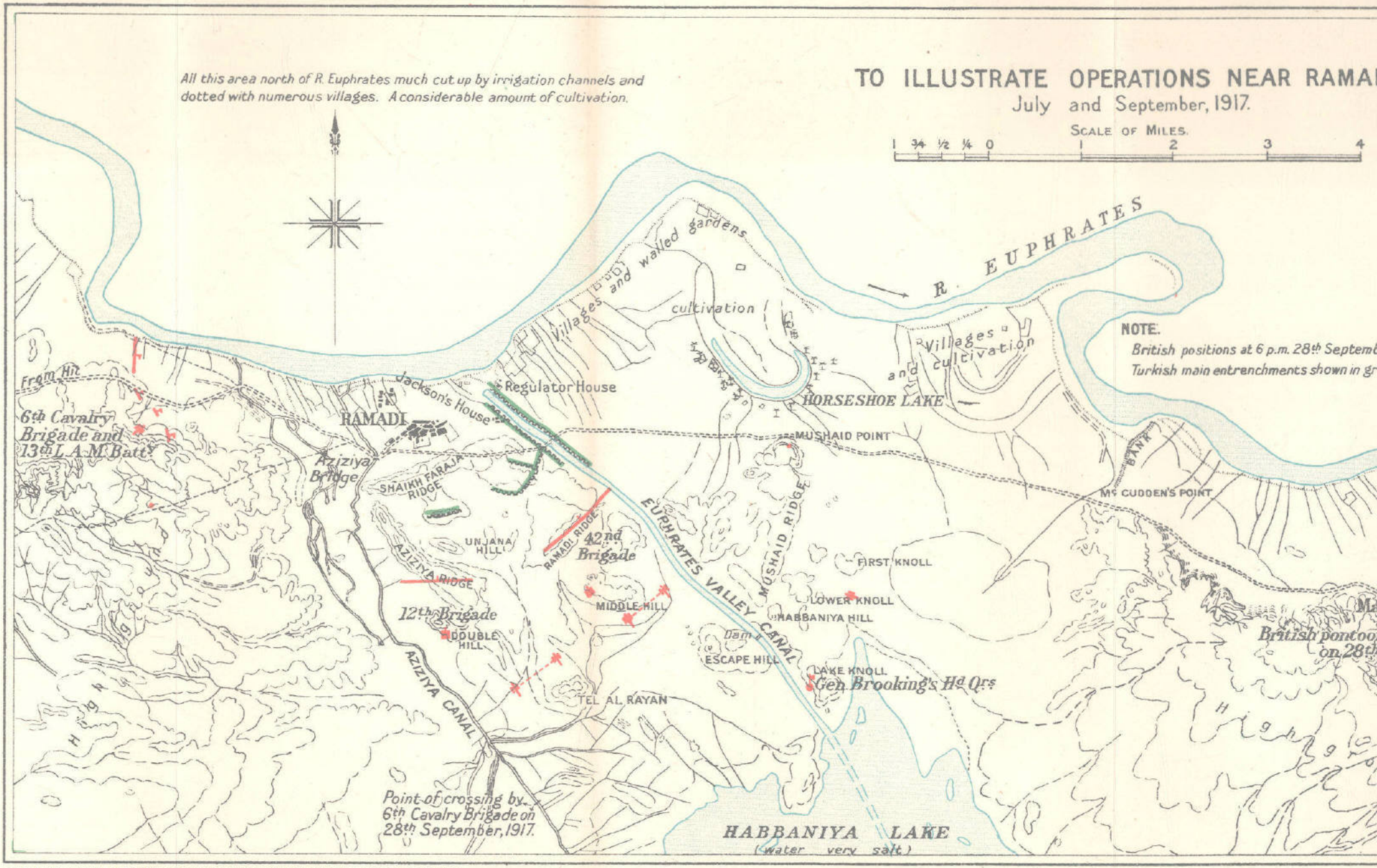
July and September, 1917.

SCALE OF MILES.

1 ¾ ½ ¼ 0 1 2 3 4



Ordnance Survey, 1926.



PREPARED IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE.

Ord

MESOPOTAMIA.
Scale. 1 Inch = 31·56 Miles. 1/2.000.000.
MILES 10 5 0 10 20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90 100 MILES
Reference.
Principal routes shown thus
Railways as existing on 1st November, 1918 shown thus
KURDISTAN
Sauj Bulag
Rawandiz 1500'
Erbil 1350'
Saqqiz 5180'
Bane
Altun Köpri
Penjwin
Chemchemal
Sulaimaniya 1655'
Kirkuk
Khurmatli
Halebja
Tauq
Tuz Khurmatli
Nukhaila
JABAL HAMRIN
Kifri 760'
Band-i-Adhaim
Shatt al Adhaim
R. Diyala
Qasr-i-Shirin 1652'
Pai Taq 3350'
Qara Tepe
Khaniqin 1250'
Karind 5380'
Mirjana
Qizil Ribat
Delli Abbas
Baghdad
Harunabad
KERMANSHAH 4880'
Kangavar 5740'
Hamadan
Daulatabad

PERSIA
ARABISTAN
MESOPOTAMIA
BAGHDAD
Qizil Ribat
Barura
Delli Abbas
Akab
Sindiya
Abu Saida
Abu Jisra
Shahraban
Ruz
TABLE MOUNTAIN
Windiya
Sumaika
Sadiya
Baquba
Balad Ruz
Mandali
Harunabad
Burujird
Khurramabad
Nukhta
Qarara
Diyala
Mufraz
Ctesiphon
Mahmudiya
Lajj
Zor
Aziziya
Badra
Jassan
PERSO-MESOPOTAMIAN FRONTIER
PUSHTI-I-KUH
R. TIGRIS
Musaiyib
HINDIYA BARRAGE
BALA
Imam Mahdi
Bughaila
Arab village
Wadi
Shaikh Saad
Kut al Amara
Ali Gharbi
Hilla
Kifl
Shatt al Hai
Hai Town
Sharqi
Mudelil
Kumait
Kufa
NAJAF
Abu Sukhair
Diwaniya
Shinafiya
Waar
Shatrao
Shatt al Baidha
Samawa
Darrajt
Nasiriya
Safan
Tel Maghiya
Suq ash Shuyukh
Tel el Lam
Khamisiya
Qurnah
Kubaish
Mazlq
HAMMAR LAKE
EUPHRATES
EUPHRATES OLD CHANNEL
EUPHRATES NEW CHANNEL
Nahr Umar
Ghabishiya
Luqait
Ratawi
Amara
Qala Salih
Exr's Tomb
R. Karkha
Dizful
Shush
Shushtar
OIL FIELDS
Maidan-i-Naftun (Lungeh)
Band-i-Qir
Karun R.
Ahwaz
OIL PIPE LINES
Marsh

Ordnance Survey, 1927.

MESOPOTAMIA
KURDISTAN
IRAN
JABAL SINJAR
Sinjar
MOSUL
980'
Great Zab R.
Hammam Ali
Erbil
1350'
Quwair
Rowandiz
1500'
Sauj Bulag
Saqqiz
5160'
Bane
Qaiyara
Hadr
Altun Köpri
Huwaish
Sharqat
Little Zab R.
Penjwin
Chemchemal
Sulaimaniya
1625
Kirkuk
Balalij
Zararıya
Hum
Ain Dibs
Mushak
Tel Ajar
Taza Khurmatli
Halebja
Tauq
Fat-ha
Shuraimiya
Ain Nukhaila
Tuz Khurmatli
R. Diyala
JABAL HAMRIN
Kifri
760
Tikrit
Band-i Adhaim
Shatt al Adhaim
Ana
Daur
Qasr-i Shirin
1655
Pai Taq
3350'
Qara Tepe
Khanaqin
1250
KERMANSHAH
4867'
Karind
5360'
Huwaislat
Eski Baghdad
Samarra
Mirjana
Qizil Ribat
Haditha
Harunabad
4800'
Istabulat
Ramura
Delli Abbas
MILES 10 5 0 10
Principal routes
Railways as exis

Khan Baghdadi
Sahiliya
Hit
R. EUPHRATES
Sumaika
Sadiya
Windiya
Baquba
Mandali
Balad Ruz
Mushahida
Ramadi
Madhij
Dhibban
SAKHLAWIYA CANAL
Falluja
Nukhta
Radwaniya
BAGHDAD
Qarara
Diyala
Mufraz
Ctesiphon
Mahmudiya
Lajj
Zor
Aziziya
Musaiyib
MINDIYA BARRAGE
KARBALA
Hilla
R. TIGRIS
Bughaila
Imam Mahdi
Arab village
Wadi
Shaikh Saad
Kut al Amara
Ali Gharbi
Shatt al Hai
Hai Town
Kifl
Kufa
NAJAF
Abu Sukhair
Diwaniya
Mudelil
Sharqi
Kumait
Amara
Shinafiya
Waar
Shatra
Shatt al Baidha
Samawa
Darraji
Nasiriya
Safar
Tel Maghiya
Suq
Vash Shuyukh
Akaika
Mazliq
HAMMAR LAKE
Kubaish
EUPHRATES OLD CHANNEL
Tel el Lam
Khamisiya
EUPHRATES
Ghabishiya
Luqait
Ratawi
Jaleeb
Nukhaila
Badra
Jassan
PERSO-MESOPOTAMIAN FRONTIER
PUSHT-I-KUH
PERSIA
MESOPOTAMIA
Marsh

Hilla
Kifl
Kufa
NAJAF
Abu Sukhair
Diwaniya
Shinafiya
Waar
Samawa
Darrajt
Shafra
Shatt al Baidha
Nasiriya
Safar
Tel Maghiya
Suq ash Shuyukh
Akarka
Mazliq
HAMMAR LAKE
EUPHRATES OLD CHANNEL
EUPHRATES
EUPHRATES NEW CHANNEL
Khamisiya
Tel el Lam
Ghabishiya
Luqait
Ratawi
Jaleeb
Nukhaila
Qurna
Kubaish
Marsh
Ezra's Tomb
Qala Salih
Amara
Sharqi
Mudelil
Kumait
Hai Town
Shatt al Hai
Kut al Amara
Bughaila
Arab village
Shaikh Saad
Ali Gharbi
A
M
I
A

NOT TO BE ISSUED

SMT. HANSA MEHTA LIBRARY. BARODA.
RARE BOOK COLLECTION
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY.

NOT TO BE ISSUED

SHML
94162

94162.

NOT TO BE ISSUED

7DS
69.5
.M6-4

94162